


BANCROFT LIBRARY



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



Eng. by L. G. Williams & Bro. NY

Sam R. Davis.

The History *of* Nevada

EDITED
BY
SAM P. DAVIS



VOLUME I.
ILLUSTRATED

PUBLISHED BY
THE ELMS PUBLISHING CO.,
INC.
RENO, NEV.—LOS ANGELES, CAL.
1913

F
841
D2
v.1

PREFACE.

In the preparation and compilation of this work I am not unmindful of the fact that two others of a similar character have been published in this State in past years. But the progressive and changing character of Nevada during the past twenty years, and more especially during the last decade, renders another chronicle of its growth, and importance imperative.

Beginning as a mining center, with a productiveness of the precious metals that finds no parallel in history, it is gradually becoming known as an agricultural State with an astonishing variety of soil-products such as a quarter of a century ago was not dreamed of. Irrigation has made a garden of its deserts, and dry-farming is fast obtaining a foothold within its borders, bringing wealth to sections which had heretofore been regarded as arid wastes.

The important events which have taken place in this Commonwealth since its settlement and the stirring and changing nature of its life, cannot be fully recorded even in three works. Anything like a comprehensive picture of its past must be taken from different angles of observation.

It would be hard to find a State with a more eventful record of action and development compressed into the short period of fifty years which to the rest of the world might be regarded as a ripple upon the sea of time, yet to the proud "Sagebrusher" who has learned to love the rugged mountains, the azure sky and the mysterious solitudes of his country, this history means much.

During that time it has given to the world names that stand high in the world of Art, Literature, Science and Statesmanship.

Looking over the names commonly given to the various States of the Union, many of which seems frivolous, and carry the suggestion of derision and opprobrium, we may say, without fear of contradiction, that the title of "The Battleborn," applied to Nevada, is the most appropriate and dignified of all.

In this history care has been taken to avoid dry and uninteresting statistics, wherever possible. Considerable space has been devoted to reminiscence and anecdote in order to give a proper reflex of the lives and characters of the men who hewed the rough ashlers of the Commonwealth in the days when stout-hearted and capable pioneers braved the environments and perils of a new country to build for succeeding generations.

Unhappy and morose cynics often deride the biographical sketches, without which it is impossible to publish a History of this character. For the future historian, sketches of the men whose names appear here will be of the greatest value. It has been the policy of this work to confine these sketches to a statement of such facts as will be of interest to the reader of to-day not only, but also of importance to those of years to come.

While Nevada is still young in years, its quiver of achievement is remarkably full, as these comprehensive chapters fully show. Should the critical reader find errors and omissions which have escaped the careful reviser, he will kindly remember the fallibility of man.

In conclusion, I desire to thank the able, and conscientious corps of special contributors who have given so much time and research to this work. Without their tireless co-operation this History could not have been completed, and for whatever merit is contained in these pages they deserve a full share of credit.

Sam P. Davis.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. Topography and Geology.....	11
II. Indians of Nevada.....	20
III. Organizing the Territory.....	190
IV. The Adjustment of the Boundaries.....	198
V. Early Knowledge of Nevada.....	214
VI. Early Emigrants	223
VII. Life in the Territory.....	233
VIII. The Lawless Element.....	242
IX. Nevada and the Civil War.....	266
X. The Bench and Bar.....	273
XI. History of Mining in Nevada.....	315
XII. The Great Comstock Lode.....	367
XIII. Early Mining Discoveries.....	381
XIV. Mining Litigation	391
XV. The Sutro Tunnel.....	399
XVI. Water Supply of the Comstock.....	406
XVII. Square Sets of Timbering and V. Flume.....	408
XVIII. Comstock Milling Monopoly.....	412
XIX. Control of the Comstock.....	417
XX. Political History	420
XXI. Journalism	459
XXII. Educational	503
XXIII. Religious	536
XXIV. Railroads	587
XXV. Medical	610
XXVI. Banking	624
XXVII. Agriculture	640
XXVIII. Horticulture	647
XXIX. Nevada Historical Society.....	657
XXX. Mount Rose Observatory.....	666
XXXI. Fraternal Societies	673

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXXII. Meteorological Work	700
XXXIII. Literature	707
XXXIV. The Drama	715
XXXV. The Turf	721
XXXVI. Bowers Mansion	724
XXXVII. Military	728
XXXVIII. Divorce Law	739
XXXIX. Nevada, Truckee-Carson Project.....	742
XL. Water Supply and Irrigation.....	756
XLI. Federated Women's Clubs.....	771
XLII. Woman's Christian Temperance Union.....	776
XLIII. Woman Suffrage	780
XLIV. Churchill County	786
XLV. Clark County	795
XLVI. Douglas County	806
XLVII. Elko County	818
XLVIII. Eureka County	830
XLIX. Esmeralda County	847
L. Humboldt County	888
LI. Lander County	922
LII. Lincoln County	927
LIII. Lyon County	950
LIV. Mineral County	957
LV. Nye County	960
LVI. Ormsby County	973
LVII. Storey County	997
LVIII. Washoe County	1004
LIX. White Pine County.....	1042
<hr/>	
VOLUME II. Biographical Sketches	1063

THE HISTORY OF NEVADA

CHAPTER I.

TOPOGRAPHY AND GEOLOGY.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

Within the memory of persons yet living, a large area between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific Ocean was left undelineated on the maps, being simply designated as the Great American Desert.

On all sides of it the principle was quite fully, if not very accurately charted. The Spanish adventurers and missionaries had explored and rudely mapped the country to the west, south and southeast; the Lewis and Clarke expedition and trappers that to the east, north and northwest, but no one had penetrated that forbidding and mysterious desert region. Less was known of it than of Sahara of which it was believed to be the American counterpart.

The rain of summer fell not on its breast
Bared ever more beneath a blazing sky.
The waterfowl could find no place of rest,
And mankind trod its deserts but to die.

Yet so swift was the course of events, that before they reached ripe manhood, the same schoolboys who puzzled over those crude maps, helped to unearth from that nameless, mysterious region, the treasure that practically saved the nation in its hour of peril, the hour when a great Republic, retreating to the last ditch and with its back to the wall, called upon the desert for succor.

The noise of conflict was stilled, the swords were beaten into plow-

shares and the great unmapped section was converted into a flourishing commonwealth. From out of the very heart of that supposed American sahara has risen the State of Nevada, and the Great American Desert myth has shrunk, until now, the name applies only to a small district in the western part of Utah.

Nevada lies on the western side of that big swale of the continent between the Sierras and the Wasatch mountains which Fremont happily named "The Great Basin," but apart from that general position and a slight point of contact with the Colorado river, it has no natural boundaries. Its limits were not fixed by mountain ranges, rivers or seas, but by Congress in bald terms of geodetic measurement.

The act that organized it into a territory recommended that California cede to it her possessions on the eastern slope and establish the summit of the Sierras as the dividing line, but that State refused to make the cession and thus Nevada lost the opportunity of having at least one distinctly marked boundary. A slight compensation for this loss was the gift by Congress in 1866 of additional territory that carried with it a limited frontage on the Colorado river, the only natural frontage of which the State can boast.

Concisely stated, the present boundary lines of Nevada are as follows: Beginning at a point in the middle of the Colorado river at the 35th parallel; thence in a straight northwesterly line to a point of intersection with the 39th parallel and the 43rd meridian from Washington, near the southern end of Lake Tahoe; thence north on said meridian to the 42nd parallel to the 37th meridian, and thence south on said meridian to the middle of the Colorado river; thence down the middle of the Colorado river to the point of beginning.

Thus it will be seen that the State extends over seven degrees of latitude and six of longitude, but owing to the obliquity of its southwestern boundary, it presents square shoulders to only Utah, Idaho, Oregon and a part of California, descending on Arizona like a blunted wedge.

Potentially Nevada is one of the great States of the Union, not only in area, but in the extent of its agricultural resources. Put Nevada on the Atlantic Coast and it would fill the space from Central Pennsylvania to Georgia, and from Delaware Bay to Ohio.

MOUNTAINS.

There are fully a hundred separate mountain ranges in Nevada beside detached peaks or buttes. Most of these ranges are short, few extending in an unbroken chain more than twenty miles, while the combined links of the largest do not exceed a hundred miles in length.

This brevity, notwithstanding their number, averts any serious obstacles to communication between the different parts of the State, for where there are no passes through them, the longest can be skirted by a detour of a few miles. A remarkable parallelism characterizes these ranges which would give the whole surface of the State a fluted appearance if it could be seen from the proper altitude.

The general trend of the mountains, is almost without exception, north and south, showing that they were elevated by the same lateral pressure, that uplifted the two great ranges between which they stand. While the general altitude is less than that of the Sierra Nevada and Rocky Mountains, probably not averaging more than 7,000 feet above sea level, there are isolated peaks that shoot up in rivalry of those towering giants, as Pogonip Peak in the White Pine Range, 10,792 feet high, and certain peaks in Humboldt County estimated at 12,000 feet or more.

The area of Nevada, which is approximately 120,000 square miles, classes it among the largest States in the Union, but so much of its surface is covered by mountains and deserts that many of the smaller States would outrank it in arable acreage. This is not an altogether regrettable or irremediable misfortune. Its mountains do not possess the scenic attractions of which those of the eastern States can boast. Most of them are destitute of verdure and rise bald and brown from the plain, but in their rock-ribbed fastnesses are locked the treasure stores of precious metals that have enriched and will continue to enrich the world. On their lower slopes are found green pastures which feed thousands of browsing herds long after the native grass in California is withered by the sun. Even its deserts prove wonderfully fertile when irrigated, and of late years a great deal is being reclaimed under the Cary Act. Where the soil is hopelessly irreclaimable, depressions are found which yield fortunes in borax, soda, salt, sulphur nitrates and other valuable minerals in such quantities as to be practically inexhaustible, so that physical fea-

tures which were originally regarded as signs of poverty have proven in reality vast sources of disguised wealth.

In Lincoln county are found mountains of salt, and in some localities blocks of salt so pure as to resemble glass twenty feet thick through which objects can be seen.

STREAMS.

But the most marked peculiarity of Nevada, in common with the whole Great Basin, is that the waters practically have no outlet to the sea. A few small streams at the extreme south—of which the Rio Virgin is the principal—empty into the Colorado; and from the extreme north the waters of the Owyhee and a number of small creeks eventually find their way into the Columbia; but with these exceptions all the streams in the State either sink or are dried up in their course, or, if of considerable volume, flow into lakes where the absorption and evaporation take place on a large scale. It was probably this fact that retarded the exploration of the vast tract between the Wasatch and Sierra ranges.

Explorers of every kind, and trappers most of all, usually advance along water courses, ascending or descending them, and in that respect there was nothing to guide any one into the Great Basin. Not only do all the principal rivers flow inward, but they all flow toward a common point in the western part of the State and lose themselves within a radius of fifty miles.

To reach that general center the Humboldt comes three hundred miles from the northeast, the Carson a hundred and fifty miles from the southwest, the Truckee a hundred and fifty miles from the west, and the Walker eighty miles from the south, speaking in round numbers.

GEOLOGY.

The Geological character of the State shows less diversity than might be expected in so extensive an expanse. It is comprehensively described by Clarence King as follows:

"Both the Sierra and Desert ranges are composed, first of crumpled and uplifted strata from the azoic period to the late jurassic; secondly, of ancient erupted rocks which accompany the jurassic upheaval; and, thirdly, of modern eruptive rocks belonging to the volcanic period family, ranging in date probably from as early as the late miocene to the glacial period. Folds of more or less complexity twisted and warped by longitudinal forces, often compressed with a series of zigzags, some-

times marked by outbursts of granite or syenite, and lastly built upon by or buried beneath immense accumulations of volcanic material; these are the characteristic features of the mountain chains.

"They are usually nuridimal and parallel and separated by valleys which are filled to a general level by quartenuary detritus, the result of erosion from the early cretaceous period down to the present time."

Those desiring fuller or more special information concerning the geological or mineralogical features can readily find it in numerous reports and monographs on the subjects published by the government and individuals. Even the briefest resumé of them would occupy more space than the plan of this work contemplates.

The excess of minerals is ascribed by scientists to the fact that the Great Basin was once the seat of an impounded ocean, which during the course of geologic ages evaporated, leaving its solid properties—gold, silver, copper, iron, soda, sulphur, nitre, etc., deposited on the surface, or in fissures caused by the upheaval of mountains beneath the waters of a slowly evaporating inland sea. As to what conditions modified or controlled the deposits they are not so generally agreed.

Simple precipitation and subsequent concentration by water currents might account for most of the readily soluble minerals, but powerful dynamic, chemical and electrical forces must have contributed to the formation of the ore bodies in the fissure veins.

CLIMATE.

The climate generally is agreeable and healthful. The temperature seldom falls below and rarely mounts above 100 degrees, and the effects of both extremes is tempered by the dryness of the atmosphere. Neither the heat nor the cold is felt as keenly as in a moister atmosphere. There are exceptions to this, however, not only on account of differences in elevation and latitude, but, owing to some singular freak of Nature, the isothermal line which elsewhere girds the earth with such general uniformity makes an abrupt shoot-up into southern Nevada so that a part of Lincoln County has the same average temperature as the extreme point of Florida. Thus the climate ranges from the severity of that of the high plateaus of the north, where, owing to the almost constant frosts throughout the year, nothing but the hardest products can be raised; to the softness of that of the southern valleys, where everything of a semi-tropical character flourishes.

The rainfall throughout most of the State is slight, probably not averaging more than ten inches, and in much of the interior not over half of that. In itself it is insufficient to insure crops, except in localities where dry farming is successful with grains and crops which require but a minimum of moisture.

Nevada has no rainy season as has California, the winter partaking more of the character of that of the region to the eastward, snow predominating over rain.

The snow-fall in the mountains is very heavy and it is from the moisture thus conserved that the streams draw their supply.

What are termed cloudbursts are of common occurrence during the summer. Masses of water are suddenly precipitated from the clouds, and if the precipitation occurs on a mountain side or where two watersheds meet in a ravine, the water does considerable damage, in some instances human lives have been sacrificed.

The clouds usually discharge their moisture when coming in sudden contact with a mountain side, but instances are cited of abnormal precipitation resulting without such contact.

Violent wind storms—facetiously called Washoe zephyrs—are frequent, the eddying gusts at times carrying with them blinding clouds of sand and even pebbles. On the desert in the calmest days of summer can often be seen tall columns of dust lifting their heads hundreds of feet in the air and borne along by miniature whirl-winds.

The course of these pillars of dust is generally in an onward sweep, as they seem like giants stalking the plain, but they occasionally take on a more complicated movement, and one observer tells of seeing twelve separate columns each revolving at great velocity on its own axis and all moving in a rotating circle which advanced across the desert from west to east with the speed of a swiftly moving railway train.

The phenomenon of the mirage is of frequent occurrence in Nevada. It is claimed that they are the most realistic on the stretch of desert in Humboldt County between Winnimucca and the Black Rock Mountains. Lakes appear suddenly before the traveler's eyes whose waters reflect the trees growing upon the shores, and when they are approached, suddenly vanish into thin air or move away until they melt into the mountain ranges and disappear.

It has been the misfortune of Nevada to be known abroad chiefly from the descriptions of alien writers, who have seen her, if at all, with unsympathetic eyes. They miss the green and hazy landscapes to which they have been accustomed, and with a morbid taste, have singled out her most unattractive features to dwell upon.

The first railroad which traversed the State did not select a scenic route and it passed over many miles of brown desert waste which is dreary and monotonous, and the traveler reaches the conclusion that this is but a fair sample of the entire picture.

But even this railroad belt, once so unattractive, is now flanked with green fields, and the land long considered arid and worthless is becoming more and more beautiful as it responds to the magic touch of agriculture.

Beyond on either side, out of the reach of the eyes of the people who are hurrying through the State to reach other destinations, can be found some of the grandest scenery in the United States.

There is a sublimity about its mountain ranges, some of which are snow-capped the year round, that is not found elsewhere, and when a real student of nature views them it is with feelings of wonder and delight that God's hand has fashioned so grandly in laying the rough ashlers of the world.

Even the deserts glow with beauty beneath the mellow sunshine and the pure atmosphere, and the picture painted in a key of gray and green never tires the eye.

At night the stars seem nearer to the sleeping world and the moon larger. In the vastness and the solitude one's soul draws nearer to the Creator, walking as in a waking dream.

Then when, as if by some wizardry of stage craft, the scene changes from calm to storm, the world seems blotted out until the lightning, rousing from its couch of clouds, cleaves the black curtain of the night, with its cimeter of flame and in a single instant reveals a thousand square miles of scenery which would baffle the painters of all time to reproduce. Here we learn that there is "one glory of the sun and another of the moon and stars."

DISCOVERY.

The earliest claim to the presence of white men in Nevada is based upon the tradition that some Franciscan monks came into the southern

part of Nevada as early as 1738 from Mexico for the purpose of doing missionary work among the Indians. There is nothing to show, however, that their efforts in behalf of Christianity were successful.

For a long time it was claimed that the first white man's habitation in Nevada was a log structure in Douglas County in the town of Genoa which was destroyed by fire.

The people of what is now Lincoln County dispute this claim, and point to an old adobe house which is still standing on the Stewart ranch which was built by the monks from Mexico. It is 16 by 30, and while the roof is gone the walls are still well preserved, and the existence of port holes, 18 inches square, indicate that its occupants had their differences with the Indians. It is also asserted that the monks left no signs of their habitations and that the adobe structure was erected by the Mormons.

The ranch in question was on what is now the outskirts of Las Vegas, and this spot was the oasis in the desert on the old Mormon trail to California. Here the travel-worn caravans stopped to rest and recuperate their jaded horses and oxen.

They left the arid plains behind where the skeletons of many animals and human beings whitened, and found the running water, the green grass and delightful shade of the ranch whose owner exemplified the lines of Homer.

"I will build me a house by the side of the road and be a friend to man."

At times trains would arrive, one on the heels of another, until as many as three hundred people would be camped there.

Some remained, attracted by the possibilities of mining and agriculture, and began the settlement of what is now known as Lincoln County.

The Potosi mine, forty-three miles from Las Vegas, was discovered by James Morgan who worked it for quicksilver and zinc. It produced lead, used to furnish bullets for hunting and Indian fighting.

When the Mormons settled in the southern part of what is now Nye County, they supposed it was a part of Utah. They found the fertile valley of Moapa, a veritable Valley of the Nile, and had it under a high state of cultivation when an edict of Brigham Young sent them back into Utah.

In the vicinity of Moapa is found curious evidence of the early his-

tory of the Indians by their picture-writing carved on the rocks. Near the outlet of the valley these pictures are the most numerous.

It is claimed that the first alfalfa ever planted in Nevada came from the Sandwich Islands and was put in the ground by E. S. McGinnis in 1865. He also cultivated figs, apricots and peaches. He is still living where he planted crops forty-eight years ago and is known as "Overland McGinnis."

Other settlers came into Nevada in 1825. Peter Skeen Ogden of the Hudson Bay Company was here in that year and also Jedediah Smith, an independent trapper and mountaineer. Ogden came into the country from Astoria and trapped along the Columbia until he reached the headwaters, of what is now known as the Owyhee river, about midsummer. The band headed by Ogden crossed the intervening country, and, reaching the Humboldt, named it the "Mary River," in honor of an Indian wife that had been picked up by one of the party shortly after they were joined by a company of trappers from the east headed by Bridges. The partisans of Smith claim that Ogden never saw the Humboldt, and the supporters of Ogden make the same assertion regarding Smith. It is generally supposed that Smith and his party worked their way down from the Yellowstone until they reached the Humboldt. They also by a queer coincidence named it the Mary River, this time after the Indian wife of Smith. They then proceeded southward through what is now the Walker River country, and by the pass of that name into California.

It seems immaterial which of the parties first reached the Humboldt. Some-one got there as early as 1825, the first settlers to follow the Franciscan monks, and made a second mile-stone in the history of the State. It seems a pity for the sake of both sentiment and tradition that a river twice named after different Indian women should not have been allowed to retain its vestal appellation.

CHAPTER II.

INDIANS OF NEVADA.

1825 TO 1913.

BY MAJOR G. W. INGALLS.

The first intercourse between the Whites and the Indians of which there is any authentic record, dates from 1825.

The American trappers, in their anxiety to get some of the valuable hunting grounds before the Hudson Bay Company's voyageurs could preempt them, sent out expeditions from St. Louis to the Far West. In 1825 one of the leaders of the expedition that explored the Great Salt Lake region, was Jedediah S. Smith, a New Yorker by birth, who after hunting around the lake, crossed over the great desert of sagebrush between the Humboldt River and Salt Lake, and trapped down the Humboldt, which he named Mary's River in honor of his Indian bride, and crossed over from the Humboldt Sink to the Carson River, and then up Churchill Canyon to the Walker River in Mason Valley. He followed the Walker River to its source and then went to the coast of the Pacific Ocean. This was in 1825. On his return he saw Mono Lake and is said to have found gold. His second trip through Nevada was made over the southern route through what is now Lincoln County. From southern California he returned to the Rocky Mountains by way of the Columbia River, accompanying Peter Ogden's party to the winter home of the trappers in Jackson's Hole, just south of Yellowstone Park. In 1853 the famous Bonneville party passed through Nevada on its way to California. The expedition's history is written by Washington Irving, who was a friend of Bonneville. Joseph Walker, a famous trapper and guide accompanied the expedition. It is supposed that this was the first party to follow the Truckee River route into California. This same year Kit Carson came into Nevada with Thomas McCoy's trappers. About 1841 the first emigrants passed through Nevada, comprising the Bartle-

son party from Independence, Mo., but the man who showed most prominently in this party was John Bidwell, the famous Californian.

The history of General John C. Fremont's explorations in the West is pretty well known, but we are especially interested in his second expedition, 1834-44. From Klamath Lake he turned south, and after a wearisome journey he came in sight of what he thus describes: "Beyond a defile between the mountains and filling up the lower space was a sheet of green water some twenty miles broad. It broke upon our eyes like the ocean. We camped opposite a very remarkable rock in the lake which attracted our attention for many miles. It rose according to our estimate about 600 feet above the water and presented a pretty exact outline of the pyramid of Cheops. This suggested a name for the lake and I called it "Pyramid Lake." This was written January 14, 1844. On the next day Fremont camped at the mouth of what he called Salmon Trout River and had a delightful trout dinner. From the bend of the River Wadsworth he turned toward the Carson, and still not liking the looks of the snow on the Sierra Nevada range, went on to the Walker River and followed that up to headwaters and finally crossed at one of the most difficult places he could have found. He left his wagons and more interesting than all, a small French howitzer, which had hindered him through all his journeying. This same gun had come very nearly wrecking the expedition at the outset, for the War Department wanted to know why he was taking a cannon into peaceable Spanish territory. Mrs. Fremont got the letter in St. Louis, and knowing its import, had dispatched a letter to her husband telling him to start at once without asking why. Like a good husband he did so, and Mrs. Fremont had her father, Senator Benton, explain matters at the capital. This gun was afterward brought to Carson City through the efforts of Dan de Quille-Wm. Wright, and finally became the property of Captain Pray and taken to Glenbrook, Nev., where it is so carefully preserved by someone that the Pray estate has never been able to get hold of it.

Fremont named Pyramid Lake; Humboldt River after Alexander von Humboldt, the great German scientist; Carson River after Christopher Carson; Walker River after Joseph Walker; Owens River after another guide; and he named Lake Tahoe-Bonpland after a famous French botanist. Other names in Nevada probably originated as follows: Washoe or Wassaw—Indian; Nevada—Spanish, snowy; Reno, after General Marcus

Reno; Lander after Colonel Frederick W. Lander of the United States Army; Lyon after Captain Robert Lyon of the pioneer army. The next published account of the Great Basin country is in the memoir of Lieutenant, now Brevet Major-General, Gouverneur K. Warren. In this memoir is a letter to General Warren from Robert Campbell, Esq., a well-known gentleman of Saint Louis, who was long connected with the fur trade and its operations in the tramontane regions of the West. In this letter Mr. Campbell gives verbatim the statement of Mr. James Bridger, corroborated by Mr. Samuel Tolleck, both Indian traders, to the effect that he, Bridger, was the first discoverer of Great Salt Lake, in the winters of 1824 and 1825.

"The stream on which they had thus fallen is called by some Mary's River, but is more generally known as Ogden's River, from Mr. Peter Ogden, an enterprising and intrepid leader of the Hudson Bay Company, who first explored it. It must be borne in mind that the Humboldt River constitutes a portion of the Great Basin system. Lieutenant Warren, in his memoir, page 36, says, "The party from the Hudson Bay Company, referred to in the postscript to Mr. Campbell's letter was under the enterprising leader, Mr. Peter Ogden, who discovered the Ogden's or Mary's River in 1828. One of Mr. Ogden's party took a woman for his wife from among the Indians found on this river, to whom the name of Mary was given. From this circumstance the stream was called Mary's River. It is also called Ogden's River, after its discoverer." Lieutenant Warren might with more propriety, we think, have said that the stream formerly was called Ogden's or St. Mary's River; but since the explorations of Fremont in 1845-'46 it has been known, by emigrants and others, entirely as the Humboldt River, the name Fremont gave it. On the map you send, I recognize my names of rivers, of Indian tribes, observations, Mary's or Maria's River, running southwest, ending in a long chain of flat lakes, never before on any map, and the record of the battle between my party and the Indians, when twenty-five were killed. This party clambered over the California range, were lost in it for twenty days, and entered the open locality to the west, not far from Monterey, where they wintered.

With regard to the Indians of the Grand Basin, Dr. Garland Hurt, the intelligent and brave Indian agent in Utah during the Mormon difficulty in 1857, 1858 and 1859, and the only civil officer connected with

the general government whom the Mormons could not drive out of their territory, has furnished Captain Simpson with a very interesting memoir. From this memoir it appears that the Indians of the Great Basin, including those of the valleys of Green and Grand Rivers, consist of two tribes; the Ute and the Sho-sho-nes or Snakes. The Sho-sho-nes Dr. Hurt divides into Snakes, Bannacks, To-si-witches, Go-sha-utes, and Cum-um-pahs, though he afterward classes the last two divisions as hybrid races between the Sho-sho-nes and the Utahs.

The Snakes are fierce and warlike in their habits, and inhabit the country bordering on Snake River, Bear River, Green River, and as far east as Wind River. They are well supplied with horses and firearms, and subsist principally by hunting.

The Go-Shoots, Dr. Hurt classes among the Sho-sho-nes; but according to Mr. George W. Bean, Captain Simpson's guide in the fall of 1858, who has lived in Utah ever since the Mormons entered this region, and has been frequently employed as interpreter among the Indians, they are the offspring of a disaffected portion of the Ute tribe that left their nation, about two generations ago, under their leader or chief, Go-ship, whence their name Go-ship-utes, since contracted into Go-shutes. Captain Simpson is disposed to believe that they are thus derived, from the fact that he noticed among them several Utes, who, while claiming that they belonged to the Utes proper, had intermarried with the Go-shoots and were living among them. The Py-utes, according to Major Dodge, their Indian agent in 1859, says "they numbered at that date between 6,000 and 7,000 souls. They inhabit Western Utah, from Oregon to New Mexico; their locations being generally in the vicinity of the principal rivers and lakes of the Great Basin, viz.: Humboldt, Carson, Walker, Truckee, Owen's Pyramid and Mono. They resemble in appearance, manners and customs the Delawares on our Missouri frontier, and with judicious management, and assistance from government, would in three years equal them in agriculture. Their chief in 1859 was Won-a-muc-ca—(the Giver), and it was a portion of this tribe under this chief, who had been engaged just previously in the massacres in western Utah. Their language resembles in some words the Sho-sho-ne. This tribe is frequently confounded with the Pah-utes, with which they show only a distant affinity. The Washoes, according to Major Dodge, numbered in 1859 about 900 souls, and inhabit the country along the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada,

from Honey Lake, on the north, to the Clara, the west branch of Walker's River, a distance of 150 miles. They are not inclined to agricultural pursuits, nor any other advancement toward civilization. They are destitute of all the necessities of life. In 1859 there was not one horse, pony, or mule in the nation. They are peaceable, but indolent. In the summer they wander around the shores of Lake Bigler, those in the Sierra Nevada, principally subsisting on fish. In the winter they lie around in the artemisia (wild sage) of their different localities, subsisting on a little grass-seed. The Indian vocabulary appended to Captain Simpson's report shows that they are a distinct tribe, and in no way assimilate with the Utes, Sho-sho-nes, or Py-utes.

"The Earth and Man," to wit, that the contour, relief, and relative position of the crust of the earth are intimately connected with the development of man. These Indians live in a barren, on account of its altitude, a cold climate; and the consequence is they are obliged to live entirely on rabbits, rats, lizards, snakes, insects, rushes, roots, grass-seed, etc. They are more filthy than beasts, and live in habitations which, summer and winter, are nothing more than circular inclosures, about four feet high, without roof, made of the artemisia or sagebrush, or branches of the cedar, thrown around on the circumference of a circle, and which serve only to break off the wind. As the temperature in winter must at times be as low as zero, it will be perceived they must suffer considerably. Anything like a covered lodge, or wick-e-up of any sort, to protect them from rain, cold, or snow, Captain Simpson did not see among them. Their dress, summer and winter, is a rabbit-skin tunic or cape, which comes down to just below the knee; and seldom have they leggings or moccasins. The children at the breast were perfectly naked, and this at a time when overcoats were required by Captain Simpson's party. The women frequently appeared naked down to the waist, and seemed unconscious of any immodesty in thus exposing themselves.

The Paiute, Washo, Tribal Synonymy.—Hogopagoni—Shoshoni name, "rush arrow people" (hogap, a small water reed; paba, "arrow.") Numa—proper tribal name, signifying "people" or "Indians"; the same name is also used for themselves by the Shoshoni and Comanche. Pai yu chimu—Hopi name. Pai yu tsi—Navaho name. Palu—Washoe name. Paiute or Piute—popular name, variously rendered "true pai Ute" or "water pah Ute"—pronounced among themselves Paiuti.

NOTE.—The northern bands of the Paiute are frequently included with Shoshoni and others under the name of Snakes, while the others are often included with various Californian tribes under the collective name of Diggers.

Sketch and Characteristics of the Paiutes.—The Paiute belong to the great Shoshonean stock and occupy most of Nevada, together with adjacent portions of southwestern Utah, northwestern Arizona and northwestern and southeastern California. The Pahvant and Gosiute on their eastern border are frequently classed as Paiute, while the Chemeheuvi, associated with the Walapai in Arizona, are but a southern offshoot of the Paiute and speak the same language. With regard to the Indians of Walker River and Pyramid Lake reservations, who constitute the main body of those commonly known as Paiute, Powell claims that they are not Paiute, but another tribe which he calls Paviotso. He says: "The names by which the tribes are known to white men and the department give no clue to the relationship of the Indians. For example, the Indians in the vicinity of the reservation on the Muddy—and the Indians on the Walker River and Pyramid Lake reservations are called Pai original or Pah water Utes, but the Indians know only those on the Muddy by that name, while those on the other two reservations are known as Paviotsoes, and speak a very different language, but closely allied to, if not identical with, that of the Bannocks" (Comr. 45). The Ghost dance originated among these Paviotsoes Indians in the neighborhood of Walker River, at Mason Valley, and for convenience of reference we shall speak of them under their popular title of Paiute, without asserting its correctness.

The different small bands have little political coherence and there is no recognized head chief. The most influential chiefs among them in modern times have been Winnemucca, who died a few years ago, and Natchez. Wovoka's leadership is spiritual, not political. The Sides Indians of Walker River and Pyramid Lake reservations claim the Bannock as their cousins, they may be safely estimated at from 7,000 to 8,000 and are thought to be increasing. In 1893 those on reservations, all in Nevada, were reported to number, at Walker River, 563; at Pyramid Lake, 494; at Duck Valley (Western Shoshone agency, in connection with the Shoshoni), 209. Nevada Indians off reservations were estimated to number 6,815, nearly all of whom were Paiute and Shoshone.

As a people the Paiutes are peaceable, moral, industrious, and are highly

commended for their good qualities by those who have had the best opportunities for judging. While apparently not as bright in intellect as the prairie tribes, they appear to possess more solidity of character. By their willingness and efficiency as workers, they have made themselves necessary to the white farmers and have been enabled to supply themselves with good clothing and many of the comforts of life, while on the other hand they have steadily resisted many of the vices of civilization. Many of them are employed as laborers on the farms of white men in all seasons, but they are especially serviceable during the time of harvesting and haymaking. Aside from their earnings among the whites, they derive their subsistence from the fish of the lakes, jack rabbits and small game of the sage plains and mountains, and from pinon nuts and other seeds which they grind into flour for bread. Their ordinary dwelling is the wikiup or small rounded hut of tule rushes over a framework of poles, with the ground for a floor and the fire in the center and almost entirely open at the top.

The Washo.—Associated with the Paiute are the Washo Indians, or Wa Sui, as they call themselves, a small tribe of about 900, and having no affinity, so far as known, with any other Indians. *They occupy the mountain region in the extreme western portion of Nevada, about Washoe and Tahoe lakes and the towns of Carson and Virginia City and Reno. They formerly extended farther east and south, but have been driven back by the Paiute, who conquered them, reducing them to complete subjection and forbidding them the use of horses, a prohibition which was rigidly enforced until within a few years. Thus broken in spirit, they became mere hangers-on of the white settlements on the opening up of the mines. They have been utterly neglected by the government and have never been included in any treaty.

Shoshonean Family.—The extent of country occupied renders this one of the most important of the linguistic families of the North American Indians, and may thus be described: On the north, the southwest part of Montana, the whole of Idaho, south of latitude 45-30, with southeast Oregon, south of the Blue Mountains, west and central Wyoming, west and central Colorado with a strip of New Mexico and the whole of northwestern Texas, were Shoshonean. All of Utah, a section of Arizona, the whole of Nevada, save the small Washoe strip of country, was held by Shoshonean tribes. The northeastern part of California, also a wide sec-

* Their dialect is quite different from that of any other Nevada Indians.

tion of the Eastern Sierras, and along the Pacific Coast of California. Also the Hopi Indians of northern Arizona. Bannocks, Utes and Comanches, are branches of ancient Shoshonean tribes. To the west of the Rocky Mountains, the Shoshoneans are of different types to those Indians east of the mountains. The latter were Buffalo hunters and they had horses in abundance and the Indians were of a warlike character. The Indians west had, as a rule, a barren country, largely destitute of big game. The original inhabitants were forced to subsist on rabbits and other small game, including fish, mice, rats and gophers and to a considerable extent on roots and the seeds of wild grasses. This mode of life gave this latter branch of the Nevada and California Indians, the name of Diggers. Large supplies of the roots referred to were dug in the summer and fall of the year and buried for the winter's supply of food. By many writers these tribes are unjustly represented as closely approaching the brute creations in their mode of life. But in most respects this statement is untrue. They made and used bows and arrows, manufactured a very fine variety of basketry. Some of these tribes are famous for the unique style and variety of their pottery. A large number of these Indians, including Piutes, Shoshoneans and Washoes of Nevada, Gosi Utes of northeastern Nevada, Chemeheuviers of northern Arizona and western Nevada, the Washoes and Paviotoso tribes have become successful farmers. (See Statistical Tables on Farming, supporting these statements.) 1—Hopi. 11—Plateau Shoshonean (a) Ute; Chemehueviers, Kerraitsu, Piutes; Panament, Ute and some of the Bannocks; Shoshonean Comanche; Commanchi Gosi Ute. Shoshoni (c) Mono Paviotoo; Mono Paviotoo—Part of Bannocks and East Oregon; Southern California Shoshoneans (Consult Kroeber Shoshonean dialects of California).—University of California Pub. Am. Archæology.

Bonniville in 1832 and later found the Shoshones or Snake Tribes living in tipis and sagebrush shelters without roofs, merely half circles of brush, behind which they obtained imperfect protection from wind and snow. There were many dialects among the Shoshoneans corresponding to the greater or less degree of isolation of the several tribes. They presented no essential difference and were all mutually intelligible.

Mr. J. Forney, superintendent of Indian Affairs in Utah, classes and numbers the various tribes and bands of Indians in Utah as follows:

Sho-sho-nes, or Snakes.....	4,500
Bannacks	500
Uinta Utes	1,000
Spanish Fork and San Pete farms.....	900
Pah-vant (Utes)	700
Pey-utes (South)	2,200
Pey-utes (West)	6,000
Elk Mountain Utes	2,000
Washoe of Honey Lake	700
	<hr/>
	18,500

The Sho-sho-nes claim the northeastern portion of the territory for about 400 miles west and from 100 to 125 miles south from the Oregon line. The Utes claim the balance of the territory." (Pres. Mes. and Doc., 1859-'60, Part 1.)

These Go-shoots are few in number, not more, probably, than 200 or 300, and reside principally in the grassy valleys west of Great Salt Lake, along and in the vicinity of Captain Simpson's routes, as far as the Un-go-we-ah Range.

In addition to the Indians just mentioned as inhabiting the Great Basin, should be mentioned the Pyute and the Washoe tribes, which, not being within Dr. Hunt's jurisdiction, were not included by him.

The fear of capture causes these people to live some distance from the water, which they bring in a sort of jug made of willow tightly platted together and smeared with fir-gum. They also make their bowls, seed and root-baskets in the same way; a species of manufacture quite common among all the Indian tribes, and which Captain Simpson saw in his explorations of 1849, in the greatest perfection, among the Navajos and Pueblo Indians of New Mexico. Captain Simpson describes in his report a visit to one of their kants, as they call their habitations, as follows:

"Just at sunset, I walked out with Mr. Faust to see some of these Go-shoots at home. We found, about one and a half miles from camp, one of their habitations, which consisted only of some cedar branches disposed around the periphery of a circle about ten feet in diameter, and in such a manner as to break off, to the height of about four feet, the wind from the prevailing direction. In this inclosure were a number of men, women and children. Rabbit-skins were the clothing generally; the poor infant at the breast having nothing on it. In the center was a brass kettle, suspended to a three-legged crotch or tripod. In this they were boiling the meat we had given them. An old woman superintended the cooking, and at the same time was engaged in dressing an antelope-skin. When the soup was done, the fingers of each of the inmates were stuck into the pot and sucked. While this was going on, an Indian, entirely naked with the exception of his breech-cloth,

came in from his day's hunt. His largest game was the rat, of which he had quite a number stuck around under the girdle about his waist. These he threw down, and they were soon put by the old woman on the fire and the hair scorched. This done, she rubbed off the crisped hair with a pine knot, and then, thrusting her finger into the paunch of the animal, pulled out the entrails. Pressing out the offal, she threw the animals, entrails and all, without further cleaning, into the pot."

Great Salt Lake City, Utah Territory,

May 2, 1855.

Hon. Geo. W. Manypenny,

Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Washington City, D. C.

Sir:

Permit me to call your attention to some facts which I do not feel myself altogether at liberty to remain silent upon.

At the last semi-annual conference of the Latter Day Saints, a large number of missionaries were nominated to go and preach to the Indians, or Lamonites, as they are here called. Since my arrival in this Territory, I have become satisfied that these saints have, either accidentally or purposely, created a distinction in the minds of the Indian tribes of this Territory between the Mormons and the people of the United States that cannot act otherwise than prejudicial to the interests of the latter; and what, sir, may we expect of these missionaries? There is perhaps not a tribe on the continent that will not be visited by one or more of them. I suspect their first object will be to teach these wretched savages that they are the rightful owners of the American soil, and that it has been wrongfully taken from them by the whites, and that the Great Spirit has sent the Mormons among them to help them recover their rights. The character of many of those who have been nominated is calculated to confirm this view of the case. They embrace a class of rude and lawless young men, such as might be regarded as a curse to any civilized community. But I do not wish to excite prejudice and encourage feelings of hostility against these people; on the contrary, I think such a course would be unwise and impolitic. They always have, and ever will thrive by persecution. They know well the effect it has had upon them, and consequently crave to be persecuted.

It is due to many of them, however, to say that they are honest in the belief that they are the only Christians on earth, and that God is about to redeem the world from sin, and establish his millenium.

It is possible, too, that many of them are loyal in their feelings to the United States, but perhaps this cannot be said of many of their leaders. But time will convince many of them of their errors. Many of their prophecies must come true in a few years, or doubt will take the place of sanguine hope, and will do more to relax their energies and weaken their strength than anything else would do at this time. My object in writing is to suggest that the attention of all superintendents, agents, sub-agents, and all other loyal citizens residing or sojourning in the Indian country be called to this subject, that the conduct of these Mormon missionaries be subjected to the strictest scrutiny, and that the 13th and 14th sections of the "Act to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes, and to preserve peace on the frontier," be properly enforced.

In proof of the fact above stated, I would say that I have had great difficulty in procuring an interpreter, though there are many persons in the Territory who speak the Indian language. But they were all nominated as missionaries, and I was forced to the humiliating necessity of imploring the clemency of his excellency Brigham Young to permit one of them to remain with me. I never saw any people in my life who were so completely under the influence of one man.

Very respectfully,

GARLAND HUNT,
Indian Agent for Utah.
Office of Indian Affairs,
August 13, 1855.

Hon. R. McClelland,
Secretary of the Interior,
Washington, D. C.

Sir:

In the letter from this office to you of the 10th ultimo, transmitting a copy of a letter from Agent Hunt respecting the contemplated movements of Mormon missionaries among the Indians of Utah and the Indian tribes generally, it was my purpose to have made the subject embrace the Indians generally, although, by oversight, it was confined to the tribes in Utah, for the agent states that "there is perhaps not a tribe on the continent that will not be visited by one or more of these missionaries."

As the subject was deemed important, it was presented for your consideration and advice with a view to the soundness of the policy of instructing the superintendents, agents and sub-agents throughout the Indian country to watch with an eye of vigilance the movements of the Mormons; and in case their efforts, under the guise of missionary labors, should tend to create a spirit of insubordination adverse to the interests of the Government, that they immediately notify the Department.

The intercourse act of 1834 provides, section 13th, "that if any citizen or other person, residing within the United States or the territory thereof, shall send any talk, speech, message, or letter, to any Indian nation, tribe, chief, or individual, with an intent to produce a contravention or infraction of any treaty or other law of the United States, or to disturb the peace and tranquillity of the United States, he shall forfeit and pay the sum of two thousand dollars"; and the last clause of section 13 reads as follows, viz., "or in case any citizen or other person shall alienate, or attempt to alienate, the confidence of any Indian or Indians from the government of the United States, he shall forfeit the sum of one thousand dollars."

The suspicions which the agent throws upon the character of those Mormons engaged as missionaries are such as may make it necessary, as a precautionary step to preserve the harmony of our relations with the Indian tribes, to instruct the superintendents, agents, and sub-agents to scrutinize the conduct of Mormons and all others suspected of having a design to interrupt the peace and tranquillity between the Indians and the government.

CHARLES E. MIX,
Acting Commissioner of Indian Affairs.
November 30, 1857.

EXTRACT FROM REPORT OF SECRETARY OF THE INTERIOR.

The scanty information we have in regard to the Indians of Utah is not reliable or satisfactory. It is much to be feared that they have been tampered with, and their feelings towards the United States alienated to such an extent by the Mormons that in any difficulties with the latter a large portion of them may be found on the side of those enemies of our government and laws. Such a state of things has been apprehended by this office for some time, as will be seen from the accompanying copies of reports upon the subject from the Acting Commissioner of Indian Affairs to your predecessor in 1855.

FROM KELLEY'S HISTORY OF NEVADA, 1863. MORMON INFLUENCE AMONG INDIANS.

A regular system was adopted or was recognized by the Mormon Church leaders and strenuous efforts were put forth to drive out all Gentiles or non-Mormon

citizens from Western Utah or Nevada Territory, who had settled in the territory, and to deter others from coming in, and the Indian tribes were often stirred up to hostilities and encouraged to depredate upon the defenceless immigrants and often to plunder and murder.

In May, 1859, there was perpetrated an Indian Massacre at Williams Station, sixty miles below Genoa, where four whites lost their lives. The deed was, no doubt, provoked by the grossest outrages previously committed at that place upon the Indians. Several innocent whites were slain by Indians. A number of prudent and humane old settlers proposed a meeting with the Indians and try to determine who were to blame and whether the killing was done with their knowledge and who were the guilty parties. The proposition for a meeting was overruled by the majority of whites and an indiscriminate massacre followed. For three months hostilities of such a state of terror prevailed which prevented all successful prospecting for mines and seriously hindered immigration and settlement.

MORMON INFLUENCE WITH INDIANS.

Southeast Nevada Agency,
Moapa River Reserve, September 11, 1875.

Hon. Edward P. Smith,
Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Washington, D. C.

Sir:

While it has afforded me much pleasure to thus record the temporal prosperity, exemplary conduct, and good health of this people, it is to be regretted that so little has hitherto been done in educating them. I feel in full unison and sympathy with the desires of the Government in this respect, and am anxious to see them reclaimed, enlightened, and taught the words of eternal life. To do this, we must first educate them; first prepare the ground, and then sow the seed; first educate, then Christianize; in fact, intelligence is the very basis of Christianity. I have a case in point, which strongly illustrates the truth of this assertion.

During last summer the Mormon Priesthood in Saint George, Utah, gathered together at that place some two or three hundred Indians of the surrounding tribes whom they proceeded to baptize with all the pomp, ceremony and display calculated to make an impression on the Indian. They even had an artist on hand who produced a very fine and, no doubt, a faithful picture of the scene. The Mormon bishop in the center, up to his waist in water; hundreds of dusky forms all around him, while a vast concourse of saints looked approvingly on. These pictures were freely distributed among the Indians a day or two after the event. Now mark the sequel. Every Indian who participated in this farce thinks he is a better Mormon today than Brigham Young himself, and that the ceremony alluded to has clothed him with a sort of armor against any responsibility which he may incur for such trifling matters as horse stealing, or other petty thefts. If he be caught in an overt act, he proudly exclaims, "Me good Mormon Indian; me heap wash." Comment is superfluous. I have only mentioned these facts as illustrative of my well-grounded conviction that to successfully reach the understanding there must first be the capacity to comprehend.

A very large proportion of the Indians under my charge speak the English language; the younger portion of them quite intelligibly. These are anxious, nay, eager, to be educated. Let us by all means assist such a laudable desire. During my predecessor's term of office, a school was maintained for six months, but was discontinued for want of funds. During that time, however, the boys were prompt in their attendance, and their progress wonderful, all of them being able to read the easy lessons of Wilson or McGuffey's first reader. I propose in a few days that these boys shall go back to school to their old teacher, for whom they seem to

entertain great affection, and whose reports will show in detail the progress made. This school is located at Saint Thomas, my former headquarters, and is well supplied with books, charts, furniture, etc.

Very respectfully,

A. J. BARNES,
United States Indian Agent.

United States Indian Agent Garland Hunt, of Salt Lake City, reports to Supt. Brigham Young on the Nevada Indians, September, 1856, as follows:

The Indians about Stony Point are called To-sow-witches (White Knives), and derive their name from a beautiful flint found in the mountains of that region, and formerly used by them as a substitute for knives in dressing their food. We saw but few of them on our outward trip, except a party of about fifty whom we met on the evening of the 15th, and who said they lived north, and had come over to trade with the emigrants. They were well supplied with guns and horses, and were anxious to trade for ammunition.

At the meadows, and about the sink of the Humboldt, we met in all some two hundred, belonging to the Py-ute tribe, whom we found in the same degraded condition as the Diggers; but what is most strange, the most of them speak the English language sufficiently well to be understood. It is evident that the most of them have lived more or less in California, and have fled from thence, preferring indolence, with all its privations, to the habits of civilized life. We learned that there were about four hundred of this same tribe camped in the mountains north of the sink, whom the Indians desired to send for, but I declined waiting for them, as the grass was poor, and we were anxious to reach the Carson river. We arrived at Ragtown, on the Carson, on the morning of the 23d, having travelled all night, when we saw about eight more Py-utes, who are of the same grade of those we met at the sink, and on the 25th, 25th and 27th we met other bands of this tribe, as we passed up the river, amounting in all to some one hundred and fifty. The most of those Indians have evidently once lived in California, which accounts for their knowledge of the English language. Many of them have become domesticated, and are employed by the settlers of the valley as herdsmen and laborers on their farms. There is another small tribe called the Was-saws, who live mostly on the Sierra Nevada mountains, but claim the Carson as their land, and have made several attempts to collect rent from the settlers, but, being not very numerous, have found a mild course the better policy.

We reached the settlements in Carson on the 28th day of June, having been forty-three days out, and remained until the 30th of July, when we started on our return trip, traveling by the way of Warsaw and Truckee valleys, in which we met several small parties of the Py-utes. We reached the meadows at the sink of the Humboldt on the 6th of August, when we again met some two hundred or more of the Py-utes, busily engaged harvesting the grease-seed, a species of grass somewhat resembling the millet in size and taste of its grain, growing in great abundance upon the shores of the lakes after its waters recede in summer. This seed constitutes an important article of food with them, and large quantities are stored in deposits under ground for winter. We again saw but few Indians after leaving the meadows, until we passed Stony Point, but learned from emigrants, whom we met almost hourly, that they had become exceedingly treacherous, provoking open hostilities by attacking them both by day and night. We were also told that a large amount of money had been seen among them, consisting of five, ten, and twenty-dollar pieces of gold, and that the bodies of three white persons had been

found and buried about fourteen miles below Gravelly Ford. But we camped within two or three miles of where this murder should have been committed, on the night of the 14th of August, where some one hundred and fifty of the To-sow-witch band were also camped, and with all diligence and stratagem that I could use I could find no money with them, nor could get any clue to the murder of the emigrants. A large number of emigrant trains, with some two thousand head of cattle and horses, had been camped for the night upon the same bottom. The Indians of this band appeared quiet, which rendered an incident that occurred at about 9 p. m. the more mysterious. An attack was made upon one of the emigrant camps (Mr. Thompson's, of Missouri); three shots were fired in quick succession, one of the balls killing a fine mare at the stern of the wagon, the other two passing through the cover of the wagon, without further damage. This feat was so daring and unexpected that Mr. Thompson could not believe it to be Indians, and as they had had a difficulty with some robbers on Raft river he supposed that they might still be in pursuit of them. But as I drove out of camp next morning I discovered the tracks of three Indian ponies, which I followed into the cañon, about two miles above Gravelly Ford, where I came suddenly upon a band of about fifty fierce warriors, who, on seeing me, sprung instantly for their guns and horses and in a moment they were ready for battle. I requested my interpreter to speak to them, when two of them who had seen me before dropped their guns and came running to shake hands.

We moved about half a mile below them, when in a short time they were all in camp. They acknowledged that three of them had fired into the emigrant camp the night before, but said that the cook belonging to that company had struck one of them upon the head with a stick when he asked him for bread. I noticed that he was slightly bruised on the side of the face, which showed plainly that the cook or some one else had been taking too much liberty with these lords of the soil. The most of them were from the north, and said they had visited the road to trade; but their eagerness for ammunition induced the emigrants to withhold it from them, and this appears to be the cause of the difficulty. I learned that Nin-ah-tu-cah, the old chief, was camped about twenty miles up the river, and told them that I desired to go to his camp that night, whereupon five of them offered their service to go with us, as they said it would be dark before we could reach his camp, which I accepted. We did not find the chief until noon the next day, when I told him the many complaints that were made against his people. He said that some of his men were tobuck (mad), but he had done all he could to keep their hearts good. He thought that the emigrants were to blame some, for I had told them the summer before that the Shoshonees and Americans were to be friendly, and treat each other as brothers; but now, when his people were starving for meat, the Americans would not sell them any powder. He said if we were friends, he did not understand why we could not trade. He and some of his men followed us on foot about twelve miles to our camp, at night, to talk, as they said; but, perhaps, to get something to eat. I was informed that a band, under a chief named Sho-cup-ut-see, had undertaken to farm at Haws' ranch this season, and was told by the Indians upon the road that they had made shaunts (plenty) of wheat, potatoes and squashes. Mr. Peter Haws informed me that they had planted about fifteen acres, and had done it principally with some hoes, which I sent them last spring, he having furnished them their seed.

We continued to hear of depredations being committed in Thousand Spring and Raft River valleys, and about the junction of the roads; but after leaving the Humboldt we encountered the same difficulty in seeing the Indians of this region that we had the summer before. Except the chief, Setoke, who came to us in Thousand Spring valley, and told us the particulars of Murray's Massacre, who he said was killed about two weeks prior to our passing on the outward trip by the

same band of Indians whom we met in the canyon, we saw none till we reached the settlements; yet it is upon this part of the road, between the Humboldt and Bear rivers, that the Indians have been most troublesome this season. We scarcely met a train who had not had some of their property stolen, or been fired upon while on this section of the road. One man (Mr. Stratton, from Missouri) lost seventy-two head of cattle and a mule, and had himself and one of his men wounded in an attempt to recover them. From an estimate which I made from the reports of different trains, no less than three hundred head of cattle, besides some sixty or seventy head of horses and mules, have been stolen or destroyed upon this section of the road this season. A part of the road here lies in Oregon territory, and the country over which it passes is neutral ground between the Banacks, Snakes and Cum-i-um-has, and the most reckless and unprincipled men of each of these tribes haunt the road here during the season of emigration for the purposes of raping upon the defenceless traveler. If government should not take steps to check their growing insolence, their success will encourage others to adopt their practices, and in a short time, perhaps in another season, their merciless deeds may exceed anything known to the history of Indian barbarity.

But it is unreasonable to expect a complete and perfect reformation in these wild nomadic creatures in so short a period, even admitting that they are susceptible of civilization. The history of the Indian is one of strange mystery, and his mental and physical character not less so. The past to him moves swiftly on to oblivion, limiting his knowledge of things to the country in which he lives. The deeds of his sires are but dimly seen in the few traditions that descend to him, and, like objects imperfectly reflected through the twilight of evening, are soon lost in the sable curtains that follow. That he is a being susceptible of civilization, and, when civilized, capable of erecting, sustaining and perpetuating the institutions of civilized man, is a desideratum upon the solution of which depends the future policy of government towards him. For it may yet be shown that the continued presence of a superior race is necessary to direct and control his energies, in order that he may enjoy the benefits of an enlightened government.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GARLAND HUNT.

His Excellency Brigham Young,

Governor and ex-officio Superintendent Indian Affairs, Utah.

Warren Mason, United States Indian Agent, August 14, 1861, reports on Washoe and Pai-Utes to Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Governor J. W. Nye:

The Washoe tribe have no reservation, or rather none on which they can reside. I understand that the Pyramid lake reservation was set off and intended for both the Pah-Utes and the Washoes. That idea is entirely impracticable. They are not friendly and cannot live together, and it would result in trouble and incessant broil. The Washoes roam over the valley of the Carson and Washoe, not interfering to any considerable extent with any of the pursuits of the whites, and subsist on such productions and insects as are of no value to the whites. This agency, as established, only included, as I have been informed, the tribes of the Pah-Utes and Washoes. It is now claimed that many of the tribes of the Shoshones and Nannacks are within the jurisdiction of this Territory. I have been unable to ascertain where the eastern boundary of the Territory is, any further than the organic law indicates.

Office of Indian Agent,
Carson Valley Agency, August 13, 1861.

Sir: I have the honor to submit the following report in reply to the letter under date June 21, 1861, addressed to you by Charles E. Mix, Esq., Acting Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and by you transmitted to me July 13.

First, there are but two tribes within the limits of this agency, viz., the Pah-Utes and the Washoes. Secondly, the Pah-Utes number 7,000 souls; 3,600 of which are females and 3,400 males; the Washoes number 550, the sexes are about equal, if anything the women predominate. Thirdly, the wealth of the Pah-Utes consists of about twelve hundred ponies, worth forty dollars each; the Washoes have no property of any kind. Fourthly, they have no schools. Fifthly, there are no missionaries or religious societies within the limits of this agency.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

WARREN WASSON,
Acting Indian Agent, Carson Valley Agency.

His Excellency James W. Nye,
Governor and ex-officio Superintendent of Indian Affairs,
Carson City, Nevada Territory.

As regards the Washoe tribes, I see no other resource than to aid them with provisions through the winter. They are a most miserable people—in fact, in point of intelligence or instinct, but one remove from the brutes. They have learned that the great chief or captain at Washington, through the lesser captain here, must feed them, or help to do so at least. There is great justice in this request. The streams in which they formerly fished are now all spoiled for that purpose by the operations of the miners and the washing of the ores and metals. They are indeed most all diverted from their original courses, or dammed so frequently that the fish have disappeared from them. Lake Bigler, lying in the country of the Washoes, and from which they formerly obtained large quantities of the best kind of fish, is now taken possession of by the whites, and has become a watering place, to which large numbers from this Territory and California resort, and from which this poor tribe are virtually excluded. The hills and plains over which roamed plenty of game are now occupied by the whites, and the game has fled, like the Indians, from their presence. Their chief food in the short summer which we have is a large bug or cricket and a weed called tule, which disappears when snow or frost appears.

There are but two tribes of Indians within the limits of this agency, namely, the Pah-Utes and the Washoes. The Pah-Utes tribe numbers about six thousand souls, and are now increasing; the sexes being about equally divided. They occupy a strip of country about two hundred miles in width, extending along the western boundary of the Territory from the northern to the southern line. They are the most virtuous, temperate, and warlike of the two tribes, and of all Indians I am acquainted with, the most susceptible of acquiring the arts of civilized life. I would respectfully make the following suggestions, with a view of the improvement of their condition.

Carson, July 13, 1861.—I have also to suggest that the agent be provided with a medicine chest, containing such simple remedies as their diseases require. I have heretofore been in the habit of furnishing them medicines at my own expense, and my prescriptions having been attended with great success among them they will expect medicines of whoever resides among them hereafter. The Washoes number about five hundred souls, and are rapidly diminishing, being located in the immediate vicinity of the whites. They have no property whatever, and seem to have very little inclination to acquire any. They however behave themselves very well,

considering their proximity to the whites. They live along Lake Bigler and the headwaters of Carson, Walker and Truckee rivers, and in Long and Sierra valleys, which last is in the state of California.

WARREN WASSON,
Acting U. S. Indian Agent.

His Excellency Gov. James W. Nye,
Superintendent Indian Affairs for Nevada.
July 13, 1861.

In August, 1832, Milton Sublett, with Joe Miller, of Oregon, and a company of trappers camped on the headwaters of the Humboldt. The following year Captain B. L. E. Bonneville started an expedition of forty men (Mrs. F. F. Victor places the number at 118; see "Mountain and Forest," by that authoress, pages 143 and 144) under Joseph Walker, from the Green River Valley, to explore and trap the country west from Salt Lake to the Pacific Ocean, Meek being one of the party. Kit Carson was not one of them. He had been seriously wounded a couple of months prior to this in an encounter with the Black Feet Indians, and later in the season trapped the Humboldt down to its sink. Consequently, the oft-repeated assertion that he discovered the Carson River in 1833, is untrue. The company made its way slowly down the Humboldt, trapping as it went, until the curiosity of the natives had gradually overcome their fears of the whites. Their numbers increased in the vicinity of, but at what they considered, a safe distance from, the camp and line of the strangers' advance. At night the more daring would occasionally steal into camp and carry off some trifling article that seemed to them a treasure of priceless value.

Their petty larceny proclivities, combined with their constantly increasing numbers, eventually aroused the suspicion of Walker, who claimed, as justification of what followed, to have feared a meditated attack.

Washington Irving, in his account of this expedition, says:

At length, one day they came to the banks of a stream emptying into Ogden's river (Humboldt), which they were obliged to ford. Here a great number of Shoshones were posted on the opposite bank. Persuaded that they were there with hostile intent, they advanced upon them, leveled their rifles, and killed twenty-five (the number killed is placed at seventy-five by same authoress in same book, "Mountain and Forest, see page 146) of them upon the spot. The rest fled to a short distance, then halted and turned about, howling and whining like wolves and uttering the most piteous wailings. The trappers chased them in every direction; the poor wretches made no defense, but fled with terror; neither does it appear from the account of the boasted victors that a weapon had been

wielded or a weapon launched by the Indians throughout the affair. We feel perfectly convinced that the poor savages had no hostile intention, but had merely gathered together through motives of curiosity.

A member of Walker's company, one morning, found some of his traps missing and swore that he would have the life of the first Indian he met. Soon after he chanced to see a couple fishing along the margin of the river, unconscious of approaching danger, when he deliberately raised his rifle and fired at one of them, who sank to the earth as his death-cry rang out over the valley. When the hunters reached the sink of the Humboldt, they struck across the country towards the west. Arriving at Pyramid Lake, they followed the Truckee River up into the Sierra Nevada Mountains, and from thence passed across to the Sacramento, following nearly the same route now traversed by the Central Pacific Railroad. After the departure of Walker's party, there was no more slaughter of Indians for the ensuing seventeen years, although numerous expeditions passed through Nevada, culminating in 1840-'50 in a tidal wave of whites from over the plains that passed down the western slope, a deluge upon the golden plains of California.

The passage of emigrants through the country, among whom were many that were reckless, and some who thought that the reputation of having killed an Indian would transform them into heroes, resulted in the slaughter of some straggling Shoshones along the Humboldt in 1849. Several instances of the kind occurred, where they were shot in retaliation for real or fancied aggressions. In 1850 this tribe, or portions of it, commenced a series of depredations that lasted until the close of 1863.

In June, 1850, a train from Joliet, Illinois, among whom was Capt. Robert Lyon, who relates that while camped at a point near where Elko now is, they lost one of their party, who was shot through the heart with an arrow while on picket duty. An ineffectual attempt was made to stampede the horses, but three of the animals that were running loose fell into the hands of the Indians. The next day the man was buried near Gravelly Ford, and the emigrants pursued their way. About twenty miles from the ford they came upon another train of seven wagons and twelve men that had no stock, all of it having been stampeded and driven off, and they were forced to burn their wagons and go on foot the balance of the way to California. Later the same season another train was

served in the same way, all its stock being taken; but with the assistance of others, among whom chanced to be several mountaineers, pursuit of the Shoshones was made under the leadership of one—Warner—resulting in a surprisal of the Indians, the killing of some thirty of them, and the recovery of the stock. This put a stop to trouble that season.

Washoe Raids.—In the summer of 1852, a man who kept a station on the overland road at a point near the present site of Empire, came up to Eagle Station and informed those stopping there that a band of Washoes on the east side of the river, near that place, had in their possession several American horses that he supposed, of course, they had no right to. It was immediately determined by all to go down and take the animals away from the Indians. The whites, under the leadership of Pearson, a noted Indian fighter, consisted of Frank Hall, now of Carson, his brother, W. L. Hall, of Esmeralda County, the stationkeeper, and a man named Cady. They found the Washoes with little trouble but failed to discover the American stock. They found, also, that the squaws were taking the unnecessary camp equipages of the band up the mountain to the east. This looked like business, and when a body of about sixty warriors with their paint on, advanced upon them, matters assumed a decidedly hostile appearance. Pearson, the leader, decided that there were too many to justify risking a fight, and with two of his fellows "lit out." Frank Hall and Cady concluded to await the approach of the enemy and "play the friendly dodge," which they did by distributing their small stock of tobacco among them. Of course the Indians did not object to the gifts, but, after accepting them, ordered the donors to hunt their eyrie at the base of the mountain in the west, and they hunted.

A few days later Cady was riding along a trail not far from where Dayton now is and overtook an Indian, and like a brave man, deliberately shot him. In 1852 the Indians made many raids upon the stock in Carson Valley. In retaliation the whites captured a couple of the tribe and brought them into the Mormon Station as hostages for a return of the stolen property. One of the captives was a powerful man, dressed in a full buckskin suit, and the other was a mere lad, some sixteen years of age, who dressed as nature had clothed him. Several days passed and nothing was heard from the lost animals; when one morning the larger Indian was let walk out a little way by himself, and he suddenly made a dash for freedom. He scattered his garments as he went, and, naked as

he was born, bounded like a frightened stag away toward the mountains. The guard, named —— Terry, had in a careless way leaned his gun against the stockade, and was probably ten yards away from it when the warrior started; but in a moment he had the formidable rifle in his grasp and, taking a long, deliberate aim, fired. As the whip-like report broke upon the morning stillness the runner leaped high into the air and then fell to the ground, and when they reached the fallen Washoe he was dead. The Indian boy had not seen the fate of his companion, but the rifle shot had told him enough, and he was badly frightened, expecting a similar fate for himself. His terror so impressed those who had him in charge that they determined to set him at liberty. They fitted him up with a suit of new clothes, hat, coat, pants and shoes, and then leading him about a hundred yards away, pointed to the hills about twenty miles across the valley, where his people were, and said to him, "go." At first he moved off in a hesitating kind of way, looking doubtfully back over his shoulder, expecting every instant to hear the dreaded rifle speak death to him. At length his movements became more assured. He scanned the country ahead, looked back once more, then suddenly leaping into the air those shoes went spinning into the sage-brush on either side and the boy was off for the camp of the Washoes with the speed of the wind.

Between the years 1852 and 1857 there were more or less murders, both of whites and Indians, along the line of the overland road, within what is now Nevada. In 1857 two men were killed by Washoes on the road running south of Lake Tahoe over the mountains to California. (See Hopkins, pages 70, 71, 72, 73.) Their names were John McMarlin and James Williams, and both were on their way to California in charge of separate pack trains from Mormon Station. Both were killed by Washoes the same day, Williams at Slippery Ford Hill, where he was buried, and McMarlin on the summit near by. The body of the latter was taken to Carson Valley and buried on the ranch now owned by Mrs. Clayton. There was no white survivor of the double tragedy, consequently none to tell of the scene that was enacted in the shadows of the pines up among the rocks and ravines of the Sierra, where their life's journey ended.

Murder of Peter Lassen.—In March, 1859, some prospectors went over from Honey Lake Valley to search for gold in the Black Rock country, in what is now known as Humboldt County. Some of them had been

there before, consequently the party separated, four going in advance of the other three. They had an understanding that they were to meet in a canyon on Clapp Creek, where running water is to be found during a portion of the year. The creek is about twenty miles northwest of Black Rock. The second party consisted of Peter Lassen—after whom a peak in the Sierra Nevada Mountains is named—accompanied by —— Clapper and —— Wyatt. They had reached the mouth of the canyon up which the rendezvous had been appointed, as night came on, and camped by a large boulder till morning. At daylight Lassen got up, lit his pipe, sat down and was smoking, when the party was fired on by a concealed foe and Clapper was killed. Lassen sprang to his feet, rifle in hand, and scanned the surrounding rocks in search of the assailants, but unable to see any, told Wyatt to move their camp equipage to a safer place while he watched and kept the enemy at bay. The latter had taken one load of their effects away and was returning for more when another volley from among the twilight shadows rang out on the morning air, and the brave old hero of many a mountain battle sank down by the rock where he had been standing. As Wyatt came up he said to him, "I am done for at last; take care of yourself"; and, mounting a bare-backed horse, the only survivor dashed away over the rocks and plains of sand to bear the sad news to the settlements. The four men camped further up the canyon knew nothing of the disaster until they were met on their way into the Honey Lake station by a party on its way out to recover the bodies of the two victims. They buried them where they had been killed, but in November of that year Lassen's remains were removed to Honey Lake.

The winter of 1859-'60 was one of unprecedented severity in Nevada, and the summer that preceded it had witnessed the first wave of white emigration from California to the Comstock. The spirit of discontent had gained a pretty thorough hold of the natives of the country before these last causes had been added to their real and fancied wrongs. Many of them were led to believe that the evil spirit had been angered by the presence in the Territory of so many whites, and that in consequence thereof he was sending the storms that were freezing and starving them.

Governor Roop and the Indians.—The *Territorial Enterprise*, published in Carson in December, 1859, in mentioning the arrival of Gov. Isaac Roop from Honey Lake, said:

The Indians in Truckee Meadows are freezing and starving to death by scores. In one cabin the Governor found three children dead and dying. The whites are doing all they can to alleviate the miseries of the poor Washoes. They have sent out and built fires for them, and offered them bread and other provisions. But in many instances the starving Indians refuse to eat, fearing that the food is poisoned. They attribute the severity of the winter to the whites. The Truckee River is frozen over hard enough to bear up loaded teams.

On the 13th of January, 1860, Dexter E. Demming was brutally murdered by the Pah-Utes at his ranch in Willow Creek Valley, just north of Honey Lake Valley, in what has since been determined to be California. This resulted in the following petition addressed to Governor Roop:

Susanville, Nevada Ter., January 15, 1860.

Dear Sir: We most respectfully urge the necessity of your Excellency's calling out the military forces under your command to follow and chastise the Indians upon our borders. We make this request to your Excellency from the fact that we have received information that we fully rely upon, to the effect that Mr. Demming has been murdered, and his house robbed, on or about the 15th instant, by Indians, within the borders of Nevada Territory. Your petitioners, as in duty bound, will ever pray, etc.

This petition was numerously signed by residents of the Territory.

A detachment was immediately sent out to trail the murderers and find out, if possible, to what tribe they belonged. Under date of January 24, Lieut. U. J. Tutt reported to the Governor that they had been tracked into the Pah-Ute camp. On the twenty-eighth of the same month, two commissioners were appointed by the Governor to visit Winnemucca, the chief of that tribe, and demand the murderers in accordance with a treaty previously made with him, providing for an emergency like this. The following is a copy of their report:

Susanville, February 11, A. D. 1860.

Your Excellency: We, the undersigned, your Commissioners, appointed January 28, A. D. 1860, to proceed to the camp of the Pah-Ute tribe of Indians, respectfully report that we proceeded across the country from this place in the direction of Pyramid Lake; that on the third day of our travel, we were met by a band of about (30) thirty Pah-Ute Indians, well mounted, who, with a war-whoop, surrounded us and prevented us from proceeding to the main camp. We were detained over night by the same party of Indians, under a strict guard, the said Indians utterly refusing to give us any information as to the whereabouts of their chiefs.

On the following morning we were released from imprisonment and ordered to return to Honey Lake Valley. We traveled two or three miles in the direction of Honey Lake Valley; there being a dense fog, we came to the determination to travel across the country to the crossing of the Truckee River and follow down said river to Pyramid Lake. Arriving at Pyramid Lake, we found an encampment of the Pah-Utes; but, from the contradictory reports received from the said Indians, we were unable to ascertain where either of the chiefs could be found. We then traveled down the lake about ten miles, and found another encampment,

which proved to be the camp of Winnemucca, the war chief of the Pah-Utes. We represented to the chief that we were sent to them by the whites, to ask of the chiefs the delivery of the murderer, or murderers, of Mr. D. E. Demming, in accordance with a treaty made and entered into between the Pah-Utes and the citizens of Honey Lake Valley, at the same time inviting the chief to return with us and settle our difficulties amicably.

The chief acknowledged that, according to said treaty, we were warranted in making the demand; but, after making many excuses, he not only refused to come to Honey Lake Valley, but refused to interpose his authority in preventing depredations upon the whites on the part of his follows. We then asked him to appoint some future time to visit us. He said that he would not come at all, and that the citizens of Honey Lake Valley must pay him \$16,000 for Honey Lake Valley. We have ascertained that he is at this time levying blackmail by demanding from one to two beeves per week from the herders of stock, there being two or three thousand head of stock in his immediate vicinity, herded by so few that they dare not refuse the demand. We find, also, that the owners of said stock cannot drive them to the settlements from the great depth of snow between Pyramid Lake and Honey Lake, Washoe and Carson valleys. We believe that the Pah-Utes are determined to rob and murder as many of our citizens as they can, more especially our citizens upon the borders.

Finding it impossible to bring the Indians to any terms of peace, notwithstanding the advantages offered them, we determined to return as speedily as possible, and make this our report to your Excellency.

WILLIAM WEATHERLOW,
T. J. HARVEY.

It will be observed that the report of the commissioners was dated February 11, 1860. On the next day Governor Roop asked assistance from the general commanding the Pacific Department, in language that so thoroughly explains the position of affairs in that part of the country that we give the document in full:

General Clarke, U. S. A.,
Commander of the Pacific Department.

Sir: We are about to be plunged into a bloody and protracted war with the Pah-Ute Indians. Within the last nine months there have been seven of our citizens murdered by the Indians. Up to the last murder we were unable to fasten these depredations on any particular tribe, but always believed it was the Pah-Utes, yet did not wish to blame them until we were sure of the facts. On the thirteenth day of last month, Mr. Dexter E. Demming was most brutally murdered at his own house, and plundered of everything, and his horses driven off. As soon as I was informed of the fact I at once sent out fifteen men after the murderers (there being snow on the ground, they could be easily traced), with orders to follow on their tracks until they would find what tribe they belonged to; and if they would prove to be Pah-Utes, not to give them battle, but to return and report, as we had, some two years ago, made a treaty with the Pah-Utes, one of the stipulations being that if any of their tribe committed any murders or depredations on any of the whites, we were first to go to the chiefs and that they would deliver up the murderers or make redress, and that we were to do the same on our part with them. On the third day out they came onto the Indians and found them to be Pah-Utes, to which I call your attention

to the paper marked A. Immediately on receiving this report, and agreeable to the said treaty, I sent Capt. William Weatherlow and Thomas J. Harvey, as commissioners, to proceed to the Pah-Utes' headquarters, and there inform the chief of this murder and demand redress. Here allow me to call your attention to the paper marked B. It is now pretty well an established fact that the Pah-Utes killed those eight men, one of them being Mr. Peter Lassen. How soon others must fall is not known, for war is now inevitable. We have but few good arms and but little ammunition.

Therefore, I would most respectfully call upon you for a company of dragoons to come to our aid at once, as it may save a ruinous war to show them that we have other help besides our own citizens, they knowing our weakness. And if it is not in your power at present to dispatch a company of men here, I do most respectfully demand of you arms and ammunition, with a field-piece to drive them out of their forts. A four or six-pounder is indispensable in fighting the Pah-Utes. We have no Indian Agent to call on, so it is to you we look for assistance.

I remain your humble servant,

Susanville, February 12, 1860.

ISAAC ROOP,
Governor of Nevada Territory.

P.S.—Sir: If you should forward to us arms, ammunition, etc., I hereby appoint Col. I. H. Lewis to receive and receipt for and bring them here at once.

I. ROOP.

The foregoing indicates, with sufficient clearness, that the accumulated hostility between the two races had reached that point where it required but a spark to cause it to burst forth into a fierce war flame. The commanding general sent no troops and furnished no arms, and it all terminated in that sanguinary outbreak in the following May that resulted so disastrously to both Indians and whites.

INDIAN ACCOUNT OF THE WAR OF 1860.

The defeat and massacre of the party, usually known as the "Ormsby party," on the 12th of May, 1860, sent a thrill of horror throughout the Pacific Coast, and to this day is regarded as one of the most important events in the early history of the State. Happening, as it did, anterior to the great War of the Rebellion, the people were unaccustomed to tales of battle and bloodshed; the slaughter of great numbers of relatives, friends and neighbors, and the conflicts, movements and losses which at a later date would have seemed trifling, then had a terrible effect and left a lasting impression. The publishers of the Thompson J. West History of Nevada, 1881, desiring the most minute particulars of this most important Indian war of Nevada, in the latter part of 1880 dispatched one of their corps of writers to thoroughly examine the ground and interview

all whites and Indians who could be found who had participated in the fatal battle. In company with the Acting Indian Agent, Major W. H. H. Wasson, he visited the Pyramid Lake Reservation, obtained an interpreter, a Pah-Ute named George Quip, who spoke the English language fluently, and with numerous veteran savages traversed the battle-ground, spending three days in the examination. The Indians were assured that whatever statement they should make would never be used against them, and with such assurances they gave a detailed account of the whole affair.

It was a strange assemblage of those old braves, each narrating what he had done and seen of that bloody record of 1860. Each Indian would recount his own experience and observation, but when asked concerning anything beyond that, would say: "Me no see 'um, mebe ——— tell you 'bout that," and the party designated would be sent for, if not present, and the story would go on. On the third day we rode over the battle-field and trail from Pyramid Lake to Wadsworth, a distance of eighteen miles, accompanied by some of them. As we came to a place where a white man had been killed, or some special event worthy of note had transpired, they would stop and, in their peculiarly slow, dreamy way, tell the event, or describe the death struggle. Their speech was accompanied by gesticulations and movements of the body, conveying to the looker-on a knowledge of what had transpired there in all its tragic detail before the interpreter had opened his lips. In this manner those events, that before had remained a secret between the slayer and his dead, were revealed. In the latter part of April, 1860, the Pah-Utes congregated at Pyramid Lake from all over the extensive territory for the purpose of holding a council. The object of the gathering was to decide what they should do, in view of the fact that the whites were rapidly encroaching upon their lands, killing their game and cutting down their orchards (thus referring to the pine-nut trees). By the first of May they were nearly all in at the rendezvous.

There was a Shoshone chief there with his band who had married a Pah-Ute squaw; he was for war, and his Indian name was Qu-da-zo-bo-eat. A few years later he was killed near Battle Mountain by members of his own tribe, after his return from a raid into Paradise Valley. They killed him because he was all the time making trouble for them by stealing stock from the whites. There was a chief from Powder River with his followers there who was also for war. His name was Sa-wa-da-be-bo;

he was a half Bannock and half Pah-Ute, and was killed by the whites some two years later. Wa-he, a brother of old Winnemucca, was fierce for the conflict. He was afterwards killed by the Pah-Utes at Walker River, concerning which a more extended account is given elsewhere. Sa-a-be, chief of the Smoke Creek Indians, was for war. He was a brother-in-law of old Winnemucca and was killed later by one of his own tribe, whom he was proposing to "Ho-do," or bewitch. No-jo-mud, chief of the Honey Lake band, was for war. Some years later he was killed by his followers, who had become afraid of him because of his continued active hostility to the whites, fearing that it would bring disaster upon them. Ho-zi-a, another Honey Lake leader, who was afterwards killed by Captain Dick, their present chief, was also for war. Yur-dy, known as Joaquin by the whites, was for war. His band ranged in the vicinity of the big bend of the Carson River, and south toward Mason Valley. He is now dead. Ha-za-bok, a big medicine and chief at Antelope Valley, now living, was for war. He proposed to supply the warriors with bullets, by changing their tobacco into lead, to cause the ground to open and swallow the whites, and to kill them with fierce storms of hail.

Se-quin-a-ta, a chief from the Black Rock country, was impatient for the strife to begin. He now lives at the reservation, is a little man, and is known as Chiquito (little) Winnemucca. He was a man grown and remembers distinctly when Fremont camped at Pyramid Lake, on his way from Oregon through this country in January, 1844. It was this Indian that refused to obey Young Winnemucca, charging with his band past the latter as he waved back the Pah-Utes in a vain effort to obtain a peace talk with the Ormsby party, after the battle had opened. Moguan-no-ga was chief at the Humboldt Meadows, and was known to the whites as Captain Soo. He was for war, and was shot by his brother Bob a few years later, receiving a wound that eventually resulted in his death. He was in command of the expedition whose acts precipitated the war, by the killing of the Williams brothers and the burning of their station. Before his death, however, he became a strong friend of the whites and rendered valuable assistance in breaking up the bands that kept up hostilities in Humboldt County for several years after the outbreak. His friendship for the whites was the cause of his death. He had been leading a company of soldiers into the Black Rock country, where they had killed a number of Pah-Utes. When he came back a

cousin of his, named Captain John, wanted him to resign because of what he had done, and expressed a determination of becoming the chief himself. Soo's brother Bob proposed to settle the matter by shooting both of them and the one not killed, being the genuine medicine man, ought, of course, to be chief. He accordingly "turned loose" on his brother first and proved him to be "no good medicine," but before he was ready for John, that worthy "blazed away" and fetched the would-be arbitrator to "grass." Bob eventually recovered, but, said our informant, "He heep sorry bime-by, 'cause he think he kill um both, and get to be chief himself." Old Winnemucca, whose Indian name is Po-i-to, was head captain over all, and medicine chief of the tribe. He held his own council, and declared neither for peace or war, but was known to be in favor of the latter. He was a shrewd old politician, and knowing things were moving to suit him, kept still and let others assume the responsibility of acting.

Numaga's Effort for Peace.—Among all that assemblage of the Pah-Ute tribes there was one, and one only, among the chiefs, with sufficient sagacity to foresee the evils that would result to his people from war; one only who at the same time possessed the courage to throw his influence in opposition to their will and declare for peace. The name of that warrior was Numaga; and he was called by the whites Young Winnemucca, the Reservation Indian chief. The word Numaga means the giver of food, the name indicating the disposition of its owner as being that of a generous man. Numaga was not, as the whites always supposed, the war chief of the Pah-Utes. There was but one general chief, and that was Poito, at Pyramid Lake. Numaga was the chosen leader only of that branch of the tribe living upon the reservation, having no authority, and claiming none, in any other locality. Neither was he a relative of Poito, and the two were always unfriendly.

Numaga was an Indian statesman who possessed intellect, eloquence and courage combined. He had been among the whites in California and could speak the English language; consequently he appreciated the superiority of the race with whom his people would make war. His power, outside of his own band, was that only of a superior mind, working, under the control of an absorbing wish, to better the condition of his race. They knew he was capable, they believed him to be sincere, and it resulted in giving him an influence more potent throughout the tribe

than Poito's commands; consequently, the whites came to look upon him as the war chief, and he would have attained that position had he outlived Old Winnemucca, alias Poito.

Such was the man who threw himself with all his power into the council to try, if possible, to stem the tide that had set for war. He rode from camp to camp, from family to family, friend to friend, reasoning, counseling and beseeching them not to precipitate a war and bring destruction upon themselves. On every side he was met with a calm, respectful silence that told as plainly as words could have done it, that all were against him. Then he went off by himself and, lying down with his face to the ground, would speak to no one. Without food, or drink, or motion, he lay there as one dead. The day passed and the night, another day and night, and the third found him as had the first, a motionless and silent mourner, brooding over the calamity that he saw threatening his people. This began to effect a reaction among the masses of the Pah-Utes, and the chief, seeing it, came to him and said: "Your skin is red but your heart is white; go away and live among the pale-faces." Others came and said, "Get up or we will kill you"; and then he replied, "Do it if you wish, for I don't care to live."

At length the council met. Chief after chief rose and recounted the wrongs of his band and demanded war. After all had spoken, then Numaga, looking like the ghost of a dead Indian, walked into the circle and for an hour poured forth such a torrent of eloquence as these warriors had never listened to before. "You would make war upon the whites," he said; "I ask you to pause and reflect. The white men are like the stars over your heads. You have wrongs, great wrongs, that rise up like those mountains before you; but can you, from the mountain tops, reach and blot out those stars? Your enemies are like the sands in the bed of your rivers; when taken away they only give place for more to come and settle there. Could you defeat the whites in Nevada, from over the mountains in California would come to help them an army of white men that would cover your country like a blanket. What hope is there for the Pah-Ute? From where is to come your guns, your powder, your lead, your dried meats to live upon, and hay to feed your ponies with while you carry on this war? Your enemies have all of these things, more than they can use. They will come like the sand in a whirlwind and drive you from your homes. You will be forced among the barren

rocks of the north, where your ponies will die; where you will see the women and old men starve, and listen to the cries of your children for food. I love my people; let them live; and when their spirits shall be called to the Great Camp in the southern sky, let their bones rest where their fathers were buried."

As Numaga was thus making a last desperate effort to change the action of the chiefs, and was sending home conviction of its folly to their understanding, an Indian, upon a foam-flecked pony, dashed up to the council ground and the speaker paused. The new-comer walked into the circle and, pointing to the southeast, said: "Moguannoga, last night, with nine braves, burned Williams' Station, on the Carson River, and killed four whites." Then Numaga, with a sad look in the direction that the warrior had pointed, replied: "There is no longer any use for counsel; we must prepare for war, for the soldiers will now come here to fight us."

Burning of Williams' Station.—On the 7th of May, 1860, the question was pending, and the great influence of Numaga had begun to make an impression in favor of a conference instead of a collision with the whites. A secret war party, numbering nine in all, had left camp unknown to that chief, under command of Captain Soo. They reached the Carson River about sundown at the place where James O. Williams was keeping a station on the Overland Road, ten miles northeast of where Fort Churchill was afterwards built.

There are three of that war party now living, and one of them described the scene that followed. Said he, "We get there 'bout night; sun little way up; and leave ponies back, maybe half mile. Then we all go down to cabin and three white men come out. They look mighty scared and talk heap to Captain Soo, and——" "What did they say to them?" we asked. "Dunno; talk heap. I no understand English then." "Well, what did they do next?" "Bimeby one start off and run up the road towards Buckland's, and two Injin run after him, and bring him back. Then one, he run for the river, and me after him; he jump in and me watch; bimeby he get halfway across maybe, then drown." "Did you shoot him when he was swimming?" "No; nobody shoot him in water; maybe so, somebody shoot him 'fore that. He heap splatter water; no swim much. I know him drown purty soon; no use to shoot." "While you were gone to the river what was done at the station?" "I no see that. They tell me white man draw a knife and then one Injin grab

him from behind, then two, three—maybe four—Indian grab him; then one take his arm and do so (the narrator here, by motion, indicating a twisting, backward wrenching of the arm), and break it, and that make him drop knife; and then they throw him on the ground and kill him.” “How did they kill him?” “Dunno. When I come back, four Injin hold him on the ground; then I go off down the river little ways to find place to picket pony, and when I look back see cabin on fire.” “Was it dark when they burned the station?” “No—pretty dark, though.” The narrator insisted that they found but three whites at the station. We said to him that five men were killed and he asked, “How you know?” Upon his being told that the information was from those who buried them he replied that, “Maybe white man tell you heap of lies.” Finally he suggested that it was possible that two might have remained in the house concealed, who were suffocated and perished in the flames. The following are the names of the parties who were killed and only one escaped from the place: Oscar Williams, a married man, aged 33 years, and a native of Maine; David Williams, a single man, aged 22 years, and a native of Maine; Samuel Sullivan, a married man, aged 25 years, and a native of New York; John Fleming, a single man, aged 25 years, and a native of New York; “Dutch Phil,” unknown name, age and residence. The Indians camped on the bottom around the place until 2 or 3 o’clock in the morning and then started across the eight-mile desert for Buckland’s Station, intending to kill the owner, after whom it was named. They passed the ranch of C. M. Davis without molesting him and on arriving at daylight on the farm of W. H. Bloomfield, one of their number named ———, proposed to the band that they drive off the stock from the place and return to the lake without committing any further depredations. It now being daylight, and as further advance would be attended by considerable risk, it was determined to follow this suggestion, and one of their number was sent in advance to report what they had been doing. It was the arrival upon the council ground at Pyramid Lake of this messenger that interrupted Numaga’s speech. “Why,” we asked, “did you not kill C. M. Davis; he was much nearer to you than S. S. Buckland?” “Davis,” he replied, “purty good man; never abuse Injin; no kill him. Buckland he heap bad; whip Injin; scold Injin; mighty cross all the time; we all say kill him, purty good.” On the evening of the massacre the owner of the station, J. O. Williams, was camping a couple of miles fur-

ther up the river and thus escaped the fate of his brothers. The next morning he returned and finding the place a smoldering ruin, around which lay the bodies of his murdered kinsmen, he started for Virginia City. Mr. Davis, with three other men, remained for several days at his place after the event before they knew what had transpired. When the news finally came to them, however, they started with their effects for Dayton, reaching Buckland's Station the same evening—May 9—that the Ormsby command arrived there, on its way to chastise the Indians.

Demand for Vengeance.—The news brought by Williams to Dayton, Silver City and Virginia City, created an intense excitement and couriers soon carried it, with added horrors, to all the outlying towns. Scattered over the whole country were little squads of prospectors and ranchers, whose isolated positions rendered them an easy prey to prowling bands of savages. Such were to be warned, and many a wild ride was taken by horsemen over secret mountain and valley trails to bear the notes of danger to a friend. In the whole country there was but one voice, and that went up from the whole people, for a swift and bloody retaliation—one that should strike terror to the heart of the Pah-Ute and leave his country a tenantless waste. Detachments were organized for that purpose at Genoa, Carson, Silver and Virginia cities, and on the 9th of May, 1860, they moved from the latter place to Buckland Station, on the Carson River, en route for the scene of the late massacre. On the tenth they arrived at Williams' Station and buried three of the victims and took a vote as to whether they should return or continue their march into the enemy's country. The vote was unanimous for the advance, and they proceeded to the Truckee River and camped on the night of the 11th of May at the place where the town of Wadsworth is now located.

Volunteers for the Expedition.—On the opposite bank of the river was standing at the time a log cabin in which were five men who had been besieged for several days by the Indians. On the Sunday prior to the massacre they had, with three others, been hunting at Pyramid Lake, where they were attacked and three of their number killed. The five, having made their escape, had since found refuge in that cabin. They were ferried, on a log drawn by lariats across the river, and joined the expedition on foot.

Let us now take a glance at this force that found itself in a hostile country, intent upon chastising an enemy that they must have known

greatly outnumbered them. There were four detachments, numbering 105 men, nominally under the command of officers selected for their general reputation as being courageous men. The Genoa squad was under the orders of Thomas F. Condon, Jr., Major Ormsby was leader of the detachment from Carson City, Richard Watkins was in charge of the Silver City force, and Archie McDonald was captain of those from Virginia City. No one was selected to the chief command, although its necessity was strongly urged by Major Ormsby, J. Gatewood and others; and they went into the fight without a leader, although Major Ormsby is usually regarded as having been the commander. It was a heterogeneous mixture of independent elements, poorly armed, without discipline, and they did not believe that the Indians would fight. A few of them would not have been of the party had they contemplated serious trouble, but in the main they were boys and men who would have made a heroic defense if properly handled. What they lacked most was discipline, and a leader in whom they had entire confidence, and who had authority to enforce his commands. In the absence of these last two essentials it would have been better had they all been cowards. Many started on the expedition with the watchword of "An Indian for breakfast and a pony to ride," contemplating the pleasure of sacking Pah-Ute villages, capturing their squaws and ponies, killing a few warriors and running the balance out of the country. There was another element there prompted by sentiments and urged forward by feelings that make the patriot, produces heroes and often ends in martyrdom. Of this class Henry Meredith, Young Snowden, Spear, Headley, Eugene Angel, and the "Nameless Hero," were bright particular stars.

The following is as complete a list of that ill-fated party as we have been able to procure:

Genoa Rangers.—Captain T. F. Condon, C. E. Kimball, Michael Tay, Robert Riley, ("Big Texas"), M. Pular, Lee James, J. A. Thompson.

Carson City Rangers.—Major Wm. M. Ormsby, F. Shinn, John L. Blackburn, James Gatewood, Chris. Barnes, Frank Gilbert, William S. Spear, C. Marley, William Mason, John Holmes, Richard Watkins, Dr. Wm. E. Eichelroth, Samuel Brown, James McIntyre, Dr. Anton W. Tjader, ——— Lake, Eugene Angel and nine United States soldiers.

Silver City Guards.—Capt. R. G. Watkins, Keene Albert Bloom, Chas. Evans, James Shabell, James Lee, Anton Kauffman. Captain Watkins was a veteran of the Walker filibustering expedition to Nicaragua, where he lost a leg. Upon the organization of the party to punish the Indians he was invited to take command of a company, but declined on account of his crippled condition; but being told that some who had served under him in Nicaragua were anxious he should be their

leader he consented. He possessed a powerful horse, and in riding was strapped to the saddle. The Captain has written a vivid report of the march and battle, the principal points of which are incorporated in the account here given.

From Virginia City.—Company 1, Captain F. Johnston, F. J. Ca., ——— McTerney, Hugh McLaughlin, Charles McLeod, John Fleming (a Greek), Henderson (a Greek), Andread Schnald (Italian), Marco Kuergerwaldt, John Gaventi George (a Chileno), O. C. Steel. Company No. 2, Captain Archie McDonald, Wm. Armington, Chas. W. Allen, G. F. Brown, G. I. Baldwin, D. D. Cole, A. K. Elliott, Chas. Forman, A. L. Granis, F. Gatehouse, F. Hawkins, Arch Haven, J. C. Hall, George Jones, R. Lawrence, Col. M. C. Vane, Henry Meredith, H. McIntosh, Pat McCourt, S. McNaughton, Henry Newton, John Noyce, A. I. Peck, Richard N. Snowden, M. Spurr, O. Spurr.

Company Not Known.—J. F. Johnson, N. A. Chandler, G. Jonner, A. G. B. Hammond, James McCarthy, ——— Armstrong, T. Kelley, ——— Galehouses, J. Bowden.

The next day the command continued its advance, moving to the north down the Truckee River. No resistance was met with until they had reached the bottom land, about one-half mile north of the present reservation building and within about two miles of the south end of Pyramid Lake.

The Battlefield.—Within about three and one-half miles of the lake the bottom lands widen out, leaving a broad level stretch of meadow on both sides of the river, through which the stream shifts its bed more or less every year. There is a belt of large cottonwood trees with underbrush among them, skirting the stream through the entire distance. This meadow land is inclosed on the west by a mountain and on the east by a wide stretch of comparatively level table-land that is elevated somewhat above the meadows. The point of contact between the two is sharp and well defined. The difference in elevation increases in the direction of Wadsworth until it terminates in a bank some fifty feet high, at the south end of the valley where the meadows narrow down to a few yards each side of the stream. At this south end the trail leading north passes down from the higher country into the lower, and runs on the east side of the river to the lake. Where this trail passes down into the valley is the south end of the battlefield, and the point of the last stand made by the Ormsby party.

An Aimless Charge and Wild Retreat.—The whites had passed into this lowland and through it to the north, about one and a half miles, when there suddenly appeared on an elevated point to the right front, just out of gunshot range, a band of Indians that apparently about equaled their own number. The order was given Major Ormsby for the command to dismount and tighten the girths of their saddles. While this order

was being executed a man by the name of A. K. Elliott, who had a globe-sighted rifle, took several shots at the enemy with no visible results. The company then mounted and the order was given to charge, and with a yell about thirty of the party dashed up an easy grade, made by a wash, a little to the east of the Indians, on to the plateau, where they found that the Indians had melted away from sight like a dissolving view. There seemed no place for them to go; but they were gone, and as before just out of rifle range appeared another scattered line of mounted Indians. Their right, as far as it was visible, rested on an elevated point at the margin of the valley, while their left, stretching away to the east and south, formed a half circle. There seemed but few of them, but they were badly arranged for the comfort of the whites; a little stretching out of that left or south-east line would have inclosed them. In fact, it looked as though they had charged through an open gate into an Indian corral. For a time it was doubtful whether the position of Ormsby's party was the result of accident or design; but the uncertainty vanished as every sage-bush in front and on both flanks suddenly developed the hiding place of a Pay-Ute; and a shower of bullets and arrows came hissing over their heads and among them. The very air trembled with the wild yell that followed the discharge, and many a poor fellow sitting on his horse there began to picture to himself the horrors he had read of that befell those who fell into the hands of a savage war party. The battle was lost to the whites in the next five minutes by a failure to promptly continue the aggressive, and thus give hope of success with which to occupy the mind, instead of a gradually growing fear and horror of falling wounded or otherwise into the hands of the Indians. Besides, the greater number of the party had lagged behind after observing the force of the enemy.

The volunteers who had charged remained upon the plateau possibly ten minutes, doing nothing except to attend to frightened animals, and became thoroughly imbued with the belief that they were out-generaled and defeated. Some of the animals became so unmanageable that they bucked the revolvers out of their riders' holsters and forced others to drop their guns. The time for a favorable result had passed, and then the retreat began in the effort to join their already flying comrades. The first move was toward the bottom to the west to gain the shelter of the timber that came within two hundred yards of the plateau.

This was another mistake, for the shelter they sought was already the

hiding-place of Chiquito Winnemucca's band that made the Indian line continuous westerly to the river. This only left the enemy on the plateau with nothing to do but out-flank the whites by moving south on the upland and shoot down into the timber, occasionally at pistol range, where the course of the river swept close into the east margin of the meadows. A number of them reinforced Chiquito Winnemucca in the timber where Numaga joined them, and as the Indians were pressing forward he rushed in between them and the whites, waving back his followers in an attempt to obtain a parley. Chiquito Winnemucca refused to obey the order and dashed by Numaga, followed by the entire yelling horde. The whites fell back, but through the personal exertions of two or three men, they formed again a few hundred yards away.

There was one member of Ormsby's party named William Headly, who, from the first, until he was killed, made himself constantly conspicuous. He was termed by the Indians the "White Brave" and was supposed by them to be in command. Again and again members of the retreating force endeavored to make a stand. About half a mile from where the battle opened, some tried to cross the river, but were swept back again to the shore they had started from. At this place now stands, on the upland overlooking the valley, an Indian schoolhouse and the river approaches within fifty yards of the elevated point. Here a number of mounted Indians had congregated and the whites, if they retreated further, were forced to run the gauntlet, the dread of which had caused some to attempt the passage of the surging stream. It had to be done, however, and the rush was made. One horse was killed in passing this point, its rider being among the last to give way before the onslaught of the band, led by Chiquito Winnemucca, that was constantly pressing them in the timber from the north. The horse in falling dashed its rider to the ground, who instantly sprang to his feet and turned upon the foe, wounding in the knee the assailant nearest to him, and then sank by his dead horse to the earth again, riddled with arrows and bullets. His name was Eugene Angel, and his death was witnessed only by his slayers, who, twenty years later, described the death scene, and pointed out the spot where the bones of the brave man were buried. Three-quarters of a mile farther south, still in the bottom lands, along the east bank of the river, another rally was made in a grove of cottonwood, and it was here that the chivalric young Meredith fell. In front of the grove to the north

was an open space through which they had passed in falling back. Chiquito Winnemucca, in his eagerness, arrived upon this open ground in advance of his band, and rode alone out into it in pursuit of the whites. As soon as he appeared the brave Headly, who had been lingering in the rear, turned upon the chief. Hatless, coatless, without a shot left, he went for his enemy with the bridle reins in one hand and a revolver grasped by the barrel in the other, regardless of Winnemucca's weapons, he rode down upon him. The chief turned and back they went, pursuer and pursued, through the enemy's lines, when the heroic "White Brave" reeled in his saddle and fell to the ground, shot through the head from behind. His horse and weapons became the spoils of the Indian he had been pursuing. The grove where Ormsby's command was now making a last desperate effort to stem the tide of defeat, was within less than a quarter of a mile of where the trail passed out of the meadows, up a steep bank about fifty feet, onto the table-lands above. If the Indians in force gained possession of this point of exit from the valley there was left, seemingly, no outlet of escape, and it was a position to be held at all hazards. Major Ormsby ordered Thomas F. Condon and Richard Watkins, with their commands, to go and take possession of that place and hold it, which they did, although deserted by nearly all of their men as soon as the point was reached. Said Anton Kauffman, now of Humboldt County, who was a boy about sixteen years of age at the time: "The last I saw of the battle, and the bravest thing I ever saw, was Captain Watkins standing there on the trail, leaning on a crutch and blazing away at the redskins. It's always been a mystery to me how he got away. He was the last white man I saw that day, or until the next morning, when I arrived at Buckland's Station." Mr. Kauffman was erroneously under the impression that Captain Watkins was defending the trail after the balance of the command had passed him in the retreat.

Thomas F. Condon started back to inform Major Ormsby of the critical condition of affairs on the trail, therefore let us follow him and see what had been transpiring at the front. The horse that Chiquito Winnemucca rode was shot under him, in the open space before described, as that warrior returned to the attack after Headly's death, and he had nothing to do with the massacre that afterwards occurred. The timber was within range of the heights, and bullets were constantly pattering against

and whistling among the trees from that direction. An old bed of the river, thickly covered with an undergrowth, connected the position of the whites with that of the Indians in the bottom, and afforded the latter a concealed route by which they could reach the already hard-pressed command. Soon the woods were swarming again with the savages. Meredith went down under a mortal wound, and where his life-blood mingled with the soil a bunch of wild roses sprang into life, to mark the place in after years where a hero had fallen. Again the whites gave way and the Indians, in pressing them out of the timber, discovered two secreted in the underbrush near where Meredith had been left. They passed on, however, in the pursuit, pretending not to have seen them, supposing they would remain there hid until a more leisurely opportunity presented itself for attending to them. It was the last they saw of their reserved prisoners, the two men making their escape.

As the whites retreated from this, their last cover, and went flying to the south to reach the upper country, they passed through a constant shower of deadly missiles that greeted them from the bluff all along the meadow trail. Added to this was the thrilling war-cries of exultation going up from the hundreds that crowded upon their rear; and all combined to complete what had been so effectually begun—the total demoralization of the entire party. It was a wonder that such had not been the result long before, and the retreat became a wild, panic-stricken stampede. As the flying horsemen approached the place, where Watkins, like another Leonidas in the Pass of Thermopylæ, was, single-handed, defending their line of retreat, death spreading over them her somber wings and silently shadowing them all.

As the horsemen reached the point where the trail went up the steep bank, it was impossible for all to go at once; and the result was a halt for many, and an almost hand-to-hand conflict with the savages. One horse, with a fatal wound, dashed away to the west, and carried its rider to his death in the timber by the river bank. Two men passing to the right in climbing the heights by a more gradual ascent, went rolling with their horses fatally shot, down the bank among their enemies. Young Snowden, as he reached the summit, fell from his horse and expired. A few rods farther on, just a little way to the south and west of the trail, another man threw up his hands with a despairing look, laid down with his face to the ground, and died.

These were all, eight only, whose life-blood had thus far paid the penalty of the fatal mistakes of that terrible day. Eight only upon the field of battle had died facing the foe, as brave men, all of them, as any for whom history weaves its chaplets of fame. As soon as the upper country was reached all thought of anything except escape was abandoned, and the fastest horses led the retreat. The unfortunate man whose animal gradually lost his position in the advance and fell to the rear, found himself slowly and with certainty slipping into the arms of death. It was an open country, a straight trail, and a terrible ride with a fearful stake that only speed could win. To lose it was swift, terrible and certain death. The pursuers in that race for life were constantly seizing the whites who had become the last among the flying band, and then would follow a quick, desperate struggle, and another was added to the number of the nameless dead. Two miles were thus passed when the Indians, becoming more bold, one rode up behind a white man, and, throwing his right arm around him, lifted him out of the saddle and threw him upon the ground, while the horses were at full speed, where he was killed without offering any resistance.

This feat elicited such applause from the pursuers that it at once became popular, and the same thing was attempted with the next horseman reached. It was a different style of fugitive this time, and as the Indian threw his arm around his victim he was received with a pistol shot, and a desperate encounter ensued, side by side their horses flew over the country. As the riders grasped in each other's embrace, struggled for mastery, and fought for life; until, locked in a deadly embrace, they rolled from their winged battlefield into the trail. Lying upon the ground they fought and strove, rolling over and over, first one, then the other gaining a temporary advantage, until the Indian was throttled, and would have been strangled had not his comrades come to his assistance. It was a quickly ended contest then, and the brave Californian, Wm. S. Spear, was added to the list of those who were sacrificed that day.

A little further along, the trail runs close to a precipice, two hundred feet high, at the base of which flows the river. Upon the narrow space between the brink and the still higher bluff, an Indian rushed up to look at an apparently dead white man, when the corpse suddenly brought a revolver to bear and fired. The white man sprang to his feet, and seizing the Pah-Ute, struggled as one mad to jump from the dizzy heights to cer-

tain death below, with the Indian in his embrace. His design was frustrated by the lookers-on, who ended the desperate combat by killing their comrade's antagonist, and rolling his body from the heights.

About seven or eight miles south from the battlefield a mountain comes down in one place to the east bank of the river. At this point there is a narrow neck of level ground through which the trail passes, and a short distance to the south, it passes down again to a meadow by the river. The meadow, or bottom-land, is possibly a half mile long, and then the trail leads out into the high, open country again. Major Ormsby had left on his way down a number of men, under command of a person named

—— Lake, with orders to hold the position and thus secure their line of retreat. They were posted on higher ground that overlooked the trail, and in a favorable position from where a dozen brave men could have held at bay for a short time a small army.

Here Ormsby had intended to have made a stand, if defeated at the lake, but as the leading fugitives came dashing down the trail the reserves deserted their post and joined them. Upon Ormsby's arrival at this point he found no nucleus around which to attempt a stand, and passed on with the balance. All were not so fortunate, however, for as the rear entered the narrow place their flight was retarded by their numbers. The Indians overtook them in force; rode in among them; beat them with their hands, bows or guns, the horses of the fugitives over the heads, thus causing them to fall back further among their pursuers. In this way the leaders pressed forward to overtake horsemen farther in advance, leaving those passed to be dealt with by their followers, and crowded upon a number just as they were passing down the trail into the bottom-land just mentioned. At this point Ormsby's men received a volley that filled five nameless graves down near the banks of the Truckee River.

"What about the white men that you rode among in the narrow pass?" we inquired. "White men," said our informant, "all cry a heap; got no gun throw um away; got no revolver, throw um away, too; no want to fight any more now; all big scare just like cattle; run, run, cry, heap cry, same as papoose; no want Injun to kill um any more; that's all."

But it was not all, for further questioning revealed the details of a scene that no artist could paint or pen portray. A scene where the victims, tortured by fear into madness, rode among their slayers with outstretched arms, pleading and begging for life; crying in vain for mercy,

while the jeering devils, flushed with victory and drunk with blood, laughed at their supplications, played for a time with their frenzy, and then ended their miseries.

Death of Major Ormsby.—When Ormsby left the bottom where the battle had occurred, he was riding a mule that had been shot through the flank from where the blood would gush forth at every step. The Major was wounded in the mouth and both arms, which rendered him almost helpless, and as Captain Watkins dashed past him in the retreat to rally if possible some men to make another stand, he ordered Lieut. Chris. Barnes to remain behind with the wounded officer and whip the mule, if possible, into greater speed. Watkins finding that no one could be induced to attempt any farther resistance, soon returned to assist Ormsby and the Lieutenant.

As he reached them the Indians, who were crowding close in pursuit, fired upon the party and Barnes received a wound. What immediately followed is given in Captain Watkins own language, as taken from a letter from him upon this subject: "I then made up my mind that the fight was up, that I could do no more for the Major, but might save myself, so making a motion to Barnes to go, I said to Ormsby that I would try once more to rally the men. He replied that it would be of no use; but to look out for myself, as it was but a question of a few more minutes with him, and that all he now asked was strength to face the foe when he received his death shot. The Indians were gaining on us rapidly; one look at them and thought of self conquered valor, and the next moment, with a few parting words to Ormsby, I was on my way to Carson. As I was climbing up the third and last of the ravines, I overtook Big Sam. Brown on his white mare, with Capt. John Blackburn on behind him, toiling up the hill." Captain Watkins, farther on, took up a man behind him on his horse and carried him to safety. The account of what followed his departure was obtained from the Indians. The Major continued his retreat as he best could, and had reached the last little valley down by the river where the five men were killed by a volley from the savages as before mentioned. Here he was passed, by such of the whites, as had up to this time been following in his rear and engaging the attention of the pursuers in the manner before described. At the point where the trail passes out from this last-mentioned little valley he was overtaken. This point is about half-way

between the battle-ground and Wadsworth, and is at the place where a month later a detachment of United States soldiers under Captain Stewart, and volunteers under Col. Jack Hays defeated the Indians as a chastisement for their outrages. He was half-way up the trail when his saddle turned, throwing him upon the ground, and his mule, wheeling toward the river, went back. The Major got up and walked to the top of the steep grade; when looking back he recognized one of the Indians nearest to him in the pursuit, and instantly turned and started to meet them. He evidently supposed there was hope of his being spared, because of the friendly relations that heretofore had existed between him and the Pah-Utes that now confronted him. As he moved down to meet them, he waved his hand with the palm advanced, and said: "Don't kill me, ——— ———," calling the Indian by name. "I am your friend, I'll go and talk with the whites and make peace." "No use now," replied the Indian, "too late," and he sent an arrow flying through the stomach and another through the face of his late friend, who, sinking to the ground, was rolled from the ridge dying into the gully below.

A Nameless Hero.—A little in advance of Major Ormsby on the trail were two parties, one from necessity and the other from choice, having been left with their leader, as their companions had passed on. N. A. Chandler was the name of one of the two who, being without a horse, was there against his will; and as he saw Ormsby ascend the hill and then turn back he darted off down a depression until it came to a precipitous terminus. Reaching this point, he took off his revolver, and, laying it down, sprang from the embankment and made his escape.

The other member of that forlorn hope was a young man, a mere boy in his teens, out of whose grey eyes looked the soul of a peerless hero. He was riding a good horse, but had lingered in the rear, and saw the Major thrown from his animal. He then stopped and dismounted in the train, within twenty feet of where Ormsby stood when he turned back to talk with his Indian friend. As that friend fired upon the Major, two other savages dashed past to make way with the youth at the top of the trail, possibly 100 feet away, expecting an unresisting victim. In this they were disappointed, for the brave lad sprang behind his horse, and with a revolver fired hastily at one of the two who were advancing, but without effect. One of the savages then rushed up to the opposite side of the

animal, and the struggle went on with the horse between them, until their positions were so changed as to bring the youth in range of the gun of the disengaged Pah-Ute. This ended the combat, and the "nameless young hero" sank by the trail, where he was afterward buried and forgotten; and but for the enemy who killed him the noble act that resulted in his death would never have been known to his own race. (It has been erroneously stated that Richard Snowden was the name of this young man. Snowden's body was found several miles farther to the north.)

The cruel fate which quenched in oblivion the name and young life of this lad leaves behind it for us a memory sadder than tears; a broken home circle somewhere in the world that kept fruitless watch through the years that followed for the return of the youth or the man, and never knew of the sublime act that, closing his life, had transformed their boy-hero into a martyr.

Closing Scenes.—The next victims were Jones, McCarthy and McLeod. They were overtaken in the open country, and made a desperate resistance, keeping the band at bay for some time with their revolvers, but finally were killed. The event was considered of sufficient importance to warrant a kind of war-dance, and there was a circular trail beaten around them, where their slayers had danced in joyous triumph, because of the death of two such desperate foes. While they were engaged in murdering these two men the sun went down, but they still continued their pursuit of the fleeing command, until reaching the place where Wadsworth now stands, it had become so dark that the pursued were enabled to hide away and elude the search.

Our guide accompanied us through to Wadsworth, stopping at each place where a white man had been slain to describe the death scene, until forty-six were pointed out. The Indians claim to have killed only that number, unless a few wounded, of which they have no knowledge, strayed away into the mountains and perished. They claim, however, that had the battle opened two hours earlier in the day there would not have been a white survivor. Their own loss by acknowledgment was three warriors wounded, and two horses killed. Thus ended the Battle of Pyramid Lake, the most disastrous conflict to the whites ever waged in what is now the State of Nevada.

Effects of the Defeat.—On the morning of May 15, 1860, after the dis-

aster, the stragglers on foot commenced arriving at Buckland's Station, and on horseback at Dayton, Va., and the other towns in the valleys farther west, creating a panic of the most remarkable character that followed them wherever they went. The horror was flashed over the line to California, and in a few hours the massacre, with exaggerated generalities, had sounded its note of alarm for the Nevadans throughout the Pacific Coast. At Virginia the women and children were placed in a partially completed stone building for safety, the structure being speedily converted into a fort. The place was called Fort Riley, and later the Virginia Hotel. The citizens organized, and sentinels were posted around the town.

At Silver City, a stone fort was built on the rocks overlooking Devil's Gate and the town, in which was mounted a cannon made of wood and hooped with iron, that was trained to rake the canyon below, and yawned with its cavernous mouth, portentous of an impending calamity to the Pah-Utes. After the war had ended a few citizens took that cannon back on the hill and fired it off with a slow match, thus demonstrating that the man who invented the thing had made a mistake in naming and locating it, as it proved to be an excellent torpedo, and a judicious point of location for its most approved work would have been in the center of a hostile village. At Carson, the women and children were barricaded in the Penron House, and the country around was picketed. At Genoa, the only building suitable for defense was the stone cabin of Warren Wasson. He vacated the premises, and that night started alone for Carson, to find out why no telegraph message could be obtained from that place; it being feared that the Indians were between the two points and had cut the wires.

Arriving at Carson he found that the operator had paid no attention to the telegraph calls from Genoa, and that no Indians had thus far put in an appearance in either Carson or Eagle Valleys. He also found that a party was being organized, under Theodore Winters, to carry a dispatch from General Wright, of California, to a company of cavalry supposed to be at Honey Lake Valley, ordering that company to march at once for Carson. Wasson volunteered to carry the message alone; and mounting a fleet, powerful horse, rode in fourteen hours through the enemy's country a distance of 110 miles to Honey Lake, without change of horse, or without seeing an Indian. He delivered the orders and the company moved south.

WASHOE REGIMENT ORGANIZATION—THE MARCH TO PYRAMID
LAKE—JUST BEFORE THE BATTLE—THE BATTLE-GROUND
—THE BATTLE—AFTER THE BATTLE—OTHER EVENTS
ABOUT PYRAMID LAKE—END OF THE CAMPAIGN—
DEATH OF WM. ALLEN—EXPEDITION OF
COLONEL LANDER. 1860.

The road to California was the back door outlet from danger that hundreds traveled, and many who remained in the territory were so badly frightened that they would have been useless if the Indians had made a further advance. Across the mountains in California the news of the massacre had created an intense excitement, and sent a thrill of generous and chivalric promptings for assistance home to every heart. At Downieville, within thirty-six hours after the message came that the gallant Meredith had fallen a victim to the knife of the savage, a company of 165 men was raised, armed, equipped and with forty rounds of ammunition were, five days later, in Virginia City, having traversed the mountains on foot. From Nevada City, San Juan, Sacramento and Placerville organized companies surmounted the icy barriers of the Sierra, and added their numbers to those at Virginia, who were eager to be led against the foe. The Governor of California sent for the Nevadans to use in their own defense, 500 Minnie muskets with plenty of ammunition.

Gold Hill, Carson, Genoa, Silver City, Dayton and Virginia City, furnished their quotas of volunteers; the citizens generally contributed to provision the force, and the following was the result of a complete and thorough organization of the command.

WASHOE REGIMENT ORGANIZATION.

Consisting of eight companies of infantry and six of cavalry. Field Officers—John C. Hays, Colonel Commanding; J. Saunders, Lieutenant Colonel; Dan E. Hungerford, Major; E. J. Bryant Surgeon; ——— Perkins, Surgeon; ——— Bell, Surgeon; Chas. S. Fairfax, Adjutant; J. S. Plunkett, Acting Adjutant of Infantry; Alex. Miot, Department Quartermaster; Benjamin G. Lippincott, Regimental Quartermaster; John McNish, Assistant Regimental Quartermaster; R. N. Snowden, Commissary. Company A (known as Spy Company), J. B. Fleeson, Captain. Company B (known as Sierra Guards), E. J. Smith, Captain; J. B. Preasch, First Lieutenant; Wm. Wells, Second Lieutenant; J. Halliday, Third Lieutenant; number of men, 47. Company C (known as Truckee Rangers), Alanson W. Nightingill, Captain. Company D (known as Sierra Guards), J. B. Reed, Captain; N. P. Pierce, First Lieutenant; D. C. Ralston, Orderly; number of men, 14. Company E (known as Carson Rangers), P. H. Clayton, Captain. Company F (known as Nevada Rifles), J. B. Van Hagan, Captain. Company G (known as Sierra Guards), F. F.

Patterson, Captain; C. S. Champney, First Lieutenant; T. Maddux, Second Lieutenant; A. Walker, Third Lieutenant; number of men, 41. Company H (known as San Juan Rifles), N. C. Miller, Captain. Company I (known as Sacramento Guards), A. G. Snowden, Captain. Company J (from Sacramento), Joseph Virgo, Captain. Company K (known as Virginia Rifles), E. T. Storey, Captain; number of men, 106. Company L (known as Carson Rifles), J. L. Blackburn, Captain; A. L. Turner, First Lieutenant; Theo. Winters, Orderly Sergeant. Company M (known as Silver City Guards), ——— Ford, Captain. Company N (known as Highland Rangers or Vaqueros), S. B. Wallace, Captain; Robert Lyon, First Lieutenant; Joseph F. Triplett, Second Lieutenant; number of men, 20. Company O (known as Sierra Guards), Creed Haymond, Captain; Geo. A. Davis, First Sergeant; H. M. Harshbarger, Second Sergeant; number of men, 9. Total rank and file, 544.

Companies A, C, F, H, L, N and one-half of Captain Storey's Company K were mounted. The entire command was armed with Minnie rifles and muskets without bayonets.

The March to Pyramid Lake.—On the 24th of May the Washoe regiment moved from Virginia City down Gold Cañon cheered by the citizens of Gold Hill and Silver City as it passed through those towns, camping the first night at Miller's ranch, below Dayton, a village known at that time as "Chinatown." The next day was spent in receiving commissary stores, the quality of which was the cause of considerable complaint.

The march was resumed on the 26th, and the next camp was at Reed's Station, from where Michael Bushy was sent out over the Twenty-six-mile Desert as a scout, to learn if there were any Indians in the immediate front. In May, two years later, the remains of that unfortunate scout were found by Warren Wasson, aided by Pah-Utes, within eight miles of Williams' Station, where he had been killed by them. They said that the white man, whose bones were lying there on the sand, had been riding a horse that was tired out, and as he approached the station they sallied forth to capture him. He turned back as they appeared, and a race for life ensued. As the Indians approached too close to him he would halt and level his rifle; thus bringing the pursuers to a halt and cover behind sagebrush. In this way eight miles were skirmished over, but those delays enabled some of them to pass him, who, secreting themselves, shot the brave scout in the back as he faced to the rear in beating off his pursuers. Bushy was a celebrated Indian fighter, and had figured conspicuously in the wars with them in Oregon and Washington Territory. His bones are now preserved in a box at James Small's Station, on the bank of Lake Tahoe, having been placed there in anticipation of being claimed by his brother who lived in Oregon.

On the evening of the 28th the command bivouacked in a meadow by the banks of the Carson River, at the point where that stream turns toward Williams' Station, which is about one mile further below. The next morning the Indians fired into the camp from behind some rocks, on the hill to the north, and then retreated, with loss upon neither side, as far as known. While camped at this place the body of James Flemming, one of the men murdered at the station, was found and buried.

On the evening of May 21st the regiment was joined, at the present site of Wadsworth, by the following United States troops:

Captain Jasper M. Stewart, Commanding; Captain T. Moore, Quartermaster; Charles C. Keeney, Surgeon. Company G, Third Artillery, Captain Jasper M. Stewart, with 82 enlisted men. Detachment of Company I, Third Artillery, Lieutenant Gibson, with two howitzers and 10 enlisted men. Company A, Sixth Infantry, Captain F. F. Flint, with 62 enlisted men. Company H, Sixth Infantry, Lieutenant McCreary, with 53 enlisted men. Total United States force, rank and file, 207; total volunteer force, rank and file, 544; total command, 754.

By mutual consent Col. Jack Hays assumed command of both divisions, and that night they camped near the lower crossing on the Truckee River. A couple of men, while walking out in the evening, discovered in the vicinity of this camp the body of one of the victims of the late massacre, and a writer who was of the party thus describes what had been found: The body was that of a small-sized man, and was traced a distance of 200 feet from the spot where it had fallen, and whence it had been dragged by some wild beast, which had partially devoured it; the throat was cut as was afterward found, invariably, with all the slain, scarcely any of whom were scalped; it was perforated with bullets, and, as if the grim archer, Death, had wished to leave the special sign of his presence, the featured shaft of an arrow, blood-begrimed, which had sped through the heart of the unfortunate, protruded through the breast. Upon the fourth finger of the left hand was a gold ring, without inscription upon its face, which was heart-shaped. As he was recognized by no one, it may serve as desirable, however sad, information to some anxious inquirer after his fate, to mention that the third and fourth toes of one of the feet were webbed to the second joint, and of the other to the first.

The camping ground of the night of June 1st was some eight miles farther down the Truckee River, at the point since known as Fort Storey, called a fort because of slight earth-works that were thrown up at that point by the command, and named in memory of the gallant gentleman

killed near there a few days later. On the evening of the arrival at this place, S. C. Fletcher, of Capt. Storey's command, was killed by an accidental discharge of his gun, the ball passing through his head, and the next morning he was buried with military honors.

Just Before the Battle.—The forces under Colonel Hays were now in the enemy's country, and, without being aware of the fact, were but about one mile from where the body of Major Ormsby still lay unburied. The former disaster had taught the whites that it required something besides a tin horn and a riata, to either corral or stampede the Pah-Ute tribe. In fact, they had come to believe them more formidable than they really were, and had largely overestimated their numbers. In consequence of this the movements of the troops were marked by considerable caution.

On the morning of June 2d a detail, eighty strong, was made, forty from Capt. J. B. Van Hagan's company, and the balance from Capt. E. F. Storey's command, each of those officers taking charge of his own men. This detail was ordered to scout down the Truckee, to the Pah-Ute village at its mouth, unless the enemy was discovered before reaching that point. In the event of meeting the Indians, an engagement was to be avoided, and they were to fall back to Camp Storey, with such information as could be obtained, to assist in a general advance.

They moved out on to the upland, and striking the Indian trail, followed it toward the Pah-Ute village, finding along the way many of the ghastly remains of those who had fallen in the recent affray. Arriving at the point where the trail led abruptly down into the bottom, or meadow, where the battle of Pyramid Lake had occurred, they halted for a consultation, that resulted in a portion of the commands going down into the valley and the balance remaining on the table-land above. It was here where Spear and Snowden fell. The party going on soon came to the body of Meredith, but were signaled from the heights that the enemy were in sight, and then fell back on a trot to the reserves. The Indians were advancing rapidly from the direction of the lake, about three hundred on horseback, in the form of a wedge with the point advanced, while about the same number on foot came running up the valley in a "go-as-you-please style."

An orderly retreat immediately followed, at a trot-march, with instructions to keep ranks and not to fire. In this way they were followed for several miles, and obliged to listen without response to the music of

whistling balls from a long range rifle handled by an Indian riding in advance of all his fellows. That rifle was probably the globe-sighted one that had been taken from the nerveless hand of the dead Elliott. One of the whites named Andrew Hasey was wounded in the hips so severely that it was several years before he recovered, yet it was not known at the time that he was at all injured, as he made no allusion to the fact, and afterward acknowledged his condition only when loss of blood had weakened him to such an extent that some of his comrades were enabled to pass him in a charge on foot up the side of a mountain to capture Rocky Peak from the redskins.

The officers commanding the retreating force, after passing the rough, gully-cut ground between the mountain and river on the east side of the Truckee, saw this main body of troops under Colonel Hays coming out to meet him, and they determined to make a stand where they were. They accordingly formed their men in line and faced the advancing enemy.

The Battle Ground.—When the battle took place, the form of the ground surface had been created by nature, apparently in the special interests of the Indians, for use on an occasion like the one presented. On the west lay a high mountain with steep, sloping, rocky sides, that served as a look-out and signal station, as well as a barrier to a flank movement on that side. On the east flowed the Truckee River that prevented a flank movement in that direction, leaving the Indians with nothing to do but take care of the open, treeless front. There had at one time in the past lay a sloping plain of soil, sand and rocks, between the river and mountains, about one-half mile wide, that narrowed toward the north. The rains and cloud-bursts, in the past centuries, had poured their waters upon the sides of that mountain, that flowed down over the plain into the river, cutting water-courses that were deepest as the margin of the stream was approached. Thus nature's breastworks were formed, behind which a retreating force could make successive stands greatly to the disadvantage of the victors. These dry channels gradually approached each other as their course neared the Truckee until all were merged into one within 200 yards of the river, creating a level bottom, out of which Major Ormsby was passing toward the south when killed. One-fourth of the way down from the mountain to the river, was a round, rocky butte, or peak, possibly 200 feet high; to the south of it was level country, to the north, and between it and the river, the gullies as described lay in continuous succession. About one mile to

the north, these natural earthworks ceased at a narrow pass between the river and mountain, beyond which was the open plain.

The Battle.—The Storey and Van Hagan details, when facing the enemy, soon found themselves under fire from the Indians, who in numbers had taken possession of the round, rocky butte. They had also formed a line extending from the river to well up the side of the mountain; but their number was mostly invisible, having secreted themselves behind sage-brush, in slight depressions of the ground, behind small as well as large rocks; and there did not seem to be so very many of them, after all. How the large force that was soon unmasked got out on the plain so quickly, south of the gullied ground, seemed miraculous to those who had never experienced the facility with which those sons of the desert could disappear from view when there seemed to be nothing behind which they could secrete themselves. Every advantage of position was now in the Indians' favor. The whites had fallen back until both forces were on level ground with the earthworks in the rear of the Pah-Utes.

Captain Storey and Van Hagan decided to make a charge with a part of their command on foot, and take the rocky butte before the main body, under Colonel Hays, had come up, which they did in gallant style, and retained the position, although for some time subject to a flank fire from the direction of the river, as well as from the side of the mountain. They were relieved from this dilemma of finding themselves inside of the enemies' lines by the arrival of the main force. The regulars deployed in open order as skirmishers, and passed to the west of the butte, and along the side of the mountain, driving everything before them, while the volunteers on foot moved forward in the same order to the east of it, firing as they advanced. In this manner a continuous line, about one mile long, extending from the river to near the top of the mountain, was formed, and a general engagement began, the Indians having a corresponding line to oppose the advance.

The Pah-Utes now acknowledge the loss of but four killed and seven wounded; and the most rigid and persistent cross-questioning made at different times and under different circumstances failed to draw anything from any of them that indicated a concealment of the truth; yet such may be the case, as Joseph F. Triplett, of Elko County, writes that the number killed was forty-six; and states that he obtained the information soon after the war from Captain Natchez, Captain Breckenridge, Big George and

Buffalo Jim, all Pah-Utes. Mr. Triplett was in the engagement. In conversation with many other persons who were of the command, not one of them saw over three dead Indians, or knew whether over that number were killed. The battle-ground was not selected by Colonel Hayes, but was fought over from necessity, the engagement having been forced at that point by the persistent pursuit of the enemy.

After the Battle.—The bodies of James Cameron and A. H. Phelps were buried on the 3rd of June, near Camp Storey, and the earthworks that gave the name of fort to the camp were thrown up to render the place more defensible, in the absence of the main force, that were to go in pursuit of the enemy. The body of Major Ormsby was also temporarily buried, being later taken up and removed to Carson City for final interment. In the forenoon of the day of the battle the bodies of two men had been found and buried with Odd Fellows ceremonies at the camp. The following is a description, taken from the same anonymous correspondent before mentioned, of those victims as they were found: McLeod, a man of unusually large proportions, was found lying upon his face, a strip of flesh including the sinew, having been cut from the center of his back its whole length. Of the sinews of their enemies the Indians are said frequently to make bow strings. McCarthy and McLeod lay a few feet apart upon a sandy plain high above, and a mile back from the river. Three or four hundred feet from them lay Jones, but the two former were in the center of a circle perhaps two hundred feet in diameter, which was beaten by feet apparently as hard as the main trail to Pyramid Lake, used doubtless by the Indians for centuries. It was surmised that these two men had made such formidable resistance, that their final destruction was deemed worthy of the peculiar distinction of a war dance, of exultant rejoicing.

The appearance of McCarthy was inexpressibly impressive; he was of but medium size, with long, bushy beard and heavy mustache; the crushing of the frontal bone immediately above the eyes, left the aspect of the forehead high and square. He lay on his back; the chest was raised and expanded; the mouth firmly closed, the beard barely permitting a slight view of the compressed lips. The right knee was partially drawn up as in the act to spring forward, and the right arm drawn back to its uttermost in a curve above the head, as if in the full tide of strength it were about to strike; the countenance and whole attitude exhibiting stern defiance, even triumph over death.

On the fourth of June the march from Fort Storey to Pyramid Lake was resumed; a company, under Capt. Joseph Virgo, of Sacramento, being left behind with the wounded, among whom was Captain Storey. On the way to the Lake the little advancing army was constantly passing the exposed, nude remains of the decomposing bodies of those who had fallen along the trail, on the previous 12th of May. They buried them where they were found except in the cases of Wm. S. Spear, Henry Meredith and John Snowden, whose remains were taken up and brought to the settlements, from where they were sent to their former homes in California. The Pah-Ute village was found deserted, not a redskin was to be found in the country; but their trail led northward, and on the fifth the pursuit of them was resumed. There was a force of possibly thirty men, under Captain Weatherlow, from Honey Lake Valley, in the mountains west of, and toward the north end of Pyramid Lake; and the following letter of confident power and prowess to Governor Roop, tells all concerning him or his command:

June 4th, 1860.

Dear Gov.:—With my small party I am scouting around Pyramid Lake. The last two days have been on the north side of it, and am now on the west side, within two miles of the lake. I have not seen an Indian, although I am in view of the ground on which Major Ormsby fought the Indians. Would to God I had fifty men, I would clean out all the Indians from this region. Thus far I have been waiting for the troops from Carson to attack them, and then to cut off retreating parties, but the movements of the troops are so dilatory that I fear the Indians will scatter off before there is anything done. If there is any more men in the valley who will come, and can get a fit-out, send them along, for my party is too small to venture much; yet all are anxious for a brush with the redskins. You need feel no alarm of being attacked in the valley; there is no Indians about to make it, at least on the north.

Respectfully yours, etc.,

CAPT. WEATHERLOW.

Gov. Isaac Roop.

It would seem that the Captain got out of the way just in time, from the north end of the lake, to escape an opportunity of having the brush his men seemed so desirous of; and if his courage was equal to his assertion, it is fortunate that he did not have the fifty men.

Captain Thomas F. Condon and Warren Wasson had induced a few men, ten in all, including themselves, to move to the north from Carson, and occupy a pass to the west of the south end of Pyramid Lake. This pass was the outlet through which the Pah-Utes were likely to attempt a retreat in the direction of Honey Lake Valley, if defeated by the Washoe regiment, under Colonel Hays. It was important this exit should be guarded—just as important as the attempt was reckless, with such a mere

handful of men. Their number was increased on the way, May 31st, by a detachment from the valley that the movement was designed to protect, and the pass was occupied by the entire force under Captain Thomas F. Condon, now swelled to thirty-four men, on the 1st day of June. This was the day before the battle; and but for the approach of the whites from the south, along the river, they might have found themselves in a hornets' nest.

On the 2d of June snow fell two feet deep on the tops of the mountains, north and south of the Pass, and on the night of the 4th this command reached the opposite side of the river from Captain Stewart's command, at the south end of Pyramid Lake, where they discovered the charred remains of seven white men. Their limbs were burned off, but the face and balance of their bodies had not been touched by the flames, even their beards being unscorched. They were left unburied for about one week, with the hope that some one might identify them, but no one did at that time. They were supposed to be a party of California prospectors, who had last been seen passing down the Truckee River by O. M. Evans, the day after the massacre of the whites. They knew nothing of the trouble with the Pah-Utes, and were never heard from after the thirteenth of May. Their names were: N. H. Canfield, Daniel King, Spero Anderson, ——— Courtright, John Gibson, ——— Cenovitch, Charles Ruth.

End of the Campaign—Death of William S. Allen.—As before stated, the command moved toward the north on the fifth. There is a high range of mountains running northerly along the east bank of Pyramid Lake, that separates that body of water from what is known as Mud Lake; and the forces under Colonel Hays took up their line of march along the eastern base of this chain of mountains. Arriving at a canyon, running from the lowland up into the rocky range, the command halted; and Captain Robert Lyon, William S. Allen, Samuel Buckland, Ben. Webster, and S. C. Springer were sent forward as scouts. They passed along up toward the upper end of this canyon; but as they were nearing the summit there intervened in their front an immense rock, where Buckland, Webster, and Springer halted, while Lyons and Allen passed around and up to the farther side. The following is a description of what followed, written by Captain Lyon:

We had seen no Indians when going up, but as we stopped on the very top of the mountain, we were fired upon by them from an ambush and Will Allen was

killed; a ball passed through his mouth and brain. He dropped at my feet and never spoke; and there died one of the bravest, truest-hearted men that ever trod the soil of Nevada. I reached from my saddle and tried to raise Will's body on my horse. I did not think of Indians or of danger; I only saw the bleeding mouth and fast glazing eyes of my friend; but in less than a minute I was surrounded. I believe they intended to capture me alive and secure my horse without injuring him by a chance shot. They had lain secreted behind the cliffs and rocks and saw us walk quietly into their trap. The first yell of the savages as they sprang out from rocks and cliffs to grab my horse revealed to me my peril. My rifle and the reins of my bridle were in my left hand, but I had no time to use my rifle. My right hand instinctively snatched from its holster my trusty revolver, and with one careless shot at the closing circle of my foes I gave Selim the reins and in a second I was flying down the steep mountain followed by yells and whizzing bullets from the Indians. My faithful horse seemed to comprehend the danger, and put forth every effort, bounding over the rocks like a frightened deer. That was his first and best race, and the stake was liberty for him and life to me, and Selim won it. I rode past two squads of Indians on my way down the mountain. They fired at me as I flew past them, but did not hit me.

I passed the three men where they had halted, and further on met Colonel Hays and Lance Nightingill in advance, followed by all our horsemen coming up the hill on a gallop. They halted, and when I asked Colonel Hays to let my company go with me to recover Allen's body, he answered, "We will all go." Again we dismounted, detailed every tenth man to hold the horses, and marched on foot to the top of the mountain; but the Indians had taken Allen's horse, arms and clothing and fled, and that was their last hostile act of the war of 1860. We placed the corpse on one of my pack-horses and started back to our camp on the Truckee, where we arrived about 2 o'clock the next morning.

The next morning the volunteer army started on their return to Virginia City, where they surrendered their rifles and were dismissed. Captain Storey's remains were carried to Virginia City, while my company, now reduced to twenty, with sad hearts carried our dead comrade back to Carson City, where he was buried with military honors. A Carson company brought in the remains of Major Ormsby, and to-day their tombs can be seen near together in the Carson cemetery.

On the 7th of June, 1860, the volunteer forces under Colonel Hays were disbanded, as appears from the muster-out rolls of the Quartermaster, but the troops under Captain Stewart remained at Pyramid Lake, where earthworks were thrown up that received the name of Fort Haven, in honor of General Haven, of California, who had volunteered as a private in Colonel Hays' command.

Expedition of Colonel Lander.—In the spring and summer of 1860 Colonel F. W. Lander, in the service of the General Government, was engaged in surveying and constructing a wagon road crossing the Sierra Nevada and the Great Basin, and while the events of the Pyramid Lake War were transpiring, was in the vicinity of Honey Lake. Early in August, having about seventy armed men at his command, he encountered the Indians in the Black Rock country, and had a skirmish with them, losing one man named Alexander Painter, after whom a valley of Roop

County was named. The loss of the Indians was not ascertained. This encounter resulted in a peace talk with one of the chiefs of the Pah-Utes, Numaga, which resulted in, measurably, quieting the savages. This chief reported that his followers were in almost a famishing condition, the result of their war against the whites and being driven from their homes about Pyramid Lake. For services thus and subsequently rendered, Colonel Lander was honored by having his name given to a county created soon after the organization of the Territory of Nevada. In the war of the Rebellion Lander became a prominent general of volunteers, and died of wounds received in battle in Virginia in 1863.

The Pah-Utes After the War.—The brave men who had so quickly volunteered to avenge the savage massacre of the Ormsby party and protect the panic-stricken people of Nevada, returned to their homes in California, leaving the force of regulars under Captain Stewart to hold the Indians in check. This body of disciplined men under the charge of skillful officers had done most efficient service, and by their coolness, ease of manoeuver on the battlefield and ready obedience to orders, gave an example of soldierly duty that greatly strengthened the inexperienced volunteers, giving them the confidence and courage that insured a decisive victory. On the 8th of June, the day after the departure of the volunteers, Captain Stewart engaged Mr. Warren Wasson as scout, who kept a journal of all his transactions and affairs with the Indians. Major Frederick Dodge was at the time Indian Agent, whose efforts, aided by Mr. Wasson, were to pacify the savages, entice them to their reservations and supply them with comforts and necessities. After the battle the Pah-Utes remained in considerable force in the vicinity of Pyramid Lake, maintaining a hostile attitude and committing depredations, but the punishment given and force displayed admonished them to keep the peace. Wasson was scout and express rider, passing through many thrilling scenes and dangers in the performance of his duties. Late in June some locations for farming purposes were made on the Truckee and near Pyramid Lake by Messrs. J. D. Roberts, Thos. Marsh, Robert Ree, Hans Parlon, O. Spevey, Anderson Spain, Washington Cox Corey and M. A. Braly. The last two afterward discovered the mines at Aurora, and gave their names to Mounts Corey and Braly. By the middle of July the soldiers had all left Fort Haven and engaged in the building of Fort Churchill, leaving Wasson alone to manage the Indians as agent left in charge by Major Dodge.

Great efforts and consummate sagacity were required to maintain peace. In the absence of soldiers large numbers of the dusky warriors returned with the intention of massacring the whites, but through the efforts of Numaga and Oderkeo, the peace-loving chiefs, further bloodshed was prevented at that time. The last of July, Major Dodge, then stopping at Buckland's on the Carson River, directed Wasson to post notices on the Pyramid Lake Reservation, defining the boundaries and warning all intruders to leave. These notices were printed, and dated May 20, 1860. On the fifth of September, Major Dodge left for Washington, leaving Mr. Wasson to act in his stead as Indian Agent. While acting as such he directed his proteges in the arts of peace, causing them to construct some adobe buildings, to cut hay, and other work, both at the Pyramid and Walker Lake reservations. In December, 1860, he called all the tribe together and gave to each man a hickory shirt and pair of blue overalls, and to each woman some calico, needles and thread. A decrepit old Indian arriving late at the "potlatch" was greatly disappointed because nothing had been saved for him, and all the other Pah-Utes seemed delighted at his misery, and the dilemma of the agent. But Wasson quickly stripped himself, and gave his white line shirt and cotton flannel drawers to the laggard savage, thus satisfying all and making a lasting impression upon the Indians.

Among those under the agent's charge was Captain Truckee, uncle of Sarah Winnemucca, who possessed papers attesting to his services under Fremont, given him by that explorer. This Indian had acted in a friendly manner to the early emigrants who gave his name to the Truckee River. He died October 8, 1860, in the Pine Nut Mountains, south of Como, Lyon County.

In December, Waz-adz-zo-bah-ago, the head medicine chief of On Sarah Mood, the Mono Lake Band of Pah-Utes, was killed and burned to ashes, and on the third day, as related by many people of the tribe, a whirlwind came and raised the ashes in the form of a pillar, and the Chief Waz-adz-zo-bah-ago walked out alive and well. This is an incident of fact among the Indians and to all others as they wish to take it. Wasson, who kept the record, said if he had seen it himself he could not have believed it.

Several incidents are related of the killing of Indians, and attempts to kill by whites, who could never forget or forgive the ruthless murders of friends and relatives by these prowling savages.

Indian was Threatened.—During April and May, 1861, over 1,500 Indians assembled at the fisheries, near the mouth of Walker River, headed by Wahe, who claimed to be second chief of all the Pah-Utes, and was really a brother of Old Winnemucca, head medicine chief of that tribe. Wahe was a treacherous, cunning, cruel, and brutal savage, being half Pah-Ute and half Bannock, combining all the bad qualities of both tribes. He claimed to be a spirit chief, and as such protected from the bullets and weapons of his enemies. This his superstitious people were made to believe, and no Pah-Ute dare resist his will, believing a cruel and sorrowful death would follow disobedience. This chief had been conspiring for some months with various bands of Indians, and the large number mentioned had gathered in council preparatory, it is supposed, to an outbreak. A servant and interpreter of Wasson, a young Pah-Ute, had dropped some hints of a suspicious character which led him to suspect the nature of the gathering and the danger of the uprising, which contemplated his death, and the securing of the arms, ammunition and supplies in his possession at the agency. He also learned that, after he was disposed of, Fort Churchill was to be approached in squads of eight or ten, admittance gained to all parts in a friendly manner, and at a signal, slaughter the entire garrison there, consisting then of only about forty men. Wasson, learning this, boldly entered the Indian camp, and by argument and persuasion diverted them from this rash and murderous attempt. He found among them Bannocks from Idaho and Oregon, and representatives of the Pah-Utes from far and wide, those from the most isolated places being most intent on commencing the raid of rapine and murder. Some had been to California and seen the strength and wealth of the whites, and some had seen the disastrous effects of the war of the previous year, and those joined with the agent in the plea for peace. By this means the conspiracy of Wahe was thwarted, and his power overthrown. He afterward fled to Oregon, where he remained until May, 1862, when he returned, and was killed by two of the Pah-Ute chiefs, who had been convinced that he was not a spirit chief, and could be slain by their weapons; still there was a lurking fear of his power instilled into their superstitious beliefs by long teachings, and he was cut into minute pieces, which were scattered in widely-separated places to more effectually prevent his self-resurrection.

In July, 1861, Governor Nye arrived, and assumed charge of the Indians. But the time for war in eastern Nevada had passed. The rapid

influx of whites had overrun the country, intermixing with, and furnishing the Indians with more clothing and food than they had previously been able to obtain; and they found their condition much better than when their nutpine "orchards," their mice, ants, grasshoppers, rats, snakes, rabbits, and grass-seeds constituted their resource. The murders they had committed were passed over, if not forgotten, and favors were shown them on all sides.

The winter of 1861 was severe, and the Indians in Owens Valley, California, killed some cattle. In retaliation the owners, or their employes, killed some Indians, and the latter responded by killing whites wherever they could get an opportunity of doing so without endangering themselves, until E. S. Taylor, J. Tallman, R. Hanson and a man named —— Crosen, better known as "Yank," had fallen victims. Finally the white graziers concentrated their herds at a point about thirty miles above Owens Lake, where they fortified, and sent to Visalia, California, and Carson, Nevada, for help. This war more particularly pertains to California, but men of Nevada were very active participants.

On the 28th of March, 1862, the fortified graziers were reenforced by eighteen men from Aurora, when they took the field sixty strong, under Colonel Mayfield, marched fifty miles up the valley, and encamped on an old Indian camping ground. On the 6th of April the Indians showed themselves in force towards the mountains to the southwest. The whites sallied forth in two divisions, met the hostiles, had a skirmish, lost one man, C. J. Pleasants, of Aurora, killed, and then retreated back to their camp. They were followed by the victors and compelled to take shelter in an irrigating ditch (built by the Indians), from where shots were exchanged at long range until night. Sheriff Scott, of Mono, received a ball in the head and was instantly killed; —— Morrison, formerly of Visalia, was shot in the stomach and died the following day. After the moon went down the Indians ceased firing and the whites took advantage of the darkness to retreat for their fortified post, leaving behind them their dead, some eighteen horses and considerable ammunition buried. They had killed one redskin in the engagement. On their way down the next day, April 7, they met Colonel Evans with a portion of the Second California Cavalry.

What followed, as well as some matters of interest preceding these events, are given in the following official report of Colonel Wasson to

Gov. James W. Nye, dated April 20, 1862, a copy of which was furnished by Colonel Wasson:

James W. Nye, Governor and ex-officio Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Nevada Territory, Sir:—You will remember that on the 25th of March last I addressed you at San Francisco the following dispatch:

"Governor Nye:—Indian difficulties on Owens River confirmed; hostiles advancing this way. I desire to go and if possible prevent the war from reaching this Territory. If a few men poorly armed go against those Indians, defeat will follow and a long and bloody war ensue. If the whites on Owens River had prompt and adequate assistance, it could be checked there. I have just returned from Walker River; Pah-Utes alarmed. I await a reply.
W. WASSON."

To which, on the same day, I received by telegraph the following:

"W. Wasson:—General Wright will order fifty men to go with you to the scene of action. You may take fifty of my muskets at the Fort, and some ammunition with you, and bring them back. Confer with Captain Rowe. J. W. NYE."

In pursuance of these instructions I immediately repaired to Fort Churchill, and after consultation with Captain Rowe, who promptly adopted measures to carry out your designs, it was determined to proceed to the scene of hostilities with the force and army you had designated.

Lieutenant Nobel was sent in command of the detachment with the following letter of instruction:

"Headquarters Fort Churchill,
"Nevada Territory, March 27, 1862.

"Lieutenant:—As commandant of the detachment of fifty men, about leaving this post for Aurora and vicinity, you will be governed by circumstances in a great measure, but upon all occasions it is desirable that you should consult the Indian Agent, Mr. W. Wasson, who accompanies the expedition for the purpose of restraining the Indians from hostilities. Upon no consideration will you allow your men to engage the Indians without his sanction. As often as practicable you will communicate with these headquarters. Very respectfully,

"E. A. ROWE,

Capt. 2d Cav., Cal. Vols., Commanding Post."

"To Lieut. H. Noble,

"Second Cav., Cal. Vols., Commanding Detachment."

I proceeded from Fort Churchill in advance of the command and met the Pah-Utes on the Walker River Reservation. The excitement was great amongst them, and they apprehended general and immediate hostilities with the whites. Their usual preparations for defense in case of attack were apparent. To quiet their apprehensions of a difficulty, and prevent trouble during my absence, I dispatched Indian messengers to all the different bands of Pah-Utes with instructions to keep quiet until my return, telling them that on my return from the south I would direct them how to conduct themselves to avoid difficulties, etc. These arrangements I found on my return to have had the desired effect.

We left Aurora for the scene of action on Owens River, on the 3d of April, sending you at that date a brief report of our proceedings, disposition of the arms, and our plan of operations, as far as we could form them at that time. George, the interpreter, having become worn out and unable to accompany me, at Walker River I procured the services of Robert, a Pah-Ute, with whom I left Aurora, in advance of the command, and proceeded by Mono Lake, where I found the Pah-Utes of that section congregated and much excited, but in an interview succeeded in quieting them. They were much pleased that I was going to stop the

troubles, as they feared they might themselves become involved in the difficulties, and they sent with me one of their tribe who spoke the language of the Owens River Indians.

We joined Lieutenant Noble at Adobe Meadows, thirty miles from Aurora, on the night of the 4th of April. The next day I left the command, with the two Indian interpreters, and traveled eight or ten miles in advance of the troops. About noon we passed the boundary between the Pah-Utes and Owens-River Indians country, and traveled twenty-five miles and encamped. The next day we reached the upper crossing of Owens River and encamped, seeing no Indians, but abundance of fresh signs. My Mono Lake Indian, on the morning of the 7th instant, informed me that he knew by certain signs that the Indians were to the right and up the valley, and I sent him up towards where they were, while we proceeded down the valley towards the fort, which was fifty miles distant. I instructed him to tell the Indians that we had not come to fight them, but to inquire into the cause of their difficulties with the whites; and that if they would do right, and were willing to come to a fair settlement, justice should be done them; that at all events I desired to see and consult with them. I also instructed him how to approach our camp that night in order to avoid danger of being shot down by the soldiers, and told him our camp would be twenty miles below on the river. After we had proceeded about twelve miles down the stream I saw a body of about one hundred men at the foot of the mountain to our right, some three miles distant, and concluded to await the arrival of Lieutenant Noble and his command, who were in the rear about five miles. When they arrived, Lieutenant Noble and myself left the soldiers and rode over to see who the parties were. We found Lieutenant-Colonel George Evans, also Lieutenants French and Oliver, with about forty soldiers, Second Cavalry, California Volunteers, and Colonel Mayfield, a citizen, in command of about forty or fifty residents of the valley. We made known to them our business and instructions, but found little or no encouragement to make peace with the Indians, their desire being only to exterminate them.

They informed us that the citizens from the fort, some sixty in number, had had a battle the day before on a creek some twelve miles above, and in the direction my Mono Indian had gone that morning. In the fight they had three men killed and were shamefully defeated. The citizens were retreating towards their fort when they met Colonel Evans, who induced forty-five of them to return with him in pursuit of the hostiles, and they were also in pursuit when we found them. Evans, being colonel of Noble's regiment, took command of the entire expedition, ordered Noble to bring up his company, and when we had done so we proceeded to the scene of the fight between the citizens and Indians and camped on the battleground. The next morning by daylight, Evans had ordered out scouting parties in all directions, numbering from six to ten men each. About noon that day some of them returned reporting the enemy in force twelve miles above and at the extreme head of the valley. Colonel Evans then ordered a rapid movement in that direction and in two hours we reached the mouth of the canyon in which the Indians were reported to be. Here we encountered a terrific snow-storm, accompanied by violent wind in our faces, notwithstanding which Evans ordered an advance up the mountains each side of the canyon for a distance of three miles. Fortunately for us, however, we found no savages there, otherwise an easy victory would have been obtained over us, as arrows assisted by that gale would have had dreadful effect. We could have had no choice of position, and the enemy choosing theirs, could have taken advantage of the wind. Becoming satisfied that no Indians were in the canyon, we were ordered to retrace our steps and encamped in the valley three miles below. I remained behind, and the storm having abated, with the aid of a glass I observed Indian signs in a canyon one mile north. I concluded to visit the locality and when near the mouth of the canyon I discovered a large Indian trail freshly made leading out of it in a northerly direction. As night

was approaching I was unable to see any Indians and turned my horse towards camp, that was some two-and-a-half miles distant, when I heard an Indian halloo some four hundred yards from me among the rocks. I answered him in the same way, but heard no reply. I then halloosed in English, Spanish, and in Pah-Ute, also making friendly signs, several times, but received no reply, but as I turned to go away the halloosing was repeated. I replied, but got no answer. This was repeated several times, and becoming satisfied that he only intended to decoy me. I proceeded to camp. On my arrival, looking back, I discovered fires in the same canyon.

The next morning Colonel Evans ordered Sergeant Gillispie, with nine of Noble's men, to reconnoiter it, at the same time moving the whole command in that direction. The detail advanced some 300 yards up the canyon when they were fired upon, Gillispie being instantly killed, and Corporal Harris wounded in the left arm, when they retreated, leaving behind the sergeant's body and his arms. They met the command half a mile below the mouth of the canyon, when as many as were not required to hold the horses were ordered to the attack. Lieutenant Noble and his company were sent to take possession of the mountain to the left of the canyon. Colonel Evans was to have taken the mountain to the right. Colonel Mayfield and four other citizens accompanied Noble, the balance of Mayfield's company remaining below. Lieutenant Noble succeeded in gaining his position under a brisk fire from both sides from concealed Indians. Here Colonel Mayfield was killed. Lieutenant Noble, finding it impossible to maintain his position without great loss, or to proceed up the mountain on account of its precipitous nature, or return the fire upon the concealed foe with effect, retreated in good order down to Colonel Evans's company, carrying with him Sergeant Gillispie's body. Colonel Evans, from the rugged and inaccessible nature of the mountain, being unable to advance to the position he intended to take, the whole command retreated down the valley, the Indians following and building their defiance fires on our camping ground before the rear of the column was a mile and a half distant.

We encamped that night twelve miles below, at the spot where Sheriff Scott, who had been killed the day before in the fight between the citizens and Indians, was buried. Colonel Evans being without provisions, except beef obtained in the valley, was compelled to return to his former post near Los Angeles, 300 miles distant. Lieutenant Noble, with his company, accompanied him as far as the Citizens' Fort, fifty miles below, for the purpose of escorting the whites, with their stock, amounting to about 4,000 head of cattle and 2,500 sheep, to this Territory. During the engagement above mentioned, I selected a high rock about the center of operations, where I could observe all parties, and I am satisfied there were not over twenty-five Indians, who had probably been left behind as a decoy to the whites and to protect the main body and families who had gone on into the mountains to the north, to avoid a collision with the troops.

These Indians have dug ditches and irrigated nearly all the arable land in that section of the country, and live by its products. They have been repeatedly told by officers of the Government that they should have exclusive possession of those lands, and they are now fighting to maintain that possession. Their number is between 500 and 1,000, and they belong to the California Digger Indian tribes. Many of them are the refugees from Tulare Valley, who in 1852 and 1853 massacred the white inhabitants and depopulated the Four Creek country. At great expense to the Government they were driven over to this side of the Sierra Nevada from Tulare Valley, and having taken up their abode along Owens River as a place of last resort, they will fight to the last extremity in defense of their homes. Lieutenant Noble conferred with me and we agreed as to the course to be pursued till we met Colonel Evans, who then assumed command. This re-enforcement ruined all our plans. We might have done better; we certainly could not have done worse. Lieutenant Noble and his men behaved gallantly on the field.

The next morning after the fight, finding it out of my power to do any good in the neighborhood under the circumstances, and fearing the effect of the victories these Indians had gained over us would be to incite the Pah-Utes to hostilities, I left, accompanied only by my interpreter, and the following night reached the line of the Pah-Ute country. From the time of entering it I met many of that nation who were anxious to hear the news from the seat of war, and what would be the possible result. I told them not to participate in the difficulties and assured them that unless they did so they should not be molested, etc. They promised to be governed by my instructions and advice. I arrived at the Walker River Reservation on the 16th instant. The Indians were all glad to see me return; said they had been afraid the interpreter and myself would be killed by Owens River Diggers, and that if such had been the case, they had 600 warriors ready to go and avenge our death.

I was detained at Walker Reservation and at Fort Churchill three days on account of the officers at the latter place insisting upon herding the Government stock, cavalry horses and all, thirty miles from the fort, in the Indians' country, notwithstanding grass was just as good near the fort (an argument used by the Indians), having excited and alarmed the Pah-Utes, who regarded it as a war movement and an infringement on their rights. I took such measures as were calculated to allay the difficulty, and I will add here that for the first time since the establishment of that post, its management promises to be productive of more evil than good among the Indians.

I remain, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

WARREN WASSON.

On the 20th of July following, Wasson was called to San Francisco by a telegram from Governor Nye, to confer with Governor Stanford, of California, General Wright, commanding the Department of the Pacific, and J. P. H. Wentworth, Indian Agent, in regard to the Owens River difficulties. He was then directed to collect the Indians of that section at Fort Independence, where Wentworth would meet him with goods for presents and make a treaty. Under these instructions he assembled four hundred of the savages and, after some delays, on the 16th of October the agent arrived, the conference was held, the presents were distributed, the treaty made and the Indians held a great peace dance in honor of the occasion. Thus ended the Owens River war of 1862.

Conference With the Pah-Ute Chiefs.—Governor Nye, being by virtue of his office Superintendent of Indian Affairs, desired to meet the principal chiefs of the Pah-Utes in conference, and in May, 1862, arrangements were made through the agency of Mr. Warren Wasson, who had been Indian Agent, for the meeting. The most influential chiefs were Old Winnemucca and Numaga; the latter, however, was absent in the north, and at first declined to take any part in the discussion on account of the death of Wahe, which still rankled in the breast of Old Winnemucca, leaving the old chief to settle his private difficulties in his own

way. However, the Governor, escorted by one hundred cavalry of California volunteers, under Captain Price, arrived at the lower bend of the Truckee on the 23d of May and there halted, it being understood that Winnemucca had positively refused to allow the soldiers to come below that point, and had over two hundred well-drilled and mounted warriors and as many more on foot, to defend his position. This refusal and force was kept a secret from Captain Price, fearing if he were aware of the menace that he would resent it and bring on a collision, destroying the object of the conference. In the evening of that day the Pah-Utes with Winnemucca, accompanied by Wasson, arrived on the ground, appearing in grand barbaric display, which seemed to the whites as threatening and overawing, the Indians being about four hundred strong. During the two following days the whole band of savages kept up a continuous war-dance for the edification and entertainment of their pale-faced visitors, dancing on live coals to show their disregard for pain, and performing other feats of an Indian character. On the evening of the twenty-fifth Numaga arrived, appearing as the diplomatist of the tribe, and during that evening and the succeeding day engaged in discussing matters with Governor Nye. No specific treaty was made at this conference, but presents were interchanged and the parties separated. Wasson restored to Winnemucca the property of his brother, Wahe, who had been killed by the Indians at Walker Lake. Among the effects was a picture of the deceased which the old man refused to keep, saying, "No want it; me see him too much all the time." Numaga gave to Wasson, as a sign of peace and friendship, his war cap, made of whole otter skin, trimmed with large eagle plumes, his pipe of peace, tomahawk, and a magnificent bow, arrows and quiver, articles worn by him in all his battles.

Indian Scare at Como in 1863.—From a journal kept by Alf. Doten, who is present editor-in-chief of the *Gold Hill Daily News*, it appears that Numaga, on the 13th of Otoceber, 1863, met some of the leading citizens of Como, in Lyon County, among whom was the journalist, and through his interpreter, uttered a formal protest against any further destruction of the pine-nut groves. He said that his people depended upon the nuts from these trees for food; that the "pine-nut groves were the Indian's orchards," and they must not be destroyed by the whites. That they were welcome to the fallen or dead timber, but he should not permit a destruction of that portion which yielded food for his followers.

This warning was not heeded, and it was followed by the sudden and unexpected appearance upon the scene of numerous dusky forms, who, with lowering looks, so thoroughly frightened the wood-choppers that they fled to Como and spread a war panic in the town. Martial law was declared in Como by Martin, the wizard; pickets were posted and a courier dispatched to Fort Churchill for military assistance. That night a lieutenant with twenty men galloped into the place and took charge of the besieged garrison. The next night every one "who prowled the midnight darkness" were supposed to have the countersign or suffer a sudden calamity. Two citizens met "in the gloaming" and so scared each other that both forgot the password and "turned loose" in the most approved style with their revolvers, each supposing he was having a struggle for life with, possibly, Numaga himself. The alarm was general and fearful to contemplate. A butcher, in his hurry to rush to the general defense from midnight massacre of the town, in his haste to get hold of it, accidentally fired off his gun and then, as the aforesaid Alf. Doten, without the fear of God before his eyes, remarked, "Hell did pop." The next morning the Indians came into town to see what all the row was about.

A Chief Murdered.—On the 25th of October, 1863, E-zed-wa, a chief of the Walker River Indians, was on his way to Virginia City to see N. H. A. Mason for the purpose of entering a complaint against that gentleman's overseer, John F. Hale, when he was met by Hale at Fort Churchill, who got him drunk and then killed both him and his horse. The body of the chief was found in the Carson River by members of his tribe, and Hale made his escape after telling Mr. Mason all of the circumstances.

About the first of December following, Pah-Utes to the number of about 1,300, assembled at the sink of the Carson and by messenger to Fort Churchill demanded satisfaction for the murder of their chief, who was known to the whites by the name of Captain George. Lieutenant Oscar Jewett was sent to hold a parley with them, and the conference resulted in an agreement to give the tribe, as damages for the loss of E-zed-wa, a wagon-load of provisions and clothing, and that Mason was to pay them \$1,000.

Battle of Pyramid Lake.—Virginia Vols., Co. 2, Capt. Archie McDonald, William Armington, Charles W. Allen, G. F. Brown, Joseph G. Baldwin, Jr., D. D. Cole, A. K. Elliott, A. L. Grannis, Fred Galehousen, F. Hawkins, Archibald Haven, J. C. Hall, George Jones, Charles Forman, R. Lawrence, Henry Meredith, P. McIntosh, O.

Spurr, M. Spurr, John Noyce, C. McVane, Patrick McCourt, S. McNaughton, Henry Newton, A. J. Peck and Richard Snowden. Another company from Gold Hill contained J. F. Johnson, G. Jonner, James McCarthy, T. Kelley, J. Bowden, N. A. Chandler, A. G. B. Hammond, Armstrong, E. Millson and twenty-four others.

At this juncture Numaga, or Young Winnemucca, threw himself between Chiquito Winnemucca's warriors and the volunteers and attempted to obtain a parley; but he was disregarded by the Indians, now in hot pursuit of Ormsby's men, who had been reenforced by other companies from the valley, and were making a stand in the timber, where Ormsby by general consent took the command. When the commander comprehended that his force was surrounded he made an effort to keep open an escape by sending Captain Condon of the Genoa rangers, and Captain R. G. Watkins, of the Silver City Guards, the only veteran soldier among them, to guard the pass out of the valley. But a panic ensued. Seeing the hopelessness of their situation, many turned and fled. Watkins returned to the bottom where the remnants of the commands were engaged in a life and death struggle with the Indians, who, flushed with victory, were sating their thirst for blood. The white men cried for mercy, but the savages said, "No use now; too late."

The battle began about 4 o'clock in the afternoon. The bloodiest part of it was where the rear of the white forces, crowding at the pass in their efforts to escape, retarded the exit, and the Indians, riding in amongst them, hewed them to pieces. Just where Ormsby died his friends could not tell. He was shot in the mouth by a poisoned arrow and wounded in both arms. The working of the poison caused him to fall from his horse. It was said that he besought his men to rally around him, dreading to fall into the hands of his enemies before life was extinct. The pursuit was kept up until interrupted by the darkness of night, and the fugitives scattered over the country a hundred miles from Virginia City.* Comparatively few were wounded. The first effect of the defeat at Pyramid Lake was to drive many out of the country. The women and children of Virginia City were placed in an unfinished stone house, which was turned into a fortress and called Fort Riley. At Silver City a fortification was erected on the rocks overlooking the town, and a cannon made of wood was mounted at the fort to frighten away invaders. At Carson City the Penrod Hotel was used as a fortification, after being barricaded, and

* Watkins was one of Walker's Nicaragua force, and had lost a leg in action. He rode a powerful horse, to which he was strapped.

pickets established. At Genoa the small stone house of Warren Wasson was taken for a defense, while Wasson rode through the enemy's country 110 miles, to Honey Lake, to carry a telegraphic order from General Clarke to a company of cavalry supposed to be at Honey Lake to march at once to Carson. As I have before stated, the Californians responded quickly to the call for help. The news of the battle and the death of young Meredith aroused the citizens of Downieville, who within thirty-six hours raised and equipped 165 men, who marched to Virginia City on foot in five days. Sacramento, Placerville, La Porte, San Juan and Nevada City sent volunteers to help fight the Pah-Utes. San Francisco raised money and arms. General Clarke issued orders to Captain Stewart of the Third Artillery, stationed at Fort Alcatraz, and Captain Flint of the Sixth Infantry, stationed at Benicia, to proceed at once to Carson Valley, the two companies numbering 150 men, and they established a military post. Almost daily thereafter there were arrivals from west of the mountains which gave much uneasiness to the divers Winnemuccas on the watch to see what turn affairs would take. By the last of the month there were about 800 troops in the field, of whom over 200 were regulars.*

On the twenty-sixth the united forces marched down the Carson Valley from Camp Hayes, twenty miles below Carson City, with the understanding that they were to go to Pyramid Lake, and if the Indians would fight, to engage them; but if they could not be brought to battle, the volunteers were to disband in ten days and leave the regulars to guard the passes into Carson Valley. Thus the pony express, just established, as well as the settlers, might be protected. Every station was reported broken up as far east as Dry Creek and Simpson Park, in the eastern part of what is now Eureka. On the 19th of June the express and mail

*The killed, besides Ormsby, were Eugene Angel, William Arrington, W. Hawkins, William Headly, F. Gatehouse, John Gaventi, S. Auberson, Boston Boy, A. K. Elliott, John B. Fleming, George Jones, Flournoy Johnson, M. Keuzeerwich, James Lee, Henry Meredith, P. McIntosh, Charles McLeod, O. McNaughton, J. McCarthy, Parsons, Richard Snowden, William E. Spear, Andrew Schueld and others. One correspondent of the *San Francisco Herald* gave the number of bodies found on the field and buried at 43, Hayes' *Scraps Mining*, xi, 104, and another says that on the 27th, two weeks after the fight, nearly 60 were still missing. See also *Sacramento Record*, June 22, 1872; *San Francisco Herald*, May 14, 1860; *San Francisco Call*, January 26, 1879; Klein's *Founders of Carson City*, MS., 4; *San Francisco Alta*, May 8, 1860; Hawley's *Lake Tahoe*, MS., 4-5; *Cradlebaugh's New Biography*, MS., 4-5; Hayes' *Scraps Mining*, xi 61-83; *San Francisco Bulletin*, May 14, 16, 17, 26, 29, 31, and June 5, 6, 7, 1860; *California Farmer*, May 11, 1860.

were escorted from Carson City eastward by a picked company of twenty men and the line re-established. While the volunteers were crossing the Twenty-six-mile desert one of the scouts, Michael Bushy, was cut off by the Indians. His remains were found two years afterward near Williams' Station, and the Indians who pointed them out said he had fought bravely for eight miles, turning on his pursuers and driving them to cover, but his horse gave out, the enemy surrounded him, and the end soon came.

The army found the Indians waiting for them at Big Meadows, in the neighborhood of Williams' Station, where they engaged a detachment of scouts, under Captain Fleeson, whom they attempted to cut off. In the skirmish two volunteers were wounded and six Indians killed. The enemy retreated when the main volunteer force came up. In this fight, as in the battle of Pyramid Lake, the Indians had rifles of longer range than the volunteers. The regulars coming up two hours after the action at Big Meadows, the whole force moved on to the scene of the first battle, where they found and buried the bodies of the slain. From this point the Indians wearily withdrew toward Pyramid Lake, followed by the army, which could not bring them to any decisive engagement, but which was resolved to drive them beyond the lake, and then leave the regular

The Washoe regiment was officered as follows: Colonel commanding, John C. Hayes; Lieutenant-Colonel, E. J. Sanders; Major, Dan. E. Hugford; Adjutant, Charles S. Fairfax; Acting Adjutant of Infantry, J. S. Plunkett; Regimental Quartermaster, Benj. S. Lippincott; Assistant Quartermaster, John McNish; Department Quartermaster, Alex. Miot; Commissary, R. N. Snowden; A. C. S. Captain, H. Toler; Surgeon, E. J. Bryant; Assistant Surgeons, Ed. T. Perkins, C. R. Bell; Sergeant-major, R. McGill. Co. A, Spy, J. B. Fleeson, Captain, 15 men. Co. B, Sierra Guards, Capt. E. J. Smith, 1st Lieut. J. B. Preasch, 2d Lieut. William Wells, 3d Lieut. J. Halliday, 46 men. Co. C, Truckee Rangers, Capt. Alanson Nightingill. Co. D, Sierra Guards, Capt. J. B. Reed, 1st Lieut. M. P. Pierce, Orderly D. Ralston, 14 men. Co. E, Carson Rangers, Capt. P. H. Clayton. Co. F, Nevada Rifles, Capt. J. R. Van Hagen. Co. G, Sierra Guards, Capt. F. F. Patterson; 1st Lieut. C. S. Champney; 2d Lieut. T. Maddux, 3d Lieut. A. Walker, 41 men. Co. H, San Juan Rifles, Capt. M. C. Miller. Co. I, Sacramento Guards, Capt. A. G. Snowden. Co. J, Capt. James Virgo. Co. K, Virginia Rifles, Capt. E. T. Storey, 106 men. Co. L, Carson City Rifles, Capt. J. L. Blackburn, 1st Lieut. A. L. Turner, Orderly Sergeant, Theo. Winters. Co. M, Silver City Guards, Capt. Ford. Co. N, Highland Rangers, Capt. S. B. Wallace (Spy Co.), 15 men, 1st Lieut. Robert Lyon, 2d Lieut. Joseph F. Triplett, 20 men. Co. O, Sierra Guards, Capt. Creed Haymond, 1st Sergt. George A. Davis, 2d Sergt. H. M. Harshberger, 9 men. Scouts, William S. Allen, Samuel Buckland, Benjamin Webster and S. C. Springer. Teamsters and armed followers numbered 30 more. U. S. troops—Officers, Capt. Jaspeh M. Stewart, 3d Artillery, commanding 82 men; Lieut. H. G. Gibson, with howitzers and 10 men; Capt. F. F. Flint, 6th Inf.; Lieut. E. R. Warner, 62 men; Lieut. J. McCreary, 6th Inf., 53 men; Quartermaster, Capt. T. Moore; Asst. Quartermaster, Ed. Byrne; Surg., Charles T. Keany.

troops to guard the passes, as previously agreed upon, hoping thus to starve them into subjection.

As the fatal pass was neared they found the bodies of those killed in the retreat of the 12th of May, which were interred, and camp was made on the 1st of June, about eight miles below the lower crossing of the Truckee River. On the afternoon of the third, an order was issued to Captain Storey of the Virginia Rifles, with twenty men, Captain Wallace of the Spy company, with three men, Captain Van Hagen of the Nevada Rifles with twenty men, and Captain George Snowden, to make a reconnoissance toward the battlefield. They approached near enough to count twenty-three bodies when suddenly arose from the shadow of bush and rock a host of armed Pah-Utes, and the detachment hastily retreated toward camp, pursued by the foe, which posted itself on a rocky ledge two miles from camp.

News of the attack being conveyed to Colonel Hayes and Captain Stewart, they hastened to the spot, and a battle three hours in length was fought, in which 200 volunteers and 100 regulars were engaged. They dislodged the Indians, pursuing them between four and five miles, killing twenty-five and taking fifty of their horses.

In this action Captain Storey was shot through the lungs and died on the 7th. Privates J. Cameron and A. H. Phelps, of his company, were also killed. Four regular soldiers were wounded, and a private of the Nevada Rifles, Andrew Hasey, who charged with his company, after being severely wounded in the hip. The pursuit was abandoned at sundown, the Indians fleeing to the mountains. Fortifications were constructed and the name of Fort Storey given to the place.

On the 4th, the march was resumed toward Pyramid Lake. The Pah-Ute Valley was found deserted, the trail of the Indians appearing to lead north. From this point, where Captain Stewart remained and threw up earthworks, which he named Fort Haven, Colonel Hayes returned to Carson and disbanded his regiment. On the march he lost a valued scout, William S. Allen, who was shot from an ambuscade, this act being the last of the Pah-Ute war of 1860, in the western part of the county of Carson. There was some fighting in the Goose Lake country between the force under Colonel Lander, then exploring for a wagon road over the Sierra and across the great basin, who had been appointed special Indian agent. In August, Lander gave information that Old Winnemucca, with the

principal part of his band, was in the mountains north of the Humboldt River, and the Smoke Creek chief scouting from the Truckee River over to a point north of the sink of the Humboldt. Before quitting the Humboldt country, Lander sought an interview with Young Winnemucca and through him a convention was entered into by which Numaga agreed that the Pah-Utes should keep peace for one year, and Lander promised at the end of that time to use his influence with Congress to procure payment for the Pah-Ute lands.

EXTRACTS FROM REPORT OF G. W. INGALLS, U. S. INDIAN AGENT.

Pai-Ute Reservation,

St. Thomas, Nev., November 30, 1873.

The Indians of this agency are divided into thirty-one different tribes or bands, and are known among white men as Pai-Utes, but among themselves and by other Indians by as many different names as there are tribes, each tribe taking the name from the land which they occupy. The Pai-Utes have always been an agricultural people, and their history can be traced back for more than one hundred years, which sustains this statement.

Believing it to be important to know the actual condition and number of the Indians properly belonging to this agency, and feeling sensible no organized effort agreeable with the present policy of the Government for improving their condition could be put forth without concentrating all the Indians at some place to be mutually agreed upon, as at present they are scattered over the southern half of Utah, northern Arizona, southern Nevada and southeastern California.

Accordingly, I made an extended visit one year ago to most of the various tribes or bands in this agency, and I discovered most of the Indians to be in a very destitute condition, especially those in Utah, northern Arizona and southeastern California, and all of them desirous to have land to farm, but none of the tribes possessing enough land to meet the necessities of one-fourth their number, and living in constant fear of losing even that.

When reduced to extremity for food and clothing, these Indians have been induced to part with their best farming-lands for a trifling sum, and to-day three-fourths of their number are vagabonds. There is but little game left in all this country, and the Indians are actually forced to beg or steal, save the few who can get a little land to cultivate, or find employment among white settlers a few weeks in the year at a mere nominal amount.

In my visit among some of these tribes, I received very important aid from Prof. J. W. Powell, of the Colorado exploring and geological surveying expedition, and was enabled more fully to impress upon the Indians the importance of abandoning their present nomadic life, and consent to go on a reservation. The present policy of the Government concerning the gathering of all nomadic Indians on reservations, and the management of the same, was very fully explained, which was the first time they had ever learned that the Government was willing to aid them to a better condition of life.

Farming.—The Indians very generally expressed their approval of the wishes of the Government; many were willing to comply at once with these wishes, so far as to abandon their present mode of life, cultivate the soil, and engage in stock-raising.

Six of these bands were gathered one year ago in the valley of the Moapa, and were each given a tract of land, and not possessing either plows or harness, their

land was plowed for them by white men, the seed furnished, and, with some assistance from settlers, was planted in wheat, corn, barley, melons and squashes.

The Indians afterward cultivated the crops, carefully watering the same by irrigation, and the following was the result:

	Bushels per acre.
Fifty acres of wheat averaged	30
Seventy acres of corn averaged	20
Five acres of barley averaged	40
Five acres of melons and squashes	—

The value of these crops, estimated at the ruling prices in this section, would amount to over \$7,000, but this amount is not to be compared to the value derived from the influence it has had on these Indians, as well as those who have visited them from California, Arizona, Utah, and other parts of Nevada. It has been demonstrated to these Indians that farming, managed as by white men, affords them a far better and easier livelihood than in the pursuit of their usual avocations, and the effect has been to create a desire among other bands of Pai-Utes to have the same opportunity of making a living by farming.

Having traveled extensively through most of the country inhabited by the Pai-Utes, and conferring fully with Prof. J. W. Powell and Major G. M. Wheeler, who are thoroughly acquainted with this entire country, I was satisfied there was but one valley that possessed a sufficient amount of arable land in which they could be gathered and any general system of farming or education inaugurated among them, and that was the Moapa or Muddy Valley, Southeast Nevada. In accordance with these observations, which were communicated to the Department, an Executive order was issued, March 12, 1873, establishing a reservation embracing the Moapa and a part of the Rio Virgin Valley.

The appropriations for this agency were so small for the present year, but little was done that might have been, had the amount asked for a year ago been granted. I was authorized by a letter from the Department, dated June 25, "to make such preparations for raising a crop the coming year as circumstances would admit." Purchasing some farming implements and detaching some of the horses from the special commission work, several of the Indians were at once set to work preparing the ground for a fall-crop, and in a few weeks, over one hundred acres of wheat was planted in the lower valley by the Indians alone, and with the aid of some of the settlers, about two hundred acres of wheat was planted in the upper valley, making nearly three hundred acres that are at present planted and growing finely. One-half of this wheat is for the Indians at present on the reservation, and the other half for those who are to be brought to the reservation the coming season.

The Indians now here are irrigating and otherwise caring for all the crops until harvested. It is my intention to put in, within a few weeks, as much more wheat, barley, and corn as there can be water secured to irrigate the same. The only difficulty in the way at present seems to be a want of funds to purchase mules, harness, and plows, as well as wheat, barley, and corn, for seed.

Education.—A school has been organized and been in successful operation for three months, a temporary teacher secured, and, for want of a better place, an abandoned adobe building is used as a school-house. There are at present twenty scholars, whose attendance has been remarkably good, averaging fifteen since the organization of the school. The scholars come to the school at 9 o'clock in the morning and remain until 4 in the afternoon, there being an intermission of one hour for recess, at which time all receive a piece of bacon, a cup of flour, and a little tea. The scholars make the flour into bread and cook it outside the building at a camp-fire, at the same time preparing their piece of bacon and making their tea. This furnishes a pleasant diversion from their studies, and

no doubt does much to secure regular attendance at school; by remaining at home they would get neither bacon nor tea, and it would be more than probable the remainder of the day would be spent in hunting rabbits or birds.

The teacher is enthusiastic in his work and feels sanguine that the same number of white scholars, without previous training, could not present a better record for order or proficiency in studies. None of these scholars could tell one letter from another when they commenced attending school, and in six weeks after entering the school five of them could read words of four letters and understand their meaning. The blackboard is used by the teacher in illustrating the lesson, and the scholars are taught to print their lessons on the same. It is my intention to adopt the kindergarten system of instruction, as far as practicable, believing it to be specially adapted to interest and educate Indians.

REPORT OF J. W. POWELL AND G. W. INGALLS.

Washington, D. C., December 18, 1873.

Sir: The Special Commission appointed for examining into the condition of the Utes of Utah; Pai-Utes of Utah, N. Arizona, Nevada, and S. E. California; the Go-si Utes of Utah and Nevada; the Northwestern Shoshones of Idaho and Utah; and the W. Shoshones of Nevada; and for the purpose of consulting with them concerning the propriety of their removal to reservations, would respectfully submit the following report: The commission was delayed a number of days by snows that blockaded the railroads over the mountains, but arrived in Salt Lake City early in May. At that time there was much excitement in the country, consequent on the disastrous conflict with the Modocs. The commission found that the feelings of the white people inhabiting the territory under consideration were wrought to a high state of resentment, which frequently found vent in indignities on the Indians, while the latter were terrified, and many of them had fled to the mountains for refuge.

Immediately on our arrival at the city, delegations from various parts of the country met us, representing that the Indians of their several neighborhoods were preparing to commence a war of extermination against the whites; and several petitions from the citizens of different places, to the military authorities of that department, the governor of Utah, and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, representing that the people were in immediate peril, and calling for military protection, were referred to the Commission. Under these circumstances, the Commissioners proceeded to investigate the state of affairs in the Sanpete Valley, Curlew Valley, Cache Valley, and on Deep Creek, Utah. It was soon found that the fears of the white settlers were groundless and that the Indians themselves were much more terrified than the whites.

In the meantime the commission sent for delegations of Indians representing tribes of Utes, Go-si Utes, Northwestern Shoshones, and Western Shoshones; and after meeting a number of these delegations at its camp near Salt Lake City, such information was obtained as led to a request for further conference with the Department concerning the best course to be pursued with these Indians in the light of the facts thus obtained.

In consequence of such request, one of the special commissioners, Mr. J. W. Powell, was instructed to report to the Department at Washington.

On his arrival, the following statement to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs was made:

Washington, D. C., June 18, 1873.

To the Honorable Commissioner of Indian Affairs:

Sir: Your attention is respectfully called to the following statement of the condition of the Indians inhabiting Utah, Nevada, Southern Idaho, Northern Arizona, and Southeastern California, who are not yet collected on reservations.

These Indians are Utes, Pai-Utes, Go-si Utes, Northwestern Shoshones, Western Shoshones, and Pa-vi-o-toes, (designated in the Indians reports as Pah-Utes).

Of the Utes not on reservation there are two principal tribes, the Pah-vants and Seuv-a-rits. The Pah-vants are on Corn Creek, near Fillmore, in Utah Territory, and in the report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for 1872, are estimated to number in the report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for 1872 are estimated to number 1,200. These Indians are under a chief named Ka-nosh; they subsist by cultivating the soil to a limited extent, by gathering seeds, fruit, and roots, and also by hunting, but chiefly by begging from the white settlers of the country.

Their condition is better than that of any other of the Indians under consideration. The chief, Ka-nosh, is an Indian of great ability and wisdom, and is doing all he can to induce his people to cultivate the soil.

He not only raises grain enough for himself and family, but usually has a quantity to sell, from which he derives a respectable revenue. His influence is not confined to the tribe over which he has immediate command, but extends to a greater or less extent over most of the Indians of Central Utah. The Seuv-a-rits inhabit the country between the Sanpete and Sevier valleys, on the west, and the Green and Colorado rivers on the east. No definite information has been obtained concerning the number of this tribe. In the fall of 1871, one of your Commissioners met a party of them on the banks of the Sevier, and counted thirty-one lodges. These people live by hunting and fishing, and collect seeds and fruits. They were well mounted, are a wild, daring people, and very skillful in border warfare. It may be safely stated that for the last ten years they have subsisted chiefly on the spoils of war. In their raids they have been associated with the Nav-a-jos and Utes, who inhabit the country to the east of the Colorado River. The Pai-Utes inhabit Southern Utah, Nevada, Northern Arizona, and S. E. California. There is a small tribe in the vicinity of Beaver, and another at Parawan, whose numbers are unknown. A third tribe is usually found encamped somewhere in the vicinity of Cedar. The principal chief for the Pai-Utes of Utah, Tau-gu, usually remains with this tribe. In the winter of 1871-2, the tribe was visited by one of your Commission and forty-three lodges were counted. There is a tribe in Long Valley, numbering about 125 persons, and one in Kanab Valley, numbering 107. There are a few Indians on the Paria River, whose numbers are unknown, and there is a small tribe on the eastern side of the Colorado, near the line between Utah and Arizona, numbering 47.

The Piutes subsist in part by cultivating the soil, some of them raising the grain and vegetables introduced by white men, others cultivating native seeds. They also collect uncultivated seeds, fruits and roots. A few of them occasionally work for white men, and they also depend very largely on begging, and are a serious burden to white settlers. The Go-si Utes live in the vicinity of Salt Lake and the valleys extending to the west as far as the Nevada line, many of them into White Pine County, Nevada. They probably number four hundred persons. Some of them are cultivating small patches of ground; one band in Shull Valley, one at Deep Creek, another at Warm Springs, and another at Salt Marsh, near the Nevada line. They also gather seeds and fruits, dig roots and hunt a little, but chiefly subsist by begging. A few of them are occasionally employed by white men. The western band of Shoshones, in the reports heretofore made to the Department, have been over-estimated for Utah and under-estimated for Nevada, with regard to their number and distribution. Your attention is called to the accompanying statement made by Mr. Gheen and marked A. (This statement has been omitted.) After carefully examining the paper and conferring with a number of the principal chiefs and leading men of the Western Shoshones, the statement is believed to be substantially correct. These Indians are cultivating the

soil to a very limited extent. Some of them are employed by white men as herders and in other labors. They gather seeds and fruits, dig roots, hunt and fish, and eke out a miserable subsistence by begging. Of the Pa-vi-o-tsoes, or Pah-Utes, of Western Nevada, we have obtained information of three or four hundred who do not report to either of the reservations on Walker River or Pyramid Lake. Their condition is substantially the same as that of the Shoshones.

Of the Wash-oes, mentioned in the report of the Department, we have no definite information.

The Indians mentioned in the foregoing statement appreciate that they can no longer live by hunting, fishing and gathering the native products of the soil. They fully understand that the settlement of the country by white men is inevitable, and know the folly of contending against it; and they earnestly ask that they may have lands of their own and be assisted to become farmers and stock-raisers, but especially do they ask that they may have cattle. During the last few weeks that the Commission has been among these Indians, it has conferred with many of their chiefs and principal men. One of your Commissioners, as agent for the Pai-Utes, for the past year has traveled among a number of the tribes, and the other Commissioner, having been in charge of an exploring expedition for several years, has met and conferred with numbers of these Indians from time to time, and invariably they have expressed the sentiments given above. Their hunting grounds have been spoiled, their favorite valleys are occupied by white men, and they are compelled to scatter in small bands in order to obtain subsistence. Formerly they were organized into nations, but each little tribe must be dealt with separately. The broad territory over which they are scattered has been parceled out among the tribes by common consent, usually determined at general councils, so that each tribe holds a certain district of country as its own.

Now the most important difficulty in the way of collecting these people on reservations, is the fact that each small tribe desires to have a reservation already established, and failing in this, the other was to set apart new reservations for them. After a careful examination of the facts, it is found that the last-mentioned method is entirely impracticable, as, within the bounds of the territory over which these tribes roam, there is no district country with sufficient water and other natural facilities for a reservation, not already occupied by white men. In fact, the lands along the streams and almost every important spring has either been entered or claimed, and should the Government attempt to purchase such lands for the benefit of the Indians, it would be found to involve a great outlay of money, as water rights and improvements consequent upon incessant conflict with white men. In view of the removal and distribution of these Indians to the old reservations, four important questions were presented to the Commission, namely: First. Are the reservations for the adjacent tribes capable of properly supporting an increased number of Indians? Second. Would the treaty stipulations with the Indians thus located permit an addition to their numbers, and would they consent to it? Third. Would the treaty stipulations with the Indians under consideration permit of their removal? Fourth. What division of the roaming tribes do their linguistic and other affinities dictate? The facts in answer to these questions, so far as they are known to the Commissioners, are as follows:

The reservation on the Muddy is well known to both of the Commissioners. There is some good land and plenty of water; there are no valuable hunting grounds on the reservation, or in the vicinity, but there are streams from which a greater or less supply of fish can be taken; and the natural products of the soil, which are somewhat abundant, would be of value as a source of partial subsistence until they could learn to farm for themselves. The timber is

distant from the district where the farms must necessarily be made, but the climate is good for southern Indians, and the reservation will always be isolated from other settlements. Altogether the situation is good and sufficient.

The reservation of the Uintah is well known to one of your Commissioners. There is an abundance of good soil, plenty of water, and convenient timber. The climate is good for the growth of smaller grains and vegetables, but not favorable to the raising of corn. Good range for cattle is practically unlimited—in fact, there is room enough for all the Indians of Utah.

Perhaps there is no finer valley than the Uintah in the territory of the United States west of the one hundredth meridian. The Commission having no knowledge of the capabilities of the Fort Hall reservation, one of the Commissioners, Mr. G. W. Ingalls, made a special trip for the purpose of examining it. It was found that there was abundance of good land, plenty of water, good and extensive range for grazing, and an ample supply of timber for the Indians already located there, and all of the Shoshones of Utah and Nevada in addition. But little is known by the Commission of the resources of the reservations at Walker River and Pyramid Lake, but from such information as has been received it is believed they are inadequate to the wants of the Indians already collected there.

The facts relating to the second question are these: No treaties have been made with the Indians concerning the reservation on the Muddy. The treaty made with the Utes concerning the Uintah reservation provided for the gathering of all the tribes of the Utes in that valley, but it was never ratified by the Senate, and although the Indians are there as they suppose under the stipulations of the treaty, it is not recognized as binding by the Government of the United States. The principal chiefs on the reservation state their willingness and desire that the other Utes should be united with them.

From the information which your Commissioners have received it is believed that it will be necessary to remove the Pah-Utes or Pa-vo-o-tsoes from the Walker River and Pyramid Lake reservations to some better point, as the resources of the territory they now occupy are inadequate to their wants, unless a system of irrigation and a liberal expenditure of money is made by the government.

The United States Indian agent, in charge of the reservation at Fort Hall, informs your Commission that he believes that the Indians now at that place would raise no serious objection to the removal of the uncollected Shoshones to that place. The rights and obligations of the Indians under consideration have been thus carefully examined that no unjust cause of complaint might arise. With regard to the fourth question, "What division of the roaming tribes do their linguistic and other affinities indicate?" much has yet to be learned. The names by which the tribes are known to white men and the Department give no clue to the relationship of the Indians; for example, the Indians in the vicinity of the reservation on the Muddy and the Indians at Walker River and Pyramid Lake reservations are called Pai or Pah Utes, but the Indians know only those on the Muddy by that name, while those on the other two reservations are known as Pa-vi-o-tsoes, and speak a very different language, but closely allied to, if not identical with, that of the Bannocks and Shoshones.

The Indians of Utah and Nevada, known as Shoshones by the whites, are known by very different names by the Indians. The two tribes mentioned above, Pah-vants and Seuv-a-rits, speak the same language, and are intermarried with the Indians on the Uintah reservations, and should be taken there. The Go-si Utes speak a language more nearly like that of the Indians of Fort Hall, but they are intermarried and affiliate with the Indians at the Uintah reservations, and it is believed they would prefer to go there also. The tribes of Pai-Utes mentioned in the former part, should be taken to the Muddy.

Of the Western Shoshones, Northwestern Shoshones, Pa-vi-o-tsoes and Washoes, sufficient is not yet known to reach a conclusion on this matter.

Having in view the ultimate removal of all the foregoing Indians to reservations already established, the following recommendations are made: First. That the Pah-vants and Seuv-a-rits be visited and informed that the Government of the United States has decided that they shall make their homes on the Uintah reservation, and that hereafter no goods will be issued to them at any other place. Second. That the tribes of Pai-Utes of Utah, shall be visited, and, if possible, a number of the chiefs and principal men be induced to visit the Uintah reservation, with a view to their final settlement at that place.

Should the Commission find it impossible to induce them to look upon such a removal with favor, it should then make a thorough examination into the condition of affairs on the Muddy reservation, and report the results to the Department.

The agent for that reservation should immediately commence work and prepare to raise a crop the coming year to such an extent as the appropriation and circumstances on the reservation will permit. In the meantime two or three reliable men should be employed by the Commissioners to collect the Western Shoshones at three or more points, where they could be visited by the Commission and their annuities distributed to them, and they be informed of the decision of the Department, that they are to go on reservations, and that hereafter no annuities will be distributed to them except at the designated reservation or reservations. The same course should be taken with the Go-si Utes. The Northwestern Shoshones should be assembled to meet the Commission at Fort Hall, and, when there, their annuities should be given them, and they should be informed that the Fort Hall reservation is to be their future home, and that hereafter no annuities will be given them at any other place.

One of your Commissioners can communicate with a part of the Indians in their own tongue, and Mr. Gheen, who is already in the service of the United States in Nevada, speaks the Shoshone language, but it will still be necessary to have one more interpreter, as the Commission must necessarily be divided, and three or four parties organized to reach all the tribes in one season.

It is therefore recommended that Richard Komas, a native Ute, now a student in Lincoln University in Pennsylvania, be employed for this purpose. Should these suggestions meet with your approval, it would be necessary to have the annuities for the Western Shoshones, N. W. Shoshones, and Go-si Utes placed to the order of the Commission. Very respectfully, J. W. Powell, G. W. Ingalls, U. S. Special Commission.

On June 26, the following instructions were received:

Department of the Interior, Office of Indian Affairs,
Washington, D. C., June 25, 1873.

Sir: I acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 18th instant, with a statement in detail of the present condition of the Indians in Utah, Nevada and Southern Idaho, who have not yet been collected on reservations. With a view to the ultimate removal of said Indians to such reservations as have already been established, you recommend as follows: 1st. That the Pah-vants and Seuv-a-rits be visited and informed that the Government has decided that they shall make their homes on the Uintah reservation, and that hereafter no goods will be issued to them at any other place. 2d. That some of the chiefs and principal men of the Pai-Ute tribe in Utah be induced to visit the Uintah reservation and encouraged to make their homes at that place; and in case it should be found impossible to induce them to look with favor upon a removal to that point, then to make a thorough examination as to the condition of affairs at Muddy reservation and report the result to the Department, preparations in the meantime being made for raising a crop the coming year to such an extent as circumstances will permit. 3d. That two or three reliable men be employed by the Commission to collect the W. Shoshones at three or more points, where they can be visited by

the Commission and their annuities distributed to them, and that they be informed of the decision of the Department that they must go on reservations, and that hereafter no annuities will be distributed to them except at the reservation assigned to them; the same course to be taken with the Go-si Utes. 4th. That the Northwestern Shoshones be assembled to meet the Commission at Fort Hall, Idaho, to receive their annuities, and that they be informed that Fort Hall reservation is to be their future home, and that no annuities will be given them at any other place. 5th. That Richard Komas, of Pennsylvania, be employed as interpreter to the Commission; and 6th. That the annuities of the W. Shoshones, N. W. Shoshones, and Go-si band of Utes be placed at the disposal of the Commission.

The above recommendations meet with the approval of the Department, and you are hereby authorized to carry the same into effect. Instructions will be issued to Colonel Morrow, at Salt Lake City, Utah, to transfer to you the annuity goods referred to in your letter.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant, Edw. P. Smith, Commissioner. J. W. Powell, Esq., Special Commissioner, etc., Present.

While Commissioner Powell was thus engaged at Washington, Special Commissioner Ingalls visited a part of the Northwestern Shoshones, in Coche Valley, and, returning from this expedition, made a trip to the Pai-Ute reservation in Southern Nevada. The special Commission met again in Salt Lake City. In obedience to the instructions received, the Commission then proceeded through the Territory of Utah to its southern line, visiting a number of tribes as they should be met from time to time. Sometimes the Commissioners traveled in company, at other times they separated for the purpose of facilitating their operations. On this trip many of the Indians belonging to the Uintah agency were visited, especially the Seu-a-rits, as some anxiety had been entertained lest these Indians should again commence their depredations on the settlements. It was found that they had of their own accord given up their marauding life, and they signified their willingness to go on a reservation and adopt the habits of civilized men. The reasons which they assigned for so doing were very interesting. They stated that their own people had been dying very fast of late years, so that their numbers were greatly reduced, and they were specially terrified on account of some disease which had carried off more than twenty of their number in less than a week, only a short time before the Commission met them.

Some of their people attributed this to sorcery practiced by other Indians, others to sorcery practiced by the white inhabitants of Utah, the Mormons, but the great majority seemed to consider it a punishment for the petty wars which they had waged of late years. Whatever the cause, they had determined to abandon the country, and part of them were about to join the Utes of the Uintah reservation, another to join the Pah-vants, another of the Pai-Utes near the head of the Sevier, and a fourth the Utes of Colorado.

They were informed that the Government of the United States expected them to go on the reservation at Uintah. The Pah-vants were next visited at Corn Creek, near Fillmore. This tribe was found to be much smaller, and the people in much more destitute condition than had been represented to the Commission. Ka-nosh, the principal chief, is an elder brother of Pi-an-ump, principal chief of the Go-si Utes, and the Pah-vants and Go-si Utes, although speaking different languages affiliate socially, and often go on their hunting excursions together. From this point an Indian runner was sent to bring Pi-un-ump and a number of Go-si Ute chiefs to confer with Ka-nosh and such other Indians as might be collected here, in regard to the propriety of their all going to the reservation in Uintah. This runner was successful in bringing in the desired Indians, so that the Go-si Utes were well represented at the consultation held at Ka-nosh's camp. They remained with the Commissioners several days, and great pains were

taken to explain to them the intention of the Government in collecting Indians on reservations. The result of this talk was very satisfactory.

In obedience to the first part of the second clause of their instructions, viz: "That some of the chiefs and principal men of the Pai-Utes be induced to visit Uintah reservation, and encouraged to make their homes at that place," the Commission sent for Tau-gu, the principal chief of the Pai-Utes, of Utah and N. Arizona, and a number of subordinate chiefs. The only ones who could be induced to meet it were Tan-gu, the principal chief of the Pai-Utes of Utah and N. Arizona, and Mo-al-Shin-au-av, Chief of the U-ai-Nu-ints, who live in the vicinity of Saint George. They informed the Commission that, induced by considerations presented to them in former conversations, they had held a general council for the purpose of consulting the people, and there was no voice raised in favor of their going. They averred that the Utes of Uintah had been their enemies from time immemorial; had stolen their women and children; had killed their grandfathers, their fathers, their brothers and sons, and, worse than all, were profoundly skilled in sorcery, and that under no consideration would the Pai-Utes live with them.

It was found that it was impossible, without using force, to induce the Pai-Utes to join the Utes, and it was determined to adopt the course indicated in the alternative presented in your instruction, viz: "And in case it should be found impossible to induce them to look with favor upon a removal to that point, then to make a thorough examination as to the condition of affairs in the Muddy reservation, and report the result to the Department." The Commission then proceeded to visit in detail all the Pai-Ute tribes of Utah and N. Arizona, viz.: Kwi-um-pus, Pa-ru-guns, Un-ka-pa, Nu-kwints, Paspi-kai-vats, Un-ka-ka-ni-guts, Pa-gu-its, Kai-vwav-nai Nu-ints, U-in-ka-reas, and Shi-vwits.

There is a small tribe of Pai-Utes in Northern Arizona, on the east side of the Colorado River, known as Kwai-an-ti-kwok-ets, which was not visited by the Commission. This little band lives in a district so far away from the route of travel that your Commission did not think it wise to occupy the time and incur the expense necessary to visit them in their homes. Finally, delegations of all these tribes collected at Saint George for general consultation, concerning the reservation for the Pai-Utes in S. Nevada. The result of this talk was, in the main, satisfactory, and a delegation was sent by them to go with the Commission to see the country.

From Saint George the Commission proceeded to the reservation on the Moa-pa (Muddy), arriving there September 10, and here met about 400 Pai-Utes who had previously been collected in the valley. It remained eleven days for the purpose of conferring with the Indians already here, and with such delegations from other tribes as could be induced to meet here. Quite a number of conferences were held with the Indians, both day and night, for more than a week. The conclusion of all was, that the Indians on the reservation were willing that the other tribes should unite with them, and the delegations representing the tribes away were favorably impressed with the country, and promised that the Indians would all come to the reservation another year, on condition that the Government would provide temporarily for their maintenance, and give them such aid as might be necessary to establish them as agriculturists. Arrangements were then made by which the Indians on the reservation were enabled to plant a fall crop. Your Commission had also another duty to perform here, viz., to inquire into the nature and amount of the claims of the present white settlers on the reservation. This duty they performed with a desire to protect the Government against unjust claims, and at the same time to do no injustice to the claimants themselves.

The result of their investigations into these matters are given in a subjoined report. The Commission remained on the reservation fourteen days, busily em-

played in the duties above mentioned. In the meantime, it provided that the annuity goods for the Go-si Utes, Western Shoshones, and N. W. Shoshones, should be distributed and stored at a number of points in Utah and Nevada, and that information should be carried to the several tribes that the Commission would meet them at designated points. In view of the extent of the country yet to be traversed, and the number of Indians yet to be met, it was thought best for the Commission to divide here, and Special Commissioner Powell proceeded to carry on the work with the Pai-Utes in S. W. Nevada and S. E. California, and Special Commissioner Ingalls to the W. Shoshones, Northern and Western Nevada.

The work to the southwest was continued until all the Pai-Utes had been seen. Special Commissioner Powell returned by way of the Mo-a-pa reservation, Saint George, and Fillmore to Salt Lake City. On his way, in the vicinity of Beaver, the Pah-vants, who were out on a hunting excursion, were again met, and another long consultation was held with their chief, Ka-nosh.

Commissioner Ingalls proceeded by way of Pah-ran-a-gat Valley at Hot Creek, meeting there a number of Western Shoshones, and from thence to Belmont, where a number of other tribes were met. From Belmont he returned to Hot Creek, and from thence proceeded to Hamilton, Egan Canyon, Spring Valley and Deep Creek, to Salt Lake City, meeting a number of tribes at each place. On this hurried trip the work was not completed. All of the annuity goods to be distributed to the Shoshones had not arrived at the points at which they were to have been distributed, and some of the Indians of the vicinity of Hamilton had not assembled. It was therefore necessary for Special Commissioner Ingalls to return to Hamilton and Egan valleys, which he did, and on the completion of the work at those places, proceeded to Corinne, Utah, where he was met by Commissioner Powell.

Under their instructions the Commission should have met the Northwestern Shoshones at Fort Hall, but a number of circumstances conspired to prevent this. It was found that part of them, under a chief named Po-ka-tel-lo, had already gone to Fort Hall, and had signified their intention of remaining and taking part with the Shoshones and Bannocks on that reservation; and another chief named Tav-i-wun-she-a, with a small band had gone to the Shoshone reservation on Wind River, and they had determined to cast their lot with Wash-i-ki and his men. Each of these chiefs sent word that they had taken this course, governed by representations made by the Commission in the spring, and they desired that it should so represent the matter to the agents on those reservations that these people might meet with proper consideration. Two other bands, one under San-pits, the other under Sai-gwits, had refused to go to Fort Hall, and were encamped near Corinne, and had sent a delegation to request the Commission to meet them at that point. The lateness of the season, and the limited amount of funds at the command of the Commission, caused it to decide that it was impracticable to send the goods to Fort Hall and to collect the Indians there for the distribution, and the two last mentioned tribes were met near Corinne.

Leaving Commissioner Powell at that place to complete the distribution and to talk with the Indians, Commissioner Ingalls proceeded to Elko to meet the remainder of the Western Shoshones, assembled at Corinne, and a delegation of the Go-si Utes were brought to Salt Lake City for the purpose of conferring with another special Commission composed of Hon. J. P. C. Shanks, Governor T. W. Bennett, and H. W. Reed, concerning the reservation at Fort Hall. The result of this conference was very favorable. The Commissioners then returned to Washington, arriving there December 1. This brief history of the operations of the Commission will be followed by a statement of the general results obtained.

Organization, Enumeration and Distribution of the Tribes.—Your Commission

deemed it a matter of prime importance to make a complete enumeration of the tribes visited, and to obtain a thorough knowledge of their organization and condition. Of the Utes, Pah-vants, Go-si Utes, and N. W. Shoshones, they are enabled to make what they believe to be an accurate statement of their numbers.

The census of the Western Shoshones is believed to be a fair approximation. The latter tribes are more or less disorganized, and in some places their tribal relations are entirely broken up, and they are scattered over a large district of country, and it would have required at least an additional month, and a corresponding expenditure, to have made the work as thorough with them as with the other tribes.

The original political organization of the tribes under consideration had a territorial basis; that is, the country was divided into districts, and each district was inhabited by a small tribe, which took the name of the land, and had one principal chief. The tribes, or "land-nomads," as they are called in the Indian idiom, were the only permanent organizations, but sometimes two or more of them would unite in a conference under some great chief.

The following table exhibits the names of these tribes, the number of men, women and children, severally and in total, and also the land-name of the tribe, its locality, chief, and, wherever a confederacy exists, the principal chief of such organization.

GO-SI UTES OF UTAH AND NEVADA.

Un-ka-gar-its, Skull Valley, Si-pu-rus, Pi-an-nump.....	56	58	45	149
Pi-er-ru-i-ats, Deep Creek, Tu-gu-vi, Pi-an-nump.....				
Pa-ga-yu-ats, Otter Creek, Pi-av-un-pi-a, Pi-an-nump.....	39	33	35	107
Tu-wur-ints, Snake Creek, Tat-si-nup, Pi-an-nump.....				

GO-SI UTES OF NEVADA.

To-ro-un-to-go-ats, Egan Canyon, To-go-mun-tso, Pi-an-nump.....	72	68	64	204
---	----	----	----	-----

WESTERN SHOSHONES OF NEVADA.

Pagan-tso, Ruby Valley, Tim-oak, Tim-oak.....				
Pagan-tso, Ruby Valley, To-sho-win-tso go, Tim-oak.....	83	48	44	172
Pagan-tso, Ruby Valley, "Mose," Tim-oak.....				
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Hamilton, Que-ta-pat-so, Tim-oak.....	49	37	15	101
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Halleck, Capt. Sam, Tim-oak.....	19	12	35	36
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Elko, Capt. Sam, Tim-oak.....	40	33	17	90
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Mineral Hill, Tu-ka-yun-na, Tim-oak.....	24	21	15	60
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Palisade, Pit-si-nain, Tim-oak.....	19	22	15	56
Kai-da-toi-ab-ie, Vicinity of Carlin, Pit-si-nain, Tim-oak.....	23	29	30	82
No-ga-ie, Robinson District, Pit-si-nain, Tim-oak.....	24	25	11	60
No-ga-ie, Spring Valley, Pit-si-nain, Tim-oak.....				
No-ga-ie, Vicinity of Duckwater, Mo-tso-gaunt, Tim-oak.....	25	24	11	60
No-ga-ie, White River Valley, Mo-tso-gaunt, Tim-oak.....	33	32	15	80
Pai-at-tui-ab-be, Belmont and vicinity, Kai-wits, Kai-wits.....	45	39	32	116
Pai-at-tui-ab-be, Hot Creek, Wet-sai-go-om-beom, Kai-wits.....	7	8	7	22
Pai-at-tui-ab-be, Big Smokey Valley, "Brigham," Kai-wits.....	10	9	6	25
Pai-at-tui-ab-be, Vicinity of Morey District, To-po-go-om-bi, Kai-wits..	8	9	7	24
Pai-at-tui-ab-be, Vicinity of Fist Lake, Wau-go-vwi, Kai-wits.....	25	26	11	62
Nah-ae-go, Reese River Valley, To-to-a, To-to-a.....				
Nah-ae-go, Reese River Valley, Koo-soo-be-to-gwi, To-to-a.....				
Nah-ae-go, Reese River Valley, Behr-ha-naugh, To-to-a.....				
Nah-ae-go, Reese River Valley, Uhr-wa-pits, To-to-a.....	186	190	159	530
Nah-ae-go, Vicinity of Austin, Weg-a-whan, To-to-a.....				
Nah-ae-go, Vicinity of Austin, Wedge-a-gan, To-to-a.....				
Nah-ae-go, Vicinity of Austin, Kush-sho-way, To-to-a.....				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., Pie-a-ra-poo-na, Pai-a-rai-poo-na..				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., Se-no-wets-o, Pai-a-rai-poo-na.....				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., No-wits-ie, Pai-a-rai-poo-na.....	69	71	54	194
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., Pie-a-nang-gau, Pai-a-rai-poo-na...				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., "Sam," Pai-a-rai-poo-na.....				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vcy. of Bat. Mt., Timpits, Pai-a-rai-poo-na.....				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vicinity of Unionville, Ber-roo-na, Ber-roo-na.....				
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vicinity of Unionville, Dorocho, Ber-roo-na.....	92	51	32	175
To-na-wits-o-wa, Vicinity of Unionville, Gas-shi-ma, Ber-roo-na.....				

PAI-UTES OF SOUTHERN NEVADA.

Sau-won-ti-ats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Tau-um-pu-gaip, To-shoap.....	44	34	14	92
Mo-a-pa-ri-ats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Mau-wi-ta, To-shoap.....	30	22	12	64
Nau-guan-a-tats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Ai-at-tau-a, To-shoap.....	21	23	16	60
Pin-ti-ats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Kwi-vu-a, To-shoap.....	20	17	10	47
Pa-room-pai-ats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Mo-wi-un-kits, To-shoap.....	15	10	10	35
I'chu-ar-rum-pats, Mo-a-pa Valley, To-shoap, To-shoap.....	13	16	6	35
U-tum-pai-ats, Mo-a-pa Valley, Tau-ko-its, To-shoap.....	12	20	14	46
Pa-ran-i-guts, Pa-ran-i-gut Valley, An-ti-av, To-shoap.....	65	58	48	171
Tsou-wa-ra-its, Meadow Valley, Pagwum-pai-ats, To-shoap.....	68	52	35	155
Nu-a-gun-tits, Las Vegas, Ku-ni-kai-vets, Ku-ni-kai-vets.....	69	49	43	161
Pa-ga-its, Vicinity of Colville, Un-kom-a-to-a-kwi-a-gunt, Ku-ni-kai-vets	12	15	7	34
Kwi-en-go-mats, Indian Spring, Pats-a-gu-ruke, Ku-ni-kai-vets.....	7	6	5	18
Mo-vwi-ats, Cottonwood Island, Ha-va-rum-up, Ku-ni-kai-vets.....	24	19	14	57
No-gwats, Vicinity of Potosi, To-ko-pur, To-ko-pur.....	22	24	10	56
Pa-room-pats, Pa-room-Spring, Ho-wi-a-gunt, To-ko-pur.....				

1,031

Census of Indians of Nevada by Powell and Ingalls, Special United States Commissioners, 1873.

RECAPITULATION.

The Pai-Utes of Utah number	528	
The Utes of Utah number	556	
The Pah-vants of Utah number	134	
The Go-si Utes of Utah number	256	
Total number of Indians in Utah		1,474
The Pai-Utes of Arizona number		284
The Pai-Utes of South Nevada number	1,031	
The Go-si Utes of Nevada number	204	
The Western Shoshones of Nevada number	1,945	
Total number of Indians in Nevada met by the Commission....		3,180
The Pai-Utes of S. E. California number		184
Total number of Indians visited by the Commission.....		5,122

There is another confederacy of Pai-Utes, known as Chem-a-hue-vis, that inhabit the Chem-e-hue-vis Valley on the Lower Colorado. Their country is separated from that of the Pai-Utes in the above table by the region inhabited by the Mojave Indians. These Chem-a-hue-vis speak the same language as the Pai-Utes, and claim that they formerly lived among them. They still associate with the Pai-Utes farther north in California and at Cottonwood Island, and are intermarried with them. A delegation of these Indians met the commission at the Vegas, in Nevada. They estimate the whole number of Indians belonging to the confederacy at about 300, and this is believed to be approximately correct.

The Indians of western Nevada, belonging to the Pyramid Lake and Walker Lake reservations, are known as Pah-Utes and Pai-Utes in the records of the Indian Department. They should be known as Pa-vi-o-tsoes, as this is the name by which they know themselves, and by which they are known throughout the surrounding tribes. In western Nevada,

and on the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevadas in California, there are a number of Indians known as Ko-eats, Pan-a-mints, etc. They are known to speak languages of the same stock as the Pai-Utes and Pa-vi-o-tsoes.

Pai-Utes.—Of the Indians known as Pai-Utes there are thirty-one tribes. Ten of these are united in a confederacy, having for their principal chief, Tau-gu. The Wwa-an-ti-kwok-ets, who live on the eastern side of the Colorado River, are nearly isolated from the other tribes and affiliate to a greater or less extent with the Navajos. Seven other tribes of Pai-Utes are organized into a confederacy under the chieftancy of To-Shoap, in Moapa Valley. The Pah-ran-i-gats were formerly three separate tribes, but their lands having been taken from them by white men, they have united into one tribe under An-ti-av. In the same way the Indians of Meadow Valley were formerly four separate tribes, but now one, under Pa-gwum-pai-ats. Four other tribes are organized into a confederacy under the chieftancy of Ku-ni-kai-vets, and seven under the chieftancy of To-ko-pur.

The country inhabited by these Indians no longer affords game in sufficient quantities worthy to be mentioned as part of their subsistence. A very few deer and mountain sheep are killed, and a greater number of rabbits. The principal part of their food is obtained by gathering seeds and digging roots. All of the tribes cultivate the soil to a limited extent, raising wheat, corn, beans, melons and squashes. Some food and the greater part of their clothing is obtained by begging, the skins of such animals as they kill being entirely inadequate to their wants for this purpose. Some of them have, for a few years, received a small supply of clothing from the government, through the agencies at Salt Lake City and Pioche. A few of the people occasionally work for white men, and a great many of them are learning to speak the English language; especially is this true of the children.

Prior to the settlement of the country by the white men, they all cultivated the soil, and would do so now to an extent sufficient to obtain a living, if they had the lands in the districts of country which they severally occupy. In fact, all these tribes, when met by the commission, asked for lands and cattle that they might become farmers; but each tribe desires to have some part of its original territory set apart for its use. After much talk with the commission and much consultation among themselves, they all agreed to come together on the reservation set apart for them

by executive order in the valley of the Mo-a-pa on these conditions—that the Government will remove the white settlers therefrom and will assist them to remove their old people and children from their present to their prospective home on the reservation, and will assist them to become agriculturists and provide for their maintenance until such time as they can take care of themselves. These conditions are reasonable and just. There is no game on the reservation, and the native products are few, and it would be impossible for the Indians to live on the reservation without assistance. It would be useless to take them there without at the same time providing for their support, as in such a case they would be compelled at once to scatter again over the country from whence they had been taken.

Reservation on the Mo-a-pa.—This reservation, though large in territory, is composed chiefly of arid, barren mountains and deserts of drifting sands. The only part of the valley fit for agricultural purposes is the few acres—not more than 6,000—which can be redeemed by the use of the waters of the Mo-a-pa, and some grass lands of no greater extent, for the climate is so arid that agricultural operations cannot be carried on without artificial irrigation. The reservation is between the 36th and 37th parallels of latitude; the climate is very warm, snow is never seen in the valley, and frost rarely. The part of the land which can be brought into cultivation by irrigation produces bountifully, and two crops can be brought into cultivation by irrigation in one season. Wheat, oats, barley, corn, sweet potatoes, cotton and all the fruits of sub-tropical countries can be successfully raised, as has been demonstrated by the present white settlers. The census taken shows that there are 2,027 Pai-Utes. Adding to this number the Chem-a-hue-vis of Southern California, about 300, and we have 2,327. It is the opinion of the commission that there is enough water in Mo-a-pa Creek to irrigate lands to an extent sufficient to support that number of people for the present, but it would not be wise to take any greater number of Indians there. The Rio Virgin, in its lower course, runs through the reservation, but the waters of this river are salt, and its whole course is over quicksands, and altogether the nature of the country is such that the stream cannot be controlled for purposes of irrigation, except to a very limited extent on the eastern margin of the reservation, and the expense attending the management of the water would be very great. The boundaries of the reservation should

be extended to the east to a point where the river emerges from the mountains through a canyon. By this means the land available for cultivation on the reservation could be increased to the extent of two or three thousand acres.

Salt.—In the bluffs on the banks of the Rio Virgin, a short distance below the mouth of the Mo-a-pa, there are extensive deposits of salt, in many places very pure and easily accessible. It is probable that these salt-beds can be worked to some extent, and the products thereof made a source of revenue to the Indians.

Cattle Raising.—In the upper part of the valley of the Mo-a-pa are the grass-lands above mentioned. In addition to these, along the dry benches on either side, and in a few places along the valley of the Virgin, there is a scant supply of bunch grass. The reservation does not afford extensive facilities for cattle raising, though a few cows can be kept with advantage.

Buildings.—The buildings occupied by the present white settlers are of adobe covered with tules, a species of reed-like plants. They would be of great value for the immediate use of the employes and a part of the Indians.

Timber.—Within the present boundaries of the reservation there is no timber, but a short distance beyond the western line a small amount of timber can be procured on the side of a mountain known as Gass Mountain. To prevent speculators from seizing this for the purpose of selling it to the Government, the boundaries of the reservation should be extended so as to include the timber tract. Hundreds of thousands of Cottonwoods have been planted on the reservation, in part by the present settlers, but chiefly by others who preceded them. These are making vigorous and healthy growth and will, in a few years, furnish an abundance of wood for fuel, and some for building purposes. In the meantime fuel can be procured by using the few mesquite bushes that grow in the vicinity of the farms.

Mill.—There is a dam, mill-race and mill building, but no machinery in the mill. This should at once be properly supplied and worked, as the distance to settlements where a mill is situated is very great.

Roads.—There are three roads by which the settlement on the reservation is approached—one from the Hualapai mining district on the south, crossing the Colorado River at the mouth of the Rio Virgin, another from

St. George on the east, and another from Pioche on the north. All these roads are very bad, making it expensive to transport the necessary supplies and material for the reservation from the settlements where they can be procured. One of these roads, probably the one from the agency to Pioche, should be put in good order at once.

White Settlers.—At the time this reservation was set apart by executive order there were a number of families settled in the valley, and they still remain for the purpose of holding their claims. They occupy the best lands and control much of the water which is needed for the reservation, and it was only by their sufferance that the Indians were able to plant a crop this fall. It will not be possible for the Indians to proceed with any extensive farming until these people are removed. There is danger of other troubles arising also from their presence on the reservation, as there is a constant conflict between them and the Indians, which becomes more bitter daily, and, as the number of Indians is increased, it is liable to result in disastrous consequences.

Improvements Made by Former Settlers.—Early in the year 1865, a number of people from Utah settled in the valley of the Mo-a-pa, or Muddy. Others followed rapidly and four towns were established, Saint Thomas, Saint Joseph, Overton, and West Point; and the number increased until it was claimed that there were more than two thousand people in the valley. These people made extensive and valuable improvements. An extensive system of irrigating canals was constructed so as to utilize all the water from the Mo-a-pa. As the country was destitute of timber, cottonwoods were planted along these water courses. Much labor was also expended on the opening of the roads. When these people came into the valley it was supposed by them that they were settling in the Territory of Arizona, but when the lines separating Utah, Arizona and Nevada were run by Government surveyors the valley was found to be within the jurisdiction of the State of Nevada. Thereupon the inhabitants of the valley abandoned their homes and returned to Utah.

When they left, other settlers came in and located claims in the most valuable parts of the valley, under the laws of Nevada enacted for the purpose of securing possessory rights. The houses erected by the original settlers were built of adobes, usually covered with tules or earth, and being of perishable material, they, with some exceptions, have gone to ruin. These exceptions are the few houses which the present inhabitants

have occupied and preserved. These people have also kept up only a part of the original canals, constructing some new water-ways, and adapting them to their present wants. To utilize the valley as a reservation for the number of Indians which it is proposed to assemble here, it will be necessary to repair the original canals and drain certain swamps which were only partially drained by the first inhabitants. This can be done with a saving to the Government of probably more than a hundred thousand dollars, in comparison with the original cost of the work. The land has never been surveyed by the Government, and the original owners lost their possessory rights by abandonment. The present settlers have acquired possessory rights, not to the whole valley with all its original improvements, but only to such parts as are covered by their several claims. It would be impossible for the original owners to acquire possession of the valley again without purchasing the rights of the present owners. They could yet obtain possession of the unoccupied portions of the valley, but this would not be suited to their communal organization, and it is believed that they do not desire to return, under any circumstances. The rights of the present settlers are more fully set forth in the special report, of which mention has been made. From the foregoing it will be seen that the valley of the Mo-a-pa is well adapted to agriculture, and that a system of canals is already constructed. The Indians themselves are willing to work and anxious to cultivate the soil. Altogether the circumstances are very favorable to the project of making farmers of the Pai-Utes, and thus enabling them to become self-sustaining, and converting them from vicious, dangerous savages to civilized people.

Pah-Vants.—The Pah-vants, under the chieftaincy of Kanosh, number 134. They speak the same language as the Utes of Uintah Valley, socially affiliate with them, are intermarried with them, and sometimes join them in their hunting excursions. They should be taken to the reservation at Uintah, their number being too small to warrant the establishment of a separate reservation for their benefit. They have shown themselves somewhat averse to removing to that place, but through Kanosh, their chief, have finally agreed that if the President of the United States insists on their going, and will assist them to become farmers, they are willing to try what can be done. Kanosh is a man of ability. He lives in a house which was built for him by a former superintendent of Indian affairs for Utah, and, in part, adopts the habits of civilized life; but his people live

chiefly by gathering seeds, hunting and begging, though they raise a little wheat and corn. This year they cultivated about thirty acres of wheat, which yielded a very poor harvest. No Indians in all the territory visited by your commission have, in past years, received one-quarter of the amount of goods, in proportion to their numbers, as the Pah-vants, and this generous treatment on the part of the Government has added to the influence of Kanosh, for he has thus proved to the surrounding tribes his ability to influence the Government officials, and he is their admiration and envy; and they have learned to consult him, to a great extent, concerning all their dealings with the officers of the Indian Department. There are circumstances connected with his relation to the Mormon Church that may lead him to refuse to go. In such a case he should be compelled with any force that may be necessary.

Before such a course is taken, the Government should provide the means by which such removal would accrue to the benefit of him and his people.

Go-Si Utes.—The Go-Si Utes number 460. They inhabit a district of country west of Utah Lake and Great Salt Lake, on the line between Utah and Nevada, a part being in Utah and a part in the State of Nevada. These Indians are organized into a confederacy, under the chieftaincy of Pi-an-nump. This chief, a few weeks after meeting the Commission, in July, was taken ill and died, when the members of the band killed his wife and buried both of them in one grave, with horse blankets and food.

More than any other Indians visited by the commission, these Go-si Utes are cultivating the soil and working for white men. Pi-an-nump, who is a brother of Kanosh, chief of the Pah-vants, is proud to claim that he earns his own living. Scorning to beg, he is willing to work, and while he is not able to induce all his Indians to take the same course, yet his influence is entirely for good. His people are scattered in very small bands, cultivating the soil about little springs, here and there, and from year to year compelled to give up their farms as they are seized by white men. They are all anxious to obtain permanent homes, and are willing to go wherever the President will direct, if they can only thus secure land and make a start as farmers.

The Go-si Utes speak a language much more nearly allied to the Northwestern Shoshones than the Utes, though the greater number of them affiliate with the Utes, and are intermarried with them. The greater part of them would prefer to go to Uintah, but a few, on account of marriage-

ties, desire to go with the Shoshones. It would probably be well to give them this choice. The Utes of Utah number 556, the Pah-vants 134, and the Go-si Utes of Utah and Nevada 460, making a total of 1,150 Indians, who should be collected on the reservation at Uintah.

Western Shoshones.—The Western Shoshones number 1,945 and are divided into thirty-one tribes. They inhabit Southern Oregon, Southwestern Idaho, Eastern and Central Nevada. Of these tribes not more than one-fourth took part in the treaty of October 1, 1863, made at Ruby Valley in Nevada. The tribes living to the south and west were not present or represented in any manner. Under that treaty it was stipulated that the Western Shoshones could be called to a reservation at the will of the President, and that these tribes should receive annuities to the amount of \$5,000 for a term of twenty years. Only the northern tribes, who took part in the treaty, have received the benefit of this stipulation. The southern and western tribes, having taken no part in the treaty, have received no part of the annuities, and consider that they are under no obligations to the General Government, and exhibit some reluctance to their proposed removal to a reservation. The northern tribes, who did take part in the treaty, would prefer to remain where they now are, if lands could be given them in the several districts, but when informed that such a course could not be taken, and explanations were given to them of the reason therefor, they expressed a willingness to settle on the Shoshone River, to the north, within the limits or adjacent to the reservation at Fort Hall, provided it should be found on examination to contain sufficient agricultural lands to meet their wants.

The condition of these Indians does not differ materially from that of the Pai-Utes and Go-si Utes which have been heretofore mentioned, though it should be stated that the more southern tribes are in an exceedingly demoralized state; they prowl about the mining-camps, begging and pilfering, the women prostituting themselves to the lust of the lower class of men. There are no Indians in all the territory visited by your commission whose removal is so imperatively demanded by consideration of justice and humanity as these Shoshones of Nevada.

The Pa-vi-o-tsoes or Pah-Utes.—In the report of the agent of the Pa-vi-o-tsoes belonging to the Walker River reservation and Pyramid Lake reservation, these Indians are estimated to number 800. They seem to be making substantial progress in civilization cultivating the soil to the

extent of the facilities afforded on the reservation and support themselves largely by fishing, selling the surplus products of the fisheries at good rates to the people of the railroad town adjacent. There appears to be no reason to change the opinion expressed in the statement made last June that the Indians should be removed to some other place where they can become agriculturists. Since that communication was made additional reasons for such a removal have appeared. It is probable that the Central Pacific Railroad Company is entitled to a part of the land embraced within the reservation, under the grant made to it by Congress. If this should prove true, it would be necessary to purchase such lands in order to secure these reservations for the use of the Indians, and when so purchased they would be entirely inadequate to their wants. Doubtless the Indians themselves would raise very serious objections to the removal, but they are industrious, intelligent, manageable people, and it is believed that if the necessities for the removal were properly represented to them, and, in addition to this, they are given substantial evidence that good lands will be secured to them, and they will receive valuable aid by being supplied with farming implements, seeds, cattle, etc., they will eventually consent to the removal. From the best information at the command of the commission, and after making diligent inquiries, it is believed that there are about 1,000 Indians allied in language to these Pa-ci-otsoes, yet distributed about Western Nevada and Northwestern California.

During the past season the commission met many of the chiefs and principal men of these tribes. They, like the other Indians of Utah and Nevada, are anxious to obtain lands. Doubtless no great difficulty would be met in inducing them to go on a reservation; but within the territory inhabited by them there are no unoccupied lands which could be secured for their use. To the north, on the Malheur River, there is a reservation of what is represented to be good land, well watered, and with abundance of timber. On this reservation there are about 500 Indians allied to these of Nevada and California. The commission deem it wise that an effort should be made to consolidate all these Indians, namely, the Indians already on the Malheur Reservation, the uncollected tribes in Western Nevada and Northeastern California. The total number of such Indians would be about 2,300.

Recapitulation.—The tribes whose condition has been thus briefly discussed, and for whose disposition recommendations have been made, are

scattered over a great extent of territory, embracing the greater part of the region between the Rocky Mountains and the Sierras. The boundaries of this region may be indicated in a general way as follows: Beginning on the north line of Oregon where that line crosses the Sierras, and continuing south along the crest of this range of mountains to Walker's Pass in Southern California, and from thence east to the southeast corner of Nevada; and from thence northeast to the point where the San Juan River crosses the northern line of Arizona; and from thence east along this line to the southeast corner of Utah; and from thence north along the eastern line of Utah and beyond the line of Utah to the Wind River Mountains; and from thence in a northwesterly direction along the Wind River Mountains and the mountains which separate Montana from Idaho to a point directly east of the northern line of Oregon, and from that point to the place of beginning. The region of country thus described embraces the greater part of Idaho, nearly two-thirds of Oregon, nearly one-fourth of California, the entire State of Nevada and the Territory of Utah, one-fifth of Arizona and one-sixth of Wyoming, and contains about 420,000 square miles.

Within the territory thus described there are two small reservations, of which no mention has been made in this report, on the eastern slope of the Sierras, and do not belong to the great family of tribes we have been discussing. The Shoshones and Bannocks, of the Wind River Reservation, are without the boundaries of the country described, but they belong to the same family of tribes. The same is true with regard to the tribes of Utes which belong to the great reservation in Western Colorado; and the Comanches of Texas are also a branch of this people. The Indians who inhabit this great district of country are estimated to number nearly 27,000 in the last annual report of the Bureau of Indian Affairs. The facts which we have collected show that there are not more than 9,359; and adding to this 300 Chem-a-hue-vis, belonging to the same race, that live to the south of the district described, we have 9,659. It is proposed to collect all the Pai Utes of southern Nevada, southeastern California, northwestern Arizona, and southern Utah, together with the Chem-a-hue-vis of southeastern California, on the Mo-a-pa reservation in the southern Nevada. The total number of these Indians is 2,327. It is proposed to collect the Utes of Utah, the Pah-vants of Utah and the Ho-si Utes of Utah and northeastern Nevada on the Uintah reservation. The total number of

these Indians is 1,150. It is proposed to collect the Bannocks and Shoshones, etc, who are already on the Malheur reservation, the Pah-Utes or Pa-vi-o-tsoes, who are now on the reservation at Pyramid Lake and Walker River, and the uncollected tribes of western Nevada and north-eastern California on the reservation at Malheur River. The total number of these Indians is 2,300.

General Remarks.—All of the Indians who have been visited by the commission fully appreciate the hopelessness of contending against the Government of the United States and the tide of civilization. They are broken into many small tribes, and their homes are so interspersed among the settlements of white men, that their power is entirely broken and no fear should be entertained of a general war with them. The time has passed when it was necessary to buy peace. It only remains to decide what should be done with them for the relief of the white people from their petty depredations and from the demoralizing influences accompanying the presence of savages in civilized communities, and also for the best interests of the Indians themselves. To give them a partial supply of clothing and a small amount of food annually, while they yet remain among the settlements, is to encourage them in idleness, and directly tends to establish them as a class of wandering beggars. If they are not to be collected on a reservation they should no longer receive aid from the General Government, for every dollar given them in their present condition is an injury. This must be understood in the light that it is no longer necessary to buy peace. Perhaps the Utes of Uintah Valley should be excepted from this statement, as they might thus be induced to join the Utes of Western Colorado, who are yet unsubdued.

Again, they cannot be collected on reservations and kept there without provision being made for their maintenance. To have them nominally on a reservation and actually, the greater part of the year, wandering among the settlements, is of no valuable advantage, but rather an injury, as the people, believing that they should remain on their reservations, and considering that they are violating their agreements with the Government in wandering away, refuse to employ them and treat them with many indignities. And this consolidation of a number of tribes of Indians in one body make them stronger, more independent, and more defiant than they would be if scattered about the country as small tribes. If then they are to be collected on reservations and held there by furnishing them with

an adequate support, it is evident wisdom that they become self-supporting at the earliest possible day; and it is urgently recommended that steps be taken to secure this end, or that they be given over to their own resources and left to fight the battle of life for themselves. It is not pleasant to contemplate the effect and final result of this last-mentioned course. The Indian in his relations with the white men rarely associates with the better class, but finds his companions in the lowest and vilest of society—men whose object is to corrupt or plunder. He thus learns from the superior race everything that is bad, nothing that is good. His presence in the settlement is a source of irritation and a cause of fear, especially among the better class of people. Such persons will not employ him, for they do not desire the presence of half-naked, vicious savages in their families. Nor are the people of these communities willing to assume the trouble or expense of controlling the Indians by the ordinary agencies of local government, but are always ready to punish either real or supposed crimes by resort to arms. Such a course, together with the effects of crime and loathsome disease, must finally result in the annihilation of the race.

By the other alternative, putting them on reservations and teaching them to labor, they must for a number of years be a heavy expense to the General Government, but it is believed that the burden would not be as great as that on the local governments if the Indians were left to themselves. It is very probable also, that in the sequel it will be found cheaper for the General Government to collect them on reservations, for there is always serious danger of petty conflicts arising between the Indians and white men which will demand the interference of the General Government and entail some expense. The commission does not consider that a reservation should be looked upon in the light of a pen where a horde of savages are to be fed with flour and beef, to be supplied with blankets from the Government bounty, and to be furnished with paint and gew-gaws by the greed of traders, but that a reservation should be a school of industry and a home for these unfortunate people. In council with the Indians great care was taken not to implant in their minds the idea that the Government was willing to pay them for yielding their lands which white men needed, and that as a recompense for such lands they would be furnished with clothing and food, and thus enabled to live in idleness. The question was presented to the Indian something in this light: The white men take these lands and use them, and from the earth

secure to themselves food, clothing and many other desirable things. Why should not the Indian do the same? The Government of the United States is anxious for you to try. If you will unite and agree to become farmers, it will secure to you permanent titles to such lands as you need, and will give you the necessary assistance to begin such a life, expecting that you will soon be able to take care of yourselves, as do white men and civilized Indians.

Care has been taken to secure common consultation among those tribes which should be united as represented in the plans above, and we doubt not that these questions will form the subject of many a night's council during the present winter; and if the suggestions made by the commission should be acted upon, it is to be hoped that next summer will find the great majority of these Indians prepared to move.

Suggestions of the Commission.—With a view of ultimately civilizing these Indians, the commission begs leave to make suggestions concerning the management of reservations. First, all bounties given to the Indians should, so far as possible, be used to induce them to work. No able-bodied Indians should be either fed or clothed except in payment for labor, even though such labor is expended in providing for his own future wants. Of course, these remarks apply only to those who form the subject of our report—those with whom it is no longer necessary to deal as public enemies, and with the understanding that they must be conciliated to prevent war. It has already been stated that such a course is unnecessary with these Indians. Second, they should not be provided with ready-made clothing. Substantial fabrics should be given them from which they can manufacture their own garments. Such a course was taken during the past year with the Pi-Utes, under the direction of the commission, and the result was very satisfactory. For illustration, on the Pi-Ute reservation four hundred Indians received uncut cloth sufficient to make each man, woman and child a suit of clothes. With these fabrics, thread, needles, buttons, etc., were issued. The services of an intelligent, painstaking woman were secured to teach the women how to cut and make garments for themselves and their families. Three weeks after the issue of this material the commission revisited the reservation and found these Indians well-clothed in garments of their own make. At first they complained bitterly that ready-made clothing was not furnished to them as it had been previously, but when we returned to the reservation it was

found that they fully appreciated that the same money had been much more advantageously spent than on previous occasions. Where the Indians have received ready-made clothing for a number of years, the change should not be made too violently, but a wise and firm agent could soon have all his Indians making their own clothing. Third, the Indians should not be furnished with tents; as long as they have tents they move about with great facility, and are thus encouraged to continue their nomadic life. As far as possible houses should be built for them. Some of the Indians are already prepared for such a course, and greatly desire to live in houses. A few, especially the older people, are prejudiced against such a course, and perhaps at first could not be induced to live in them; but such a change could be made gradually to the great advantage of the Indian, both for his health and comfort and for its civilizing influence. Fourth, each Indian family should be supplied with a cow, to enable them to start in the accumulation of property. The Indians now understand the value of domestic cattle, and are anxious to acquire this class of property, and a few of them have already made a beginning in this direction. Some have ten, twenty, thirty, and even fifty head, though these are exceptional cases, and it is interesting to notice that, as soon as an Indian acquires property, he more thoroughly appreciates the rights of property, and becomes an advocate of law and order. Fifth, in all this country the soil cannot be cultivated without artificial irrigation, and under these conditions agricultural operations are too complicated for the Indian without careful superintendence. It will be impossible also to find a sufficient body of land in any one place for the necessary farms; they must be scattered many miles apart. There will, therefore, be needed on each reservation a number of farmers to give general direction to all such labor. Sixth, on each reservation there should be a blacksmith, carpenter and a saddle and harness maker, and each of these mechanics should employ several Indian apprentices, and should consider that the most important part of his duty was to instruct such apprentices, and from time to time a shoemaker and other mechanics should be added to this number. Seventh, an efficient medical department should be organized on each reservation. A great number of the diseases with which the Indian is plagued yield readily to medical treatment, and by such a course many lives can be saved and much suffering prevented. But there is another very important reason for the establishment of a medical department.

The magician or "medicine man" wields much influence, and such influence is always bad; but in the presence of an intelligent physician it is soon lost. Eighth, it is unnecessary to mention the power which schools would have over the rising generation of Indians. Next to teaching them to work, the most important thing is to teach them the English language. Into their own language there is woven so much mythology and sorcery that a new one is needed in order to aid them in advancing beyond their baneful superstitions; and the ideas and thoughts of civilized life cannot be communicated to them in their own tongues.

Relation of the Army to These Indians.—Your commission cannot refrain from expressing its opinion concerning the effect of the presence of soldiers among these Indians where they are no longer needed to keep them under subjection. They regard the presence of a soldier as a standing menace, and to them the very name of soldier is synonymous with all that is offensive and evil. To the soldier they attribute their social demoralization and the unmentionable diseases with which they are infected. Everywhere, as we traveled among these Indians, the question would be asked us, "If we go to a reservation will the Government place soldiers there?" And to such a removal two objections were invariably urged: the first was, "We do not wish to desert the graves of our fathers," and the second, "We do not wish to give our women to the embrace of the soldiers."

If the troops are not absolutely necessary in the country for the purpose of overawing these Indians, or protecting them in their rights against the encroachments of white men, it will be conceded that they should be removed. We have already expressed the opinion that they are not needed to prevent a general war, and we believe that they are not useful in securing justice between white men and Indians and between Indians and Indians. In war we deal with people as organized into nationalities, not as individuals. Some hungry Indian steals a beef, some tired Indian steals a horse, a vicious Indian commits a depredation and flies to the mountains. No effort is made to punish the real offender, but the first Indian met is shot at sight. Then, perhaps, the Indians retaliate, and the news is spread through the country that war has broken out with the Indians. Troops are sent to the district and wander around among the mountains and return. Perhaps a few Indians are killed, and perhaps a few white men. Usually in all such cases the white man is the chief

sufferer, for he has property which can be spoiled, and the Indian has none that he cannot easily hide in the rocks. His methods of warfare are such that we cannot cope with him without resorting to means which are repugnant to civilized people; and, after spending thousands, or even millions, of dollars on an affair which, at its inception, was but a petty larceny, we make a peace with the Indians, and enter into an agreement to secure him lands, which we cannot fulfill, and to give him annuities, the expense of which are a burden on the public Treasury.

This treatment of the Indians as nations or tribes is in every way bad. Now, the most vicious Indian in any tribe has it in his power, at any moment that he may desire, to practically declare war between his own tribe, and perhaps a dozen surrounding tribes, and the Government of the United States.

What now is needed with all these subdued Indians is some method by which individual criminals can be arrested and brought to justice. This cannot be done by the methods of war. As long as the Indians are scattered among the settlements the facts show that this cannot be done. The Indian has no knowledge of legal methods, and avenges his own wrongs by ways which are traditional with him, while the prejudice against savages, which has grown through centuries of treacherous and bloody warfare, and the prejudices of race, which are always greatly exaggerated among the lower class of people, with whom the Indian is most liable to associate, are such that the Indian cannot secure justice through the intervention of the local authorities.

There is now no great uninhabited and unknown region to which the Indian can be sent. He is among us, and we must either protect him or destroy him. The only course left by which these Indians can be saved is to gather them on reservations, which shall be schools of industry and civilization, and the superintendents of which shall be the proper officers to secure justice between the two races, and between individuals of the Indian race. For this purpose on each reservation there should be a number of wise, firm men, who, as judges and police officers, would be able in all ordinary cases to secure substantial justice. In extraordinary cases no hasty steps should be taken. Surprises and massacres need no longer be feared, and if a larger force is needed than that wielded by the employes on the reservations, it would be easy to increase it by civil methods.

For this purpose laws should be enacted clearly defining the rights of the Indians and white men in their mutual relations, and the power of the officers of the Indian Department, and the methods of procedure to secure justice. It might possibly be unwise to withdraw all the troops at once. It might be better to remove them *pari passu* with the establishment of the Indians on the reservations. Permit the remark just here, that the expense of the military and civil methods stand in very glaring contrast. Within the territory which has heretofore been described it is probable that about two million dollars will be expended in the support of troops during the present fiscal year, and much less than two hundred thousand dollars through the Indian Department for feeding, clothing and civilizing the Indians. We beg leave again to mention that these remarks apply only to conquered tribes. There are some Indians in other portions of the United States whom it is necessary to manage by other methods, who yet have the pride and insolence and treachery of savages. But by far the greater part of the Indians scattered throughout the territory from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Coast are in a condition substantially the same as those who form the subject of this report.

ESTIMATED VALUE OF CLAIMS OF SETTLERS ON MO-A-PA RESERVATION.

Isaac Jennings {	
J. S. Moffett {	\$ 7,500
Thomas Belding }	
Chandler Belding }	4,250
Lewis Seabright }	
Daniel Bonelli }	5000
Robert G. Patterson }	6,200
J. L. Lessel }	
William Anderson	760
Augustus James	750
Abraham James	1,500
Robert Logan	2,200
John Bennett }	
J. H. Ratcliffe }	1,400
G. R. A. Percival }	
Volney Rector }	1,800
Peter L. Johnson }	
Total	\$32,050

It is recommended that appropriations be asked to pay the above claims. These people already occupy much of the available land on this reservation and have control of the water. It is absolutely necessary that they should be removed if the Indians are to be established as agriculturists.

A special report, giving in detail the character of these improvements, viz., the buildings, trees, orchards, vineyards, waterways, etc., together with certified copies of the surveys which were made under the State laws of Nevada to secure these settlers in their possessory rights, and a map of the reservation showing the situation of each claim, will be submitted on the completion of the map.

It is recommended that the boundaries of the Pai-Ute reservation be established as follows: Beginning at a point on the Colorado River of the west eight miles east of the one hundred and fourteenth meridian, and continuing from thence due north to the thirty-seventh parallel of latitude and continuing from thence due west along said thirty-seventh parallel of latitude to a point twenty miles west of the one hundred and fifteenth meridian, and continuing from thence due south thirty-five miles; and continuing from thence due east thirty-six miles; and continuing from thence due south to the center channel of the Colorado River of the West; and continuing from thence along said center of the channel of the Colorado River of the West to the point of beginning.

AGENT G. W. INGALLS SUBMITTED THE FOLLOWING REPORT.

Pai-Ute Agency, Nevada, Oct. 1, 1874.

Agreeable to instructions from the Department, I have been absent from agency a part of the year in visiting other Indians, and otherwise engaged as special commissioner. During this absence, the agency has been respectively in charge of Dr. H. P. Geib, the physician, and H. C. Callom, the superintending farmer, to whom great credit is due for the success which has attended its management the past year. The Indians gathered on the reservation a year ago have all remained, and their numbers largely increased at different times, especially during the winter and the season of harvest. Fully five hundred Indians, in addition to those now on the reservation, would have been permanently located there ere this, if they had been encouraged to come, or to have remained after coming; but the lack of supplies, with the presence of settlers who still occupy different portions of the Moapa Valley, were too serious hindrances.

In the visit of Commissioners Powell and Ingalls to the different bands of Pai-Utes, one year since, they were informed that a crop would be put in on the reservation sufficient for those there, and for all those Indians who would go there the following spring and remain, the Indians on the reservation meanwhile to care for the growing crop, irrigating the same and protecting it from the cattle of the settlers. The failure of the agent to secure the necessary funds and supplies to carry out the recommendations and instructions of the Department, permitted him to do but little for those Indians off the reservation. It was intended to have had the various tribes or bands scattered throughout Southern Utah and S. E. Nevada cultivate as much land as possible where they lived, and for this purpose they were furnished shovels, hoes and axes, and promised seeds and supplies of food in the spring following, which promise could not be filled.

It is very desirous that these Indians should receive this assistance next spring,

as it will do much in securing their support, and they will need less aid from the Government, and be better prepared to farm on the reservation when they go there. The Indians properly belonging to this agency do not have the opportunity to labor for white settlers in farming and mining as the Shoshones and Utes, as there are no mines requiring their services, and but little farming-land, save in Utah, and there the people are too poor, or too numerous to need their labor. If proper aid is rendered these Indians, and the Pai-Ute reservation secured to them without the presence of the settlers, they can all be made self-sustaining in three years at the furthest.

The school started one year ago was continued until late in the spring, but was then discontinued for want of funds. Nearly all the children who attended the school learned to read in a primer or first reader, and to understand what they read. This success is remarkable, considering the limited supply of books and other aids they possessed, and is evidence of the faithful services of their teacher, Mr. J. MacGarigle. No serious trouble has occurred during the past year between the Indians and whites, nor between the different bands of Indians. There has been much less sickness and but few deaths, and very much has been done in removing their superstitious views regarding their medicine men and care of their sick.

The supplies furnished the Indians on the reservation have been distributed to them only as a reward for labor. Those who have been engaged in plowing or ditching, or other extra hard labor, were paid fifty cents a day in money, besides daily rations. The effect of this has been to stimulate the Indians to work more steadily, and has enabled many of them to purchase better clothing and horses, which they are very desirous to possess. Many of the Indians have asked to have houses to live in, and for purpose of storage of their grain. These houses can be built of adobe, and, by utilizing the Indian labor, at very small expense, and would do much in civilizing them. I believe the chiefs or captains should all receive a small salary and be requested to give special attention in seeing that all their people work, as directed by the agent or farmer. There is a large amount of grazing-land upon the reservation well adapted for sheep and cattle, and I would recommend the Department to authorize the agent to give as a reward, to those Indians who worked steadily, sheep or cattle. In a short time the Indians would have all the beef needed for their own use, and could raise wool enough to furnish themselves with clothing and blankets, on reasonable terms.

The entire amount of land under cultivation the past year has been 370 acres. A good portion of this land was plowed and prepared by the Indians, who afterward attended to the irrigation of the crops. The settlers were employed to plow and prepare the remainder of the land for the Indians, because there was not teams or ploughs enough belonging to the agency to do this work. Of the 370 acres cultivated, 270 acres were planted in wheat, five acres in barley, 40 acres in corn, 18 acres in grass, 10 acres in melons, 12 acres in squashes, 15 acres in beans. The crop of wheat would have been fully one-third larger if more white employees had been secured in working with the Indians, showing them how to repair and keep open the irrigating-ditches. As it was, this crop averaged fully 20 bushels to the acre, and valued at fair ruling prices in this section, it amounts to over \$16,000, and the value of all the crops to over \$25,000.

The success attending the operations is remarkable, in view of the fact that two years since most of these Indians were living almost entirely upon the seeds of wild grass, rabbits, mice, lizards, and begging from whites when visiting their settlement. But many who have traveled among them, these Indians have considered as low in the scale of civilization as the Diggers of California, and yet they have demonstrated their desire and ability to rise above their condition and to take their place alongside of others of their race who have adopted the white man's better mode of life and have become independent of the Government chari-

ties; and the question rests with the Government to decide if these Indians shall be encouraged to realize their purpose. I cannot but hope they may, and more heartily in future.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. W. INGALLS,
U. S. Indian Agent.

Hon. EDW. SMITH,
Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

Southeast Nevada Agency.—The Pai-Utes in southern Nevada and southeastern California, numbering respectively 1,031 and 184, with 284 Utes in northern Arizona and 528 in Utah, belong on a reservation containing 3,900 square miles in the southeastern part of Nevada, set apart by executive order, March 12, 1873. Only about 500 have as yet removed, owing partly to lack of funds for the purchase of supplies and the opening of farms, and partly to the continued presence of settlers in the Moapa Valley, where the only tillable land on the reserves (about 10,000 acres) is found. These Indians have always been an agricultural people, are willing to labor, and are ready to settle upon the reserve as soon as suitable provision can be made for their establishment. Those gathered there two years since have labored willingly and faithfully during the year, having cultivated 370 acres, which have yielded 5,400 bushels wheat, 800 bushels corn, 200 bushels barley and 600 bushels beans. No supplies have been issued except in return for labor. Two years ago these Indians were living largely on roots, seeds, rabbits, mice and lizards, in addition to what they could obtain by begging from the whites. They are now asking for houses and show an interest in the education of their children, but the school, for want of funds, was discontinued last spring. Valuable salt mines on the reserve, if permitted to be worked by the Indians, will yield a moderate revenue.

The Western Shoshones, numbering 1,945, are divided into thirty-one tribes, scattered through southeast Oregon, southwest Idaho and central Nevada. Many of them farm small patches of land in eastern Nevada, or labor for white settlers, but they subsist mostly by begging, gathering seeds, digging roots and hunting rabbits. A government farmer, stationed at Hamilton, assists them in procuring ranches, in obtaining labor among the whites, issues a few seeds, and is appealed to by both whites and Indians in the frequent cases of dispute arising between them. In their treaty, in which only one-fourth of these Shoshones took part, it was

stipulated that, at the will of the President, they should be called on to a reservation. They express a willingness to remove to Fort Hall.

One thousand Pai-Utes, in western Nevada and northeast California, and 460 Goship Utes in Nevada and Utah, are in much the same condition as the Western Shoshones, but more largely engaged in farming. The Pai-Utes are allied to those already collected on the Malheur Reservation. They are anxious to obtain lands and a permanent home, and little difficulty would probably be experienced in inducing them to settle there. The other tribes are allied to those in Uintah Valley and should be removed thither.

REPORT OF F. DODGE, INDIAN AGENT.

Office, Indian Agency,
Carson Valley, U. T., January 4, 1859.

Sir: In accordance with your instructions to me, dated Humboldt Valley, October 6 and 7, 1858, I beg to submit to you the following facts in relation to the Indians within this agency. As near as I can ascertain at present, the Pah-Ute nation numbers some 6,000 souls. I have seen and given presents to 3,735, which are located as follows:

Poito or "Win-a-muc-a" (The Giver) is the head chief of the nation. He generally stays on Smoke Creek, near Honey Lake; his family and small band that stay with him number 155; San Joaquin's band stays in Carson Valley, at the forks of that river, and numbers 170; Had-sa-poke's (Hore Stopper) band stays at Gold Canyon, on Carson River, and numbers 110; Wa-hi's (Fox) band stays at what is known as the Big Bend of Carson River and numbers 130; O-duk-e-o's (Tall Man) band, Pe-tod-se-ka (White Spot) band, To-sarke (Grey Head) band. These three bands are the largest I have seen since my arrival in the Territory. They stay in the country around the lakes and sinks of Carson and Walker's rivers. I had a talk with them at Carson Lake on the 26th of November last and gave them some presents. They then numbered 848 men, 372 women, and 405 children.

Number in the three bands.....	1,625
To-no-yiet (Woman Helper) band stays below the Big Meadows, Truckee River, and numbers.....	280
To-Repe's (Lean Man) band stays near the lower crossing of Truckee River, and numbers	360
Ge-negas (Dancer) band stays at the mouth of Truckee River, and numbers	290
Wat-se-que-order's (Four Crows) band stays along the shores of Pyramid Lake, and numbers	320
Young Win-a-muc-a's or Numega (The Second) band stays around the shores of Lower Mud Lake, and numbers.....	300

Total Pah-Utes visited	3,735
------------------------------	-------

The Wa-sho nation numbers about 900 souls, and inhabits the country along the base of the Sierra Nevada mountains, from Honey Lake on the north to the west fork of Walker's River on the south. They are divided into three different bands. Captain Jim's band is located in the vicinity of Carson, Wa-sho, and Eagle valleys, and Lake Tahoe. This band numbers 145 men, 110 women and 87 children; total, 342. I have had a talk with this band, and given them some

presents. Captain Jim is the head chief of the nation. Dos-Souke's band is located in Little Valley, between the east and west forks of Deer Dick's band; lives in and claims Long Valley, southeast from Honey Lake, and numbers about the same as the others, 300.

Total Wa-shos visited	342
Total Pah-Utes visited	3735

Total Indians visited within this agency.....	4,077
---	-------

Thus it will be seen that I have met and given presents to over four thousand Indians, and never before have I beheld as much wretchedness and destitution. By proper management, these Indians may be made to compete with the whites in agricultural pursuits. They are extremely anxious to cultivate their lands, and will make excellent men to work. Some of them can take hold of a scythe, and mow, drive oxen or a four-horse team, equal to a white man. They have never received any presents from the government, or from any government officer until now, except a few things given them by Dr. Hurt some two or three years ago. I am sorry that I cannot speak in as favorable terms of the Wa-sho nation. They are not inclined to agricultural pursuits, nor any other advancement towards civilization. They have no clothing except the merest apology for a breech-cloth. Whatever policy may be finally adopted in relation to these unfortunate people, I can assure you that none can be worse, or productive of more evil to both them and the whites, than the present joint and promiscuous occupation of the country. And like other tribes when brought into contact with the human and christianizing influence of the white man they have acquired a taste for whisky. The Pah-Utes should be allowed to retain some of their present locations, especially the valley of the Truckee River, which would have the advantage of being their home from choice, combined with being the best and only suitable site for a large reservation and permanent agency in this part of the Territory.

Since my arrival here, I have traversed a large portion of the country for this purpose. I have followed the meanderings of several of the principal rivers for hundreds of miles, but I have seen none that can compete and offer the same advantages as what is known here by the name of the "Truckee Meadows." It contains some fifteen thousand acres of good land, well adapted for agricultural or herding purposes. In this vicinity is an abundance of the lofty pine. The majestic "Coo-vou-e-hoop," or Salmon Trout River, can be carried out for irrigation purposes. And, in its season, it affords one of the finest and largest fisheries in the Territory, both of speckled and salmon trout. This, in my opinion, is the best and last chance for a good home for the poor Pah-Ute and Wa-sho. The other valleys are in a great measure occupied. There is one settler, whose improvements consist of a tolerably good frame house only, on these meadows; but he has located himself in the center, a situation that I should not select for a building spot for an agency. Therefore, should you order me to lay off this section of country for a reservation, the proprietary right and title of the land in this Territory being in the Government, you can purchase this man's house, or order him off, as you see fit. If you conclude to make a home for these Indians, it will require immediate action so far as making the selections is concerned, and defining the boundaries, for I am informed that as soon as the snow disappears, there will be quite an emigration to these valleys. You will see by reference to a map that this place is also central for an "agency." The Truckee River takes its rise from Lake Tahoe and empties into Pyramid Lake. Should this site not meet your approbation, there are several others of minor importance, and such as you saw on the Humbolt, destitute of timber. I would here recommend that a large extent of country be taken up, and all in one body, and to concentrate the whole Pah-Ute and Wa-sho nations upon it,

making one expense do for both; and the fact of the Pah-Ute nation being large requires the same. This policy also agrees with your opinion in the fourth section of your instructions, and I believe the policy of the Government has been to withdraw the Indians from such parts of the country as would necessarily expose them to contact with the white settlers, as the only means of averting frequent difficulties. Indians and whites cannot, as a general rule, live together. It is not in the nature of things; and it is far from being solely the fault of the Indians. The pioneer invades the hunting-ground of the Indian. He goes to reduce nature's wilds to the dominion of the white man; to possess the country, and rear in it the institutions of civilization. His mission drives before him and from the graves of his ancestors, the once mighty but now wretched, whose name we are all proud to own (the true American), and, naturally and inevitably, exasperates him to acts of crime and barbarity.

It is a well-known fact that the loss of life on the Humboldt River for years past both to the white and the Indians has been most lamentable. The Humboldt Indians see by the experience of other tribes that roads are the harbingers of civilization, and the certain sign of their own subjugation and final extirpation. All they ask is something to eat. And here lies that true secret of most of the Indian depredations upon this great line of travel. The encroachments of the emigrant have driven away the game upon which they depend for a subsistence. They cannot hunt upon the territories of neighboring tribes, except at the risk of their lives. They must, therefore, steal or starve. Every few miles, too, on this great thoroughfare, both on the Humboldt and Carson rivers, can be found a whiskey shop, the proprietors of which have the presumption to call "trading posts." Some of these inhuman venders of poisonous liquor to the poor ignorant Indian will take the last "badger or rabbit" skin from him. A few joined together, as a woman would patch a quilt, being his only dependence for a covering to protect him from the bitter cold and deep snows of this inclement wilderness. The poverty I saw last fall amongst the "Sho-sho-ne" nation is not a circumstance compared with this winter, and the sufferings and destitute condition of the poor "Pah-Ute" and "Washo." The snow in the valleys here now averages six inches deep. The only shelter these poor houseless wanderers have is to lay about in the artemesia or sage brush; and their sole dependence for subsistence this winter is a little "grass seed." The rivers are frozen over, which prevents them from fishing, and the "pine nuts," another of their main dependences for food, have failed. There is scarcely an hour that passes in a day but what brings some sad picture of wretchedness to my door, begging for a sufficiency to sustain life. A few days ago a "Washo" died from actual starvation and exposure in the vicinity of Lake Tahoe, which is situated in the Sierra Nevada Mountains. And another was found dead at the base of those mountains yesterday, from the same cause.

Something must be done to better the condition of the poor "Pah-Ute" and "Washo." His present state is intolerable, and feeble is the helping hand that I am enabled to extend for his relief. But in the sweet name of "charity, I beg in his behalf that a home be made for him—some asylum for the starving outcast, where he can be taught to provide for himself, and be free from the curse upon him now amongst the whites. Truly said, the moral atmosphere about him is deadlier than death.

Many a weary day went by,
While wretched and worn he begged for bread;
Tired of life, and longing to lie
Peacefully down with the silent dead.
Hunger and cold, and scorn and pain,
Had wasted his form and seared his brain;
At last on a bed of frozen ground
In the "Sierra Nevada" was the outcast found.

No mourner lingered with tears or sighs,
But the stars looked down with pitying eyes;
And the chill winds passed, with a wailing sound,
O'er the foot of the mountain where the form was found.
But One! when every human door
Is closed to children, accursed and poor;
Who opens the heavenly portals wide—
Ah! God was near when the outcast died.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

F. DODGE, Indian Agent.

Jacob Forney, Esq.,

Superintendent Indian Affairs Utah Territory.

Last Nevada Indian Massacre.—The fact that the murder of the four Washoe County sheepmen in Little High Rock canyon recently was committed by Indians, who are now being pursued by a posse of twenty-two mounted men over the Black Rock desert in the direction of Winnemucca, was established beyond doubt yesterday by receipt of the first authentic details of the crime by the *Journal* yesterday in the form of a special dispatch from Dr. S. K. Morrison, Washoe County physician, who performed the autopsy and who arrived at Eagleville with the bodies yesterday morning. The details of the killing, as evidenced by the bodies, form the story of one of the most cold-blooded massacres ever charged to the ferocious nature of the Modocs, and add a fitting chapter to the history of the Modoc war of nearly forty years ago.

Dr. Morrison states that the work was that of a band of seven Indians, including a squaw and a papoose, whose tracks were found going in the direction of the Black Rock desert. The searchers found the camp three miles from Denio's ranch, some 132 miles north of Reno, and about 120 miles northwest of Winnemucca. There the bodies were found, and from the fortifications erected by the Indians, as well as from the provisions left, it was clearly evident that the murderers expected to defend themselves against a siege. The autopsy and inquest which was held Wednesday last revealed a frightful condition of affairs. The bodies were found only after four days in the saddle, and the inquest was held in the snow, lantern light, with the temperature five degrees below zero. The bodies were found piled-up, with fingers, noses and wounds gnawed by mice. All clothing not stained by blood was stripped from the bodies, nothing but the underclothes being left. Harry Cambron was shot four times through the chest, hips, elbow and head. His shirts had been pulled off over his head after death, and he was found with arms extended just as he was left when his clothing was jerked from his body. Peter Erramouspe had been shot four times in the head, chest and left and right thigh. On him the tell-tale marks of savage butchery were found. His upper lip, bearded with a heavy moustache, had been slashed and carried away. Nothing remained of his clothing but the lining of his caps, his trousers and one bloodstained boot. He was married and had two children. J. B. Laxague had been shot once through the chest. His clothing had been drawn over his head. His right eye was blackened. He was married and had two children. Bertrand Indiano was shot three times in the shoulder, twice through the head, his left eye was gouged out, his upper lips and lower eyelids were gone, his cheek had been shot away and there was a gaping hole in the back of his head two inches long and one inch wide. He was unmarried.

Sheriff Ferrel of Washoe County and State Policeman Frank F. Buck arrived at Winnemucca yesterday afternoon over the Western Pacific Railway, having left the posse that is following the trail of the Indians on what is known as the Jungo desert, about forty miles west of Winnemucca. They told of the many hardships encountered during their long ride over the mountain ranges and des-

erts from the scene of the murders in the northern part of Washoe County to the point where they took the train for this place. A man named Van Dormand, who saw the Indians, is with the posse and can positively identify them. The party of Indians consists of an old man and two young bucks, a boy of 7 years, two squaws, a girl of fifteen years of age and two small children, the youngest a babe. Shortly before Sheriff Ferrel and Policeman Buck left the party they found where the Indians had camped in the sand hills shortly after they passed through the Jackson range of mountains, near what is known as Rattlesnake Pass. From there the trail led across the desert to the southern end of the Silver State range. As near as can be ascertained the Indians passed through this part of the country about twelve days ahead of the posse. The officers state that the Indians are using every precaution in eluding their pursuers. At one place they found where a rocky place had been padded with sagebrush so that the horses would not make any noise, and all along the route it was noticed that when the trail led through a canyon or over a hill that scouts had been sent ahead of the main party. Sheriff Ferrel stated that there were fourteen men in the posse in charge of Captain Donnelly of the State police and that Ben Cambron, a brother of one of the murdered men, and Sheriff Smith of Modoc County, Cal., are with the party. Owing to the start which the Indians have, it is expected that they are at least 100 miles in advance, which by the slow marching necessary will mean a good five days. If the Indians have taken heavy provisions heavy camps will be made and these will leave their mark.

Prospector Discovers Indians.—Friday afternoon a prospector named Schnitzer came into Willow Point and telephoned to the Sheriff's Office that he had seen some Indians and horses in a canyon in the Dutch Flat mountains, about twenty-five miles north of Winnemucca. The horses which the prospector saw answered the description of the animals belonging to the murdered sheepmen, and the fact of the Indians being in that part of the country at this time of the year was very suspicious. Captain Donnelly and Sheriff Smith were notified of these facts, and Saturday morning the posse set out from Golconda and Toll House and that afternoon came to the place where the Indians had camped. The smouldering embers of a fire were found, indicating that the Indians had left but a few hours previously, and in the abandoned camp was found a pair of chaps belonging to one of the murdered men, evidence conclusive that the trail of the fugitives had again been found. On account of darkness coming on it was impossible to follow the trail that night, and the entire posse went back to Willow Point. Leaving there at daylight yesterday morning, the posse picked up the trail again near the Indians' last camp and followed it over the mountains into Clover Valley, catching up with the Indians after about seven hours' ride.

With only two Indians armed with rifles, and two squaws, and several children using bows and arrows, defending themselves against twenty white men and two Indian trailers, all of them well armed with rifles and pistols, the unequal fight was soon over. All of the Indian men, young and old, and two women, lay on the battlefield dead. After the Indians had fallen and having no desire to kill the women and the children, the white posse made a rush to capture the four children, three of whom were under eight years of age, and the oldest one, a girl, of fifteen. The children all stood their ground to the last, wounding one of the posse with an arrow, and fighting with sticks and stones until they were overpowered. Captain Donnelly of the State police force says the adult squaws fought bravely beside the Indian men, and under the circumstances the killing of the Indian women was unavoidable. The parties composing the posse consisted of Captain Donnelly and Chas. Stone of the State police force, the sheriff of Modoc County, Cal., Joe Reeder, George Holmes, Henry Hughes, Otto Van Orman, Williams Parsons, Warren Pratt, Matt West, Ben Cambron, Ed. Hogle (killed), Frank Perry, Chas. Byrne, Merrill Presse, Jack Fergeson and Skinny

Pascal, and another Indian trailer. The little Indians started down the canyon in a hurry and got away nearly two miles before they were discovered. Mr. Ferguson jumped on his horse and followed them. On overtaking them Ferguson got off the horse and captured the boy who was throwing rocks at him, many of the stones hitting him on the legs. He threw the boy over the saddle and jumped on, and while reaching for the reins the boy hit him on his wrists, leaving black and blue marks on the same. After that the boy tried to beat his own brains out on the pommel of the saddle. Finding resistance useless, all the children gave up. They would not move after that. On arriving at Golconda depot, the little fellow, about seven years of age, discovered a gun of one of the posse leaning up against the counter, and he stealthily crept toward the gun, thinking that he was unobserved, but the sheriff discovered him just in time, and when the sheriff picked up the gun, the little fellow stepped back and played possum, apparently not intending to take the gun.

Indian Mike, the leader, is sixty-five or seventy years of age. The name of one of the other Indians was Catch-en, another Charlie, who was a very fat Indian about twenty-seven years old; Eat-up-Jim, about twenty-seven years, and still another, about twenty-five years of age, with two Indian women. Indian Mike is commonly known in Elko County as Rock Creek Mike, who has a brother known as Salmon River Jim, still at large and an outlaw and is supposed to be on the Salmon River, Idaho, or in northern Elko County, Nevada. It is feared that Salmon River Jim may now raise a band of renegade Indians and try to get even by killing some whites. Sheriff Farrell of Washoe County states that after the battle was over there was quite a scramble among the members of the posse in an effort to capture the squaw and the little children.

A detachment of State police under command of Captain Donnelly and the posse from Eagleville, headed by Sheriff Smith of Modoc County, Cal., and Ben Cambron, brother of one of the murdered sheepmen, after following the Indians on a hot trail since early morning, overtook them shortly afternoon at a point in Clover valley, about eight miles west of what is known as the Kelly Creek ranch. The Indians were hurrying across the valley when overtaken, trying to reach the mountains on the east side. Being practically without cover, they had to battle in the open or surrender. Contrary to the Indian nature, they chose to exchange shot for shot with the avengers, who were all too willing for such a climax, and the bloody battle commenced. Only very meager details of the battle, in which the Indians were practically annihilated, can be obtained, all the news available having been telephoned to Winnemucca from North's ranch early this morning. The messenger from the battlefield arrived at North's ranch last night, but owing to the telephone office at Golconda being closed the news could not be transmitted to the outside world last night.

From the details that can be obtained, it is described as having been a running fight lasting three hours and covering over a mile of the country. When the Indians saw the approaching posse the four braves astonished their pursuers by stopping and engaging in their tribal war dance. This continued until the advance guard of the posse had ridden up to within hailing distance, when the summons to surrender was answered by cries of derision and defiance, and the Indian braves, squaws and children scattered into the brush and opened the battle which was to terminate in what was little short of a massacre. "Indian Mike" fell fatally wounded early in the fight, but the loss of their leader only spurred his followers to more desperate efforts. Realizing that it was a battle to the death, none intimidated by voice or gesture the slightest desire to surrender. Answering shot with shot, the Indians fell back slowly, falling one by one before the withering fusillade from the rifles of the posse. The Indians fought like veritable demons, the squaws taking part and selling their lives no less dearly than their men folk. In their last stand they used every available weapon of offense, bows

and arrows and tomahawks being resorted to when the ammunition from their rifles and revolvers was exhausted. Thus the bloody battle continued until none of the Indians remained alive but three papooses and the young girl, who were found in the brush near where the fight was begun. The squaws were shot down with as little compunction as the braves, as the women fought throughout no less fiercely than the men, but the killing of the two children was accidental and could not be avoided.

The only details of the battle known at this hour are those given by the messenger who brought the news last night to North's ranch, the remainder of the posse remaining at the scene to gather up the bodies and make arrangements to convey them to Golconda, the nearest railroad point, and about fifty miles distant. This morning the posse started for Golconda, the bodies being carried in wagons secured from ranches in the neighborhood. They will probably reach Golconda some time this evening, and there the inquest will be held by Justice of the Peace Buckley. The bodies of the Indians will be buried there, while the remains of young Hogle, the only white victim of the bloody conflict, will be shipped back to his home in Eagleville. Ed. Hogle, of Modoc County, met his death as follows: He had shot Indian Mike at a distance of 150 yards. The bullet had shattered Mike's arm when he fell down. Hogle ran forward shouting, "I have killed Mike." When within thirty feet of him, the Indian rose on his elbow and shot Hogle over the heart with a 44 caliber pistol, when Hogle staggered backward about twenty feet and fell dying to the ground.

The battle was the culmination of a pursuit of the Indian murderers which began at Eagleville, Cal., on February 11th, the trail having been followed for two weeks over the snow-covered plains and mountains of northern Nevada, across Washoe County and nearly across Elko County, the Indians having been run down only a few miles from the Elko County line. Last Thursday the posse reached Toll House, twelve miles north of Winnemucca. The Indians had then been trailed to within a few miles of that point, where the trail was lost. As the route taken by the Indians indicated that they were headed eastward to cross into Clover valley. Later they were seen in Limbo canyon, in the extreme western part of this county, where they were running off horses. An Indian who was hunting started to ride up to one of the young bucks, when the outlaw pointed his rifle at the other and warned him to keep his distance. The Indian hunter did as he was told. The same band of outlaws went westward as far as Eagleville, Cal., where they camped last August or September, leaving there to go back into the section of country where they committed their latest and most fiendish crime a few weeks ago. Members of the posse from Eagleville know the Indians, so there is no possibility of there being any trouble in identifying the murderers if they are caught. The feeling of the members of the posse from Eagleville is said to be so strong that they will stay with the hunt until the outlaws are finally captured, no matter how long it takes.

"Indian Mike," the Leader.—At the Sheriff's office this morning, J. F. Tranmer stated to a representative of this paper that he believed the murderers of the sheepmen are the same band of Indians that were in the battle in which young Dopp was killed. He says that he is satisfied that he knows the Indians and that they made their home around Twin Falls, Idaho, and belong to the Shoshone tribe. Tranmer says that Dopp, who was only 16 years of age, was his stepson and was killed at Cow creek, Elko County, last May. He has known the leader of the Indians who committed the murder for at least fifteen years. He is known in that country as "Indian Mike" and is an old man. His description tallies with that given to the old man who is with the band that the posse is pursuing. Additional evidence that the murderers are Shoshone Indians and that the posse is on the right trail is contained in a special dispatch from Washington published in yesterday's *Reno-Gazette*, which says: "From a statement made by a Shoshone

Indian now in Washington, the Commissioner of Indian Affairs here believes that he has a clue that may lead to the arrest of the Indians who killed the four Nevada stockmen in Washoe County in January. The Commissioner of Indian Affairs has wired the superintendent of the Duck Valley reservation, on the line between Nevada and Idaho for a report, and although the wire was sent on February 20 no report has as yet been received. The Shoshone Indian now in Washington left Duck Valley reservation for Washington via Mountain Home, Idaho, February 13, and he has stated that before leaving the Duck Valley reservation he was informed by a friend on the reservation of the murder of the four men, and this friend had stated that he had read an article concerning the murder in *The Humboldt Star*. It is not probable that *The Humboldt Star* containing an account of the murder could reach Duck Valley reservation before February 13, which would indicate that the Indians on the reservation knew of the murder before it became public news. The Shoshone Indian is in Washington on government business and expects to leave for Duck Valley reservation via Mountain Home, Idaho, in a few days."

The two hundred mile chase of the posse headed by Captain Donnelly of the State police after a band of renegade Shoshone Indians, who so foully murdered the four French sheepmen, Harry Cambron, Pete Erramauspe, John B. Laxague, and B. Indiana, in Little High Rock canyon, in northwestern Washoe County, came to a bloody ending yesterday afternoon in the extreme eastern part of this county, when the Indians were overtaken and eight of them shot to death, one member of the posse, Ed. Hogle, of Eagleville, Cal., being killed in the battle which took place. Of its twelve members only four escaped, one young Mahala about sixteen years old and three papooses. The leader of the band, the old warrior, "Indian Mike," three young bucks, two squaws and two children were killed, eight in all.

The girl, Snake, fought very brutally, using bow and arrow, and seized a spear that laid on the ground, with which she chased the posse around the sagebrush while they were trying to disarm her. She succeeded in spearing a number of the cowboys as they were trying to get out of her way. They finally got the weapon away from her. The spear was rudely made up out of half of a pair of shears fastened into a wooden handle, making a dangerous weapon in the hands of a girl who was fighting, as she thought, for her life and in effort to save the smaller children. Mike's family had lived on Rock Creek up in the northeastern part of Elko County, and Salmon River Jim camped along the Salmon River, Idaho. Snake intimated that her father had a grudge against the whites which dated back to the battle of Bear River, Southern Idaho. This battle occurred about fifty years ago, when her grandfather and two brothers and other relatives were killed. The father and brother were then quite young men, and were among the few survivors of the battle. This battle was fought under the lead of General Connor, who had charge of the California Volunteers and went out from Camp Douglass, Salt Lake City, in the dead of winter, and defeated the Indians, which included Shoshones or Snakes, Bannocks, Northern Piutes and Malheur Indians. General Connor's report of this battle was 224 dead Indians and a large number of wounded.

Among the Indians killed was the great War Chief Pocotello, after whom the railroad town of Pocotello, Idaho, is named. The captive girl said that her Indian name, O-Luck, meant Snake. She says in an Indian camp when an Indian child is born among some tribes its father goes out and takes a look around and names the new child after the first object of prominence he may see. If it is a snake then they name the child Snake. The girl is seemingly a fatalist. This is seen by her use of the word mem-a-loose, which refers to the dead, and she did not seem to care what became of herself, except for the sake of her baby sister, about two years of age, whom she seems to show wild affection

for. Many citizens of Nevada who are familiar with this family claim it is a reproach on our civilization that these young Indians should be in the condition of close cousins of wild cats. The Government has procured enough money to clothe and board every one of them at a swell hotel. Right up in Duck Valley County, where these Indians have lived for several years a school exists, the building costing \$14,000, while there are seven teachers, with eighty pupils and a half dozen mounted Indian police, drawing rations and paid a regular though small monthly salary.

It is a question what shall be done with this girl of fifteen who was the only captive actually engaged in the fight in the murder of the four cattle men. She has made several attempts since she was captured to gain her freedom. So far as known the four captives have no relatives in Nevada, but are believed to have two aunts who live on the Fort Hall reservation, and they may be considered now to be charges of Salmon River Jim, of Idaho. When caught, the children were almost without clothing, and how they managed to stand the cold winter is remarkable. At Golconda some clothing was given to the Indians, as they presented a most pitiable sight.

(FROM HOPKIN'S "LIFE AMONG THE PIUTES." 1883. PAGES 70, 71, 72, 73.

"Two little girls about twelve years old went out in the woods to dig roots, and did not come back, so their parents went in search of them and not finding them, all my people who were there came to their help, and very thoroughly searched, and found trails which led up to the house of two traders named Williams, on Carson River, near the Indian camp. But these men said they had not seen the children, and told my people to come into the house and search it; and this they did, as they thought, thoroughly. After a few days they sorrowfully gave up all search, and their relations had nearly given them up for dead, when one morning an Indian rode up to the cabin of the Williamses. In those days the settlers did not hesitate to sell us guns and ammunition whenever we could buy, so these brothers proposed to buy the Indian's horse as soon as he rode up. They offered him a gun, five cans of powder, five boxes of caps, five bars of lead, and after some talk the trade was made. The men took the horse, put him in the stable and closed the door, then went into the house to give him the gun, etc. They gave him the gun, powder and caps, but would not give him the lead, and because he would not take a part, he gave back what he had taken from them and went out to the barn to take his horse. Then they set their dog upon him. When bitten by the dog he began halloing, and to his surprise he heard children's voices answer him, and he knew at once it was his lost children. He made for his camp as fast as he could and told what had happened and what he had heard. Brother Natchez and others went straight to the

cabin of the Williams brothers. The father demanded the children. They denied having them, and after talking quite a while denied it again, when all at once the brother of the children knocked one of the Williamses down with his gun and raised his gun to strike the other, but before he could do so one of the Williams brothers stooped down and raised a trap-door, on which he had been standing. This was a surprise to my people, who had never seen anything of the kind. The father first peeped down, but could see nothing; then he went down and found his children lying on a little bed with their mouths tied up with rags. He tore the rags away and brought them up. When my people saw their condition they at once killed both brothers and set fire to the house. Three days after the news was spread as usual. 'The bloodthirsty savages had murdered two innocent, hard-working, industrious, kind-hearted settlers; and word was sent to California for some army soldiers to demand the murderers of the Williamses. As no army soldiers were there just then, Major Ormsby collected one hundred and sixty volunteers, and came up, and without asking or listening to any explanation, demanded the men. But my people would not give them up, and when the volunteers fired on my people, they flew to arms to defend the father and brother, as any human beings would do in such a case, and ought to do. And so the war began. It lasted about three months, and after a few precious ones of my people, and at least a hundred white men had been killed (amongst them our dear friend, Major Ormsby, who had been so hasty) a peace was made. My brother had tried to save Major Ormsby's life. He met him in the fight, and as he was ahead of the other Indians, Major Ormsby threw down his arms and implored him not to kill him. There was not a moment to be lost. My brother said:

" 'Drop down as if dead when I shoot, and I will fire over you'; but in the hurry and agitation he still stood pleading, and was killed by another man's shot.

"Some other friends of my brother, Judge Broomfield and servant, and a Spaniard, lived in a small cabin about twelve miles off. They were not fighting against us, and my brother defended their lives and risked his own. He stood at their cabin door and beat back the assailants with a club and succeeded in driving them off. But my uncle and cousins were so angry with him for saving white men's lives that they whipped him with a horsewhip. We all know my uncle loved us. He was always

kind to us; but I never could love him again as I had done after he whipped my brother, my noble patient brother, who bore his uncle no ill-will, but was satisfied that he had saved the lives of his friends.

"Brave deeds don't always get rewarded in this world.

"There was another occasion when my brother saved the life of his friend, Mr. Seth Cook, of San Francisco, and six others; but as I do not remember all the particulars I will not attempt to relate it. Mr. Cook had often given my brother valuable assistance, and he is still living and can tell the story of his escape from death himself.

"The regular troops at last reached the ground, and after fighting a little while raised the flag of truce, which was responded to by my brother, and peace was made, and a treaty giving the Pyramid Lake Reservation to my people. I have no way of telling any of the particulars. The reservation was given to us in 1860, and we were to get large supplies as long as we were peaceful; but though there were thirteen agents there in the course of twenty-three years, I never knew of any issue after that first year."

Winnemucca.—There were three Winnemucca chiefs. First Chief in command of Indians at the Battle of Pyramid Lake, Poito, or Old Winnemucca, who lived about Humboldt Lake, Pyramid and Honey lakes, was always at enmity with the whites and very treacherous, was a cousin of Sarah Winnemucca. Numega, or Young Winnemucca, was Peace Chief and lived on the Pyramid Reservation. He died at Wadsworth, November 5, 1875. Numega was a statesman and diplomat and a brother of Sarah Winnemucca, the famous interpreter and an educated Indian woman, who married Lieutenant Hoskins of the United States Army. She visited the Eastern States, lecturing in nearly all of the larger eastern cities, where she secured aid from many friends and established an Indian school near the present town of Lovelocks, Nevada. This she maintained for about three years. Her husband, dying, she abandoned this school and went to live with her sister in Montana, where she died October 16, 1891. Old Winnemucca, or Poito, was taken ill in September, when many of his Indian friends, being filled with superstition peculiar to this tribe, stoned the wife of the old chief and the child to death, but that did not save the life of the old chief, and he died October 27, 1880. A large number of Indians assembled and impressive funeral services were held. With the death of this Indian, the long feud existing between the Washoe

and the Piute Indians was settled on December 28, 1880, the hatchet was formally buried with much ceremony. Still later the existing feud between the Shoshones and the Piutes was also settled.

At the Midwinter Fair at San Francisco, California, maps made by the Pyramid Lake Indians evoked great admiration. The coloring was done by pigments they made from the soil around the lake, the secret of which they refused to reveal. November, 1884, the Piutes and Washoes met at Pyramid Lake to council on the killing of two Piutes, one of whom it was believed had been killed by Washoes. The Washoes offered \$500 to the father of the murdered man, which was refused. Natches, the principal chief, proposed that the murderer be given to the whites for trial. The Washoes met in council on the matter and agreed to the proposal. About this time Natches was re-elected principal chief of the Piutes.

Regarding Sarah Winnemucca, as there has been by some newspapers both east and west exaggerated statements as to her attainments and virtues and by others as "a low, dirty, common Indian," it is but just to quote the opinion of a Major of the United States Army and Superintendent of Indian Affairs, dated Carson, Nevada, April 6, 1870 and September 20, 1870. His inquiries were made at the request of Major-General Geo. H. Thomas. He says: "Sarah Winnemucca is an educated woman of good sense and evinces what I believe to be an accurate appreciation of the condition of her people." While not the goddess which some writers claim her to be, but a plain Indian woman, passably good looking, with some education secured at the San Jose Mission, California; has much natural shrewdness and intelligence, converses well and seems select in the use of her terms; her education, association with many whites of good habits and intelligence, she has conformed to their customs which have rendered her in point of attainment *far above* her tribe, and she deserves credit for it.

Speaking of her father, Old Chief Winnemucca, she says (April 4, 1870), "He is now chief of the Pai-Ute tribe; he is now getting too old and has not energy enough to command nor to impress upon the Indian minds the necessity of the reservation." She says she believes the Nevada Indians in fifteen or twenty years will be thrifty, law-abiding members of the community.

Johnson Sides, who for many years had been a prominent Piute chief and a useful and influential Indian and "peacemaker," died September 15,

1902, at Pleasanton, California, where he had gone for his health. He was 75 years old when he died. His people wanted him buried in Nevada. Allen Bragg, editor of the *Reno Evening Gazette*, circulated a subscription paper and the old chief was brought back and buried with high honors. Public ceremonies were held opposite the Court House in Reno. Judge Frank Norcross delivered a very eloquent address, paying a high tribute to Sides, and a large choir of Reno's best singers sung, an Indian friend made an earnest address and Rev. Unsworth closed with prayer. Afterwards a long procession of Indians in wagons and on foot followed the chief in a hearse to the cemetery, where he was buried after the manner of their white friends. He was credited with doing very much in supporting public officials in suppressing the liquor traffic among Indians, checking the tendency of the Indians in the habit of drinking as well as in gambling.

When the first pioneers settled in Walker Valley, prior to 1850, they found the Indians there were using irrigating ditches for the cultivation of roots which they used for food. June, 1901, the Washoes solemnly announced that they would give up the custom of medicine man and the painting of their faces and other savage customs. Until within a few years, when their medicine men lost three patients, they killed them. They now are taken to an isolated spot and given food and water for several days and left to die, which he frequently does unless rescued by whites. This custom has now almost entirely been given up, and a large majority of Indians, save the old ones, employ the white men physicians and patronize the drug stores of the whites, and are living in their homes in ways that ensure better health conditions.

In 1903 the government decided that the Washoes were entitled to the hill lands where they gathered most of their pine nuts for winter use, and a long feud over these trees, which we whites often cut down for fuel, which the Indians called their orchards, was thus settled.

WASHOE INDIAN BASKETRY.

“DAT-SO-LA-LEE”—HER LIFE WORK.

Twenty-two years ago a gentleman residing in Carson City, Nevada, hired an Indian woman of the Washoe tribe to do the menial work about

the house. This gentleman was a collector of Indian baskets. Many years' experience had taught him to class a specimen of native weaving at a glance; he had learned to recognize the hand of every basket maker in the Washoe tribe.

One day the squaw showed him a small flat flask for which she had weaved a covering. The collector was amazed. He asked the squaw where it came from.

"Oh, some time me make 'em," answered the woman. The squaw set no particular value on the flask. She gave it to the collector as carelessly as she would have given her soiled hair ribbon.

At the time of her discovery, Dat-So-La-Lee—or Louise Keyser, as she prefers to be called—was forty-eight years of age. In twenty-two years she has made but forty-one baskets. The three tiny specimens which, in 1888, sold for \$50 apiece, could not now be purchased for ten times that sum; the discovery of her masterpiece, now owned by a citizen of Nevada. It is one of the finest Indian baskets in the world and will remain so, for Dat-So-La-Lee is fast going blind. The name of this basket is "Migrating" and is eight and one-half inches high, twelve inches wide, thirty-five inches in circumference and six inch opening; over fifty thousand stitches, thirty to the inch. Done in red, black and light gold. "When the birds leave their nest and fly away we will move." Weight, 16 ounces. Value, \$1,500. Started June 11, 1899; finished December 15, 1899. Washoe name, Day-gee-coop; Piaute name, New Hukt. She may never complete the forty-second basket on which she is now working.

She is only a fat old squaw, but the greatest artist her race ever produced. She sits all day long over her work, patiently weaving a thread of willow in and out. Sometimes it takes her a full year to complete a basket.

She obtains her materials from limbs, roots and bark of the trees and in preparing them uses nothing but her teeth, fingernails and sometimes broken bits of glass with which she scrapes the threads. Yet a powerful magnifying glass will not reveal a crude stitch in any one of her baskets. The fineness of their texture is well nigh unbelievable.

Her designs are exclusive; no other squaw has ever attempted them. She carries out faithfully the traditions of her people by never producing a duplicate of her work.

For the past twenty years her baskets have been of the day-fee-coop,

or treasure basket shape, which belongs to her by family right. A treasure basket made by any other family of the Washoe tribe can always be traced to Dat-So-La-Lee's family line.

It is claimed that Dat-So-La-Lee is the only Indian weaver in the world who possesses a perfect knowledge of the value of perspective. This is shown in a striking manner in her basket which has been called "Migration."

The white, used as a background or body of her basketry is a fibre of the salix, or white willow, and lies between the bark and pitch of the branches.

The black, which forms a large portion of the ornamental designs, is composed of the inner strand of the *Pteridium-Aquilinum*. The red, the only color which she uses, is the bark of the *Cercis-Occidentalis*. As they age, her baskets assume a harmonious blending of each hue; the white becomes a rich golden tint, the black shines like polished ebony and the red deepens into a blood ruby tint.

Eighteen of her baskets are scattered over the United States. Two of them occupy honored places in the Mosely collection, which was presented to the Yale University Museum.

DESTITUTE NEVADA INDIANS.

By

VERNILLE DEWITT-WARR.

It seems incredible, but alas! it is all too true.

Nevada, the State of gold, of golden sunshine and golden hearts, rich in her bounty and flaunting to the world her horn of plenty, ever overflowing in its bounteousness, has allowed starvation to stalk in specter-like horror into her very midst. In the immediate vicinity of her capital city, Carson, the hub from which wise and beneficent laws are supposed to radiate, the enlightened Christian citizens of Nevada allow five decrepit, woebegone, antiquated Washoe Indians to starve—starve from one cold winter to another. Nevada's latest claim to distinction in this line is the manner in which she permitted "Captain Jim" of the Washoes to die. To Nevada belongs the claim of starving him to extinction, as she is

to-day grinding out the noble souls of the remaining old Washoes. Were I not cognizant that "Captain Jim" and the remnants of his tribe were highly deserving I would not thus plead their cause. In these fragments that are left of the Washoe Indians, I trace the tokens of great and noble spirits, for I have observed them personally. The Washoes were not hostile to the early inhabitants of Nevada, nor were they an Indian enemy whose appearance sudden and unexpected from secret ambuscade resulted in midnight assault. They were a tribe not given to rapine and spoil and outbreaks spreading desolation and dismay; nor did they drink the blood of the mangled victims in transports of exulting rage, as did various tribes now basking in the sunshine of our rich government's protection.

The Washoes were peace-loving, loyal Indians, actually aiding the whites in early skirmishes against the lawless invaders, even to the extent of furnishing guns for which they have never been paid up to date. Those Indians who made vicious warfare on the settlers and ravaged them to destruction are rich in reservations and proper care, while Nevada's Washoes, benefactors of the early pioneers, are destitute and suffering, and Nevada smilingly approves. No, Nevada cannot grant the Washoes a reservation, but it is her bounden duty to succor these five old Washoes for the few ebbing years of their life. "Captain Jim" has come to me with manuscripts of letters bearing the signatures of every Governor of Nevada, excepting the last two Governors, all promising in high-sounding words to aid and relieve the misery of him and his tribe. Forty years or more he plead for succor of Nevada's Governors, but their promises to him were as vacuous as the desert's emptiness. Thus he died wretchedly and in misery, as the remaining Washoes live. Woe to Nevada for her great neglect!

During the cold and biting winter months these five old Washoes live in Nevada, in abject misery, want and beggary, for each snow blast that blows chills their withered bodies to spasms of shivering, as the fires of life are ebbing, due to no fuel. Cogitate for one brief moment, my friends. Just five old Indians, and Nevada so rich and vast, allowing them to slowly die from deprivation. Such conditions make us, sometimes, doubt the wisdom of an all-wise and just God. In summer time the Washoes migrate to the more genial shores of Lake Tahoe, where California allows the Washoes the benign beneficence of continuing to starve.

Here, in squalid huts, these poverty-stricken figures are insufficiently protected either by clothing or shelter. They live without any further protection from the inclemency of the elements than a sort of break-weather about three feet high, composed of sage, and erected around them in the shape of a half moon. Sage also furnishes wood for their fuel.

The Washoes live principally upon roots, acorns, pine-nuts, and dried fish, and by the aid of their dogs, a lean and miserable breed, they catch rabbits and other small animals. These old Indians endeavor to fish and cure stores of fish for winter, but in general the season of scarcity finds them wretchedly unprovided. Much credit is due to the regime of the California Fish and Game Commission, which was inaugurated and maintained by a fish commission of high repute in the Lake Tahoe district, who became beloved of the Indians, who watched their interests, aided them and administered justice to the Washoes, as well as tourists and residents, unreservedly, until he was proclaimed their "great white father," but now for the last two years a new commission has prevailed, and is lax, and the Indian is naught.

The Washoes, Nevada's nature children, are objects of charity and plead most piteously for sustenance from the Tahoe tourist; but the tourists are on pleasure bent, and suffering is nil to them. Moreover, it is a monumental disgrace to Nevada that her Indian charges should become the paupers and beggars of America's greatest playground, Lake Tahoe and vicinity. "Captain Jim" appealed in vain to each and every Nevada Governor, with the above-mentioned exceptions. He went in person to Washington, D. C., and plead his cause. This destitute Washoe issue was laid before the late Senator Newlands, who did all in his power, namely, laid the matter before the Bureau of Indian Affairs, where it has stagnated and become musty, while the Washoes slowly perish.

I appeal fervently to the women of Nevada, since every other method of procedure has failed, that you set about to eradicate the black scar on the name of your fair State, Nevada. If you would be aided, interview the superintendent of the Carson Indian School, who has formulated a remarkably effective plan of relief for these old Indians, whose habits he understands so perfectly, but he is helpless without adequate funds, more is the pity, when such a small amount would make so great a relief. The time is ripe. Act now, O women! before this tribe of your wilds, these forlorn beings, perish in their entirety, and thus spread the pall

of shame that now enshrouds you and the State of Nevada. Nevada, you have the facts; rouse yourself from your lethargy and erase forever from your history the shame of the ill-treated, ill-kept Washoes by a swift return to fairness and justice in their behalf, and may their few remaining years be prolific with the broad humanitarian acts of Nevada and her citizens.

The Washoe Indians have evidently not been considered the equal of the Pai-Utes and Shoshones, in morals or intelligence. The writer has personally known this tribe, as well as the Pai-Utes of Nevada, for many years, has taken special pains during the past year to get an unbiased opinion from farmers, business men and housekeepers, school teachers on the reservations and of public schools off the reservation, and all unite in the opinion that the Washoes are every way the equal of the Pai-Utes. This is especially true of those who have attended the Stewart Indian Training School at Carson, Nevada, including full-bloods as well as half-breeds. His attention is called to the time of the early pioneer settlement of Washoe and Carson valleys and during years when Indians in Humboldt, Carson and Washoe counties were frequently seriously attacking the settlers. It was seldom that the Washoes were guilty of depredations or killing of the white settlers or emigrants.

The testimony of our citizens now living who were living in Washoe, Lyon, Ormsby and Douglass counties during the exciting days preceding and since the battle of Pyramid Lake, all testify to the loyal stand taken by the Washoes by many deeds of friendship from Washoes and has been acknowledged by all. One incident should be recorded in favor of the Washoes. Old Chief Winnemucca and his Pai-Ute warriors tried very hard to get the Washoes to join them in fighting Major Ormsby, and in their plan to exterminate the whites in Nevada they persistently refused all efforts to get them to join the Pai-Utes against the whites. They gathered about twenty guns and loaned them to the members of Major Ormsby's party just previous to the Pyramid Lake battle. These guns were never returned nor were they ever paid for by the State of Nevada or by the United States. The Pai-Utes have never invited the Washoes to occupy their Walker River or Pyramid Lake reservations, but have opposed efforts of whites to get Washoes to live on these reservations. The United States authorities have unjustly ever failed to give the Washoes any farming lands, and only the Price Nut Mountain,

near Gardnerville, which only the old Indians consider of value.

There are many Washoe Indians who are successfully farming, having work horses, hogs, cows, poultry, live in cabins and houses with floors and glass windows, have mowing and sewing machines, cultivate from five to forty acres of land, raise considerable alfalfa, hay, wheat and barley. Large numbers find profitable employment with white ranchers all over the State. These statements will apply equally as well to the Pai-Utes and Shoshones.

The Carson, or Stewart, Indian School, at Carson, was established by the United States in 1901. It was for several years under the successful superintendency of Mr. C. H. Ashbury. There is no other Indian school on the Pacific Coast that can show a greater number of graduates for the number of pupils, that have proved good farmers, stock-raisers, carpenters, blacksmiths, saw-mill superintendents and printers. One is foreman of a large bindery. Its girl graduates have proved the equal of the boys and may be seen in many counties as wives of successful farmers, prosperous home-builders and good cooks. In many of their houses are sewing machines and the wives or children making their own and their children's garments. In the Carson School the girls have been taught how to raise their children, to properly nurse them when sick and to observe the laws of health. As a result, the population of Pai-Utes and Washoes for the past ten years is increasing, the Washoes especially, in contrast with their condition twenty years ago.

The reader's attention is called to the interesting report on these same tribes of United States Indian Agent Major F. Dodge, for the year 1859. (See Superintendent Commissioner Indian Affairs' report, dated Carson, July 4, 1859.)

It was this character of manual labor school which he refers to which in 1873, Majors Powell and Ingalls recommended the government to establish at Moapa, Lincoln County, southeastern California, for all southern Nevada and southern Utah Indians. Another school for each at Elko, Esmeralda and Washoe counties. President Grant, Secretary of the Interior and Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the committees of the House of Representatives and Senate, all endorsed this report and such a bill passed the House of Representatives and would have passed the Senate but for the opposition of one of the Nevada Senators, who offered to support it if he was allowed to dictate the manner in which



THE RUINS OF FORT CHURCHILL

the appropriation was spent. This Senator was a candidate for re-election. The defeat of the bill has kept Nevada Indians in poverty and distress until hundreds of lives within the past ten or fifteen years have been lost on that account.

The Indian Schools.—There are living in Nevada about six thousand Indians, some fifteen hundred being on reservations, the rest scattered throughout the State, living in the towns and in the farming communities. These Indians are entirely self-supporting, with the exception of a very few old people on the reservations, who receive limited gratuities. They all dress in civilized garb and most of them live in small houses, dress and live as well as most people of the same limited means. Their average condition and progress is much better than is indicated by the loafer element that is most frequently seen about the towns, as we see there the worst of the Indians, those living in the farming communities being much better off in every way than those who live about the town, where the associations have been particularly degrading.

Government schools are maintained for the children upon each of the reservations, and at a few places where there are several Indians in a community off the reservations, there being very few Indian children enrolled in the public schools of the State. One such school has twenty Indian children in regular attendance. These schools all attempt to give some of the industrial instruction, though the equipment for such instruction is limited in the day schools and the small reservation boarding schools. There are eight reservation schools in Nevada with an average attendance of 531; enrollment, 589. Two of these are reservation boarding schools, six are day schools, for Indians in Nevada. The principal school is not on a reservation, but is located near Carson, Nevada. This school was established in 1891, opening with an attendance of some sixty to seventy-five pupils. The capacity and equipment has been increased steadily up to the present time, so that there is now capacity for about three hundred children, the attendance having been up to the full capacity for the past several years. The equipment provides for various industrial departments, including carpentry, blacksmithing, tailoring, shoe and harness work, farming and some engineering and plumbing work for the boys, and all domestic lines for the girls, handled by some thirty employes, all of whom are supposed to be teachers in their various lines. The schoolroom work covers the regular grammar grades and each child who

is old enough spends a portion of each day in the schoolroom and a portion is in some industrial department. Attendance at this school is entirely voluntary and very little effort has been required to keep the school full. The results have been quite satisfactory, and practically all pupils who have remained in the school a sufficient length of time to accomplish results, have done and are doing very well. A number of boys educated there are employed at their various trades or making good use of their own land, and the girls are giving good service in domestic work or in making improved homes for themselves and their families.

Along mechanical lines, Indians are quite as proficient as white children, the boys taking readily to the various trades taught, and the girls taking an interest in making a good showing in sewing, cooking, laundry work, etc. Practically all of the garments for the girls are made in the school sewing room, where the work is done by the pupils under the instruction of an employe. The same is true of the housekeeping, laundry work, cooking and baking, besides which a domestic training department is maintained under a skilled employe, where more individual instruction can be given to girls in small classes. All of the general repair work, whether in carpentry, cement work, plumbing, blacksmithing, tailoring, or shoe and harness making, is done by the boys, and many of the buildings erected during the past few years have been built by the boys under the instruction of employes having charge of that department. The greatest need for the education and general improvement of the Indians, both old and young, is the proper education of the white people who are neighbors to them to the end that they may recognize their merit and forget the prejudice they have against them. The improvement of the Indian is of more vital interest to the community in which he lives than to the general government that bears the expense of his education.

The Stewart, or Carson School, was under the superintendency successively of Mr. Goodnoe, W. C. Gibson, Eugene Nead and James K. Allen, until, in 1903, Mr. C. H. Ashbury, who came from the Western Shoshone Reservation Boarding School, with a good record for efficiency and great faith in the possibilities of the Indian children, who continued as superintendent until 1912. The amount and character of the labor performed by these Indians, especially while at the school referred to in detail above, will compare favorably, all things considered, with white pupils and graduates from similar schools. The Carson School is com-

posed largely of Pai-Utes, though there are many Shoshones and Washoes. The latter tribal graduates stand as high in deportment or studies as the Pai-Utes, and there are many cases where they have far excelled the Pai-Utes. A few cases of graduates are mentioned to support this statement.

A former Carson and Truckee girl, whose mother is Indian, surmounts obstacles that thwarts others, once inmates of Indian schools, is Dr. Elizabeth May. She graduated from the Central College of Osteopathy of Kansas City, Mo., June 3, 1913. Her mother is a full-blooded Indian woman of the Washoe tribe. When this girl was thirteen years old she left the Carson Indian School. Coming to Truckee to spend a summer vacation, she found employment in the family of Gen. and Mrs. C. F. McGrashan, and was by them sent to the Truckee Public School. She entered the seventh grade and led her classes every month until she graduated from the grammar and high schools. During her four years' course in high school she led her class each year. For two years she was president of the student body of the high school. She passed the freshman year at the University of California, receiving the assistance of a "Bonnheim Scholarship." Leaving the university at the close of the year, she took the entire medical course of the Central College, graduated with honor, and is now practicing her profession in Kansas City.

Frank Rivers, a Washoe graduate of the Carson School, served an apprenticeship in the Carson Bindery, and is to-day assistant foreman of the Nevada Press Company, of Reno. Wm. Washoe is a leading trusted employe in the Verdi sawmill. Richard Barrington, of Loyalton, California, is another graduate of Carson School, and is to-day the superintendent of a sawmill near Loyalton. He served as clerk of the Republican Central Committee of Loyalton. Hector Thomas, another graduate, learning while at the Carson School the trade of carpenter and joiner, by faithful attention to business is now a successful contractor in Oakland, California. Richard Bender, another Washoe graduate, is a good farmer and is an efficient employe in the Carson School. He possesses a good education and is a United States Indian police officer. John Moore, a Washoe graduate, is a good blacksmith and extra carpenter. Isaac Johns, a graduate of Washoe, is a blacksmith and machinist in the service of the Southern Pacific Railroad. Jeff Davis, a Pai-Ute, graduated as tailor and farming and to-day is an all round good farmer. Harry Sampson, Pai-Ute, just graduated as printer from the Carson

School, joined the union and is now engaged on one of the Carson papers as printer and is also leader of the Carson Brass Band. This school has two military companies, fully equipped, and compares favorably with the State military. They are under Mr. Gershingher, the disciplinarian of the school. Miss Daisy Washington, a Washoe, graduated from the Carson School, attended Haskell Indian School, Kansas, and graduated in the regular and commercial courses. She returned to Carson, became a clerk and stenographer at the school, resigned in 1913, and now holds a position as stenographer in San Francisco. John Hicks is a Washoe graduate from this school, where he learned the carpenter trade, and finds steady employment and supports his family comfortably, as well as do the others mentioned. Nearly all these Indians are good musicians, playing in brass bands composed of white men and play different instruments.

Ghost Dances.—A ceremonial religious dance connected with the Messiah doctrine, which originated among the Paviotso or Pai-Utes, Esmeralda County, Nevada, in 1888, and spread rapidly among other tribes, extending as far as the Indians of Oklahoma, until it numbered among its adherents nearly all of the Indians of the interior basin from the Missouri River beyond the Rockies, including the blanket tribes. The prophet of the religion was a young Indian about thirty-five years of age known among his own people as Wevoka (meaning Cutter), and commonly known by the whites as Jack Wilson, from having worked in the family of a ranchman named Wilson. He seemed to have established his reputation as a medicine man when, about the close of 1888, he was attacked by a dangerous fever. While he was ill an eclipse of the sun spread excitement among the Indians, with the result that Wevoka became delirious and imagined that he had been taken into the spirit world and there received a direct revelation from the god of the Indians. In brief, the revelation was to the effect that a new dispensation was close at hand at which the Indians were to be restored to their inheritance and reunited with their departed friends, and that they must prepare for the event by practicing the songs and ceremonies which the prophet gave them. Within a short time the dance spread to the tribes of the mountains, where it became known as the spirit or ghost dance. The dancers, men and women together, held hands and moved slowly around in a circle, facing towards the center, keeping time to songs that were sung without any instrumental accompaniment. Hypnotic trances were a common feature of the dance.

Among the Sioux of the Dakotas, the excitement, aggravated by local grievances, led to an outbreak in the winter of 1890 and 1891. The principal event in this connection was the killing of Sitting Bull, December 15, 1890, and the massacre at Wounded Knee, December 29. The doctrine has nearly faded out and the dance exerts only a local function. In the Crow, Cheyenne and Arapaho, a later development from the ghost dance proper, the drum is used, and many of the ordinary tribal dances have incorporated ghost dance features, including even the hypnotic trance. The belief in the coming of a Messiah, or deliverer, who shall restore his people to a condition of primitive simplicity and happiness is probably as universal as the human race, and takes no special emphasis among people that have been long subjected to alien domination. (See Pontiac Conspiracy, 1763-4, Tecumseh Combination and his brother, the prophet, shortly before the War of 1812. Bulletin 30, B. A. Enth, 975.)

Wevoka (the Cutter), a Pai-Ute dreamer, or medicine man, originator of the ghost dance, was born in Nevada in 1856, in Mason Valley, Esmeralda County. His father, Tavi-bo, was reputed a medicine man and said to be a hypnotist doctor in California, and the son may have inherited the mystic tendency from him. After his father's death the boy was taken into a white family by the name of Wilson from whom he took his name, Jack Wilson. During the spring of 1913 Jack Wilson was still living in Mason Valley, where he maintained a good reputation for sobriety and he seems to be determined to forget ghost dance business, and he has made formal application to the officers of the Interior Department for forty acres of land which he agrees to cultivate and make a permanent home. He will also erect a cabin and give up his wickie-up and tent and occupy the cabin as other civilized Indians are doing.

ENUMERATION OF WASHOE INDIANS OF NEVADA.
CARSON VALLEY, GARDNERVILLE AND VICINITY, DOUGLAS
COUNTY, NEVADA.

Captain Pete
Mrs. Annie Pete
Johnny Pete
One little girl Pete
William Morris
Mrs. William Morris
Johnson McGinty
Mrs. Johnson McGinty
Two girls, one boy

Roy Wyatta
Henry Wyatta
Noidy Wyatta
Robert Wyatta
Fred Wade
Mrs. Fred Wade
Two boys
Jim Pitts
Mrs. Pitts

Dave Pitts
Mrs. Dave Pitts
Maggie Pitts
Mary Pitts
Mathew Harris
John Henry
Mrs. John Henry
Dickey Henry
Mrs. Dickey Henry

One boy Henry	Two boys	Mrs. Charlie George
Mrs. Willie Henry	One old woman	One child
Willie Henry	Anthony Johnnie	Dick George
Wauneta Henry	Mrs. Anthony Johnnie	Pete
Waunona Cyser	Three girls	Mrs. Pete
Johnny Cyser	Willie Heck	Sam Johns
John Danburg	Ida Heck (Stockton)	Mrs. Sam Johns
Mrs. Danburg	Johnny Bline	Lubelle Johns
Willie Danburg	Mrs. Bline	Albert Bob
Mrs. Willie Danburg	John Wanwashe	Mrs. Albert Bob
Tom Danburg	One boy	Jim Pete
Mrs. Tom Danburg	Indian Henry	Mrs. Jim Pete
Jake Tom	Mrs. Henry	Old Walker
Ello Tom	One boy Henry	Laud Curtis
Dinden Tom	Frank Dada (Smith Valley)	Mrs. Curtis
One boy Tom	Dudsy Danburg	One child
Big Bill	Mrs. Dudsy Danburg	Tobills
Mrs. Big Bill	Emry Dudsy	Two girls
Tom Salley	Charlie Boosey	Big Williams
Mrs. Tom Salley	Mrs. Charlie Boosey	Mrs. Big Williams
Marlie Maggie	Peggie Boosey	Fred Williams
Sarley Tom	One woman	Mrs. Fred Williams
Indian Willie	Tom Sangué	Two girls, one boy
Mrs. Willie	Mrs. Tom Sangué	Henry Keyser
Johnny Nye-Eye	One woman	Mrs. Henry Keyser
Mrs. Nye	Jack Wellase	Dexter Keyser
Eddie Nye	Mrs. Wellase	Blendy Keyser
Fredy Nye	Willie Jack	Martenis Keyser
Nettie Reed	Mrs. Jack	Lula Keyser
Bessie Reed	Robena Jack	Happy Keyser
Poker Jim	Jim Jack	Mr. Winfield Keyser
Mrs. Poker Jim	Mrs. Jack	Mrs. Winfield Keyser
Frank Jim, Pokor	Joe Homer	Jesse Winfield Keyser
Frank Joe	Mrs. Joe Homer	Nieta Winfield
Mrs. Frank Joe	One boy	Martha Winfield
Carson Jack	Bill Fieldmore	One child
Billy Wade	Harry Fieldmore	Little Dick
Mrs. Billy Wade	Mrs. Harry Fieldmore	Mrs. Little Dick
Maj. Ormsbill, Mrs.	One child	Indian Snuex
Blind Henry	Charlie Nye	Mrs. Snuex
Mrs. Henry	Mrs. Charlie Nye	George Snuex
John Cresterson	Lewie Nye	Phomer Snuex
Mrs. Cresterson	Tutsy Fieldmore	Jackson Snuex
Peter Heind	Andy Tecord	Melandy Snuex
Mrs. Peter Heind	Mrs. Andy Tecord	Mamo Snuex
One girl	Dody Tecord	Joise Snuex
Sceosor Cresterson	One girl, two boys	Ezell Snuex
Eddy Cresterson	Monkey Peter	Enduluse
One boy	Mrs. Monkey Peter	Mrs. Enduluse
Syrus Johnny	Old Jim	Mammie Heck
Nute Johnny	Mrs. Jim Peter	John Lancaster
George Johnny	Jack James	Mrs. Mollie Lancaster
Two boys	Mrs. Jack James	Nettie Lancaster
Tom Fieldmore	Indian Tom	Willie Lancaster
Mrs. Fieldmore	Charlie George	Mrs. Jennie Lancaster

INDIANS OF NEVADA

143

One child	Hattie Mike	Henry Dresley
Frank Lancaster	One boy	Mrs. Henry Dresley
Indian Charlie	William Peter	George Dresley
Mrs. Charlie	Mrs. William Peter	Five girls
One woman	Beans Tom	Pete Dick
Mike Holbrook	Mrs. Beans Tom	Mrs. Pete Dick
Mrs. Holbrook	One woman	Henson Dick
Two children	Dick Pitch	Eda Dick
Sanna Frank	Johnny Mack	Mr. Emo Dick
Mabel Frank	John Walker	Mrs. Emo Dick
Lena Frank	Mrs. John Walker	Johnson Side or Johnson
Wymo Frank	Two children	Mrs. Johnson
Indian Mike	John Peter	May Johnson
Mrs. Indian Mike	Mrs. John Peter	Hurney Johnson
Two boys, one girl	One boy	Maney Johnson
		Total 260.

GENOA AND VICINITY, DOUGLASS COUNTY, NEVADA.

Sammy Jake	Charles Rubin	Mrs. Joe Mack
Genoa Tom	Mrs. Rubin	Billy Merrial
Mrs. Annie Tom	Lily Bline	Mrs. Billy Merrial
Willie Wyotta	Mrs. Bline	Dick Merrial
Maucy Jake	Susana Bline	Blind Dick
Neta Jake	Jim Winters	Jerry Dick
Indian George	Mrs. Winters	One woman
Mrs. Indian George	Joe Mack	
Four boys, four girls, one baby	Joe Mack	Total 33.

WOODFORD, ALPINE COUNTY, CALIFORNIA AND VICINITY.

Mrs. Pushback, two girls, one boy..	4	Tom Miller	1
Peter Manlerta	1	Mrs. Tom Miller	1
Old woman	1	Mrs. Miller, one boy.....	2
Dick Bagley	1	George Pustbeck	1
Mrs. Dick Bagley, one girl, two boys	4		—
Old woman	4	Total	39
Will Woll	1	Old Tom, Mrs. Old Tom.....	2
Long Dick	1	Mr. Bagley, Mrs. Bagley.....	2
Mrs. Long Dick	1	Ott Bagley	1
Tobby Dick	1	Willie Bagley	1
Mrs. Tobby Dick, one child.....	2	Bronke Bagley	1
Chas. Brule	1	Nancy Bagley	1
Mrs. Chas. Brule	1	Caesar Johnson, Mrs. Johnson, two	
John Brule	1	boys	4
Mike Alex	1	Jack Pitts, Mrs. J. Pitts, Bennie and	
Corey Moore	1	Boye Pitts	4
Mrs. Corey Moore	1	Mrs. —, one girl and boy.....	3
Jimmie Hunter	1	Willie Pitt	1
Mrs. Jimmie Hunter, two girls, one		Nancy Pitt	1
boy	4	Grover Pitt	1
Mr. Simpson, one girl, two boys....	4		—
Mrs. Simpson	1	Total	22

THE HISTORY OF NEVADA

ANTELOPE VALLEY, NEVADA.

Number of adults	44
Number of children	21
Total	65

WOODFORD AND VICINITY WASHOES, CALIFORNIA.

Charles Miller, Mrs. C. Miller.....	2	Edson Hopps, Mrs. E. Hopps, one	
Will Miller	1	girl	3
Chas. Johnson, Mrs. C. Johnson,		Pat Hopps, Mayme Hopps	2
Besma Johnson	3	Big George Mrs. Big George.....	2
Lew Palmer	1	Old woman	1
Thomas Burber, two children.....	3	John Walker, Mrs. J. Walker.....	2
Jimmie Bob, Mrs. Jim Bob, one child	3	Chas. Bob, Mrs. C. Bob, one child..	3
Old Joe (died)	1	E. Hopper, one girl	1
Mr. Riser, Mrs. Lilly Riser.....	2		—
Joe Moore, Mrs. Joe Moore, two		Total	32
children	4		

FREDERICKSBURG, ALBINE COUNTY CALIFORNIA.

Peter Mayo, Cap.	Mrs. Arnot	One girl, daughter of Wade
Mrs. P. Mayo	Peter Rizer	One girl, daughter of Wade
Bennie George	Mrs. P. Rizer	One girl, daughter of Wade
Mrs. Bennie George	Old Mr. Wade	Simon Cohn
One girl George	Mrs. Wade	Mary Ann
One girl George	Jim Wade	Peter Esan
One boy George	Mrs. Jim Wade	Mrs. P. Esan
One baby George	Dominick Wade	Chas. Blin
Mr. Emory	Ire Wade	Mrs. Blin
Mrs. Emory	Baby Wade	Sam Dick
One Emory boy	Dick Wade	Mrs. Dick
One Emory boy	Mrs. Dick Wade	
One Emory boy	One boy, son of Wade	Total, 39.
Joe Arnot	One boy, son of Wade	

WASHOE INDIANS, LONG VALLEY, HONEY VALLEY AND VICINITY,
WASHOE COUNTY, NEVADA, LARSON COUNTY, CALIFORNIA.

Mr. Pete P ixley	John Frank	Baby Wilsie (1)
Mrs. Pete Pixley	Mrs. John Frank	Baby Wilsie (2)
Old Woman Susie	Dan Purdy	Old woman Wilsie
Bob Skimmerhorn	Mary Purdy	Big Charlie
Piaute Jack, Mrs.	Fred Savis	Big Charlie (1)
Mr. Budish	Mrs. Fred Savis	Big Charlie (2)
Mrs. Budish	Sallie Sam	Big Charlie (3)
John Wiger	Nips Sam	John Switch
Mrs. John Wiger	Mr. Blaine	Mrs. John Switch
Capt. Jim	Mrs. Nellie Blaine	John Swith, Jr. (1)
Buffalo Jim	Mr. Jack Wilsie	John Swith, Jr. (2)
Charlie Purdy	Mrs. Jack Wilsie	John Swith, Jr. (3)

INDIANS OF NEVADA

145

Amy woman	Fred, old	Isaac John
Amy child (1)	Mrs. Fred	Mrs. Buffalo Jim
Old Woman Fred	Mrs. Fred (1)	
Old Woman Batterson	Mrs. Fred (2)	Total, 46.

WASHOE INDIANS, SIERRA VALLEY AND VICINITY.

Bill Dyson	John Wilson, second child
Mrs. Bill Dyson	Jack Wilson, third child
Alex Sunday	Mrs. Harry Wilson
Mrs. Alex Sunday	Mabel Wilson, first child
Henry Higgins	Elsie Wilson, second child
Mrs. Henry Higgins	Norris Wilson, third child
Mabel Higgins, first child	Baby Wilson, fourth child
Wenoa Higgins, second child	Old Woman Nancy
Maggie Lee	Bud Richards
Mamie Lee, first child	Annie Richards
Louisa Lee, second child	Mrs. Annie Sams
George Minke	Frank Sams
Mrs. Hattie Minkie	Tom Minkie
First child	Lucy Arsaga
Second child	Baby Arsaga, first child
Third child	Cecil Arsaga, second child
Old Annie Bender	Jenny Nips
Mr. Bill Wilson	Richard E. Barrington
Mrs. Bill Wilson	Mrs. R. E. Barrington
Old Woman Wilson, wife	Lloyd Barrington, first child
Harry Wilson, first child	Total, 41.

CENSUS OF WASHOE INDIANS NEAR AND IN RENO, NEVADA.

One-eyed Bob	Four children; one daughter has baby
Mrs. One-eyed Bob	Jackson Pash or Pash Jackson
Sussie Leggins (sister of Bob)	Mrs. Maggie Jackson and Mrs. Winnie
Blind Joe	Jackson, wives of Jackson
Mrs. Blind Joe	One child, infant
Charlie Nash	Old Verdi Tom (single)
Mrs. Charlie Nash	Jack Mahone (son of Jackson)
Mono Hunter	Mary Henry, wife (Piaute)
Mrs. Mono Hunter (daughter of Nash)	Clarence Mahone, son
One child, baby	Shilas Jackson (son of Jackson)
Billy Lee	Elizabeth Jackson, wife
Mrs. Billy Lee	Jack Steele
Dan McGinty (single)	Mrs. Jack Steele
Nat Carson	Ike Steele, son; wife is Daisy Steele
Mrs. Nat Carson (daughter of McGinty)	(Piaute)
Pete Toros	Son of Jack Steele (single)
Mrs. Pete Toros (sister of McGinty)	Ed Hicks (now living in Oakland)
Billson Winters	Lena Hicks
Mrs. Billson Winters	Tim Steele (brother of Jack Steele)

Mrs. Tim Steele	Steele
Pingle, one-legged (single)	Lizzy Astor (wife)
Henry Ward Beecher	1 child, infant
Jennie Beecher, wife	Sam Wilbur (white man)
Ole Woman (lives with Beecher)	Dinah Wilbur, Washoe
Joe Dixon	Palmer Boy, nephew of Dinah
Mrs. Lucy Dixon (Shoshone)	Henry Moses Rupert
Nina Dixon, daughter of Lucy, half-breed	Mrs. Lizzie Rupert (Piaute)
Lousia Dixon (sister of Joe Dixon)	1 child, infant
John Frank	Johnny Frank
Mrs. Maggie Frank (wife)	Daisy Frank (wife is Piaute)
Charlie Overton (single, uncle of John Frank)	1 child, infant
John Moore	Frank Weavers
Mrs. Mary Moore (Piaute)	Mrs. Daisy Weavers (Piaute)
	1 child, infant

WASHOE VERDI INDIANS, NEVADA,
WASHOE COUNTY, AND TEMPORARILY LIVING AT OTHER
PLACES STATED.

John P. Menke	Susan Jackson, Placerville, Cal.
Maggie Menke, his wife	Bevnie James, Placerville, Cal.
Thomas Menke, son	Mrs. B. James, Placerville, Cal.
George Menke, son	Three boys and one girl, Placerville, Cal.
Fannie Menke, daughter	Washoe Jimmie Whitney, one baby
Margaret Menke, daughter	Bennie Steel, son of Jack, near Reno
John Menke, son	Thomas Heetor, near Oakland
Eashoe Charlie	Tom Heetor, son, near Oakland
Old woman	Nellie Rette, near Berkley
Very old man	Mrs. Mamie Pohl, near Truckee
Old man	Lizzie May, Kansas, studying to be physician
William Washoe	Harry West, Phela, merchandise clerk
Cora Washoe, wife	One man, Hobart Mills
Billy Washoe, son	Colfax, California, John Howe
Ada Washoe, daughter	Marysville, California, three
Carrie Washoe, daughter	Total, 37.
One baby, son	

STEWART INDIAN SCHOOL, NEVADA—ORMSBY COUNTY,
NEAR CARSON.

Carrie Winnemucca	Lulu Portifield (at Carlisle, Pa.)
Rosie James	Daisy Washington
Ada James	George Washington (one child)
May John	Mrs. Lulu White and child (Long Valley, Cal.)
Pansy Portifield	Jack Wilson (Long Valley, Cal.) one girl
Irez Duncan	
Daisy Dressler	

WASHOES, CARSON CITY AND VICINITY, ORMSBY COUNTY.

Bob Ridley
Henry Ridley
Mrs. Mattie Ridley
John Moore
Sanka Moore
Mrs. Moore
One woman
Warren Dickenson
Charlie Dickenson
Old Sam
Mrs. Old Sam
Empire Joe
Mrs. Empire Joe
Nellie Joe
Ben Peter
Mrs. Lessie Peter
Pete Dunkin
Mrs. Pete Dunkin
Young Pete girl
Jim Tellick
Chas. Naves

Mrs. Chas. Naves
Two girls, one boy, one baby
Jack George
Mrs. Jack George
Mustache Tom
One boy
Indian Dock
Mrs. Indian Dock
Washoe Jimmy
Mrs. Washoe Jimmy
Three boys, one girl
Peter Dexter
Mrs. Dexter
Curtis-Woman
Annie Joe, or
Mrs. Brown
Sam Galbrather
Bert Galbrather
Truckey Dick

Total, 45.

THE HISTORY OF NEVADA

NEVADA.

Value of Indians' Individual Property, June 30, 1911.

Superintendence.	Lands Exclusive of Timber	Funds in Bank, etc.	Homes, Barns, etc.	Furniture	Tools, Imple-ments, etc.	Wagons etc.	Stock Poultry etc.	Other Property.	Total.
Carson		\$110.00							\$110.00
Fallon	\$77,880.00		\$1,500.00	\$200.00	\$250.00	\$500.00	\$1,000.00		81,330.00
McDermitt	20,450.00		1,000.00	100.00	200.00	1,000.00	5,000.00		27,750.00
Moapa River			800.00	200.00	200.00	200.00	4,044.00		6,044.00
Nevada			1,200.00	3,000.00	2,000.00	500.00	8,200.00	\$500.00	15,400.00
Walker River	254,364.50	233.20	72.00	1,000.00	1,000.00	2,000.00	11,260.00		277,257.70
Western Shoshone			12,000.00		5,000.00	3,000.00	51,750.00		71,750.00
Total	\$352,694.50	\$343.20	\$23,700.00	\$4,500.00	\$8,850.00	\$7,800.00	\$81,254.00	\$500.00	\$479,641.70

NEVADA.

Schools, farms and industrial education, fiscal year ended June 30, 1911.

Schools	Acreage		Irrigation System		Value of Tools and Imple-ments	Employees for Instruction in Farming	Value of Products Raised	Employees for Instruction in Shops	Shops. Value of Material Used	Value of Articles Fabricated
	Irrigated	Non Irrigated	Total Miles	Ditches Cost		No. Salaries		No. Cost		
Carson	160.00	160.00	320.00		\$1,165.00	1 \$ 840.00	\$ 943.17	4 \$3,000.00	\$5,608.89	\$ 7,871.40
Fallon	20.00	10.00	30.00		495.00		600.00			
McDermitt	20.00	60.00	80.00	7.00	\$1,400.00	1 720.00	392.50		20.13	31.90
Lovelocks50		50.00		20.00					
Nevada	12.00	13.00	25.00	.25	300.00	1 600.00	2,433.00			
Walker River					46.00		80.00			
Western Shoshone	48.00	43.00	91.00		290.00	1 720.00	415.00			
Total	260.50	286.00	546.50	7.25	\$1,700.00	4 \$2,880.00	\$3,994.25	4 \$3,000.00	\$5,629.02	\$16,439.50

NEVADA.

Total Scholastic Population; Number Eligible for School Attendance; Number in School, of Various Classes and Number Not in School, Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1911.

Schools.	Total Number School Age.	Ineligible for School Attendance Because of Illness, Deformity, Etc.		Eligible for Attendance.	Non-reservation Boarding School.	Indian Children in School. Government.		Total, All Classes.	Eligible Children Not in School.
						Reserva-tion Boarding.	Day.		
Stewart U. S. School, Carson	800	150		650	284			299	351
Fallon	67	2		65			26	26	39
McDermitt	103	35		68			56	56	12
Lovelocks	26	4		22			12	12	10
Moapa River Res.	30	5		25	9		13	22	3
Pyramid Lake Res., Nevada	136	7		129	8	85	13	106	23
Walker River Res.	106	33		73	13		51	66	7
Duckwater Res., Western Shoshone.	145	16		129		63		63	66
Total	1,413	252		1,161	314	148	171	650	511

INDIANS OF NEVADA

149

NEVADA.

Farming by Indians.
Report Ended June 30, 1911.

Report Ended June 30, 1911.											
Reservations.	Able-bodied Male Adults						Acreage Agricultural Lands.			Number of Indians Farming for Themselves.	Largest Acreage Farmed by One Indian.
	on Reservations.			Acreage, Agricultural Lands.			Cultivated by Indians.				
	Allotted.	Unallotted.	Total.	Allotted.	Unallotted.	Total.	Allotted.	Unallotted.	Total.		
Arson	80		80	1,000		1,000	200		200	25	20
Fallon	37	39	76	3,439	1,200	4,639	403		403	43	42
Fort McDermott		30	30	2,045		2,045	400		400	68	10
Lovelocks		37	37		700	700		150	150	20	15
Moapa		141	141		21,020	21,020		520	520	250	20
Nevada	107	25	132	6,450		6,450	1,410		1,410	75	20
Walker River		130	130		6,000	6,000		3,000	3,000	90	100
Western Shoshone											
Total	224	402	626	12,934	28,920	41,854	2,413	3,670	6,083	571	

NEVADA.

Live Stock, Poultry, Etc., Belong-
ing to Indians on June
30, 1911.

Reservations.	Horses, Mules, Etc.	Cattle.	Swine.	Poultry.
Fallon	50			147
Lovelocks	25			60
Moapa River	79			88
Nevada	280	201	4	30
Walker River	300	350		
Western Shoshone	1,210	1,200		100
Total	1,944	1,751	25	425

NEVADA.

Value of Crops Raised by Indians During Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1911.

	Hay.			Grain.			Vegetables and Miscellaneous.			Total.		
	On Lands.	Unallotted Lands.	Total.	On Lands.	Unallotted Lands.	Total.	On Lands.	Unallotted Lands.	Total.	On Lands.	Unallotted Lands.	Total.
Reservations.												
Carson	\$500.00		\$500.00	\$360.00		\$360.00	\$250.00		\$250.00	\$1,110.00		\$1,110.00
Fallon	1,696.00		1,696.00	397.50		397.50	140.00		140.00	2,233.50		2,233.50
McDermitt	1,000.00		1,000.00				2,050.00		2,050.00	3,050.00		3,050.00
Moapa River	\$1,500.00		1,500.00				80.00		80.00	\$1,640.00		1,640.00
Nevada	10,000.00		10,000.00				400.00		400.00	11,375.00		11,375.00
Walker River	7,796.00		7,796.00				1,020.00		1,020.00	9,616.00		9,616.00
Western Shoshone	16,000.00		16,000.00				1,200.00		1,200.00	17,200.00		17,200.00
Total	\$10,992.00	\$27,500.00	\$38,492.00	\$1,777.50	\$1,680.00	\$3,457.50	\$3,240.00	\$1,035.00	\$4,275.00	\$16,009.50	\$30,215.00	\$46,224.50

NEVADA.

Employment of Indians Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1911.

	Indians Employed by United States Indian Service.				Employed by Private Parties.			
	Regular Employees.		Irregular Employees.		Total.		Total Indians Employed.	
	Num-ber.	Earnings.	Num-ber.	Earnings.	Num-ber.	Earnings.	Num-ber.	Per Capita.
	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Total.	Per Capita.
Superintendencies.								
Carson	5	\$2,417.84	4	\$2,101.37	1	\$8.00	10	\$4,564.21
McDermitt	2	327.50	5	268.00	2	304.75	8	603.50
Lovelock	1	300.00	1	4.75	3	270.00	20	9,917.35
Moapa River	2	276.00	1	3.00	38	4,651.75	4	4,170.00
Nevada	10	2,147.67	3	1,459.99	36	3,378.16	38	4,651.75
Walker River	3	522.00	33	2,856.16	32	2,856.16	68	6,238.32
Walker River Irrigation	6	1,477.23	1	105.78	17	3,438.61	17	2,388.55
Western Shoshone	29	\$7,468.24	8	\$3,667.14	136	\$19,608.14	187	\$32,214.80
Total					51	\$12,606.66	187	\$172.27

INDIANS OF NEVADA

151

Indian Population of Nevada by Schools and Tribes, 1911.

Distribution by Degree of Blood.

Mixed But
One-half
or More.

Full Blood.

Wear

Who

Attire.

Superintendencies and
Tribes, Nevada.

Children of School Age.

Minors.
Male (to 20
Years In-
clusive.)
Female (to 17
Years In-
clusive.)

Adults.
Male (to 21
Years and
Over.)
Female (to 18
Years
and Over.)

Total
Population.

Male.
Female.
Total.

Male.
Female.
Total.

Male.
Female.
Total.

Number

Modern

Attire.

Union School, Pai-Ute.....	67	48	37	85	113	115	228	161	152	313	155	148	304	6	4	10	313
Fort McDermitt School, Pai-Ute.....	103	82	59	141	114	91	205	196	150	346	182	138	320	14	12	26	
Lovelock School, Pai-Ute.....	26	17	18	35	31	37	68	48	55	103	39	43	82	9	12	21	103
Moapa School, Pai-Ute.....	30	24	23	47	39	39	78	63	62	125	83	62	125				125
Washoe School, Pai-Ute.....	136	98	102	200	176	215	391	274	317	591	269	313	582	5	3	8	591
Walker River School, Pai-Ute.....	106	81	71	152	173	198	371	254	269	523	243	259	502	11	10	21	523
Western Shoshone School— Shoshone.....																	
Pai-Ute.....	145	125	105	230	156	164	320	125	138	263	244	236	480	37	33	70	550
Hopi.....								146	130	276							
Total.....	145	125	105	230	156	164	320	281	269	550	244	236	480	37	33	70	550

NEVADA.

2,689

Property Valuations and Incomes of Indians, Fiscal Year Ending June 30, 1911.

Reservations.

Population.

Value of Property and
Funds Belonging to
Indians.

Value of Crops Raised
by Indians.

Wages Earned by Em-
ployment.

Value of Rations and
Miscellaneous Issues.

Income from Leases.

Income from Industries
Engaged in Other
Than Farming and
Stock Raising.

Indian Money Proceeds
of Labor and Miscel-
laneous.

Total.

Carson County— Carson.....		\$110.00	\$1,110.00	\$4,564.21	\$80.00	\$30.00				\$5,784.21
Burchill County— Fallon.....	313	81,330.00	2,233.50				\$50.00	\$605.05		2,888.55
Wendover County— Fort McDermitt.....	346	27,750.00	3,050.00	603.50			27,022.00	668.84		31,344.34
Wendover County— Lovelocks.....	103			9,917.25				119.12		10,036.37
Moapa County— Moapa River.....	125	83,044.00	1,640.00	417.00	2.25		400.00	251.64		2,710.89
Washoe County, Pyramid Lake— Nevada.....	591	663,381.40	11,375.00	4,651.75	1,068.69	2,455.00		1,152.45		20,702.89
Wendover County— Walker River.....	523	334,382.38	9,616.00	8,622.48	95.19	1,540.00	350.00	1,220.99		21,444.66
Wendover County, Duck Water— Western Shoshone.....	550	74,428.80	17,200.00	3,438.61	3,039.53	3,500.00		5,987.19		33,165.33
Total.....	2,551	\$1,264,426.58	\$46,224.50	\$32,214.80	\$4,285.66	\$7,525.00	\$27,822.00	\$10,005.28		\$128,077.24

* Consolidated fund apportioned on basis of population.

Area of Indian Lands in Nevada, June 30, 1911.

Reservations.	Area in Acres.		Total.
	Allotted.	Unallotted.	
Duck Valley (Western Shoshone).....		321,920	321,920
Moapa River		1,000	1,000
Pai-Ute		1,320	1,320
Pyramid Lake (Nevada).....		322,000	322,000
Walker River	9,983	40,526	50,509
Total	9,983	686,766	696,749

NEVADA.

Value of Indian's Tribal Property and Total Tribal and Individual Property, June 30, 1911.

Superintendencies.	Value of Tribal Property.						Total Tribal and Individual Property.
	Lands Exclusive of Timber.	Timber.	Funds in Treasury.	Live Stocks.	Other Property.	Total.	
Carson							\$110.00
Fallon							81,330.00
Fort McDermitt.....							27,750.00
Moapa River.....	\$77,000.00		3,981.40			\$77,000.00	83,044.00
Nevada	* 644,000.00		\$250.00	\$200.00		647,981.40	663,381.40
Walker River.....	36,671.40	\$20,000.00	3.28			57,124.68	334,382.38
Western Shoshone.....			2,678.80			2,678.80	74,428.80
Total	\$757,671.40	\$20,000.00	\$6,663.48	\$250.00	\$200.00	\$784,784.88	\$1,264,426.58
* Estimated.							

Gravelly Ford Massacre in 1861.—The account of this affair was obtained from Charles Stebbins, now of Austin. In the latter part of the summer of 1861, four families from the States stopped for three weeks at the trading post of Stebbins, in Ruby Valley. There were thirteen persons in the party, among whom were four or five children, and their conveyance consisted of four wagons drawn by oxen. There was one little girl about ten years old among the number, who became strongly attached to Mr. and Mrs. Stebbins, and they tried ineffectually to persuade the parents to leave her with them. There was a squaw named Maggie about the place at the time, working for Mr. Stebbins, who also became attached to this little girl, and knew of the effort being made to get the parents to leave her behind when they left.

The next day after the emigrants had resumed their journey, Maggie also disappeared from the station. Several days passed, when late one night some one rapped at the door of Mr. Stebbins's house, and he went to see who the intruder could be, and found a squaw standing there whose face and head were so swollen and cut that he did not recognize her. She stepped inside and sitting down on a stool in front of the fire, commenced a doleful moaning cry, accompanied by a back and forward swaying motion of the body, as though racked by mental and physical torture. It was a long time before she would utter a word, but finally the harrowing details of a fiendish outrage was drawn in broken sentences, mixed with sobs, from the sorrow-stricken old Shoshone mother.

Before the emigrants had left Ruby Station, Maggie had become suspicious that certain young warriors of the tribe intended to massacre the party before they passed beyond the Shoshone country, and she determined to follow the wagons and rescue the little girl should her suspicions prove correct. Her fears were realized; the whites were suddenly attacked in Yago Canyon, which connects Pine Valley with the Humboldt River, near Palisade, a few miles southeast of Gravelly Ford. As the struggle, or massacre, was going on, this faithful Indian woman rushed in among the combatants and, seizing the little girl, made good her escape from the scene that ended in the murder of all the whites. Throwing the child across her shoulder, she sped along the trail on her way back to the home of Mr. Stebbins, but there was many a long weary mile lying between these fugitives and safety. Through the balance of the day and the following night she fled with her burden of innocence, and as hope

of success began to dawn in the hearts of the fugitives, they were suddenly made aware of the immediate presence of two Indians in pursuit. They were overtaken, the Indian woman was beaten until she was senseless and the child was tied to a stake driven in the ground, when a knife was used to aid the savages in committing a nameless outrage upon her, and thus the little martyr died.

When Maggie came to her senses she found her assailants gone, and the dead body of her little charge staked to the ground as the brutish fiends had left her. Then she had staggered along, heart-stricken, the remainder of the way to bear the sad news to her white friends. Mr. Stebbins immediately set out with a few men to see if what he had heard could be true, and finding the little one he had loved so well, with her open, dead eyes staring, horror-stricken, heavenward, he knew that all he had been told was a terrible reality. The next year the two savages, who had thus brutally murdered the little girl, presented themselves at Fort Ruby, not being aware of the fact that it was known to the whites who had committed the deed. They were seized; one was hung and the other shot in attempting to make his escape.

Eastern Nevada—Troubles in 1862.—That portion of the Shoshone tribe living in Ruby Valley, in what is now Elko County, had for a chief in 1861 an Indian named Sho-Kup, who was friendly to the whites. In November, or during the first days of December of that year, he died of consumption at the house of Charles Stebbins, and the followers of the dead chief proposed, in accordance with their usual custom, to kill Sho-Kup's squaw, so that she would accompany her dead lord to the happy hunting grounds. She fled to the trading-post kept by Stebbins, at Ruby Station, on the Overland Stage road, and claimed his protection, which, being given, caused such an excitement among the Indians that assistance was asked from Governor James W. Nye, who sent Colonel Wasson to that section with authority to take such action as the circumstances demanded. The following is Colonel Wasson's report to the Governor, made after his return. The report is given in full, because of the many interesting facts contained therein, relating to the Shoshones at that time:

Carson City, June 28, 1862.

His Excellency, James W. Nye, Governor and Ex-Officio Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Nevada Territory.

Sir:—I have the honor to submit this report of my trip, etc., to Ruby Valley. In accordance with your instructions under date of December 16, 1861, I started by

overland stage on the evening of the eighteenth of December for Ruby Valley, and arrived at Smith Creek, December 19th, eight o'clock P. M. This was the first station in the Shoshone country. The summit of the mountains west of Smith Creek being the boundary between the Pah-Utes and the Shoshones. On the twentieth of December, six o'clock, A. M., I arrived at Reese River, where I met the Chief To-to-a and about one hundred of his band. I had a very satisfactory interview with them. The chief assured me of his friendship for our Government, and that none of his band would, under any circumstances, molest the stage or telegraph lines, or any whites that might want to visit or reside in his country. He seemed to regret that there was any disturbance between the whites and Shoshones, and volunteered to go with me and assist in bringing about a settlement. I arrived at Ruby Valley on the twenty-second, at eight o'clock A. M. Here I found about one hundred Indians, headed by a young chief, by the name of "Buck." They were subsisting chiefly upon the charities of the Mail Company and other settlers in the valley.

I was informed that about half of the Indians belonging in Ruby Valley had left for the "White Knife" country, on the upper Humboldt, on account of the late difficulties consequent upon the death of their chief, Sho-Kup, the circumstances of which were substantially as follows, to-wit: Previous to Sho-Kup's death, and after he had become satisfied of his rapidly approaching dissolution, he expressed the desire that Buck should be successor to his position as chief; that he should take his wife (a very intelligent squaw named by the whites, Julia) also his horse, arms and other effects. Now this disposition of the estate did not accord with the old established and time honored custom of the tribe; so immediately upon the death of Sho-Kup, his friend proceeded to slay his horses, and collect his arms and other effects, and to complete the horrid rite, the almost frantic widow must be tied to the funeral pyre, that she might accompany her husband to the happy hunting grounds of the Great Spirit. But she shrank from the dreadful sacrifice. She fled to the mail station, asking protection of the whites, which was granted. The Indians followed, demanding her surrender, threatening to burn the place and kill every white man in the valley if they would not give up the woman, which the whites refusing to do, they proceeded to place a guard around the station. The excitement increased until a young Indian of the White Knife band shot and killed an old favorite Indian doctor of Sho-Kup's. Whether the doctor's death obviated the necessity of killing Sho-Kup's widow or not, I cannot say, but certain it is that the excitement ceased, and upon the promise of the Indians that they would not kill her, she was given up by the whites, and Buck escorted her to the Indian camp about one-half mile distant. Buck returned to the station in the evening, and in a few moments the report of a gun was heard in the direction of the Indian camp. It was rumored that Julia was killed. Buck ran to get on his horse, but was ordered by a white man to stop or he would shoot him, at the same time firing at Buck with a revolver. Buck reached his horse, but was prevented from mounting by another white man who was ahead of him and who mounted Buck's horse, and gave chase, at the same time shooting at him with a revolver. But the chief, through the fleetness of his legs and the darkness of the night, escaped unhurt. It was soon ascertained that the alarm was false and that Julia was also safe. Buck returned to the station the next day, and the difficulty was amicably settled.

WARREN WASSON.

Gosh-Ute War in 1863.—The Gosh-Utes, under their war chief, White Horse, began hostilities by killing the keeper of Eight-Mile Station on the 22d of March, 1863. The overland stage, bound east, that day contained four passengers, Judge G. N. Mott, of Nevada, and an old man

on his way home to the States from California, accompanied by his two little sons. The driver on this occasion was Henry Harper, who was better known on the overland road as "Happy Harry." As the stage arrived at the scene of the tragedy it was received by a volley from the savages, who were concealed in and about the house, followed by the Indian war whoop that once heard is never forgotten. Away dashed the frightened horses guided by the unerring hand of the driver, whose life-blood was flowing from a mortal wound. The old man, struck with an arrow, sank into the bottom of the coach-boot unconscious, and the only chance of escape that remained for any of them rested in the nerve, skill and bravery of the hero outside. Clinging to the lines and fighting against the death that was creeping around his vitals, the driver urged forward those maddened animals in his struggle for the safety of those whose lives were intrusted to his charge, until a film gathering in his eyes he called to the Judge to come out and take his place. While the stage was flying at the top of the horses' speed, Judge Mott made his way by clinging to the sides of the coach to the driver's assistance, and as he grasped the lines Happy Harry sank dying under the seat, whence the dark angel summoned him to a place beside the world's forgotten heroes.

Judge Mott arrived at Deep Creek Station with the dead driver, the wounded old man, who afterwards recovered, and the two little boys. One of the horses died from the effect of wounds received in the race for life. The Indians burned Eight-Mile Station, drove off the stock, and thus was commenced the Overland War of 1863 in Nevada. With hostilities begun, it required but a few days for the incipient spark to kindle a flame of war along the whole route, from Schell Creek to Salt Lake City, a distance of 225 miles. Three days after the death of Happy Harry, Company K, Second California Cavalry Volunteers, Captain S. P. Smith, commanding, was marching from Camp Douglas, in Utah, for the scene of the disaster, but having divided the company, the main body, under Captain Smith, did not arrive at Fort Ruby until the last of April. In the meantime, Henry Butterfield, who had been recently appointed by Governor Nye as Indian Agent of Ruby Valley, sent out two friendly Indians as spies to find out what tribe had committed the act, and where the depredators could be found. May 5th, Company E, Third California Infantry Volunteers, left Camp Douglas to guard the Overland Stage road between Salt Lake and Austin, a few soldiers being left at each station, usually

about four. As the stage arrived at a station two of the soldiers posted there accompanied it to the next stopping place, and then guarded the next return stage back, this duty being performed by the infantry, while the cavalry was left free to scout through the country and patrol the road. Soon after the destruction of Eight-Mile Station, where Happy Harry was killed, a stage was ambushed in the night, while passing through a canyon, a short distance east of Schell Creek. At the time there were a number of passengers on board, among whom were two women and five soldiers. The volley from the Indians was returned with a will by the latter, as the coach dashed past, and a mile farther on the only victim of the assault—a horse—fell dead in the road from its many wounds.

As soon as the two spies sent out by Henry Butterfield returned with the desired information, preparations were made for a movement to chastise the guilty parties. In pursuance of this project, Captain S. P. Smith's company of California Cavalry moved, May 1st, from Fort Ruby, and the next morning at daylight it had reached Schell Creek, having marched sixty miles. During the day they kept as much as possible secreted, but as soon as the shadows of night rendered concealment practicable the expedition moved south in Steptoe Valley, along the base of Schell Creek Mountains. Everything was conducted with the utmost caution to guard against their presence in the country being known to the enemy. The morning twilight found the command camped in a deep canyon, secure from observation, where they remained during the day, while their Indian allies were out searching for the Gosh-Utes. About sundown the Shoshones returned with the information that a number of them were about ten miles farther to the south in the valley, camped upon Duck Creek. As soon as the darkness was sufficient to conceal the operations of the cavalry they moved from their day's bivouac to effect a surprise, if possible, of the unsuspecting hostiles. One division crossed the creek, three miles below, and passed up on the south side, and, aided by the other acting on the north side of the stream, encircled the slumbering band with a cordon of steel, and then awaited the approach of daylight to begin the work of death. A pistol shot was to be the signal for the onslaught, and when twilight came, and the sharp note of attack broke the stillness, the cavalry, on foot, with a ringing shout, made a wild dash upon the sleeping Indians. Let us draw the screen, and not look upon the scene that followed; it lasted but a short time, and but two escaped.

That morning's sun looked down upon a dead camp, where twenty-four warriors lay sleeping their last sleep; and Happy Harry was avenged.

The next morning Company K moved up stream and, crossing the divide separating Duck from Steptoe Creek, moved eastward and over the Schell Creek Mountains, reaching Spring Valley just at daylight on the morning of the 16th, after a march of one day and a night. Here they surprised another Indian camp in a cedar swamp, south of the present Cleveland ranch. The cavalry charged down upon the hostile band, but were brought to a halt by the swamp character of the ground. Many horses were mired, but some floundered through, and the consequent confusion, with temporary delay, enabled most of the Indians to escape. Twenty-three were found dead after the short, sharp conflict which ensued. The casualty to the whites was a soldier wounded and one horse disabled. From the scene of the last encounter the command returned to Fort Ruby, where it arrived May 10th, with the report that through its efforts fifty-two Gosh-Utes had been permanently converted to a peace policy.

On the 20th of the same month, when the overland stage was passing through a canyon east of Deep Creek in the daytime, it was fired upon from a cliff of rocks and Riley Simpson, the driver, fell from his seat in the stage-boot mortally wounded. Major —— Egan, who was sitting by his side at the time, seized the lines and dashed forward, carrying the living and the dead away from the scene of the disaster, pursued a long distance by the yelling savages. In consequence of this attack, Company K was ordered to Deep Creek and during the remainder of the year made that place the base of its operations.

Attack on Canyon Station in 1863.—Eight miles east of Deep Creek, on the Overland Stage road, near the Utah line, there was, in 1863, a dry station that was supplied with water by hauling it under guard with a team from Deep Creek slough. The Indians had burned this station, killed the man in charge and driven off the stock on the day succeeding the death of Happy Harry. At this point four soldiers of Company E, Third California Infantry, were left as that company passed the station on its way to Fort Ruby from Salt Lake, in May succeeding this event. The sad fate of three of the men left there and the heroism of the other, entitles them to a place in the memories of the past. Their names were Jacob H. Elliott, Jacob Burger, Ira Abbott and Corporal William S. Her-

vey, all from Columbia, Toulumne County, California. Besides the four soldiers were two men there at the time to take care of the Overland Stage stock, one of them being called "Deaf Bill," and the other was his assistant.

During the last days of June, Abbott and Hervey guarded the stage one day from Deep Creek to their home station. Before starting, the latter, whose courage was beyond question, remarked to a lady passenger that he dreaded the duty, as he had a presentiment of impending misfortune. The journey was made, however, without an incident occurring unusual or suspicious, and when the stage had gone they set out with the water-wagon, in company with Deaf Bill as driver, to procure water, leaving Elliott and Burger with the assistant hostler to take care of the station in their absence. They procured the water and were within four hundred yards of the station, on their way back, when Hervey again recurred to his presentiment of the morning, which was growing stronger with him, and said: "I dreamed last night that I was going to be shot and killed by Indians to-day, and——" As this last word was coming from his lips a bullet pierced his brain and he fell from his seat into the road a corpse.

The Indians, eighteen in number, had ambushed the little party of three and poured a volley into them from behind the sage-brush, at short range, killing one (Hervey), giving a wound in the right shoulder to Abbott, which knocked him out of the wagon, cut off the thumb of Deaf Bill, and wounded one horse in the breast. The frightened animals sprang forward, but were stopped within a couple of hundred feet by Deaf Bill, who was not so deaf but he knew the meaning of a thumb shot off; and he opened on the Gosh-Utes with his gun, bringing down one of them with a severe wound. Abbott sprang to his feet and, seeing the blood oozing from the forehead of his dead friend, took a quick glance around and saw the savages on the side of the road, less than a hundred feet away. He ran to the wagon for his gun and, obtaining it, killed one Indian. He then turned back to get the body of the unfortunate Hervey. Meanwhile the Indians were firing, and he received a wound in each leg. Regardless of this he reached the body of his friend, seized his undischarged gun, which was lying beside him, and fired upon his assailants, but did not kill any of them, the wagon having run over and bent the barrel. He then tried Hervey's revolver, but the wound in his shoulder

had begun to paralyze his arm and his fire was ineffectual. After two or three shots he ceased firing, picked up the body of his friend and started for the wagon. The Indians still continued the fusillade, and he was wounded twice more—once in each side—but finally succeeded in getting all the weapons into the wagon, as well as the body of the dead soldier, when Deaf Bill whipped up the horses and the half crazed animals dashed away to the station.

On their arrival they were met by the assistant hostler only, Elliott and Burger having gone out hunting sage-hens soon after the party had left. Looking toward a knoll in the direction taken by the absent men, they saw and recognized the glistening barrel of Elliott's rifle in the possession of an Indian and knew that the missing men were dead. A sharp but short engagement, lasting but a few minutes, ensued, when the Indians retreated and were seen no more that day. In about an hour after the departure of the Indians, an emigrant train came to the station bringing the body of Elliott, which had been found in the road a short distance from there. With the emigrants, fortunately, there was a surgeon, who dressed Abbott's five wounds, and to this opportune arrival that brave soldier and true friend owes his life. The next day the body of Burger was found on the hillside, where he evidently had made a desperate running fight, struggling heroically for life. His body was badly mutilated, his whiskers having been torn from his face in place of scalping his head, which was bald, and his heart had been cut out and taken away.

Walker River Indian Reserve,
August 22, 1866.

Hon. H. G. Parker, Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Carson City, Nevada.

Sir:—Commencing at the western boundary of the State, we have first the Washoe tribe, numbering about five hundred, and occupying a tract of country one hundred miles long, north and south, by twenty-five in width. There is no reservation within their district except the timber reserve, which is not adapted to cultivation, nor arable land which is not occupied. There is, however, a large amount of waste country over which they can roam unmolested for all the future if they wish to gratify their propensities in that respect. These Indians are a peaceable and inoffensive people.

Pi-Utes.—This tribe inhabits a country two hundred miles long by one hundred and twenty broad, lying parallel and east of that of the Washoes. They number about four thousand two hundred, and are divided into five distinct bands. South of Walker Lake are the Mono Pi-Utes, numbering four hundred, and under Chief Waugh-adz-ah-bo. They are closely allied to the Walker River or Ockii Pi-Utes, numbering fifteen hundred, and located in the vicinity of Walker River and lake and Carson River and upper lake, under Chief Oderie and Sub-chiefs Joaquin and E-sah-dawh, or Young Cayote. At the lower Carson Lake are the Toy Pi-Utes, numbering eight hundred, and under Chief Johnson. They affiliate with the

Coo-er-ee and Sidocaw bands, the former of which is located in the vicinity of Pyramid Lake, and numbers some seven hundred, under Chief Young Winnemucca. The latter is located in the vicinity of Humboldt Lake and river, and numbers about eight hundred, under Chief Sue.

The Mono and Octi bands should ultimately be settled upon the Walker, and the Coo-er-ee, Toy and Sidocaw upon the Pyramid reserves. These reserves are well adapted for the purposes designed. Each contains an extensive fishery and some grazing country, with about three thousand acres of arable land, from which white neighbors are barred to a distance by intervening sand plains and mountains. The improvements now upon these reservations consist of a small plank house upon each, with the addition of an adobe stable at the Walker. These buildings are but temporary affairs and must soon be replaced by others which are larger and better suited to the requirements. On neither has any land ever been cultivated worthy of mention, there not having been either teams or tools for that purpose.

During the past year the tribe has maintained the most friendly relations with the whites; even the little troubles that were usually arising between them and the settlers have nearly ceased. They are extensively employed throughout the country as farm-hands, especially during the harvest season. For the purpose of securing employment they resort to the towns and mining camps in large numbers, and by their industrious habits and orderly behavior have gained praise and good will from our citizens. Their character, when compared with that of Indians generally, is distinguished by moral habits and a teachable nature.

Bannocks.—North of and adjoining the Pi-Utes are the Bannocks. Formerly, these Indians were in the habit of visiting Pyramid Lake, where I have met and talked with them. Judging from the nature of their country and from information received from military officers, I estimate the number of that portion of the tribe which inhabits this State at fifteen hundred. Since May, 1865, the larger portion of them have been acting in concert with the hostile Snake or Bannock Indians of southern Idaho. This combination has also been re-enforced by a large number of renegades from other tribes, and at present remain unsubdued, though from three to six companies of United States troops have been actively employed against them since the outbreak. In point of numbers they are formidable, and seem to be imbued with a spirit of dash and bravery quite unusual, while, being well mounted and armed, with the advantage of knowing the country perfectly, they are enabled to disperse and rally at given points with a rapidity that defies pursuit or a knowledge of their whereabouts.

Shoshones.—To the east of the Pi-Utes are the Shoshones, numbering about twenty-five hundred. The section which they inhabit is large in extent, but extremely barren in resources, and as the Indians are often reduced to the dire necessity of eating reptiles and other loathsome things, it is not surprising that when in such straits they should occasionally relieve their wants by killing cattle and prospectors' horses. In clothing they are poorly supplied, having but few opportunities of getting any except those given them by the Government. During the past year their behavior has been excellent. They are willing laborers, and would, no doubt, gladly concentrate upon some suitable reserve, where, with assistance from the Government in the shape of teams, tools, etc., they would soon be enabled to gain a much better living than they now enjoy, with but little or no greater labor.

To the east of the Shoshones are the Goshi-Utes, and to the southeast the Pai-Utes. The latter form no part of the great Pai-Ute tribe to the west of them. They inhabit the region that was ceded to this State by Congress during the last session, formerly a part of Utah and Arizona.

Very respectfully,

FRANKLIN CAMPBELL,
United States Indian Agent.

INDIAN HOSTILITIES.

BY COLONEL THOMAS EWING.

In 1863, when the Indians were on the war path all over Humboldt County, a stock-man from Tehama County, California, drove quite a herd of cattle to Humboldt County and located on the eastern slope of the east range of mountains, about twelve miles south of where Dan Glen was located. The Indians becoming in want of a fresh supply of meat made an evening raid on his ranch and wounded the owner, who jumped on one of his horses without a saddle or bridle and escaped to Unionville and gave the alarm. Eighteen of the boys—Parkinson, Safford, Ewing, Brider, Sedown, Wheeler, McWilliams, Edwards, Clark and a number of others whose names I cannot remember—at once mounted their ever-ready steeds, and with Uncle Sam's Springfield rifles, hit the trail and were after the red devils before daybreak. As the Indians were driving five hundred head of cattle it was no trouble to follow the trail. By one o'clock of the next day we sighted the Indians running the cattle toward the Humboldt River near where the town of Winnemucca now stands. The river was booming out of its banks with the melting snow.

We pressed them so hard they abandoned the cattle and rushed to the river, plunging in and escaping to the other side of the river, screened by the willows. A few made their appearance on the side of Old Winnemucca Mountain. We continued to fire on them until they were out of the range. The first thing the party availed themselves of was a beef, as we had nothing to eat all night and day, never stopping to get provisions. Sedarns shot down a nice fat steer, each man cut out a piece, stuck it on his iron ramrod, set fire to the sage-brush and followed up cooking as the fire run and eating what he could. We had no salt, no bread and the effect was bad on many of us. We drove the cattle back toward home until way after dark, when each man for himself tied up his tired horses and lay down to sleep or sat up and watched fires until day dawned, when we pushed on until we reached the ranch, delivering back over five hundred head of cattle to the owner, who entered a growl because we had killed one of his steers. Mr. Ewing took particular pains to express himself in language that all frontier men understood in those

days, ordering the whole troop to enter the cabin to cook and eat of whatever they could find in store, while he urged upon the owner the wisdom of gratitude, and when the Indians again attack him to try hard to find a trail that had a way *from* Unionville.

In 1864, the government soldiers, Captain Littlefield, the "Monster," who belonged to the California volunteers, and other officers with their commands, captured a few Indian prisoners. I think the government at Washington instructed the military to turn them over to the civil authorities at Unionville for trial for murder, and as the authorities had no time to waste waiting on the courts, they selected M. S. Bonifield and A. P. K. Saffard as marshals to take the Indians to Carson City for trial (I suppose by the great civil courts of those days). All I can say is that these wise marshals handcuffed them in pairs, put them on the road and by following on horseback, each with a Winchester rifle and some six-shooters, they compelled them to march. They reached a point about fifteen miles below Unionville when the prisoners took fright and stampeded for the brush. The guards were compelled to shoot the prisoners to protect themselves. Returning to Unionville they reported that they had been attacked by the prisoners and had to kill the prisoners to save their lives. They made good Indians of them. Mr. Bonifield was afterwards Supreme Judge. Saffard was eight years Governor of Arizona.

In 1863, Ragan & Dun, a firm owning some fine mules, came from Missouri overland to Nevada, camping where the town of Dun Glen was laid out, being named after Mr. James A. Dun, one of the firm, and brother of R. G. Dun, of New York. During the fall of the year Mr. Ragan was killed by the Indians in Grass Valley, south of Winnemucca some twenty-five miles. Mrs. Ragan died from grief and his two sons were sent east to Missouri. Mr. Dun was a member of the first Legislature of the State of Nevada.

A party of three, named Dr. H. Smeathman, W. F. White and Frank Thompson, were prospecting in the mountains, near the north line of Nevada, west of Pueblo, on the 4th of March, 1864. When engaged in looking for water, signs of Indians were discovered by them and Thompson advised a removal from that locality, but the doctor objected, and the search was continued. They were soon after fired upon from an ambush, and Dr. Smeathman fell wounded from his horse, crying for help. Thompson and White fled toward the settlements, leaving him to his fate, and

forty-eight hours later rode into Rabbit Hole Station, from where they made their way to Humboldt City.

In the same section of country, in the following May, a prospecting party of seven men, while making a temporary halt in a canyon, seventy-five miles northwest of Paradise Valley, was fired upon by Indians, and four of the party, among whom was G. W. Dodge, were killed. One man named Noble received three wounds, and the other two were unharmed. Noble, although hit in the neck, shoulder and groin, succeeded in keeping the enemy at bay, while his two companions secured the horses, and the three made their way to Star City. The locality of this tragedy received the name of Disaster Peak. The *Humboldt Register* of June 4, 1864, notes the return of parties from the expedition that recently left Humboldt and vicinity to chastise the Indians; records that a skirmish with the Bannocks two of that tribe had been killed, on one of whom was found a shirt that had been the property "of one of the four men killed by them last month." This paragraph undoubtedly refers to those parties killed at Disaster Peak.

Indian Troubles in 1865.—The first attack in 1865 was in the last of February or first of March, by a couple of Walker River Pah-Utes, who murdered two prospectors near Walker Lake. The men killed were Isaac Stewart, formerly of Cleveland, Ohio, aged twenty-six years, and Robert Rabe, a German, aged thirty years. The two men were on a prospecting tour and had decided to camp at a point about two miles from the head of the lake. Stewart rode forward toward the lake to view out the next day's course, and Rabe remained to prepare camp and supper. He was in the act of lighting a match when shot from behind through the back. He fell forward upon his face and the Indians killed him by smashing his head with a stone. They then started in pursuit of Stewart, who made his escape to the lake where, being headed off, he took to the water and has never been heard from. These facts were obtained from a friendly Indian. Rabe had considerable money on him and the two had four horses.

On the 14th of March two young warriors, who had been principals in the murder, were captured, with the assistance of friendly Pah-Utes. When the young men found what was likely to result to them because of their acts they proposed to ransom themselves. They offered to give the Government all their ponies, and if that would not do to throw in,

as an extra inducement, their fathers, to be hanged in their places. Eventually they were both turned loose. On the same day, March 14th, Captain Wells, with a company of cavalry, surprised at daylight a camp of Pah-Utes on the banks of Mud Lake, within the Pah-Ute reservation, and killed every Indian found in the camp. Major McDermitt, in a letter to Governor Blaisdell, reported thirty-two as the number slain. Simultaneous with the attack of Captain Wells, Black Rock Tom was on the warpath in the north. That night a telegram from Judge E. F. Dunne, of Humboldt County, announced to Governor Blaisdell that the Wall Spring station-keeper and two men at Granite Creek Station, on the Honey Lake road, had been killed by Indians. The names of two of the men were George Thayer, an expressman, and Lucius Arcularius, the station-keeper. On the 17th, the Indians were reported as rendezvousing at the head of Humboldt Canal. A war meeting was held at Dun Glen, and only nineteen guns could be found. On the 20th, M. W. Haviland arrived at Star City, asking help for Paradise Valley.

Paradise Valley.—On the morning of April 4, 1865, two friendly Indians notified A. Denio that in "two sleeps" a band of warriors would make a raid upon Paradise Valley, kill all the settlers and run off their stock. Mr. Denio, with his family, was living at the time on the east side of Martin Creek, near the present residence of N. Gillelan, and his neighbors were A. and J. T. Bryant, T. J. Fine and Mr. Stockham. The latter gentleman being away on a mission to procure military assistance, if possible, for the settlers, his wife was at home alone. Three miles further up the creek another settler was living, named Rembreaux. Prompt as well as energetic measures were at once set on foot to notify all the settlers, and prepare for moving from that locality to a place of safety. A conveyance had to be made for Mr. Fine, who was prostrated with inflammatory rheumatism, also for the children of Mr. Denio. The hind portion of a wagon was converted into a cart for this purpose, but before they could move a fearful storm set in, and all were detained until the following morning. During the night they were re-enforced by the arrival of Thomas Byrnes and John Lackey.

Early on the morning of the 5th, the party, consisting of all the persons mentioned, started to reach Willow Point. To do this they were forced to cross Martin and Cottonwood creeks, swollen with the recent storm, between which lay a swamp of mud about two and a half miles wide.

Over that portion of the route the sick man and women and children had to be carried most of the way, rendering their progress tediously slow. After the passage was made, Mr. Denio and Rembreaux manned the cart in which Mr. Fine and the children were placed and started to haul it to Hamblin's corral, some three miles on their way, the two women accompanying them on foot. They were soon met by a man on horseback named Jacob Hufford, who attached a riata to the reach, which served as a tongue for the cart, and with the other end of it fastened to his saddle, hauled the primitive ambulance over the intervening distance to the corral without delay. The balance of the party remained behind at the Cottonwood Creek to get across that stream such provisions, goods, etc., as had been taken that far in their journey. It was expected that they would be met by a man named Christopher Fearbourn, who had gone the night before up the valley with an ox-team to get the effects of ——— Barber and ——— Collins, who were to leave with the rest.

Fearbourn had remained over night with the parties whom he had gone to move out of their dangerous proximity, and when they got up in the morning it was to find a large number of Indians about the house and corral. No unfriendly demonstration was made, but looks, combined with their awaiting with no apparent object about the place, seemed to carry with it the indications of hostile designs that might develop into action at any moment. Barber suggested to his companions that they all go to the corral, mount their horses and ride off; but this plan was objected to by Fearbourn and Collins, who thought a bold front might do better. They deemed the wisest course to be for them to put their things on board the wagon and go as they first intended. This plan was tried, but the Indians becoming more demonstrative and rather insolent, Barber said to his friends, "I am going to make the attempt to go for help and you shut yourselves up in the cabin if there is trouble, and do the best you can till I get back."

He went to the corral, caught and saddled a fleet-footed horse, as though nothing had occurred to disturb him, and one of the Indians asked him what he proposed to do. Barber replied that he was going out to drive in a beef to kill; but they did not seem to fully believe his assertion and two of them mounted their ponies and started with him. For a long distance they rode along, until finally seeming to become convinced that Barber had told the truth, they turned back. He rode on without

increasing his speed until an elevation hid him from their view, when he galloped onward in the direction of the settlement where the parties lived whom we have described as on their way to the Hamblin corral.

The men who had remained behind to get their property to a place where it could be reached and taken up by the expected owner of the ox-team, had just completed their task when Barber came riding up with the news of the danger that had overtaken his comrades at the cabin. While he was telling what had transpired, one of the listeners turned to look in the direction of the threatened danger and saw a column of smoke rising from the valley, and they correctly suspected that the cabin had been fired and probably a struggle for life was at that moment going on between the savages and the two men who had shut themselves in there. Barber, Byrnes and Lackey at once started to the relief of the besieged, while Bryant and the lad Denio set out for the corral.

As Barber and his two assistants neared the burnt cabin and were within possibly three hundred yards of it, they were suddenly assailed by twenty-two Indians on horseback and a large number on foot, but the three white men made a successful retreat to the corral, three miles away, that had become the place of general rendezvous. Just at this time as A. and T. J. Bryant, with whom was young Robert Denio, a lad but twelve years old, were approaching the corral, they were discovered by the Indians, who made an attempt to cut them off, which would have been successful but for a bold rally on the part of Waldron Foster and Lackey, that created a diversion and enabled the footmen to gain the defenses. The little garrison now consisted of A. Denio, his wife and four children: Robert Denio, a boy twelve years old, Jacob Hufford and wife, Mrs. Stockham, T. J. Fine, A. Bryant, T. J. Bryant, John Lackey, Waldron Foster, Thomas Byrnes,——Rembreaux and——Barber. Ten men, one boy, three women and four children constituted the entire force over which Mr. Denio, by mutual consent, assumed command. The place was put in the best possible condition for defense, but it was believed by all that unless assistance came soon a massacre would be their common fate. About fifty yards from the corral stood Hamblin's house, which became a point of considerable danger, as behind it the enemy was liable to take cover and station sharpshooters. It was, therefore, decided to burn the structure and this task was performed by T. J. Bryant and Mr. Foster, under a fire from the Indians. The only arms possessed by the

besieged settlers were three common rifles, one musket, two double-barreled shot guns, one navy and five small Colt's revolvers, and they were obliged to stay there and receive without reply the fire from long-range guns in the possession of the Indians who were on every side of them.

A Ride for Life.—It was at length determined to make an effort to break through the enemy's lines and reach Willow Point to let the people there know the peril that menaced the garrison. Thomas Byrnes volunteered to make the perilous attempt, and, mounting a horse, he rode straight down upon the Indians and passed through their lines upon a gallop, followed by a shower of bullets and a half dozen dusky warriors well mounted. The fleet-footed horse flew over the plains with its rider apparently unharmed and soon passed from the sight of those anxious watchers at the little fort. It was a race for life. If overtaken by a stray bullet, or the mounted savages, the lives of all at the corral would have paid the penalty, and seemingly inspired with the terrible emergency, the noble animal flew like a winged Pegasus out of sight from its pursuers. Arriving at Willow Point Station about 3 p. m., thirteen men were found there willing and anxious to answer the call for help, but unfortunately only twelve horses could be obtained to ride and it would not do for them to wait for an animal for the thirteenth man. Twelve accordingly mounted the horses and as they were about to ride off, a white haired old veteran named Givens, the one who was to have been left behind, seized a rifle in one hand and laying hold of the pommel of a saddle with the other, told them to "heave ahead." In this manner he kept pace with the relief party over that thirteen miles, refusing to get on a horse, and every little while saying, "Heave ahead, boys, heave ahead; the women and children must be saved." Just at night they arrived in the vicinity of the besieged camp. The Indians, upon discovering their approach, held a hurried consultation, raised the siege and fled to the valley. No more was seen of them. About nine o'clock in the evening the entire party started for Willow Point, reaching the place at three o'clock in the morning of the 6th, where they found Lieut. Joseph Wolverton with twenty-five men, who had arrived there late the previous evening.

A letter from E. F. Dunne, of Humboldt County, published in the *Gold Hill News*, April 17, 1865, says: "On the 6th, Wolverton engaged a

band of Indians about twelve miles from Cottonwood, killing ten of them, and then pushed on to Martin Creek Gap, some thirty-two miles from Willow Creek, where they killed two more Indians. A company of volunteers, citizens, arrived at Willow Creek on the evening of the 7th, and the next morning started to aid Lieutenant Wolverton, but found on their arrival that the Indians had made their escape. The only casualty to Wolverton's command was one horse shot."

Fate of Collins and Fearbourn.—On the 7th, Lieutenant Wolverton, with his command, accompanied by citizens, visited the scene of the late trouble, and upon arriving at the burned cabin found and buried the remains of Collins and Fearbourn. Judging from the appearance of the bodies and surroundings it was evident that the two men had remained in the burning house until there was left them only a choice as to whether they would die by bullets or fire. Fearbourn had apparently remained in the cabin, holding a pan over his head to protect himself from the heat of the burning roof, until his hands and arms were cooked. He had then rushed out of the burning cabin, and while running had evidently been shot in the back, falling some 150 yards from the cabin, where he was found, still grasping the pan. The charred remains of the unfortunate Collins were found among the ashes and embers of a pile of poles but a short distance from the house, and it is supposed he had been placed on this funeral pyre before life was extinct. His heart had been cut out and his body otherwise mutilated, in accordance with the usual custom of these savages. On the 15th of April succeeding the events narrated, four parties succeeded in surprising a camp of Indians near Kane Springs. They charged in among the redskins, dealing death right and left, and brought away with them eighteen scalps as trophies of their work. On the 5th of May, James Emory, of Trinity County, California, was killed by Pah-Utes, near the Honey Lake road, about twenty-five miles from the Humboldt River. He was one of seven who were en route for Pine Forest mining district. At the same time another of the party was wounded, named Spencer, and they reported having killed four Indians. May 20th, Captain Wells, with thirty-six men, fought a combined force of Pah-Utes, Bannocks and Shoshones, numbering, according to his report, 500. The scene of the battle was 130 miles northeast of Gravelly Ford, and 75 miles from Paradise Valley. The engagement lasted four hours, resulting in a repulse of the whites, and a loss of two men killed,

named James Monroe and Isaac W. Godfrey, both of Company D, First Nevada Cavalry, and four wounded. The place where the battle was fought is called Godfrey Mountain by the Adjutant General of Nevada. A private letter from one of the soldiers engaged in the battle says: "I can give no correct guess of how many Indians were there, but they must have had fifty or sixty guns, perhaps a great many more; they used no bows and arrows." The following letter gives all the particulars concerning the incident of which it treats, that have come to us:

Paradise Valley, July 5, 1865.

A. P. K. Safford:—I have this moment arrived at this point, having been one of a party of seventeen men who, on their way to Boise, encountered a large band of Indians twenty miles beyond Quinn's River, on Monday, the 3d instant, and of the party, P. W. Jackson, of Virginia City, was instantly killed. Thomas Ewing was shot through the body. Thomas Rule, of Humboldt River, was shot in several places, and a Canadian Frenchman, from Virginia City, was shot through the lungs. Ewing, Rule and the Frenchman will be here to-night. Mr. Ewing wishes you to employ a physician and send him immediately to this place, Willow Point. We hope that none of those wounded are mortally so. The fight lasted two hours.

THOS. J. BUTLER.

The repeated contests in the northern part of Humboldt County communicated the excitement to the Indians of eastern Nevada, and they assembled in threatening bodies in several localities of Lander County. The Indians of this section belonged to the Shoshone tribe, an inferior and propertyless people, who were so low in the scale of humanity that they never constructed a house or wigwam, or anything that could be called by any name indicating a cover, only seeking shelter in storms—which in winter were frequent, and at times severe—behind rocks and in the lee of bushes; subsisting on pine nuts, pine burrs, roots, mice, snakes (hence their name Shoshone), gophers, rabbits and game of a similar character, occasionally killing a coyote, antelope or other large animal. The Pah-Utes were their superiors, holding them in subjection, limiting their range to what are now called the Shoshone Mountains on the west, forbidding them the ownership of horses and by other and oppressive means, continuing them in a state of destitution and degradation. The large influx of miners in 1862-'63, and subsequent years, had relieved them from the oppression of the Pah-Utes, and had so greatly bettered their condition that no apprehensions had been felt; consequently their threatening assemblages and thieving depredations so incensed the people of Lander County that they called upon the Military Department to send

an expedition against them. Colonel Moore, of the California Volunteers, was in command at Fort Ruby, and in June, 1865, he dispatched Lieut. W. H. Seamands, a young and energetic officer, with about forty men and a mountain howitzer, to the scene of disturbance in the northern part of Reese River Valley. Seamands encountered the Indians in the hills west of Reese River and after a few shots dispersed them, without loss to his command, and an unknown loss to the enemy. The energy and promptitude of this movement, with the execution and terror inflicted by the howitzer, pacified the Indians of that quarter, or sent them as allies of those who were still committing depredations in northern Nevada and southern Oregon.

Hostilities in Paradise Valley in 1865.—The citizens of Paradise Valley determined to persist in their efforts to raise a crop of grain that year, and to enable them to do so two colonies were organized. One of them was formed about May 10th and consisted of Charles Adams, the founder, M. W. Haviland, A. Denio, Thomas Byrnes, ——— Travis, ——— Doom and ——— Mayland. They established themselves on the ranch now owned by B. F. Riley, Charles Singhas and ——— Rice. They succeeded in cultivating about eighty acres of ground, but about the first of July the colony removed to the place now owned by R. Brenchly, for the purpose of cutting hay. In this new locality they found plenty of Indian signs, that indicated a hostile proximity because of their secrecy or failure to lead to a visible presence of any of that race.

The other colony was on the east side of the valley, with Martin Creek running between them, and they consisted of R. H. Scott, Edward Lyng, C. A. Nichols, Richard Brenchly, Charles Gegg, J. G. Johnson, Joshua Warford, Victor T. Schann and Michael Maylen. These parties made the cabin of R. H. Scott their place of nightly rendezvous, in the daytime working, well armed, upon their several ranches. After their crops were in, four of them left the valley and the others remained until in July, when indications of unfriendly Indians became so strong in the vicinity that Scott decided to go and see if military assistance could not be obtained. He started and got lost in the night, but, discovering a light approached it and found himself unexpectedly in the temporary camp of Colonel McDermit, who detailed Sergeant Thomas, of Company D, Nevada Volunteers, with a corporal and sixteen men to return with him.

This command, under Sergeant Thomas, had moved north from Willow

Point to graze their stock and occupy an advanced position in the valley. The little force was then divided, and six men, with the corporal, were some four miles from the sergeant's camp, when, on the 26th of July, they were suddenly confronted by a body of Indians numbering, as variously stated, from twenty-seven to fifty warriors. No attack was made, but their acts not being of a friendly nature, a man was sent to notify Sergeant Thomas of the condition of affairs, and he immediately started with his men for the threatened camp. The Indians on observing his approach hoisted a white flag, which the sergeant responded to by a charge that drove the marauders into the swamp where they took cover and found themselves in a trap from which there was no chance for escape. A long and obstinate battle ensued, every man fighting on his own plan, as skirmishers, taking advantage of cover in imitation of the Indian mode of warfare. There were several citizens who took part in the fight, which made the forces about equal as to numbers. Five Indians fled to a house for safety; the building was fired and each was shot as he rushed out from his burning refuge. When the battle was over there were twenty-three dead Indians left on the battle-ground, and the balance escaped to the hills, one of whom died from the effects of his wounds. The whites losses in the battle were: Joseph Warfield, a citizen, killed; ——— Hereford, private, Company I, California Volunteers, killed; Daniel Muffly, private, Company I, California Volunteers, wounded; ——— Rehil, private, Company I, California Volunteers, wounded; ——— Travis, private, Company I, California Volunteers, wounded; M. W. Haviland, wounded. One soldier who was wounded cut out the ball and then continued in the fight to its close.

Death of Colonel Charles McDermit.—On the 7th of August, this officer, who was in command of the Department of Nevada, was shot by an ambushed Indian when riding along a trail. He was returning to Camp McDermit, then known as Quin's River Station, from a scout on Quin's River, at the time, and lived but four hours after receiving the fatal wound. His remains were taken to Fort Churchill, where they arrived on the 19th of August and were buried there the next day. A letter from him, written at Quin's River Station on the 1st of August, stated as follows: "We have killed thirty-two Indians since I took the field, and have had one man wounded and one man killed." August 11th the Indian named "Tom," was arrested and shot in Spring Canyon, near Unionville.

he having been recognized as one of the depredators in Paradise Valley. During the month of August, Colonel Bryan made a summer camp near Willow Point, where he remained until October, when the forces under his command withdrew to Dun Glen. September 3d, upon information received from and under guidance of friendly Pah-Utes, a party of hostile Indians, numbering about ten, were surprised in their camp near Table Mountain, about thirty miles southeast of Unionville, and all were killed. Twenty soldiers, under Lieutenant Penwell, several citizens, and the guides, participated in the sanguinary work. The victims had recently participated in the war along the north line of the State, which fact was obtained from the guides, who disclosed the hiding place of the hostiles. The following account of the affair is taken from the *Humboldt Register* which is given to show the spirit of those times, and justification of the act by public opinion: "The Pah-Ute guides led the party upon the camp at daybreak this morning, so cautiously that the entire gang was taken in and ticketed for the happy hunting grounds before they knew what was the matter. Seven bucks bit the dust, and one or two squaws were killed by accident." September 13th, at daybreak, Captain Payne attacked a camp of Indians in Quin's River Valley, on Willow Creek. A running fight ensued that lasted about three hours, resulting in the killing of thirty-one Indians and wounding of one white man. The following extract from the *Owyhee Avalanche*, of Idaho, published by John and Joseph Wasson, in October, besides the historic incident given, is valuable as being a true expression of public sentiment at that time in Nevada: "About the 8th instant a friendly Pah-Ute gave information that the Indians were camped fifteen miles southeast of Unionville, Nevada. Lieutenant Penwell, of Captain Doughty's company, at once proceeded from Dun Glen with a detachment of men and slaughtered them all. The soldiers have adopted the true method of Indian warfare. They neither wait for attacks nor hostile movements by them, but go and hunt them as men would wolves that prey on their stock."

Black Rock Tom.—The above was the name of a chief whose band of Pah-Utes had begun their raids on the 14th of March, 1865, and it was his followers, as well as those living in the mountains to the north and northeast, joined by renegade Shoshones and Bannocks, who had been keeping up hostilities during the summer in Paradise Valley and along the northern frontier. The peaceably disposed Pah-Utes were afraid that the war-

like attitude of this band would antagonize the whole tribe with the whites and bring consequent destruction upon them. Because of this fear, Captain Soo, the chief of the Humboldt River Pah-Utes, determined to aid the soldiers in killing off all the hostile Indians, regardless of their tribal relations. In one of the first days of November, 1865, a party of men with three or four ox-teams, were hauling goods from California to the Humboldt, over the Honey Lake route. They had left Rabbit Hole Station and were approaching Cedar Springs in the evening. One of the teams had gained some distance in advance of the others when it was captured, the driver killed, the contents of the wagon plundered and the residue set on fire by Black Rock Tom and his band. The news was taken to Dun Glen and Lieutenant Penwell was ordered out with twenty-six men in pursuit of the marauders. Captain Soo, who had been the leader in the Williams massacre in 1860, acted as guide, and with the Indian characteristic of treachery and love of blood, now made war on his race. Upon examining the signs about the scene of the tragedy he came to the conclusion that Black Rock Tom was the guilty party, and the command moved north in pursuit. On the 9th of November they found those whom they were in search of intrenched upon a mountain, west of Pah-Ute Meadows, and after an unsuccessful effort to dislodge them, fell back into the valley some seven miles and camped for the night. The next morning they started for Dun Glen, where they arrived on the 11th, without loss either to the Indians or themselves.

On the 13th of November, Lieut. R. A. Osmer, of Company B, Second California Cavalry, with sixty soldiers, four citizens and Captain Soo, with fourteen of his warriors, started from Dun Glen to make another effort to punish the bold outlaw. On reaching the sink of Quin's River, about 100 miles northwest of Dun Glen, the wagons were left in charge of fourteen men, while the others continued the march. At daylight on the morning of the 17th, after having passed through the swampy sink of Quin's River during the night, Captain Soo declared as the summit of some low hills was reached that he could see the smoke of the enemy's camp fires some nine miles away to the northeast. He also insisted that the smoke was from the camp of Black Rock Tom. The march was continued, and when within some five miles of the point designated, the smoke could be seen by all. The hostiles did not observe the approach of the soldiers until only about two miles intervened between the opposing forces,

when Lieutenant Osmer said: "Come on, boys, we can't go around; the best man will get there first," and away went the entire command in a go-as-you-please style for a two mile-charge. The chief, Captain Soo, finding that he was likely to be passed by some of the whites in the charge, reached down and with a knife cut the girth and, throwing the saddle from under him while at full speed, flew like a true son of the desert, on his barebacked horse, over the plains, and was the first to charge in among the enemy, who were making their best efforts to escape. A skirmish battle that extended over several miles of country followed. It was a dashing, gallant affair, that entitled the participants to great credit. One prisoner, a woman, was taken, whom a citizen was about to kill, but was prevented from doing so by a soldier. Five squaws and six Indians only escaped, among whom was Black Rock Tom. David O'Connell was killed, Sergeant Lansdon and another man were wounded. The bodies of fifty-five Pah-Utes were found, which does not account for all the Indians slain, many of whom must have remained hidden on the battle-ground, that extended over an area of possibly three miles square, that contained many gullies and quantities of sage-brush.

After the battle had ended, a corporal, in coming down the side of a mountain, or hill, was hailed by a comrade, and upon going to the place found him trying to stop the blood that was flowing from the wounds of an Indian mother. Beside the woman, who had received an accidental shot, lay an infant possibly six months old, and standing close by with a frozen look of infant horror pictured in its face, stood another child about two years of age. The private said, "Let's take her down to the camp; it's a pity to leave her here to die, and the little fellows to starve." Just then the corporal noticed a citizen passing not far away and said to his comrade, "Call ——— and he will help you; I must hurry down." Directly after reaching the foot of the hill he heard several pistol shots in the direction of where he had left the two men with the wounded woman, and looking up that way saw the soldier coming down alone. "Where is your squaw?" asked the corporal as the private came up. "That was a fine specimen you called to help me," was the reply. "The d——d bushwhacker shot the whole lot of them, babies and all, before I knew what he was up to."

A part of Company B, from Dun Glen, and Company I, from Camp McDermitt, both of California regiments, met at Kane Springs for a

scout under Captain Conrad, in December. Black Rock Tom had gathered in the scattered families of his followers and joined by those of other bands that were still committing depredations, had rendezvoused in another locality on Quin's River.

The snow was lying upon the ground at the time, and the command under Captain Conrad were forced, one night while out, to lead their horses in a circle to keep from freezing. The Indian camp had not been discovered yet, and camp fires were not allowed, as they would reveal to those sought the proximity of their enemies. Eventually the Indians were discovered on or near Fish Creek, and surrounded before daylight. One squaw, a boy, and an old man were captured, the balance, about forty in all, being killed. No whites were injured. Thus ended organized hostilities on the part of any band of the Pah-Ute tribe. Some of the more desperate, however, allied to renegades from the Shoshone and Bannock tribes, continued hostilities along the borders the following year, some of them entering Paradise Valley. Black Rock Tom, who was absent at the time, went down to the sink of the Humboldt, and delivered himself up as a prisoner to the chief Captain Soo, who turned him over to the soldiers and told him that he had better make his escape if he wished to live. An opportunity was given for the attempt to be made, which he availed himself of, when he was shot and killed. The following is from the message of Gov. H. G. Blaisdell to the Senate and Assembly, dated January, 1866: "Lack of time forbids detailing the incidents of my visits among the various tribes; suffice it to say, some of their arguments were unanswerable. They said, through their interpreter, 'The white men cut down our pine trees, their cattle eat our grass, we have no pine nuts, no grass seed, and we are very hungry.' I found them in several instances with nothing to subsist upon but rabbits, mice, grasshoppers, ants, and other insects."

Paradise Valley Trouble in 1867.—In the summer of 1866, Camp Winfield Scott was established at the north end of Paradise Valley, and on the twelfth of December, that year, it was occupied by Company A, United States Cavalry, under Capt. Murry Davis, with Lieut. John Lafferty as second in command. On the twelfth of January, 1867, Lieutenant Lafferty encountered a band of Indians near the head waters of the Little Humboldt, killed several of them, and destroyed their camp. In the fore part of February succeeding, he drove another party from the south fork of

the Little Humboldt into the mountains, who escaped because of the deep snow. The last of February, Captain Davis left Camp Winfield Scott, Lieutenant Lafferty remaining in command, and his energy and ability as an officer were soon put to a severe test. March 13 the Indians ran off the stock belonging to Charles Gagg, who lived about eight miles southerly from the post. The following morning found the Lieutenant, with fourteen men, in pursuit of the marauders, and, notwithstanding a fierce storm and fall of snow, had completely obliterated their tracks, he continued the search. On the ninth day out he encountered the band he was pursuing, killed six of them, destroyed their camp, and captured their arms.

Hon. James A. Banks Killed.—This vigorous action made him a terror to the dusky raiders, and gave a quiet season for putting in crops to the farmers in Paradise Valley; and no further trouble was experienced until on the first of August, when Hon. James A. Banks was killed by them, within a couple of miles of Camp Winfield Scott, while fishing in Cotton Wood Creek. Mr. Banks, who was at the time a resident of Dun Glen, Humboldt County, was in company with Rev. Mr. Temple, of New York City, on a visit to the camp and, joined by Lieutenant Lafferty, were out fishing, as before stated. Mr. Banks strolled up the stream by himself, and the Lieutenant with Mr. Temple returned to camp. The continued absence of his guest caused the Lieutenant to institute a search, fearing that he might have become bewildered and lost his way. The remains of the unfortunate man were found, shot through the breast, the assassin having stripped and mutilated his body; and two days later the Rev. Mr. Temple preached the funeral sermon of his friend, whom they buried in the camp cemetery.

Mr. Banks was a native of Pennsylvania and thirty-nine years of age. He emigrated to California in 1852 from Pennsylvania and became for several terms a member of the Legislature of that State. He came to Nevada in 1863, was a member of the Convention that formed the State Constitution, and was Speaker of the House during the second annual session of her Legislature. He was a true friend, an able man and a good citizen, and the news of his death was received with sadness throughout the State.

The Indians, it was afterward learned that three of them had committed the act, made good their escape, and a detail sent in pursuit of

them soon returned from an unsuccessful scout. Lieutenant Lafferty then took his entire available command and started upon the war path. He reached the south fork of the Owybee, where near its head waters he came upon the enemy, killed four of them, captured four, and, later in the same day, while scouting alone in a canyon, came upon four other Indians, and in a hand to hand conflict killed two of them, captured the others and drove them ahead of him into camp. This was the last of his combats in Nevada, being relieved from command about the first of November by the arrival at Camp Scott of Lieutenant Joseph Karge, with reinforcements.

The Winter of 1867, and Spring of 1868.—On the nineteenth of November, 1867, before Lieutenant Karge had become informed of the general surroundings of the country, the Indians made a raid into the eastern part of the Valley and drove off all the stock except that of Mr. Scott. Lieutenant Karge went in pursuit, but moved so slowly, on account of deep snow and baggage, that nothing was accomplished. The winter of 1867 was very severe, and the snow fell to the depth of several feet in Paradise Valley, and continued upon the ground longer than ever known before. Owing to the severity and length of the winter, many families were forced to subsist upon wheat and barley, ground in a coffee mill. Spring had hardly come before the valley was visited again by Indians, who, becoming emboldened by their success a few months before, repeated the operation, this time driving off all the stock belonging to M. W. Haviland. There were about twenty in the band of depredators, under leadership of the dreaded Big Foot; and young Hunter, a lieutenant who had recently arrived, was ordered to take Sergeant John Kelly, Corporal Thomas Reed and Private Thomas Ward, and pursue the enemy, whip him and bring back the stolen property. In obedience to these orders, the young lieutenant, who had never witnessed an engagement, set out on this perilous enterprise and was joined by a citizen named John Rogers, from whom Big Foot had taken a valuable horse. A few unpleasant words had passed between Lafferty and the commanding officer, because the former had insisted that it was much like murder to order out such a detail in pursuit of Big Foot. Lafferty asked to be sent in place of the young and inexperienced officer, which request was refused; but after the forlorn hope was gone he was permitted to take a small force of select men and follow on. He scoured the foot hills and canyons

in vain search of the young lieutenant, and was about to take to the mountains when a messenger overtook him, with the news of collision between the Indians and those he was in search of, and the consequent imminent peril of his friends, and without a moment's delay started with his command at their utmost speed to the rescue. The five men, after starting in pursuit of the Indians, had gone directly to the mouth of Deep Canyon, where they struck Big Foot's trail, and young Hunter, as rash as he was inexperienced, dashed along the rocky pass, followed by his men. Suddenly they were brought to a halt by a volley from the concealed enemy that unhorsed every man and stretched the brave young leader bleeding upon the rocks, and beside him were the sergeant and private, writhing in the agonies of their death wounds. The corporal and citizen were unharmed, but their clothing was perforated with bullets and their horses were gone. Sheltering themselves behind a rock, they held a consultation to see what should be done in this fearful emergency. It was determined that one of them should try to reach Camp Scott to give the alarm, and Rogers volunteered to make the attempt. He threw off his hat, coat and boots and then made a dash from behind the rock down the canyon, followed by a volley and then by scattering shots, until he was out of sight, miraculously escaping without a wound. He finally reached headquarters with news of the disaster. There was "hurrying to and fro, and gathering in hot haste" at Camp Scott, and soon the entire force was on the gallop-march to Deep Canyon, some eight miles away.

In the meantime, Thomas Reed, the corporal, had been protecting his wounded comrades by firing upon every redskin that showed himself and making sure passport for any of their number of the "happy hunting grounds" who made the attempt to reach them. It was a desperate contest with fearful odds against the single hero; but nerve and courage won the prize, and the band of Indians retired from the canyon without having been able to touch their prey. At length the command arrived from the camp, followed later by Lieutenant Lafferty; both were too late, for Big Foot and his band had made their escape and went unpunished. The Government later rewarded the brave Corporal Reed by presenting him a medal for his gallant conduct.

Soon after this Lieutenant Lafferty was ordered on duty in Arizona, where he distinguished himself in several battles with Cachise's Apaches the most warlike Indians on the continent. In his last engagement,

October 20, 1869, while holding the Apaches in check for the purpose of recovering the bodies of some dead comrades, a portion of his lower jaw was carried away by a bullet, disabling him for life. In the report by Colonel R. F. Bernard of this engagement, he says: "The conduct of Lieutenant Lafferty, Eighth Cavalry, was most gallant and brave. The cavalry arm in Arizona has lost, for a time, a good and brave officer in Lieutenant Lafferty. A government, in extending thanks to their officers, cannot bestow them too freely upon such officers as Lieutenant Lafferty, Eighth Cavalry." Occasional straggling bands would continue to enter the valley at long intervals and steal stock until the close of 1869, since when there has been no further trouble with Indians in Paradise Valley.

The Dry Creek Fight.—The story of the killing of Applegate and Lozier constitutes a thrilling reminiscence of old overland times. Of this sad and exciting event, Mr. R. H. Egleston, a resident of Eureka, relates the following. He, having assisted in their burial, heard the first statements of the survivors and was familiar with the scenes. Four days after the attack on Dry Creek Station he was at Diamond Springs, sixty miles east from that point, on his way from Camp Floyd to Carson, in company with Thomas Smith and Elisha Mallory, a rancher at present living near Genoa. The details of the fight were told to Mr. Egleston by a pony rider, W. L. Ball, more familiarly called "Little Baldy," who, with Silas McCanless, the station keeper, escaped from Dry Creek and made their way to Diamond. They were as follows:

At the time of the fight there were four men at the station—Si McCanless, the station keeper; John Applegate, Ralph M. Lozier and Little Baldy, the pony rider. McCanless, the station keeper, was living with a Shoshone squaw; and it appears that the Indians were dissatisfied with this fact, and wanted the squaw to return to the tribe. Early in the morning of the fight the Indians, numbering about fifteen or twenty, who were camped nearby, came to the station and demanded of McCanless to give up the squaw. Considerable wrangling and high talk was engaged in, but she was not given up, and McCanless having given the Indians a generous supply of rations and in a manner pacified them, they went off evidently satisfied. They returned, however, at about seven o'clock, and creeping up to the station, which was built of cottonwood logs and, being newly constructed, had not been "chinked" with mud, they opened fire through the crevices between the logs, and at the first

volley killed Lozier and severely wounded Applegate, he being shot through the fleshy part of the thigh, the ball ranging up and coming out through the pocket of his pants. Leaving Lozier dead in the station, the three men fled, McCanless's squaw in the meanwhile running between them and the Indians and endeavoring to keep the latter back. Applegate, who was badly wounded and was fast failing from loss of blood, knew that he could not hold out in the race, and halting he asked Baldy for the revolver, and rather than to be overtaken by the red devils, who were close upon them, and dreading the torture they would inflict, placed the pistol to his ear and deliberately blew his brains out. McCanless and Baldy continued to run for their lives. In order to lighten themselves, they fairly stripped to their underclothing, and after a most desperate flight of several miles managed to outstrip the Indians, who gave up the chase. The two men continued on at their utmost speed until they reached the station of Robert's Creek, thirty miles distant from Dry Creek. Here they found a Spanish cook and the pony rider, where they remained until midnight, when the four left for Diamond Springs, thirty miles further on, reaching that point at sunrise the next morning. It was here that Mr. Egleston met them, and he promised Baldy and McCanless that the two men killed by the Indians should be properly buried when he and his party reached Dry Creek. Upon arriving at Dry Creek, nearly a week later, search was made for the bodies. That of Lozier was dragged from the house and horribly mutilated. The coyotes had torn it to pieces. The scattered remains were buried on the spot where Applegate fell. Applegate's body was found and the two were buried together and a monument of stones piled over their grave.

Massacre at Canyon Station.—On the sixth of July, a few weeks after the preceding occurrences, another and more successful attempt was made to capture that station. At this time there were six men at the place: Wm. Riley, known as Deaf Bill, his assistant and four soldiers of Company E, Third California Cavalry, named Tarsey Grimshaw, Michael McNamarra, Anthony Myers and Lewis Pratt. About sunrise Deaf Bill was currying a horse in front of the barn, when he was shot dead by a concealed foe. At the noise of the gun the helper rushed out of the barn, and at the same time one of the soldiers came from the "dug-out," and both were shot as they appeared. The three soldiers still in the "dug-out," or cabin built underground, decided to make a rush for the barn,

which they did, and one of their number was killed on the way, leaving but two of the original six to continue the fight. The two survivors built a breast-work from the sacks of grain, and for an hour beat off their assailants, but the wily foe finally set a stack of hay on fire, close to the barn, and the result of the conflict was no longer in doubt. It was Myers and Pratt who had thus far escaped the fate of their comrades, only to be burned at last unless they rushed forth from behind their defenses to be shot down finally like wolves in a desperate struggle for life. They at once decided to mount horses and make a dash. As one was a favorite fleet-footed animal, they drew lots to see which should ride it. Fortune seemed to favor Lewis Pratt, as he drew the favorite horse. Shaking each other by the hand, they mounted for the desperate ride for life. Out of the road and down the road like the wind they flew, with Pratt in the lead, while from every sagebrush along the route seemed to come the leaden missiles. A hope of life was springing into the hearts of the flying men when Myers suddenly threw up his arms and rolled from the saddle. His horse went a little farther and fell, both of them struggling with their death wounds. The bullets whistled about the receding form of the gallant Pratt like hail as he was passing out of the range of the Indian rifles, until he disappeared down the road toward Willow Station, thus far the only white survivor of the conflict. That day a train of emigrants passed this last named station on its way to California. As it reached a point about one mile west of that place, a dead horse was found lying in the road, and beside it lay stretched the unconscious form of a soldier mortally wounded. It was the last survivor, the gallant Pratt and his noble animal, and the two lay there together, side by side, the dying and the dead, shot through and through. He lived to be carried to Willow Station, where the sad tale of the massacre was told, and then he died. Company K, stationed, as before stated, at Deep Creek Station, went in pursuit of the band who had committed this last depredation, but failed to come up with them, and after a two weeks' scout returned with the report of having killed two Indians in Pleasant Valley.

End of the Gosh-Ute War.—But few events worthy of note transpired on the line of the overland road after those given above. Among these were the hanging of a Shoshone in July by the military authorities at Fort Ruby and the shooting of another—both participants in the outraging of the little twelve-year-old-girl, murdered in 1861 on the trail from Ruby

Valley to Gravelly Ford. In August, Company E, Third California Infantry, under Lieutenant Hosmer, attacked a camp of Indians about twenty miles north of Cherry Creek, in Steptoe Valley, and killed five of them, and in October the Gosh-Utes asked for peace, which was granted them, and they returned to the stations begging for their rations, as usual.

The loss to the Overland Stage Company in Utah and Nevada from this war was one hundred and fifty horses, seven stations burned and sixteen men killed. Nevertheless the stages never failed to make their regular trips, and seldom were behind their schedule time, although beset with all those dangers and calamities.

Henry Butterfield's theory of the cause of the war is that it was instigated by the Mormons. In support of this position Mr. Butterfield, who was conversant with the language of the red men and had for a long time lived in their country, relates that in 1864, while he was sub-Indian Agent, he met by appointment the Gosh-Ute chief, White Horse, at Desert Station. The chief, upon being asked why he had begun the war, disclaimed having had anything to do with it. He said his tribe had been told from time to time by the Mormons that the Gentiles were holding back and appropriating to their own use their Government annuities, and that the only way for them, the Indians, to "get even" would be to begin killing the whites and stealing their property. Under such advice his people had broken the bonds of restraint and, contrary to the desire of himself and other chiefs, taken the warpath. Such is the Indian excuse, however poor it is and little entitled to credence, for having committed their barbarous and brutal acts along the overland road.

Eastern Nevada War Panic in 1875.—In the early part of September, 1875, two Indians of the Gosh-Ute tribe informed A. J. Leathers and James Tollard that they knew the locality of a valuable mine which they would point out for a consideration, to which the two men agreed was fifty dollars for the services, and in the ledge was found all as the Indians had described, except that it proved to be worthless. Because of this last fact the whites refused to pay their guides, who, thinking they had been unjustly dealt with, in revenge killed Tollard, the other white man making his escape to A. C. Cleveland's ranch in Spring Valley, White Pine County. Cleveland immediately took the warpath and captured an Indian whom he took to his ranch, intending to deliver him over to the civil

authorities for trial, but the aborigine in attempting to make his escape came to an untimely end from the effects of a bullet from the revolver of Mr. Cleveland. Another Indian was met with by some of Cleveland's herders, who ordered him to give up his gun, and upon his refusal to do so they killed him. The Gosh-Ute were at the time assembled in considerable numbers in the nut-pine forests of the neighborhood, and were very much alarmed because of the summary killing of the members of their tribe. These circumstances created somewhat of a panic or "scare" through central and eastern Nevada, and the most exaggerated and extremely sensational reports were circulated and published. Volunteer troops were raised at Eureka, Pioche, and other places, equipped and sent to "the front." Gov. L. R. Bradley, believing the danger to be imminent, issued orders to captains of volunteers to seize horses and necessary supplies for the troops, and the "military," under command of Major John H. Dennis, left Eureka September 6 for Spring Valley to rescue Cleveland and those with him supposed to be besieged at his ranch. Governor Bradley also telegraphed to General Schofield as follows:

Elko, Nevada, Sept. 6, 1875.

To Major-General Schofield, San Francisco:

Information most authentic from Pioche, Eureka and Spring Valley, all unite in demands for troops and arms. Am unable to furnish them. Dispatch just at hand signed by all commissioners of Lincoln County, says that 300 Indians in eastern Nevada appear to be on the war-path, and ask for 200 guns and ammunition. Most reliable information from Cherry Creek assures me that I am not misinformed.

L. R. BRADLEY.

Major Dennis and his command made a hasty march to Spring Valley, appearing to the frightened Gosh-Utes an overwhelming army. Either the arrival of so formidable a force, or, as the Indians asserted, they had no intention upon their part to begin war with the whites, they being assembled there for the purpose of gathering pine nuts, and not for hostilities, there was no conflict. The name of the Indian who killed Tollard was To-ba. He was demanded of the tribe, delivered by them to the soldiers, and from them was taken by citizens and hung. Thus ended the last Indian "war" in Nevada, resulting in more ridicule to its instigators than glory to the military participants.

Indian Demand for Satisfaction.—About this time the Walker River Pah-Utes made hostile demonstrations in the vicinity of Ione, then the county seat of Nye County. Several hundred of them entered the village

and demanded a certain sum of money from the whites for indignities offered one of their tribe by a bevy of hilarious sports. The situation beginning to wear a serious look, the prominent citizens contributed to the Indian's demands and they departed without shedding blood.

Two Men Killed in the South.—The same fall a party of whites, among whom were Thos. Shaw, McBride, Broom, William Garhart, with others, started from Ione for Gold Mountain, south of Lida Valley, and at the northern extremity of Death Valley. One night after having arrived at their destination Garhart was shot with an arrow through the wrist, and the remainder of the party escaped unharmed to Silver Peak.

Sarah Winnemucca.—On the eighteenth of May, 1867, Naches, the Pah-Ute chief, came into Carson City with a message from Old Winnemucca to the effect that the latter wanted to make peace with the whites and go upon the Pyramid Lake Reservation to live. Subsequently, through the efforts of Naches and Sarah, a daughter of Old Winnemucca, who had married Lieutenant Bartlett of the regular army, terms were made with the old chief, and he, with a portion of his tribe, were settled upon a reservation beyond the limits of the State. Subsequently the Pah-Utes who had been induced to go to the north, becoming dissatisfied with the Indian Agent, tired of their northern home and longed to return to the scenes of their earlier life. Sarah Winnemucca, who had been educated at San Jose, California, and developing considerable oratorical talent, was ever ready to eloquently advocate the return of her people to Nevada; while, on the other hand, the Indian Agent was most desirous that they should remain where they were. Sarah Winnemucca since that time has delivered several lectures at San Francisco and other places upon the condition of her people and their abuse by Indian agents, and created much sympathy in behalf of her race.

First Lottery in Nevada.—Mr. Joseph F. Triplett, a well-known citizen of eastern Nevada and one of the pioneer residents of Carson Valley, gives the following account of the first "gift enterprise" occurring in the Great Basin, which indicates considerable native shrewdness of the Washoe savage: "In 1857 Captain Jim, chief of the Washoe tribe of Indians, went around among the white settlers in Carson Valley and notified them that upon a certain day his tribe would give a big 'fandango' or dance, and invited all to attend, stating that he would give each white man a buckskin, adding that 'maybe so white man bring one sack, two

sack flour.' As it was the policy of the settlers to conciliate the red man, we nearly all of us attended his fandango, taking along, as the chief suggested, a sack of flour. As each white man dismounted from his horse and laid his sack of flour on the ground, an Indian led off and secured the horse. The whites were allotted seats on the ground, in a circle around the dancers. After a while the dancing ceased, and Captain Jim appeared in the circle, followed by a big Indian laden with buckskins, and with much ceremony presented one buckskin to each of the visitors. Buckskins were worth about eight dollars. The wily savage made a good thing by the first gift enterprise ever gotten up in the sagebrush country, and the whites made fast friends of the tribe."

Young Winnemucca.—This redoubtable chief, who had command of the Pah-Utes in many a battle and foray, died of consumption at Wadsworth on the fifth of November, 1871, leaving a son about twenty years of age, who bore the unromantic name of Mike. On the eighth of December following the death of the chief a successor was elected, bearing the name of George Curry. In 1868 Mr. W. K. Johnson was killed by an Indian in Mason Valley, in Esmeralda County. The savage escaped to the north, but was pursued and captured at Peavine, in Washoe County, taken thence and hanged in Carson Valley, at the place then known as Widow Newman's ranch, about half a mile below Cary's Station. In the year 1866 there was an Indian who frequently came into Aurora, Esmeralda County, who pretended that he was a "medicine man" and practiced his art upon some of his credulous brethren, most of whom died while under treatment by him. The deaths becoming so frequent, the wise men of the tribe came to the conclusion that it was his "bad medicine," and he must die. A delegation of braves thereupon seized the unfortunate doctor at Aurora, on the eleventh of October, and while some of them held him, others beat out his teeth, plucked out his eyes, crushed his skull, and finally cut his throat. In 1874-75, among the characters met with in the towns of western Nevada was a Pah-Ute Indian man, tall and finely proportioned, who dressed in squaw costume. He was not recognized by the people of his race of either sex; the Indian children shunned him; he was an object of ridicule for members of other tribes and of the whites, and moodily and disconsolately wandered around. Tradition said that upon an occasion, many years before, he had shown himself a coward in battle and that the council of his tribe had sentenced him to death therefor; but that

the sentence was afterwards commuted and he was doomed to don the dress of woman as long as he lived. He finally disappeared and it was reported that his dead body was found in a mountain gulch.

Arrest of Naches.—Naches was a man of some importance among the Pah-Utes, was tall and of commanding appearance, and was usually called by the whites a chief, although he appeared to have but little authority. When there was no more call for his scalping knife on "the tented field," his many moons were wasted about the kitchen doors and waste places of the mining town wherever he wandered, presenting but little of the beautiful ideal of a warrior. In January, 1874, it was represented that he was inciting the Indians on the Humboldt to commit some depredation; also that he declined to remain on the reservation at Pyramid Lake, preferring the vagabond life among the interior towns; consequently on the twenty-seventh of that month he was, by order of Captain Wagner, in command of Fort McDermitt, arrested and sent to Fort Alcatraz, in the harbor of San Francisco. There he was treated with much consideration, shown the "sights" and the power of the whites, and sent home rejoicing after a short detention. The newspapers of Nevada represented Naches as a good and peaceable Indian. In June, 1878, he resigned whatever chieftainship he possessed, and Captain Charley, of Wadsworth, reigned in his stead. The fate of this latter chief may be surmised from the following paragraph in the *Carson Appeal* of February 29, 1880: "The Pah-Utes have disposed of the slayer of Captain Charley—an execution without loss to the State."

The Pah-ran-a-gat Indians.—The Pah-ran-a-gat Indians are a branch of the Ute family and derive their tribal appellation from the cultivation of the watermelon, which in their language is called pah-ran-a-gat (pah meaning water, and ran-a-gat melon or vine-growing). At the time the prospectors first entered the country occupied by them they found this band inclined to peace and engaged after their rude manner in tilling the soil. Although they raised a small quantity of wheat and some corn, their principal crop was the squash. A diminutive species of sunflower was also planted for the seeds it yielded, and some watermelons were also to be found in their cultivated patches. Grass seed was also largely used by them as food. To irrigate the land under tillage they had constructed several ditches which were creditable to these primitive engineers. Crystal Spring, which flows an estimated head of 600 inches of water, was the

source of supply for the largest of these ditches, and at its head the canal was eight feet wide on top, six feet deep and several miles in length. To dig this they had procured iron from the abandoned emigrant wagons in Death Valley, which they had patiently cut, shaped and fastened with strong twine upon wooden handles, to be used for picks and spades. As winter approached, crops were carefully gathered and cached for future use, and they were thus enabled not only to live well themselves, but were also prepared to trade agricultural products to their mountain neighbors who depended for a living upon the results of the chase and pine nuts. The Ash-Utes were the more constant dealers with the Pah-ran-a-gats, and supplied the latter with much dried meat, buckskins, etc. The Indians, however, soon traded off to the whites the land they had tilled and adopted the vagabond life common to the race. One or two months after the occurrence of the incidents above related, all of these men, with the exception of Agent Sales, returned to the mines, and with them came many others attracted by reports of mineral wealth. That same year an Indian of the Pah-ran-a-gat tribe named Oh-Kas murdered a white man named George Rogers to get possession of a fine horse which the latter owned. Another Indian informed the whites of the transaction; the murderer was caught, compelled to disclose the place where Rogers' body was secreted and then hung.

Early in the spring of 1866 a camp of Muddy River Indians was made near Quin's Canyon in the Shein-nic-a-rah mountains in the White Pine range. These Indians began to steal and run off stock from Pah-ran-a-gat and other places. Agent Sales being absent, the miners thought to adjust the matter without his assistance, which they did in a summary manner. A party of six white men was organized, and one of the number, named Hoppin, was chosen captain. The services of two friendly Pah-ran-a-gats were enlisted, and one evening, about dark, the party left their camp for the hunt on horseback. Early in the morning, after the second night out, while in Quin's Canyon, they discovered "signs" of the enemy. Leaving their horses in charge of one of the party, named N. H. Carlow, the others carefully reconnoitered until they located the Indian camp. They then divided, two in one squad and three in the other. The two went directly toward the Indians, while the three others had cautiously slipped around and were approaching in the rear of the camp. The Indians, seeing the

two white men approaching, made fierce gesticulations and dared them to fight. The three men in the rear were not seen by them until they had come within twenty yards and delivered a well-directed volley from their rifles. There were twelve Indians in the camp. After the fight eleven of them lay dead, and the remaining one had escaped only to die, for he was mortally wounded.

The number of Indians in Lincoln County in 1873 was estimated by the Indian Agent to be 1,235. Since then they have fallen off rapidly, and probably do not at this time number more than one-half the above figure. They are Pah-Utes with various local tribal names. Though generally peaceful, they occasionally commit depredations. In December, 1874, a party, supposed to belong to Tem-pah, Ute Bill's band of Indians, attacked and killed two white men about seven miles from Hiko. The names of the two men killed were Peter Dawson and Charles Olsen. Another man, named William Hannan, was at the same time shot and wounded in the shoulder, but escaped and told the story of the murder. The settlers of Hiko immediately gathered together, and a scouting party went out after the Indians, with fruitless results. On the sixteenth of December the following appeared in one of the Pioche papers, over the signature of J. S. Hoag, under sheriff; M. Fuller, district judge; J. H. Cassidy and George Goldthwaite: "The Indians have killed eight persons, including one woman and three children, within the last few days in this country, on the Muddy Reservation and near Hiko. We have no arms and no protection. We wish arms and that the Indians be punished."

CHAPTER III.

ORGANIZING THE TERRITORY.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

Nevada's Territorial history began November 12, 1851. On that date a public meeting was held for the purpose of organizing a squatter government. Less than a hundred persons took part in the gathering which was held at "Mormon Station" (now Genoa.) The object of the meeting was to adopt local rules and regulations for the benefit of the settlers then coming into the country. There was but little semblance of law and order at the time, and life and property rights seemed to need additional protection.

But little was done at the preliminary meeting, and it was adjourned to a later date the same month. Subsequently a local form of government was adopted and Carson County, Utah, was organized by the following Act.

An Act defining the boundaries of Carson County, and providing for the organization thereof.

SECTION 1. Be it enacted by the Governor and Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah: That all that portion of the country bounded north by Desert County, east by the parallel of longitude 118°, south by the boundary line of this Territory, and west by California, is hereby included within the limits of Carson County, and until organized is attached to Millard County for election, revenue and judicial purposes.

SEC. 2. The Governor is hereby authorized to appoint a Probate Judge for said county, when he shall deem it expedient, and said Probate Judge, when appointed, shall proceed to organize said county, by dividing the

county into precincts and causing an election to be held according to law, to fill the various county and precinct offices, and locate the county-seat thereof.

W. RICHARDS,
President of the Council.
J. M. GRANT,

Speaker of the House of Representatives.

Approved January 17, 1854.

BRIGHAM YOUNG,
Governor of Utah Territory.

TERRITORY OF UTAH,
SECRETARY'S OFFICE.

SEAL } I, Elijah Sells, Secretary of Utah Territory, do hereby
certify that the above and foregoing is a true copy.
Witness my hand and the Great Seal of the Territory this
22d day of October, 1892.

ELIJAH SELLS,
Secretary of Utah Territory.

This embraced all of Washoe, Douglas, Lyon, Ormsby and Storey counties, the greater part of Esmeralda and Churchill counties, and a portion of Humboldt. The first attempt at representation at Washington was made by electing James W. Crane as a delegate to represent the claims of the settlers to a Territorial Government. Crane having died, John J. Musser was elected his successor November 12, 1859. On June 6, 1859, a mass meeting of delegates from the several districts was held, at which the 14th day of July, 1859, was fixed for holding an election to elect delegates to a constitutional convention. Delegates met at Genoa on the 18th day of the same month, and in a ten days' session adopted a declaration of rights and a Constitution. The Constitution was submitted to the people September 1, 1859 and was adopted, and Isaac Roop elected Governor, with a Legislature and other State officers. Roop was the only officer who attempted to qualify. The Legislature met at Genoa on the 15th day of December, 1859, and adjourned to meet in July, 1860. They never met again.

John Cradlebaugh, one of the United States District Judges for Utah

Territory, arrived at Genoa in the summer of 1859 and impaneled the first grand jury that ever met in what is now the State of Nevada.

Territorial Government.—The Territory of Nevada was organized by an Act of Congress entitled "An Act to organize the Territory of Nevada," approved March 2, 1861. In pursuance of this act, James W. Nye, of New York, was appointed and commissioned Governor of Nevada Territory by President Lincoln, March 22, 1861. Governor Nye arrived in Carson, July 8, 1861, and on the 11th day of that month issued a proclamation declaring the Territorial government organized.

The population, as shown by a census taken by Henry DeGroot, July, 1861, was 16,347. The following officers constituted the Territorial Government: J. W. Nye, Governor; Orion Clemens, Territorial Secretary; Benj. B. Bunker, Attorney-General; John T. Lockhart, Indian Agent; Perry G. Childs, Territorial Auditor; J. H. Kinkead, Treasurer; John W. North, Surveyor-General; Butler Ives, Deputy Surveyor-General; John F. Kidder and Julius E. Garrett, Surveyor-General's Clerks; S. C. Gallagher, Governor's Private Secretary; John Cradlebaugh, Delegate in Congress; George Turner, Chief Justice Supreme Court; Horatio N. Jones, Associate Justice; Gordon N. Mott, Associate Justice, and J. McC. Reardon, Clerk.

The District Courts were organized as follows: First District—Gordon N. Mott, Judge; David M. Hanson, Clerk; Dighton Carson, District Attorney. Second District—George Turner, Judge; Alfred Helm, Clerk; Marcus D. Larrowe, District Attorney. Third District—Horatio N. Jones, Judge; Alfred James, Clerk; E. B. Zabriskie, District Attorney.

The following were appointed Probate Judges: Chauncey Noteware, Douglas County; A. W. Oliver, Humboldt County; William Haydon, Lyon County; E. C. Dixon, Ormsby County; L. W. Ferris, Storey County.

Members of the First Territorial Council were: J. W. Pugle, Ira M. Luther, W. M. Stewart, John W. Grier, Thomas Hannah, A. W. Pray, J. L. Van Bokkelen, Solomon Geller, Isaac Roop. The officers of the Council were: J. C. Van Bokkelen, President; Henry O. Smeathmen, Secretary; W. H. Barstow, Assistant Secretary; Noah T. Carpenter, Sergeant-at-Arms; P. H. Shannon, Messenger, and Henry Lewis, Page.

Members of the Assembly were: William Teall, Samuel Youngs, James McLean, William P. Harrington, Jr., John D. Winters, Wm. L.

Card, R. M. Ford, John H. Mills, Mark H. Bryan, Ephraim Durham, Miles N. Mitchell, Edward C. Ing, James H. Sturtevant, William J. Osborn, John C. Wright. The officers of the Assembly were: Miles N. Mitchell, Speaker; William Martin Gillespie, Clerk; Samuel E. Wetherell, Assistant Clerk; J. B. McCormack, Sergeant-at-Arms; Charles C. Conger, Assistant Sergeant-at-Arms; C. N. Piersen, Messenger, and Robert T. Haslan, Page.

The Territorial Legislature of 1862 passed an act entitled "An Act to frame a Constitution and State Government for the State of Washoe," which was approved December 20, 1862, providing for an election on the first Wednesday in September, 1863, at which election the question of State Government or no State Government was submitted at the same time delegates were voted for as members of the convention. At this election the vote showed a popular demand for Statehood, and elected the following citizens as members of a convention:

John H. Kinkead, George L. Gibson, Warren Wasson, J. Neely Johnson, E. B. Dorsey, C. N. Notewear, J. W. Haines, James W. Small, James Stark, F. K. Bechtel, Samuel Youngs, L. O. Stearns, Henry Connor, W. Epler, A. W. Nightingill, W. R. Harrison, J. H. Ralston, Marcus D. Larowe, F. N. Kennedy, W. B. Hickok, George A. Hudson, Wm. H. Verdin, James B. McClure, Wm. M. Stewart, S. A. Chapin, M. N. Mitchell, J. R. Plunkett, C. M. Brosnan, John A. Collins, N. A. H. Ball, W. G. Albon, J. C. Corey, Levi Hite, J. W. North, E. C. Ing, C. S. Porter, T. B. Shamp, F. A. Ent.

On the 2d day of November, 1863, the members elected to form a convention were called to order by Orion Clemens, Territorial Secretary, and the body was organized by the election of John W. North as President, and Wm. M. Gillespie as Secretary. This convention was in session thirty-two days, and adjourned on the 11th day of December, 1863. On the 19th day of January, 1864, the Constitution framed by this convention was submitted to a vote and at the same time the following ticket was voted for State officers:

For Representative in Congress—John B. Winters of Lyon County.
 For Governor—Miles N. Mitchell of Storey County.
 For Lieutenant-Governor—M. S. Thompson of Humboldt County.
 For Attorney-General—H. C. Worthington of Lander County.
 For Justices of Supreme Court—J. B. Harmon of Storey County; M. D. Larowe of Lander County; R. S. Mesick of Esmeralda County.
 For Clerk of Supreme Court—Alfred Helm of Ormsby County.
 For Secretary of State—Orion Clemons of Ormsby County.
 For State Treasurer—W. B. Hickok of Lyon County.
 For State Controller—Edwin A. Sherman of Esmeralda County.
 For Superintendent of Public Instruction—A. F. White of Ormsby County.
 For State Printer—G. W. Bloor of Storey County.

The Constitution was overwhelmingly defeated, while the officers were elected, but found their honors empty because there were no offices to fill. The question of Statehood was still agitated by aspiring politicians. A session of the Territorial Legislature was held in January and February, 1864, but no provision was made for another convention. On the 21st of March, 1864, the Congress of the United States passed "An Act to enable the people of the Territory of Nevada to form a Constitution and State Government, and for the admission of such State into the Union on an equal footing with the original States."

Under the Congressional Act delegates to a convention were elected, and on the 4th day of July, 1864, met at Carson City, Nevada. The Constitution of 1863 was taken as a basis, and, after a session of twenty-three days, the present Constitution was formulated, differing in but few material features from that of 1863.

The personnel of this convention was as follows:

Nathaniel A. H. Ball, James A. Banks, W. W. Belden, H. B. Brady, Cornelius M. Brosnan, Samuel A. Chapin, John A. Collins, Israel Crawford, J. S. Crosman, Charles E. De Long, E. F. Dunne, Josiah Earl, Thomas Fitch, Lloyd Frizell, Gilman N. Folsom, Geo. L. Gibson, J. W. Haines, Albert T. Hawley, Almon Hovey, George A. Hudson, J. Neely Johnson, William H. Jones, Francis H. Kennedy, J. H. Kinkead, A. J. Lockwood, B. S. Mason, J. G. McClinton, E. A. Morse, H. E. Murdock, George A. Norse, H. G. Parker, Francis M. Proctor, James H. Sturtevant, Francis Tagliabue, Charles W. Tozer, J. H. Warwick, D. Wellington, William Wetherell, R. H. Williams,

Officers—J. Neely Johnson, president; William M. Gillespie, secretary; Andrew Whitford, assistant secretary; Andrew J. Marsh, official reporter; Thomas M. Carson, sergeant-at-arms; William E. Skeene, doorkeeper; George Richard, page.

The Constitution framed by this convention was submitted to the people on the fourth Wednesday in September, 1864, and was approved by a considerable majority of the electors voting. On the 31st day of October following the State was by proclamation declared to be one of the States of the Union. At a general election, held a few days after, the following named citizens were elected national and State officers:

For Presidential Elector.....	S. T. Gage of Storey County
For Presidential Elector.....	A. S. Peck of Esmeralda County
For Presidential Elector.....	A. W. Baldwin of Storey County
For Governor.....	H. G. Blasdel
For Lieutenant-Governor.....	J. S. Crosman
For Member of Congress.....	H. G. Worthington
For Judge of Supreme Court.....	H. O. Beatty
For Judge of Supreme Court.....	C. M. Brosnan
For Judge of Supreme Court.....	J. F. Lewis



L. P. Brusley

For Clerk of Supreme Court.....	Alfred Helm
For Secretary of State.....	C. N. Noteware
For Attorney-General.....	George A. Nourse
For Treasurer.....	E. Rhodes
For Controller.....	A. W. Nightingill
For Surveyor-General.....	S. H. Marlette
For Superintendent of Public Instruction.....	A. F. White
For Adjutant-General.....	John Cradlebaugh

John Church was chosen State Printer and Thomas Wells the Governor's Private Secretary.

An Act of the Legislature of 1861 provided for a Territorial Seal, designed as follows:

Mountains with a stream of water coursing down their sides and falling on the overshot wheel of a quartz mill at the base. A miner leaning on his pick and upholding a United States flag with a motto expressing the two ideas of loyalty to the Union and the wealth to sustain it—*Volens et Potens*.

Several designs were made and submitted for a State Seal, none of which proved acceptable. The Legislature in 1866 passed an act providing for "a Seal of State for the State of Nevada." It is described in the act as follows: "The Great Seal of the State of Nevada," the design of which shall be as follows, to-wit: In the foreground two large mountains, at the base of which, on the right, there shall be located a quartz mill, and on the left a tunnel penetrating the silver leads of the mountain, with a miner running out a carload of ore and a team loaded with ore for the mill. Immediately in the foreground there shall be emblems indicative of the agricultural resources of the State; a plow, a sheaf and a sickle; in the middle ground a train of railroad cars passing a mountain gorge; also a telegraph line extending along the line of the railroad. In the extreme background a range of snow-clad mountains, with the rising sun in the east; thirty-six stars to encircle the whole group in an outer circle, the words "The Great Seal of the State of Nevada," to be engraven, with these words for the motto of the State, "All for Our Country."

LIST OF OFFICERS

*Federal and Territorial, located at Carson City, the Capital of the Territory—
1861-1864.*

Name.	Official Position.
James W. Nye.....	Governor
Orion Clemens.....	Secretary of State
Benjamin Bunker.....	Attorney-General

Berry G. Childs.....	Territorial Auditor
John H. Kinkead.....	Territorial Treasurer
S. C. Gallagher.....	Governor's Private Secretary
John W. North.....	Surveyor-General
Butler Ives.....	Deputy Surveyor-General
John F. Kidder.....	Chief Clerk
Julius E. Garret.....	Assistant Clerk
John Cradlebaugh.....	Delegate to Congress

The Supreme Court.

George E. Turner.....	Chief Justice
Horatio N. Jones.....	Associate Justice
Gordon N. Mott.....	Associate Justice
J. McC. Reardon.....	Clerk

Changes in 1862.

Gordon N. Mott.....	Delegate to Congress
A. F. White.....	Superintendent of Public Instruction
William Sampson.....	Governor's Private Secretary

Changes in 1864.

Theodore D. Edwards.....	Attorney-General
Warren Wasson.....	Marshal
William W. Ross.....	Territorial Auditor
J. T. Lockhart.....	Indian Agent
Alfred Helm.....	Clerk Supreme Court
P. B. Locke.....	Associate Justice
John W. North.....	Associate Justice

TERRITORIAL LEGISLATURE.

FIRST SESSION.

THE COUNCIL—HON. J. L. VAN BOKKELEN, *President.*

Name.	Residence.
Solomon Geller.....	Washoe Valley
John W. Grier.....	Silver City
Thomas Hanna.....	Gold Hill
Ira M. Luther.....	Genoa
A. W. Pray.....	Virginia City
J. W. Pugh.....	Aurora
Isaac Roop.....	Honey Lake
William M. Stewart.....	Carson City
J. L. Van Bokkelen.....	Virginia City

THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES—HON MILES N. MITCHELL, *Speaker.*

Name.	Residence.
Mark H. Bryan.....	Virginia City
W. L. Card.....	Silver City
Ephraim Durham.....	Virginia City
R. M. Ford.....	Dayton
William P. Harrington, Jr.....	Carson City

Edward C. Ing.....	Truckee Meadows
James McLean.....	Genoa
John H. Mills.....	Gold Hill
Miles N. Mitchell.....	Virginia City
William J. Osborn.....	Buckland's
James A. Sturtevant.....	Washoe Valley
William E. Teal.....	Aurora
John D. Winters.....	Carson City
John C. Wright.....	Honey Lake
Samuel Youngs.....	Aurora

SECOND SESSION—1862.

THE COUNCIL—HON JOHN W. PUGH, *President*.

R. M. Ford, Solomon Geller, Gaven D. Hall, Thomas Hanna, John C. Lewis, Ira M. Luther, A. W. Pray, John W. Pugh, Isaac Roop, Henry M. Steele, James H. Sturtevant, M. S. Thompson, J. L. Van Bokkelen.

THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES—HON. JOHN H. MILLS, *Speaker*.

J. M. Ackley, Ed. R. Burke, H. H. Brumfield, J. M. Calder, Wm. H. Claggett, Abram Curry, W. H. Davenport, Robert Fisher, J. G. Howard, J. K. Lovejoy, J. McDonald, Jr., J. D. Meagher, Arthur S. McKeel, John H. Mills, W. S. Mineer, M. N. Mitchell, R. W. Perkins, John S. Ross, A. J. Simmons, A. D. Treadway, C. M. Tuttle, M. S. Thompson, J. Williams, John D. Winters, T. Winters, D. E. Waldron.

THIRD SESSION—1864.

THE COUNCIL—HON. GAVEN D. HALL, *President*.

A. W. Baldwin, P. Chamberlain, J. J. Coddington, A. Curry, R. M. Daggett, H. H. Flagg, T. G. Negus, N. P. Sheldon, James H. Sturtevant.

THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES—HON A. J. SIMMONS, *Speaker*.

T. Barclay, W. H. Brumfield, J. W. Calder, Wm. H. Claggett, B. Curler, J. C. Dean, E. C. Dixon, A. B. Elliott, Robert Fisher, W. M. Gillespie, Hiram Gore, Warren Heaton, Jacob Hess, D. E. Hunter, S. E. Jones, J. McDonald, Jr., John Nelson, E. E. Phillips, I. L. Requa, W. Stewart, A. J. Simmons, R. E. Trask, T. J. Tennant, A. H. Unger.

CHAPTER IV.

THE ADJUSTMENT OF THE BOUNDARIES OF NEVADA.

BY BEULAH HERSHISER, M. A.

THE ORIGIN OF THE BOUNDARY DISPUTES BETWEEN CALIFORNIA AND NEVADA.

The origin of the boundary disputes between the State of California and the western part of Utah Territory, which became Nevada, is to be sought mainly in the character of the country traversed by the common line of California and Nevada.¹ Another cause of contention is to be found in the attitude of the people living in the valleys on the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada Mountains in the vicinity of the California line, whose interests made them desire to be a part of California.

The organic Act of Utah (September 9, 1850) defined the boundary of that Territory as follows: west, California; north, the Territory of Oregon; east, the Rocky Mountains; and south, the 37th parallel.² California was admitted into the Union as a State at the same time that the vast region called Utah was organized into a Territory of the United States.³

The eastern boundary of California, with which this essay is concerned, is defined in the California Constitution as follows: "Commencing at the point of intersection of the 42d degree of north latitude with the 120th degree of longitude west from Greenwich, and running south on the line of said 120th degree of west longitude until it intersects the 39th degree of north latitude; then in a straight line in a southeasterly direction to the Colorado River at a point where it intersects the 35th degree of north latitude."⁴ This line passes through the Sierra Nevada Mountains from the 42d parallel to the 39th and then across the desert.⁴ The mountains are cut in some places by cañons; in others they are heavily wooded.

¹Statutes of Calif. 1850, 24, Art. XII.

²U. S. Statutes at Large, IX, 453.

³Poore, Charters and Constitutions, Part I, 205; Calif. Const. "Boundary," Art. XII; Statutes of Calif. 1850, 24, Art. XII; Calif. Blue Book, 1903, 46, Art. XXI, Sec. 1.

⁴The intersection of the 120th meridian and the 39th parallel falls in Lake Tahoe.

On the desert little vegetation grows save the cactus. During the years immediately following 1850 the parts of the country through which the boundary line ran were only vaguely known. In the report of the Surveyor-General of California for December, 1852, these portions are called "the most dangerous in the State."⁵

The question of the exact position of the eastern boundary line became important as the population increased. When farms and mines were taken up in the neighborhood of the California line, discussions over jurisdiction followed. The regulation and protection of the government became more desirable, and the men of Carson Valley in 1852 hoped that they were under the law of the State of California.¹ The first recorded opinion of the location of the Carson Valley with reference to the eastern boundary is given by Mr. Eddy, California Surveyor-General, in his report for 1852.¹ Mr. Eddy went to Placerville for the express purpose of answering inquiries concerning the position of the boundary line. He wrote: "While here (Placerville) we computed a sufficient number of observations to satisfy ourselves as to our position approximately, and finding that Placerville was about forty-six miles from the angle of the State boundary at the intersection of the 120th meridian and the 39th parallel, and that the lowest estimate of the air-line distance from Placerville to Mormon Station in Carson Valley was sixty miles, I was reluctantly forced to the conclusion that the valley was from twelve to fifteen miles out of the State."²

Carson Valley increased in population and became important, principally because of its situation just where the traveler to the goldfields of California usually rested from the fatigue of crossing the desert before climbing the steep ascent of the Sierra Nevada Mountains.³ The consideration which Carson Valley received from the government of Utah Territory is shown by the fact that when Utah was divided in 1851 into court districts, Provo, a town almost directly south of Salt Lake, was made the meeting place of the district which included all western Utah.⁴

¹Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. App. Doc. 3, 8.

²Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. App. Doc. 3.

³Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. App. Doc. 3, 14.

⁴Carson Valley was very fertile. The first settlers sold their crops to the emigrants. The character of the place is suggested by the name of the first town, Mormon Station (later Genoa). The Mormons could not keep the political control of the settlement because they were too few and too far away from the aid and influence of the church at Salt Lake. For the early growth of the settlement, see Bancroft, *Hist. of the Pacific States*, XX, 66-73; Angel, *Hist. of Nevada*, 29-49.

⁵House Exec. Docs. 32d Cong. 1st Sess. V, Doc. 25, 28. Brigham Young, in his defense to the President of the United States, mentions the division of the Territory, but gives neither dates nor limits of the districts. Utah records were not accessible.

To attend court from Carson Valley would have involved a journey of hundreds of miles, an arrangement obviously not satisfactory. In this plight the citizens of Carson Valley petitioned the California Legislature to extend the jurisdiction of the State over the Valley.⁵

The Select Committee of the California Senate, to which the petition was referred, prepared and presented to the Senate a memorial to Congress with the recommendation that it be adopted. This memorial of March, 1853, urged that Carson Valley should be under the control of California, because the desert was the natural boundary and Utah was too remote.⁶ It further suggested as the eastern boundary of California a line drawn from the intersection of the 42d parallel and the 120th meridian to the intersection of the 35th parallel and the Colorado River.¹ The memorial, which was adopted by the California Senate, but not by the Assembly, is interesting as revealing the ideas and desires of the people of Carson Valley and of California.² It also affected the policy of the government of Utah, arousing it to the organization of Carson County. The Act creating Carson County was passed in 1854, and a colony of Mormons was sent to put it into effect.³

So great was the uncertainty concerning the actual location of the California State line that before Judge Hyde, whose task it was to organize the county, could proceed, he had to clear up the indefiniteness.⁴

In connection with an Act to build a wagon road to the eastern boundary of the State, in 1855, the California Surveyor-General appointed Mr. Goddard to survey "such portion of the State line as shall fall in Carson Valley."⁵ For this work Judge Hyde of Utah furnished the supplies. As soon as Mr. Goddard felt convinced that Carson Valley was in Utah, Judge Hyde, who had accompanied the party from Sacramento, hastened on to Mormon Station to hold court.⁶

⁵Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. 90, 130-131; Bancroft, XX, 74-75.

⁶Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. App. Doc. 46.

¹Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. App. Doc. 46; Bancroft XX, 75. This line would have added to California a vast mountain and desert region. On the map it is marked "A."

²Calif. Assembly Journal, 4th Sess. has no mention of this memorial.

³House Report of Committees, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 1, Doc. 375. Bancroft gives the area of Carson Valley as all of western Utah above the present southern line of Humboldt County, south as far as latitude 38, and east to the 118th meridian. Bancroft, XX, 75. For the Act of the Utah Legislature organizing Carson County and the work of the citizens in establishing county government, see Angel, 37-39.

⁴Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. App. Report of Surveyor-General S. H. Marlette, 92. At the time of the organization of Carson County, the Utah Legislature appointed a commission to cooperate with the authorities of California in establishing the boundary line. The Utah Commissioners were Judge Orson Hyde, Judge Stiles, and Joseph L. Haywood. Through their work a provisional line seems to have been agreed upon. Bancroft XX, 76-77.

⁵Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. App. 92.

⁶Mr. Goddard said the Mormons carried the county election, making themselves the officers. Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. App. 110. See, also, Angel, 38-40.

The citizens of Carson Valley from the beginning, as has been shown, expressed preference for the rule of California; naturally then, when thus made subject to Utah, they turned to California. In November, 1855, a traveler wrote of Carson Valley: "The inhabitants of the valley were nearly all unanimous in their desire to be annexed to California."⁷ November 23, 1855, the citizens of Carson Valley petitioned the California Legislature to become a part of the State.⁸ The Committee on Federal Relations, to which the petition was referred, made a favorable report and presented a resolution asking Congress for the 118th meridian as the eastern boundary of California.⁹ The Representatives and Senators were requested to urge the passage of such a bill in Congress. The result was that the report of the Committee on Territories to the House of Representatives, January 20, 1857, was unfavorable to the annexation of Carson Valley to California, on the ground that California was already too large.¹ The committee felt that if Utah had good government the desire to be annexed to California would cease.

Accordingly the new Governor sent out to Utah in 1857 by the United States was expected to give efficient protection to all parts of the Territory.² But the conditions which arose in Utah led to quite different results. In January, 1857, Carson County was attached to Great Salt Lake County and lost most of its rights of self-government.³ And late the same year the Mormon colony in Carson Valley was recalled to Salt Lake City. The reasons assigned for the withdrawal of the Mormons by Mr. Smith of the Committee on Territories in his report of May 12, 1858, were the friction between the Mormons and Gentiles in Carson Valley and "the increasing difficulties between the Federal Government and the Mormons."⁴ These changes left western Utah free from Mormon domination, but also without settled institutions of any kind.

⁷Wilson Flint in *California Farmer*. Sacramento, November 16, 1855. The same idea of desire for annexation is found often in California papers. *Daily Alta California*, June 20, 1857; Bancroft, XX, 151-152.

⁸Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. 141; Bancroft XX, 78.

⁹For this line see map, line "B." It is two degrees east of the constitutional California line. Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. 387-388; Senate Journal, 34th Cong. 1st Sess. 296; Bancroft XX, 78.

¹House Report of Committee, 34th Cong., 3d Sess. I, 116. This was in 1857, the year in which Utah was in "open rebellion" against the United States. The Governor was Mr. Cumming.

²House Exec. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. X, Doc. 71, 1-120.

³Angel, 42; Bancroft XX, 81.

⁴Calif. Assembly Journal, 7th Sess. App. The story of the troubles in Utah is to be found in House Exec. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. II, Doc. 2; X, Doc. 71; Senate Miscel. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. III, Doc. 240; Bancroft XXIX, ch. 19. Utah was declared by Congress to be in "open rebellion" December, 1857. House Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 112-115. It is alleged that Brigham Young recalled all the faithful to Salt Lake City in anticipation of trouble with the Federal Government. Angel, 42; Bancroft XX, 80.

THE ENDEAVORS OF NEVADA TO SECURE A TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT.

The origin of the boundary dispute between California and Nevada, due to the nature of the country traversed by the line of California and the consequent uncertainty as to jurisdiction, has been briefly stated. The next phase of the controversy centers about the struggle of Carson Valley to obtain recognition as a separate Commonwealth. This was sought in two ways—by the aid of California, and by an agent sent to Congress.

The Governor of California, John B. Weller, sent the memorial of Carson Valley,⁵ asking Congress for a temporary government, to President Buchanan with the following note: "February 2, 1858. The President will see that this subject has received the favorable action of our State Legislature. The gentlemen whose names are attached to this letter are men of high character and have been attending to the subject. I recommend this memorial to your favorable consideration."⁶ The California Legislature passed a resolution⁷ which was presented in the United States Senate March 1, 1851,¹ to the effect that, "in view of the impending difficulties in Utah," a territorial government should be given Carson Valley, "with such boundaries as circumstances may warrant and require."²

During the summer of 1857 numerous meetings were held at Genoa in Carson Valley to debate the subject of a Territorial government.³ Mr. James M. Crane was chosen to present at Washington the needs of the people of western Utah for a more adequate government.⁴ On October 3, 1857, Mr. Crane addressed a meeting of the people of Honey Lake Valley, at which resolutions were adopted endorsing the action of Carson Valley and approving Mr. Crane's election as delegate of the new Territory.⁵ Mr. Crane had no official standing in Congress, since

⁵The catalogue of grievances mentioned. Mormon intrigues with the Indians, including attacks upon the emigrants and hindrance of the mail; the Mormon Church a despotism; lack of loyalty to the United States; and finally western Utah having been for six or seven years without government. The memorial is printed in Angel, 43-45, and summarized in Bancroft XX, 82-83.

⁶House Exec. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 102; Bancroft XX, 83, n. 46.

⁷Statutes of Calif. 1858, 350; Calif. Senate Journal, 9th Sess. 111, 140; Calif. Assembly Journal 9th Sess. 114, 158; Bancroft XX, 83.

¹Senate Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 590.

²Senate Miscell. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. III. Doc. 181.

³*Daily Evening Bulletin*, San Francisco, October 20, 1857; Angel, 42-46; Bancroft XX, 83.

⁴Mr. Crane was appointed as Delegate to Congress by the people of Carson Valley at the mass meeting held in Genoa, August 8, 1857, at which was formulated the memorial asking Congress for Territorial government. Angel, 43-45; Bancroft XX, 83.

⁵*Daily Evening Bulletin*, San Francisco, October 6-20, 1857; Bancroft XX, 83. Honey Lake Valley was on the eastern slope of the Sierras, and wished to belong to the new Territory.

the district in whose interest he went was not organized under the authority of the United States; but he was recognized as representing the people of his section. President Buchanan referred to Mr. Crane as "the delegate of the people of Carson Valley."⁶

The efforts of Mr. Crane, supported by the influence of the California members of Congress, resulted in a very favorable report from the Committee on Territories, together with a bill "to organize a Territorial Government of Nevada."⁷ The report of the Committee on Territories May 13, 1858, epitomized the history of Utah Territory, covering the grievances of Carson Valley against the Mormons by quoting from their memorial.⁸ The Committee suggested as the extent of the new Territory the area between the eastern boundary of California and about the 114th meridian west from Washington.⁹ The bill was lost in the Committee of the Whole, May 13, 1857.¹⁰ The opinion of the House is probably expressed by Mr. Jones of Tennessee, who said: "We certainly do not want any more Territories at this time."¹¹ The failure to secure Federal acknowledgment of their need was a deep disappointment to the people of Carson Valley. They strove to supply the deficiency by a provisional government which declared them free from Utah.

A convention was held in Genoa, Carson Valley, July 18-28, 1859,¹ which made a declaration of independence of Utah,² framed a Territorial Constitution,³ and authorized an election of Territorial officers.⁴ Article X of the proposed Constitution defined the western boundary of the Territory as the summit of the Sierra Nevada Mountains from

⁶House Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 615.

⁷House Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 789, 1221; House Reports, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. III, 375; Bancroft XX, 83, n. 47. The names by which this new government was called in California papers: "Carson Territory," "The Territory of Sierra." *Daily Evening Bulletin*, San Francisco, October 6, 1857, and March 20, 1858; *Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, December 20, 1859. Angel, 46, prints a letter from Mr. Crane to his constituents, February 18, 1858, recounting his efforts for Territorial government.

⁸House Report of Committees, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. III, Doc. 375.

⁹For this line see map, line "D."

¹⁰House Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 789, 1221.

¹¹*Congressional Globe*, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 2122.

¹For a full account of the steps leading up to the convention, its proceedings, and the organization of the provisional government, see Angel, 61-66. The proceedings of the convention were printed in full in the *Territorial Enterprise*, Genoa, July 30, 1859, reproduced in *fac simile* in Angel, 69-72. As to the convention, see *Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, July 27, August 10, 13, 20, September 14, October 7, 14, 1859; Bancroft XX, 87.

²The "Declaration" was printed in the *Territorial Enterprise*, Genoa, July 30, 1859, and is reprinted in Angel, 63-70; *Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, August 13, 1859. It emphasizes the evils of Mormon oppression.

³The Constitution is also reproduced in *fac simile* from the *Territorial Enterprise*, July 30, 1859, in Angel, 70-71. It comprises eleven articles, and is signed by forty-seven members of the convention. It was modeled on the Constitution of California. Bancroft XX, 87.

⁴For the organization of government under the new Constitution, see Angel, 63-66; Bancroft XX, 88-91. The first and only session of the Legislature under the provisional government was held at Genoa, December 16, 1859, but there was no quorum and no business was done.

the 42d to the 35th parallel.⁵ Mr. Crane was again elected to represent the people of western Utah in Congress, but died before the time of starting on his mission.⁶ The sending of a new Governor to the Territory of Utah has been mentioned.⁷ Mr. Cumming had been appointed by President Buchanan, July 11, 1857, and arrived in Salt Lake City, November 19, 1857.⁸ It is sufficient to say that Governor Cumming's energies were fully occupied with the situation in and near Salt Lake City. This was one reason why Carson County received no better government from Governor Cumming. Another was the bitterness of the people toward the Mormons.

Judge Child, sent out from Salt Lake to Carson Valley in the fall of 1859, could do nothing because the people said: "Much as we desire the protection of law, we do not want the laws of Utah."⁹ This determined opposition to Mormonism is well illustrated by the report of the grand jury empaneled for the September term of the United States District Court for the Second Judicial District of Utah Territory to Judge Cradlebaugh: "Hitherto we have presented the anomaly, without a parallel in the United States, of a people living under a constitutional government, with no voice in it, remote from the seat of government, without courts or other tribunals of justice, yet maintaining loyalty to the Constitution, supporting its laws and promoting the prosperity and wealth of the country."¹⁰ The provisional government served to bridge over a period when the citizens of western Utah were without recognized laws and officers to enforce them. That lynch law prevailed was one of the arguments used by the Committee on Territories in favor of the Territorial government, May 13, 1858.¹

The provisional government also directed the efforts to secure Federal recognition, and in 1860 bills to organize the Territory were introduced

⁵"The boundary lines of the Territory of Nevada shall be as follows, to-wit: Commencing on a point on the Sierra Nevada Mountains, where the 42d degree of north latitude touches the summit of said mountains; thence southerly with said summit to the 35th degree of north latitude; thence east of said parallel to the Colorado River; thence up said river to its junction with the Rio Virgin; thence up said Rio Virgin to its junction with the Muddy River; thence due north to the Oregon line; thence west to the place of beginning." Angel, 71. As will be noted, this definition of the western boundary was the one adopted in the organic Act of 1861.

⁶*Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, September 28, 1859; Angel, 65; Bancroft XX, 89.

⁷Chapter I, p. 124.

⁸House Exec. Docs. 35th Cong. 1st Sess. X, Doc. 71, 1-215. This document recounts the troubles between the United States and Utah.

⁹*Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, October 14, 1859. See Bancroft XX, 88-89, 151-152.

¹⁰*Territorial Enterprise*, in *Daily Alta California*, San Francisco, November 4, 1859; Bancroft XX, 152, n. 9. The grand jury's list of grievances; Mormon theocracy and outrages; Gentiles have no political power; it is 700 miles from the Capital of Utah to Carson Valley; the Indian funds are spent at Salt Lake and the Indians are incited to depredations. See, also, the message of Governor Rood to the provisional Legislature, December 15, 1859. Angel, 65-66.

¹House Reports of Committees, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. III, Doc. 375.

into both House and Senate, but they failed.² The existence of this local government came to an end when the people's struggles for a Territorial government were rewarded by the passage of the organic Act of Nevada, March 2, 1861.³

THE WORK OF THE JOINT CALIFORNIA AND UNITED STATES BOUNDARY COMMISSION.

The California boundary of 1850⁴ was in reality so little known that an accurate official survey of the eastern boundary of the State was urged upon the California Legislature by the Surveyors-General in each report from 1855 to 1861.⁵ One reason given for the fixing of the line between California and the United States Territories was that California lost taxes because people residing near the disputed line claimed to live in Utah. Another reason was that the citizens of the boundary region were in confusion over all sorts of legal questions, not knowing whether to appeal to the courts of Utah or of California.⁶

The plan of a joint United States and California Commission to lay at rest authoritatively all doubts concerning the eastern California line was recommended to the California Legislature in the report of the Surveyor-General for January, 1858.⁷ The Legislature took up the suggestion and passed the following resolution: "Whereas, no portion of the boundary line between the State of California and the Territory of Utah has ever been definitely ascertained by actual survey, under the authority of the Government of the United States, and in consequence thereof conflicting claims exist between said State and Territory as to the jurisdiction over lands and their inhabitants situated near the boundary line; therefore, be it resolved by the Assembly, the Senate concurring, that our Senators be instructed and our Representatives in Congress be requested to procure at an early date the passage

²House Journal, 36th Cong. 1st Sess. part 2, 825; Senate Journal, 36th Cong. 1st Sess. 66, 813. After the death of Mr. Crane, the people of Carson Valley elected Mr. John S. Musser to represent them in Congress. Angel, 65, 66; Bancroft XX, 90.

³U. S. Statutes at Large, XII, 210. After the collapse of the provisional government, the authorities of Utah resumed jurisdiction over the Carson County region. Angel, 73-75.

⁴Beginning at the intersection of the 42d parallel and the 120th meridian, south on that meridian to its intersection with the 30th parallel; thence in a southerly direction to the meeting of the Colorado River and the 35th parallel.

⁵Calif. Senate Journal, 4th Sess. to 14th, App. Reports of the Surveyor-General.

⁶Calif. Senate Journal, 9th Sess. App. Report of the Surveyor-General. The officers of Carson County even appropriated money to aid citizens in their resistance to the collection of taxes by the authorities of Plumas County, Calif. Angel, 75; Bancroft XX, 152.

⁷Calif. Senate Journal, 9th Sess. App. Report of the Surveyor-General.

of a bill authorizing the survey of the boundary between the State of California and the Territory of Utah, to be designated by appropriate monuments. The said survey to conform to the boundary line now established by law of Congress between said State and Territory."¹ This resolution was presented in the United States Senate, May 13, 1858, and was referred to the Committee on Territories, which was in turn discharged from further consideration of the same.²

In February, 1859, the California Legislature passed an Act to authorize the government of California in conjunction with the United States "to run and mark the boundary lines between the Territories of the United States and California."³ A similar Act was not passed by Congress and approved by the President till May 26, 1860.⁴ It provided that the President should appoint Commissioners to meet those of California, and for their work Congress appropriated \$55,000.⁵ The United States Commissioners were duly appointed and were in the field by the fall of 1860.⁶ Meantime the California Legislature of 1860 repealed the Act of 1859, and instead of authorizing a commission directed the California Surveyor-General to run the northern portion of the eastern boundary line of the State.⁷ When the United States Commissioners applied to the Governor of California for coworkers from his State, he refused to appoint them, because of this action on the part of the Legislature.⁸

There was no united action because, although the California Legislature had enacted two laws⁹ intended to meet the demand by providing a commission, the action was too late; the work of the United States was suspended April 1, 1861.¹⁰ The Commissioner of the United States

¹Statutes of Calif. 1858, 356-357; Calif. Assembly Journal, 9th Sess. 424. See, also, 114, 158; Bancroft XX, 152.

²Senate Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 555, 590; House Journal, 35th Cong. 1st Sess. 977-978.

³Calif. Assembly Journal, 10th Sess. 671; Statutes of Calif. 1859, 313; Bancroft XX, 152.

⁴*Congressional Globe*, 36th Cong. 1st Sess. App. 475; U. S. Statutes at Large, XII, 22; Bancroft XX, 152.

⁵U. S. Statutes at Large, XII, 110.

⁶Senate Docs. 36th Cong. 2d Sess. I, Doc. 1; Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1860-1861.

⁷Statutes of Calif. 1860, 184-185; Bancroft XX, 152-153.

⁸Statutes of Calif. 1860, 184. The popular reports of the California Legislature indicate an uncertain attitude as to just what should be done about the eastern boundary. March 3, 1860, one Senator suggested asking Congress for the 118th meridian; March 14th another thought that such an addition of territory would be unconstitutional "because proposing a change in the State's boundary line without a vote of the people." *Daily Evening Bulletin*, San Francisco, March 5, 6, 15, 1860; Calif. Assembly Journal, 12th Sess. 98. Meanwhile the Governor of California recommended that the Legislature memorialize Congress to extend the eastern boundary of California to the 118th meridian. Bancroft XX, 153, suggests that probably at this time the California legislators did not know that Congress had already organized the Territory of Nevada.

⁹Statutes of Calif. 1861, 73-74, 587-588; Bancroft XX, 153.

¹⁰Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1861-1862, 490.

was removed May 15, 1861, because the funds had been squandered.¹¹ However, two points of the boundary line had been fixed: that at the intersection of the 35th parallel and the Colorado River, and that at the meeting of the 39th parallel and the 120th meridian.¹ The astronomer said in his report to the United States Surveyor-General, August 30, 1861, that any surveyor could complete the boundary between these two points.²

The report of the Secretary of the Interior for December, 1865, gave a review of the work of the United States Commission, adding that nothing further had been done.³ It is evident that the great Civil War had left neither inclination nor opportunity for the completion by the United States of the survey of the old California line. The significance of the joint United States and California Commission is that enough work was done by the United States to have settled all the perplexities of the location of the eastern boundary line of California.

In 1861, the very year of this project, a new factor entered into the situation, namely, the securing by Nevada of the organic Act.⁴

The organic Act provided that the new Territory should have "the ridge of the Sierra Nevada Mountains" as the western boundary, with the proviso "that so much of the said territory as is within the present limits of California shall not be included until California assents to the same."⁵ Thus the United States for a time was withdrawn from the adjustment of the boundary difficulties between California and Nevada.

THE CONTENTION OVER THE BOUNDARY LINE BETWEEN CALIFORNIA AND NEVADA FROM THE ORGANIC ACT OF NEVADA TO THE AUTHORIZED LINE OF THE UNITED STATES, 1861-1874.

By the organic Act of Nevada the boundary disagreement became a question of two lines—the constitutional line of California being the 120th meridian between the 42d and 39th parallels and southeast from the intersection of the 39th parallel and the 120th meridian to the inter-

¹¹Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1861-1862, 490.

¹The latter angle falls in Lake Tahoe.

²Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1861-1862, 490.

³House Exec. Docs. 37th Cong. 1st Sess. II, Doc. 1; Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1864-1865.

⁴U. S. Statutes at Large XII, 210; also Chapter II, page 125.

⁵Statutes of Nevada, 1864-1865; *Sacramento Daily Union*, April 6, 1861; Angel, 100; Bancroft XX, 151. For the general line of the summit, see map.

section of the Colorado River and the 35th parallel;⁶ and the new line of the organic Act, "the ridge" or water-shed of the Sierra Nevada Mountains.⁷

The issue between the two Commonwealths, involving possession of the eastern slopes of the Sierra, soon began to take shape. November 9, 1861, the first Nevada Legislature passed an Act providing for the election of two Commissioners who, with the Governor, should present to the next California Legislature the provisions of the organic Act. They were to try to get from California the recognition of the summit of the Sierra as the boundary line.¹ The Commissioners appointed to act with Governor Nye were ex-Governor Roop and Mr. R. M. Ford.² Although the Commissioners were given the privileges of the Assembly and addressed the California Legislature, their efforts failed.³ A bill to "cede certain territory of the State of California to the Territory of Nevada" was referred to a Committee of Border Counties, and was lost.⁴ On the part of California no boundary commission was appointed, and since the new line was not conceded, the question was left open.⁵

Meanwhile the citizens of Nevada were taking other measures to protect their Territorial interests. November 28, 1861, the Territorial Legislature paid to John F. Kidder the sum of \$550 for surveying the boundary line from Lake Bigler to Honey Lake.⁶ And the day after the Legislature passed an Act authorizing the Governor to have the boundary surveyed "from Lake Bigler to below Esmeralda;"⁷ but the survey was to be made only in case California failed to cooperate with the Nevada Commission already appointed in establishing the line.⁸ Since the California Legislature refused to unite in a joint commission, the Governor of Nevada appointed Butler Ives and John F. Kidder to

⁶Statutes of Calif. 1850, 24, Art. XII.

⁷U. S. Statutes at Large XII, 210; Bancroft XX, 151.

⁸Statutes of Nevada, 1861, 513-514; Calif. Senate Journal, 13th Sess. 387; Angel, 100-101; Bancroft XX, 153. Angel, 100, is mistaken in saying the Commission was never appointed.

²Statutes of Calif. 1862, 612; Senate Exec. Docs. 37th Cong. 2d Sess. V. Doc. 36. Report of Governor Nye to Congress.

⁴Calif. Assembly Journal, 13th Sess. 191; Senate Journal, 13th Sess. 535, 559, 862; Bancroft XX, 154.

⁵Calif. Assembly Journal, 13th Sess. 599.

⁶Calif. Assembly Journal, 13th Sess. 599. The Statutes of California, 1862, show no law granting Nevada's demand or appointing the members of a joint commission.

⁷Statutes of Nevada, 1861, 132. The line surveyed was doubtless the summit line as prescribed by the organic Act. Angel, 100.

⁸Statutes of Nevada, 1861, 269; Bancroft XX, 153-154.

⁹Statutes of Nevada, 1861, 269.

run the boundary line; and in the summer of 1862 they made the survey as prescribed by law from Lake Bigler south.⁹

Trouble followed in the settled region adjacent to the two lines. Quarrels over jurisdiction came even to the use of force between Roop County, Nevada, and Plumas County, California.¹⁰ In the south, Aurora, a thriving mining camp, was a prize which both California and Nevada claimed.¹¹ The differences were temporarily adjusted by a line agreed upon by Judge Robert Robinson, agent for California, and Territorial Secretary Clemens, Acting Governor of Nevada.¹² These concrete cases aroused the California Legislature to pass an Act "to survey and establish the eastern boundary of the State of California."¹³ The Act provided also that the Governor of Nevada be requested to have his State join in the survey. A debate in the California Senate on this bill showed most of the members in favor of the constitutional line of California. The Senators declared that the water-shed or "ridge" of the Sierra could never be defined, and that no part of California should be relinquished.² In 1865 the Secretary of the Interior gave as a reason for the preservation of the old line that "the Legislature of California * * * has refused to accede to the proposed modifications" (the line of the organic Act of Nevada), assigning as the reason that "the State Constitution is inhibitory in that respect."³ Acting Governor Clemens complied with the request of California, and appointed Mr. Butler Ives as Nevada's commissioner on the boundary survey.⁴

This joint work was completed in the summer of 1863, and on Novem-

⁹Statutes of Nevada, 1862, 114; Bancroft XX, 154; Angel, 100; *Sacramento Daily Union*, April 4, 1863. This line was run southeast from the intersection of the 39th parallel and the 120th meridian and conformed substantially to the present boundary line. Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 14th Sess. App. Judge Robinson's report to the Governor of California.

¹⁰*Sacramento Daily Union*, March 6, 1863; Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 14th Sess. App. Judge Robinson's report to the Governor of California; Bancroft XX, 154; Angel, 100. For the problems of legal jurisdiction, see Statutes of Nevada, 1862, 37-38; 1864, 54.

¹¹*Sacramento Daily Union*, March 6, 1863; Statutes of Nevada, 1864, 93-94; Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 14th Sess. App. For the interesting tangle as to jurisdiction in Aurora, see Angel, 102.

¹²*Sacramento Daily Union*, March 6, 1863; *Territorial Enterprise*, March 17, 1863, in *Sacramento Daily Union*, March 19, 1863. For Acting Governor Clemens' report to the Nevada Legislature, January 14, 1864, see Angel, 101-102. This report contains the more essential details as to the controversy to date. The provisional line followed the survey of Ives and Kidder, 1862, from Lake Tahoe south. Bancroft XX, 154-155.

¹³Statutes of Calif. 1863, 619; Angel, 101; Bancroft XX, 154-155. This means the constitutional line.

²*Sacramento Daily Union*, March 30, 1863.

³Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1864-1865; House Exec. Docs. 38th Cong. 2d Sess. V. Doc. 1. No other mention of this reason was found.

⁴Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 15th Sess. App. 36. This appointment was made by the Governor on his own authority and confirmed by the Legislature later. Angel, 101. John F. Kidder was the representative of California in the survey. Angel, 102; Bancroft XX, 155. The Nevada Legislature of 1864 paid Ives \$3,000 for his services as Boundary Commissioner. Statutes of Nevada, 1864, 139, 308.

ber 20 of that year the Surveyor-General of California reported that the survey extended from the 42d parallel along the 120th meridian to the 39th parallel and south to beyond Aurora, but not to the 35th parallel and the Colorado River.⁵ The survey gave Aurora to Nevada and the larger part of Plumas County to California.⁶ April 4, 1864, the California Legislature adopted the boundary as run by the joint commission of California and Nevada (1863) by an Act "relating to the establishment of the eastern boundary of the State of California,"⁷ and designated it as "the legal boundary between California and Nevada."⁸ On February 7, 1865, the Nevada Legislature gave its approval to the line of the commission of 1863, and provided for completing the survey.⁹ In the report of the Secretary of the Interior for October, 1866, the United States Surveyor-General recommended that Congress give its recognition to the survey marked by California and Nevada, "should the evidence produced be satisfactory to the department that the line has been established according to the law of Congress."¹⁰ This line, however, was never officially recognized by Congress.¹¹

When Nevada became a State of the Union in 1864, the enabling Act and the Constitution gave the western boundary of the State as "the eastern boundary of the State of California."¹ Nevada thus tacitly gave up the line of the organic Act. The line between California and Nevada remained as run in 1863,² and was considered correct till Mr. Major, while surveying the northern boundary of California, found the eastern boundary to vary somewhat from the location by his computations.³ The United States Surveyor-General then urged Congress to establish the exact line dividing California and Nevada.⁴ The appropriation for the survey, \$41,250, was made in a bill "for sundry civil expenses of the government," June 10, 1872.⁵ The work was done by contract with

⁵The Indians were hostile, and an early winter stopped the survey. Angel, 102.

⁶Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 15th Sess. App. 42; Angel, 102.

⁷Calif. Senate and Assembly Journals, 15th Sess. 763; Bancroft XX, 155.

⁸Statutes of Calif. 1864, 506-507.

⁹Statutes of Nevada, 1864-1865, 133-134, 379. In this way Nevada seemed to give up its contention for the summit line of the organic Act. But see the later developments.

¹⁰Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1866-1867, 374.

¹¹Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1871-1872, 54.

¹U. S. Statutes at Large, XIII, 30; Statutes of Nevada, 1864-1865, 35, 60.

²In 1871 the Nevada Legislature sent a memorial to the California Legislature asking to reopen the question, but without success. Statutes of Nevada, 1871, 187-188; Bancroft XX, 156; Angel, 102. The memorial asked California to cede to Nevada the eastern slopes of the Sierras, on the grounds of geographical conditions and the provisions of the organic Act.

³Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1871-1872, 54.

⁴Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1871-1872, 54.

⁵U. S. Statutes at Large, XVII, 359.

Alex. W. von Schmidt, who finished it in October, 1873, and made his report in 1874.⁶ Thus the more serious problems concerning the frontiers of Nevada were finally solved.⁷

THE ADDITIONS OF TERRITORY TO NEVADA.

The organic Act for the Territory of Nevada, March 2, 1861, gave the eastern limit of Nevada as the 39th parallel west from Washington, while the south was bounded by the northern line of New Mexico.⁸ The next year after its Territorial organization Nevada secured by Act of Congress, July 14, 1862, a degree of longitude on the east, making the 38th meridian west from Washington, instead of the 39th, the dividing line between Nevada and Utah.⁹ When this addition of territory was under discussion in Congress,¹⁰ objections were answered by saying: "The proposition is simply to extend the eastern boundary some sixty miles."¹¹ Bancroft says that Congress attempted to compensate for the loss of territory on the west by adding a degree of longitude on the east.¹² The desire for larger area was natural to Nevada, because it was a mining and grazing Commonwealth. Both of these industries required a large region, wide in extent, for their development.¹³

The first Senators from the State of Nevada, under title of a bill "to amend an Act to enable the people of Nevada to form a Constitution and State government and for the admission of such State into the Union on equal footing with the original States."¹⁴ asked that the State be given an additional degree of longitude on the east.² The bill passed the Senate, but failed in the House of Representatives for lack

⁶Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1873-1874, 7; 1874-1875, 13; Reports of the Surveyor-General of Nevada, 1871-1872, 7-8; 1873-1874, 7-8; Bancroft XX, 156-157. The survey retraced the whole boundary line from Lake Tahoe north to the Oregon line and from Lake Tahoe south to the Colorado River. The line as run by Mr. von Schmidt, was 611 miles long. For the effect of the survey on political jurisdiction, see Statutes of Nevada, 1873, 180-181.

⁷"Thus it will be seen that by the munificence of the General Government that within a year the State will be enclosed by an actual surveyed line and monuments, and the troubles heretofore existing, to State and county officials, in dealing with an imaginary line, will be entirely and forever obviated." Report of Surveyor-General of Nevada, 1871-1872, 8.

⁸U. S. Statutes at Large, XII, 210. The southern boundary was the 37th parallel.

⁹U. S. Statutes at Large, XII, 575; Bancroft XX, 154.

¹⁰House Journal, 37th Cong. 2d Sess. 617, 660.

¹¹*Congressional Globe*, 37th Cong. 2d Sess. 230.

¹²Bancroft XXV, 154.

¹³The area of Nevada was 80,000 square miles. *Congressional Globe*, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. part 3, 2370.

¹⁴Senate Journal, 38th Cong. 2d Sess. 379, 1208. The State Constitution, 1864, provided that the State might annex territory acquired after its adoption. Statutes of Nevada, 1864-1865, 60; Bancroft XX, 155.

²This action was in response to a joint resolution of the Nevada Legislature, December 27, 1864, asking for this addition. Statutes of Nevada, 1864-1865, 455; Bancroft XX, 155, n. 22.

of time.³ A bill "to extend the eastern and southern boundaries of Nevada" in the House of Representatives was lost at the next session.⁴

In the Senate, however, Senator Stewart of Nevada presented a bill which made the 37th meridian west from Washington the eastern boundary, and the Colorado River the southern boundary.⁵ It was passed, and became a law May 5, 1866.⁶ The action was vigorously resisted by Mr. Hooper, Delegate from Utah Territory.⁷ The usual argument was employed by its supporters, that the desired tract was a mining district; that Nevada was a mining State; and that the interests of the two sections were therefore identical.⁸ The new boundaries were from the intersection of the 42d parallel and 37th meridian west from Washington, south on said meridian to the Colorado River, thence down the Colorado River to the eastern boundary of California.⁹

The same sort of trouble followed over the eastern boundary as had been experienced over the western. The Surveyor-General of Nevada in his report of August 5, 1867, told of citizens in Lincoln County who refused to pay taxes, declaring they resided in Utah. Questions of jurisdiction were also in confusion. The report of the United States Surveyor-General, November 18, 1867, urges the establishment of the dividing line between Nevada and Utah.¹⁰ The Secretary of the Interior recommended that Congress make the necessary appropriation for the survey of the eastern boundary of Nevada.¹¹ On July 2, 1868, Congress included this survey in the appropriation bill for civil expenses.¹²

Attempts in both Senate and House further to extend the limits of Nevada failed in 1869.¹ In a long speech Mr. Hooper of Utah opposed any further taking of territory from Utah.² The appropriation of July 20, 1868, had been at the rate of twenty-five dollars per mile for the

³Senate Journal, 38th Cong. 2d Sess. 379, 1208; *Congressional Globe*, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. part 2, 1386.

⁴House Journal, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. 13, 1242.

⁵*Congressional Globe*, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. part 2, 1386.

⁶U. S. Statutes at Large, XIV, 43. The Legislature of Nevada accepted the gift by an Act, January 18, 1867. Statutes of Nevada, 1867, 145; Bancroft XX, 156; Angel, 102.

⁷Mr. Hooper called the bill "this dismemberment." *Congressional Globe*, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. part 3, 2370.

⁸*Congressional Globe*, 39th Cong. 1st Sess. part 3, 2370.

⁹U. S. Statutes at Large, XIV, 43. Area of Nevada, 112,000 square miles.

¹⁰Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1867-1868, 342.

¹¹All three reports—U. S. and Nevada Surveyors-General, and Secretary of Interior—are to be found in Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1867-1868, 342.

¹²Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1868-1869, 108-110; U. S. Statutes at Large, XV, 117; Bancroft XX, 156. March 5, 1869, the Legislature of Nevada appropriated \$4,000 to help in this survey. Statutes of Nevada, 1869, 36; Angel, 102; Bancroft XX, 156.

¹Senate Journal, 40th Cong. 3d Sess. 150, 466; House Journal, 40th Cong. 3d Sess. 133, 155, 602.

²*Congressional Globe*, 40th Cong. 3d Sess. part 3, App. 243-247. Mr. Hooper recites the history of the Mormon Church to prove its loyalty to the United States even through persecution.

survey of the eastern line of Nevada. The work required experts, so that the sum appropriated was too small.³

In the civil expense bill of July 15, 1870, Congress made the appropriation \$17,000, at the rate of forty dollars per mile, which "proved adequate," and the work was completed in the winter of 1870-1871.⁴

The last attempt to gain more territory was made by Nevada in 1871 by way of a memorial from the Nevada Legislature to Congress asking for a portion of Idaho lying between the Snake River and the northern boundary of Nevada.⁵ The resolution set forth that the district was interested in mining and that its citizens desired to belong to Nevada. The petition was never acted on, since it was smothered in the Committee on Judiciary to which it was referred.⁶

The northern boundary of Nevada was run by the authority and under the direction of the United States, and was completed in 1874.⁷ It was reported by the United States Surveyor-General at the same time with the survey of the line between California and Nevada. The southern boundary followed the channel of the Colorado River.⁸

Thus, the last line being established, the boundaries of Nevada were finally adjusted.

³Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1870-1871, 37.

⁴Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1870-1871, 37; U. S. Statutes at Large, XVI, 305; Report of the Surveyor-General of Nevada, 1871-1872, 7. The eastern boundary from the 42d parallel to the Colorado River was 401½ miles long.

⁵House Misc. Docs. 42d Cong. 1st Sess. Doc. 32; Statutes of Nevada, 1871, 184; Bancroft XX, 156.

⁶House Journal, 42d Cong. 1st Sess. 138; Angel, 102.

⁷Messages and Docs. Interior Dept. 1874-1875, 13.

⁸Report of Surveyor-General of Nevada, 1873-1874, 8.

CHAPTER V.

EARLY KNOWLEDGE OF NEVADA.

BY HELEN J. STEWART.

Not to the pioneers crossing the plains; not to the Mormon saints looking for an empire of their own to build; not to the seekers for gold, who brought to light the fabulous wealth of the Comstock lode; but to the religious fervor of the Franciscan monks of Spain and Mexico are we indebted for our first knowledge of the country of which Nevada is a part.

In the year 1767 the Spanish government expelled the Jesuits from Mexico and the fathers were driven forth to the wilds of what then was known as the Californias. Following this, in the year 1771, the great unknown, indefinite "California" was divided, the lower portion being given to the Jesuits, and the more northern portions to the Franciscan Fathers for their exploitation.

The Pious Fund, so-called, originated with the grandees of Spain. In their great zeal for the advancement of the Catholic faith in Mexico, many ladies of noble birth and their liege lords, gave up portions of great fortunes that churches and missions might be built wherein the Catholic faith might receive advancement and protection. Little did the King of Spain realize when he expelled the Jesuits and divided honors with the Franciscan monks, giving them the control and conversion of the natives of the Californias, that he was aiding in the building up of a new republic and adding six more stars to the constellation which in future centuries was destined to shine as the mightiest nation of all the world's history, and of which "Our Own Nevada" will ever shine for us as the brightest star. The six particular stars created out of this vast empire so lightly valued by Spain are Nevada, California, New Mexico, Arizona, Utah and Colorado.

The treasure of the pious fund, the zeal of the Jesuits and the genius for exploration of the Franciscan Fathers, finally crystallized, through the

treaty of Guadalupe in 1848, in the cession of the Californias to the United States, and from this date the modern history of Nevada may be dated.

Among the first expeditions of exploration sent out by Father Junipero Serra was one by ship through the Gulf of California and up the Colorado River to the big bend. Here, in what is now Clark County, Nevada, their crumbling forts and abandoned mines are still in evidence. Seeking mines and agricultural lands, they traveled into the surrounding country, and with Mexican peons as helpers they worked the gold-bearing gravel, mined the turquoise hills and opened the silver mines. Two of their padres they sent up the Vegas Wash to the famous valley they had been told of by the Indians, where much Indian corn, sugar cane and wild millet were raised. And here came the first clash with the native Indian tribes when they, becoming jealous of the Mexican peons, rose up en masse and destroyed all but a very few who managed to escape.

From this or some other similar expedition doubtless came the name of Las Vegas, which is the Spanish for The Meadows. It may be said, however, that some contend that this name was first applied to the Vegas Valley by Escalante, a Spanish explorer, many years previous.

Many interesting relics of these early expeditions have been found at the old Vegas ranch and at the mines. Silver coins have been unearthed having a date of 1770. In one of the mines was discovered a rosary of the period of a century and a half ago, and strung on this rosary were coins, identified as from the Island of Luzon, whence the Franciscan Fathers came to California, and brass or copper coins said to have been coined by the Spanish government especially for the pious fund. Attached to the rosary was also a silver figure of the Saviour outstretched upon the cross.

Two of the fathers came to the Las Vegas Rancho and here lived among the Indians long enough to teach them a portion of the Spanish language, which many of the Indians in this locality use today. In the Vegas Wash, about midway between the Colorado River and the Las Vegas Rancho, are two large natural pillars, resembling the ruins of old castles. At this place the padres met the Indians and talked to them of the Great Father, and of the work he had sent them here to do. The Indians were so impressed by this earnest appeal to their higher spiritual nature that, although the padres' stay among the Indians was short, the latter have ever since held the fathers in the highest reverence. Even to this day,

when one of the tribe passes near those old structural pillars, he will toss a pebble to the top of the one where the meeting occurred in commemoration of that important event. This particular pillar, so held sacred, is some distance away from the others, near the middle of the Wash. They call it the home of God, or the home of Sy-nop, the Indian god.

After the Franciscan monks came the trappers and traders. They followed the trails made by the wild animals far out into the Great American Desert, often to the springs and streams of water found in its mountain fastnesses and sheltered valleys. And, as often in the heart of Sahara the dying traveler finds rest and refreshment in the green oasis, so here, in southern Nevada, they found an oasis in the desert, green with verdure and filled with the sounds of streams of living water—Las Vegas, The Meadows, giving life and rest and refreshment to those for whom the scrawny hand of the grim death-angel of the desert was already reaching out.

Among the first of the overland travelers came Fremont, the Path Finder, in 1842. With him were such brave men as Kit Carson and Goedy. When but a few miles out from Las Vegas they met a Mexican boy who told them that a few miles back, at the springs, the Indians had killed his father and mother and some men who were traveling with them. Arriving at the springs, Fremont found that the report was, alas, too true. Goedy begged permission of Fremont to lead a party in pursuit to punish the marauders. This was done, the Indians being overtaken and some of them killed, the horses, which had been stolen, being captured and returned to the boy, who then joined the party and journeyed on with them. The only damage done the whites in this battle was an arrow through Goedy's shirt sleeve. Because of these incidents Fremont would not allow the Indian bands near the camp. Among those who felt the wrath of Fremont's party, was To-Sho, who was shot in the hand. This Indian afterwards became one of the sub-chiefs of the Pah-Ute Indians at the Moapa Indian Reservation and always remembered the white men with fear.

In the year 1849, Captain Hunt took the first wagon train through from Salt Lake to Southern California, there being one hundred wagons in the caravan for which the captain received \$10 each. This is the party which gave to Death Valley its name through the fact that many of them perished there. When they had progressed as far as Las Vegas,

they disagreed as to the best route to take from there on. A portion decided to go by Mountain Springs, Stump Springs and Resting Springs, making their way into the San Bernardino Valley with little loss of life. Another portion of the party traveled by Bird Springs, Mescal Springs, Hallerin Springs and Soda Lake, from whence they descended into the awful solitudes of the valley where ever since death has held its sway. After intense sufferings, many of this branch of the expedition perished and those who survived were gaunt and broken in health by their terrible privations.

In the winter of 1850 the Mormon Church began to send its colonists into southern Utah, southern Nevada and Southern California in great numbers. In the Clara Valley, in southern Utah, they established a thriving colony and afterwards built the town of St. George, where they built a temple. At Las Vegas they began the construction of a fort as protection against the Indians, and also built homes for their families. Those who traveled on to San Bernardino established a thriving colony there in 1851.

Returning from San Bernardino in 1855, a party discovered lead in the old Potosi Mountain, about thirty miles from Las Vegas, where it is still worked for its lead and zinc ores the mine of that name. There they mined the lead ore and brought it down to the Las Vegas rancho where they built and operated the first smelter west of the Missouri River. The fort which was begun in 1850, was completed by the Mormons in 1851 to protect the many parties traveling between Salt Lake and Port Wilmington, near Los Angeles.

A man by the name of Slade was made superintendent of the Potosi mine in 1855, having been sent out by the church authorities to supervise the lead mining. They made an attempt to smelt the ore at the mine, using pitch-pine for fuel, with no result save badly burned hands. They also tried cedar wood for that purpose, which was better, but still not succesful. Not being satisfied with the results, they brought their ore down to the Las Vegas rancho. Dudd Leavitt and Isaac Grundy here built a furnace in a fireplace, using the chimney for making a draft. When the ore became too hot they devised the plan of placing an adobe brick in the furnace to even the temperature. In this crude way they succeeded in making a success of their smelting operations. They moulded their lead in an old iron skillet which gave the bars the appearance of miners'

loaves of bread. In this manner they prepared and sent to Cedar City, Utah, ten thousand pounds of lead which was put in charge of Bishop Smith and by him distributed.

About this time N. V. Jones came with provisions and men to build an addition to the small fort and prepare for the reception of families which were already on the way, in charge of Samuel Thompson, who had been placed in charge of the mission here. These arrived in Las Vegas in the latter part of April, 1856. At this time they believed that Las Vegas was situated in Utah, and they began the cultivation of the soil, using the water from the great springs for irrigation. Nature responded generously to their efforts. They planted apple and peach trees, raised fields of grain and built substantial adobe houses and a strong adobe fort, with walls three feet thick and seven feet high, to protect them against the Indians. This fort occupied about two acres of ground, in which they built a church and a school house, as well as dwellings, and a watch house at each corner. Within the fort they also erected the smelter and a flouring mill, which was run by a big water wheel placed in the stream just outside the fort. Their grain fields and orchards were just outside the fort, but in a position easily commanded, so that they were ready at any time to easily drive away the Indians should they attempt any depredations.

At the same time that these families came to Vegas, another band of colonists settled in the Clara Valley. In 1856 and 1857 the Moapa, or, as it is sometimes called, the Muddy Valley, was settled by a colony which was at a later date driven out by over-taxation.

In the midst of the fulfillment of the ambitious plans of building homes and cultivating the rich lands of the valleys, word came that the United States government was sending troops to Utah under General Johnson. Brigham Young sent out a call for the settlers to come home at once, and so implicitly did they obey the command of their great leader that they went at once, leaving their growing crops nearly ready for the harvest. This was in the summer of 1852. But the result of their labors were still to be seen in peach trees which were bearing fine fruit as late as 1882, and from the mission grapes they brought here was planted a vineyard of three acres, the vines of which are still bearing.

About this time Bishop Anson Call built a stone warehouse at the big bend of the Colorado River, about thirty miles from Las Vegas, which

was named after him "Callville." It was the plan of the Mormon Church to ship goods and immigrants as well up the Colorado River from the Gulf of California, but navigation proved very uncertain. A man named Adams put on a steamer called the Esmeralda, thereby gaining the nickname "Steamboat Adams." He made two or three trips with the steamer, but the rapids, rocks, sandbars and other obstacles to navigation discouraged him and he was finally compelled to abandon the contract which he had made with the church to freight the goods and bring the immigrants to this country by the Colorado River route.

About this time the monthly mail service which had been in use from Independence, Missouri, to Salt Lake City and thence to Southern California by way of Las Vegas, was discontinued, Judge Stoddard being refused the mail at Independence.

For some years the Las Vegas rancho and fort remained "in statu quo" until Albert Knapp, a Mormon, took it up in 1860. Upon his death his brother, William Knapp, came and took charge of affairs at the ranch, but found it too lonely and dangerous to stay alone so far from civilization, so he persuaded Mr. O. D. Gass, a Mr. Salsbury and two men, named respectively Howell and Wilson, to join him. O. D. Gass finally bought out the entire interest of the others in the ranch and was for some years established there. At one time he was a representative in the Second Territorial Legislature of Arizona, 1865, being elected as the representative of Mojave County, Arizona. While there he introduced a bill creating the County of Pah-Ute. This bill passed both houses and the county created thereby included a portion of what is now Mojave County, Arizona, and the southern portion of old Lincoln County, Nevada, covering approximately what is now Clark County, and taking in the fertile Moapa or Muddy Valley, which by this time had a thriving population of some eighteen hundred or two thousand people. These people were interested in growing cereals, tobacco, sugar cane and cotton in considerable quantities, and a cotton gin was erected and used for many years at St. Joe, this fact being mentioned especially to show that the idea of raising cotton and other semi-tropical products in southern Nevada is not a new one, but that some of them were successfully raised half a century ago.

At this same session of the Arizona Legislature the committee on memorials had under consideration House Joint Resolution No. 1, asking

that the boundary line between California, Nevada, Utah, Colorado and Arizona be adjusted. This bill was passed and in the general readjustment a little later, was the means of sending back to Utah the busy settlers in the Moapa, or Muddy Valley. The settlers all supposed that this section was included within the boundaries of Utah, and paid their taxes to the Utah officials. After the final location of the line between the two States they were found to be in Nevada. They were thereupon asked to again pay their taxes, this time to the Lincoln County, Nevada, authorities. This they refused to do, whereupon the sheriff of Lincoln County was sent down to demand the payment of the supposed delinquent taxes. The already overburdened people refused to submit to this demand. Sheriff Kane went back to Pioche, the county seat, but soon returned and posted notices to the effect that if they did not pay their taxes within a given time their property would be sold. They again refused to submit to what they considered a robbery, and, taking their families and household goods returned to Utah. This exodus of the Mormon people from the Muddy Valley occurred February 20, 1871, and through this mismanagement on the part of the county officials, Lincoln County lost the greater part of her agricultural population. This episode may be considered as the beginning of, and to some extent the cause, of the increase in the bonded indebtedness of Lincoln County, which, with accrued interest, amounted to about \$625,000 at the time the refunding act, issuing \$425,000 in new bonds to cover in full the old indebtedness, was passed.

This large and valuable body of agricultural land remained idle for nearly twenty years after the exodus, and to the floating element of the population, attracted to the county by the fabulous wealth of the Raymond & Ely and other Pioche mines, was due the fact that what would have been a most valuable and permanent element in the life and prosperity of this section was, and after the decline of mining would have furnished a constantly increasing assessment roll, was driven out. The mines of the El Dorado Canyon district were at that time also quietly turning out much wealth, so that the interest in agriculture was at a very low ebb.

Later, people through the county became interested in cattle raising, a large area in this section being particularly adapted to grazing. Many of the valleys were found to be covered with a profusion of wild grass, and a man with small means could soon acquire control of the grazing on a large area, and with this start would soon become the owner of

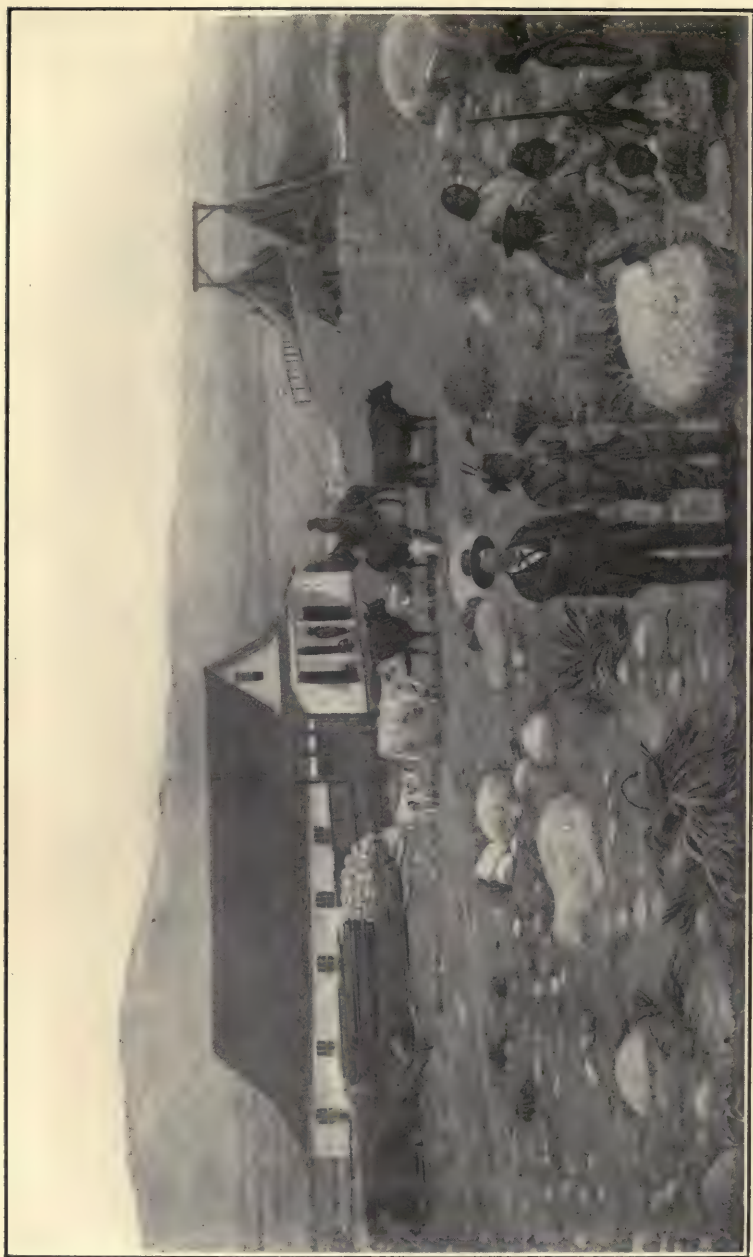
a valuable and profitable herd of cattle. But time works its changes quietly. The State Land Act of March 12, 1885, was still another benefit to the man of small means. It gave him the opportunity of buying a tract of 640 acres at \$1.25 per acre, by paying 25 cents per acre in cash and being allowed twenty-five years in which to pay the balance of \$1.00 per acre with interest at only six per cent. Very many availed themselves of this opportunity of becoming homemakers, agriculture took a new lease of life and orchards and vineyards were planted in many places adjacent to springs and streams. This was very noticeable in Spring and Rose valleys, at Panaca, near Pioche, in the Pahrnagatt Valley south of Pioche, in the Moapa Valley, at Bunkerville in the Valley of the Rio Virgin and at Las Vegas.

Some years previous to this date the first vineyard in the State of Nevada was planted at Las Vegas, the vines having been brought from France and Spain by Daniel Bonelli, who had been there on a mission for the Church of Latter Day Saints. At Las Vegas had also been planted at the same time a peach orchard, and a few apple trees, apricots, pears and plums, all of which grew in a thriving manner and some of which are still in bearing.

Archibald Stewart, a cattle man from near Pioche, in 1882, bought the Las Vegas ranch from O. D. Gass and moved his family there, it being about 155 miles from Pioche. He brought with him from the north a goodly herd of cattle, a few horses and some farming implements, and began in earnest to cultivate the soil. Among other things he put in extensive alfalfa fields. In the mining camp of El Dorado, some fifty or sixty miles south, some 150 or 200 miners were busy in the mines. Here Mr. Stewart found a market for all the hay, vegetables, grain and beef the ranch could produce. Hiring a teamster for the heavier hauling, and taking a light team himself, he began the regular delivery of supplies to the camp and a goodly stream of gold came flowing back in payment for the goods. This goodly sum of money accumulating at the ranch soon attracted the attention of a band of highway robbers, headed by a man named Hank Parish. They soon matured a plan whereby they thought to come easily and quickly into possession of a couple of thousand dollars of this hard-earned cash. They also arranged to have one of their number steal a valuable band of horses to carry them out of the country. Choosing their time they waylaid and attacked Mr. Stewart, killing and

robbing him. They then separated and took flight, some into California, some into Arizona, and one of them into Utah. Since these three States cornered within twenty miles of the Las Vegas rancho, it was easy for them to make their escape and elude pursuit.

After the death of Mr. Stewart, the family still remained at the ranch and Mrs. Stewart's father, Hiram Wiser, came to live with her and care for the ranch. He proved a good farmer and became much interested in horticulture. He soon planted out quite an extensive apple orchard and five acres of vineyard. The apples were budded from stock of a variety already grown at the ranch and were of a superior size and quality. There was, of course, a great demand for the apples as well as for the other fruits. The grapes were also of a fine quality, both for wine and for raisins, of which large quantities were made.



LAKE'S BRIDGE, ORIGINAL SITE OF RENO

CHAPTER VI.

EARLY EMIGRANTS.

BY ROBERT LEWERS.

In April, 1846, an emigrant train left Springfield, Illinois, for the West. The start was prosaic but the ending was most tragic, for of the ninety members only about half were fated to reach their destination alive after most bitter hardship. The party was organized by George and Jacob Donner and James F. Reed, and succeeded in crossing the plains with the usual incidents of overland travel until they came to the fatal Hastings' Cut-off, at the head of Weber Canyon. As the road down the canyon was very rough and rugged, they were advised to head directly for the southern end of the Great Salt Lake by a new road blazed by L. W. Hastings. This took the party over the rough ridges of the Wasatch range and nearly three weeks were lost, to say nothing of the consumption of precious supplies and the unnecessary tiring of themselves and their stock. Somewhere near the end of September they reached the eastern boundary of Nevada, after crossing the region of desolation lying to the north and west of Salt Lake. Their introduction to Nevada was unhappy, for water and feed were scarce, and their poor cattle, crazed by thirst and hunger, wandered off into the wilderness, and much valuable time was lost in searching for them.

Food was getting scarce, and it became necessary to send messengers ahead to bring supplies from California. C. T. Stanton and William McCutchen volunteered to hasten ahead. They succeeded in reaching Sutter's Fort and secured a good supply of food from generous old Captain Sutter. McCutchen was too ill to return, and Stanton hastened back with his pack-train of mules and met the party where Wadsworth now stands on October 19.

In the meantime all had not gone well with the party, for the shadow of a tragedy had fallen upon it and caused the banishment of one of

its principal members. John Snyder, a young man of twenty-two was in charge of one of the teams. At Gravelly Ford it was necessary to double up the teams in order to haul the wagons up the steep inclines. Milton Elliott was driving Reed's team, and he and Snyder quarreled about the oxen. Snyder was by nature rather retiring and diffident until aroused by passion, when he became absolutely ungovernable. Snyder commenced swearing and beat the cattle unmercifully. Reed came up while Snyder was lashing the cattle and remonstrated with him, at the same time offering to loan him his team to help him up the hill. Snyder was in no frame of mind to talk to anyone, and commenced to abuse Reed, and in a very short time both men were angry. Snyder struck Reed on the head with a heavy whipstock, and as the third blow was descending, Mrs. Reed rushed in between the men to stop the quarrel. She received the full force of the blow on the head and shoulders, and the next instant Reed's hunting knife had ended the earthly career of Snyder. Reed had defended himself and his wife when in great danger, but this did not save him from punishment. A train court was convened to consider the case. Snyder had many friends, for he was of a jovial disposition and possessed the knack of making friends easily. His friends were in favor of hanging Reed, but cooler counsels prevailed and a compromise verdict was rendered. Reed was to be banished to the desert, and after obtaining a promise that his wife and children would be cared for, he left. His daughter, Patty, and his friend, Elliott, secretly took him some food and a gun, and with the latter he succeeded in killing enough game to keep him alive until he reached California, where he immediately set about organizing a relief party to rescue the people of his train. At a snail's pace the party came down the Humboldt and turned toward the Salmon Trout river. Leaving the Sink of Humboldt, the train was stretched out across the sagebrush plain. Wolfinger, a German, reputed to be well-to-do, was in the rear wagon in company with Keseberg. The latter came into camp that evening, but Wolfinger had disappeared. The next morning his team was found some six miles back, but all trace of the owner had vanished. Mrs. Wolfinger believed that the Indians had murdered her husband, and Keseberg was accused of murdering him. Some weeks afterward, while on the deathbed of starvation, a man named Rhinehardt confessed that he had something to do with the murder of Wolfinger. The mystery has never been

solved, and probably never will be. After meeting Stanton and receiving the much needed supplies, the party sent two more messengers ahead and delegated William Foster and William Pike for this mission. Pike and Foster camped the first day somewhere near Reno, and while cooking their supper Foster handed Pike an old-fashioned pistol to clean. This was accidentally discharged, mortally wounding Pike. It seemed fated that disaster should follow disaster, and that nothing could be added to complete the misfortunes of the unhappy party in their journey through Nevada; but all their mishaps in this State are as nothing when compared with the awful tragedies in the Sierra Nevada Mountains of the winter of 1846-7. Of the ninety members, but forty-eight reached the Sacramento Valley alive.

In 1847, '48 and '49 travel across Nevada was more or less brisk, and in the latter part of 1849 and 1850 the discovery of gold in California had materially increased the number of emigrant trains. The road was now comparatively well-beaten, and enterprising traders from Salt Lake City and from California reaped large profits by establishing trading stations along the road to supply the hungry travelers with flour, bacon and clothing. These stations were usually very slight structures, not worthy the name of houses, but they served the purpose of the wayside merchants, who usually left their stations on the approach of winter. Some of these traders took up small patches of ground and planted vegetables, which brought good prices from the weary travelers. We may judge that most of the trains followed the Carson Valley route from the fact that most of these trading stations were along that valley. It is probable that the roughness of the trip up the Truckee Canyon deterred travelers from going by the northern route.

In March, 1850, De Mont organized a party in Salt Lake City to go to California, and upon reaching the Carson Valley some of the party, attracted by the beauty of the valley, determined to locate on the eastern slope of the mountains. Among them was H. S. Beatie, who built what was probably the first house in Nevada. This was on the present site of Genoa, then called Mormon Station. Beatie and his partner went to California to purchase supplies, which he sold on his return to the overland travelers. The Carson Valley traders reaped rich profits from the trade of 1850 and returned to Salt Lake to spend the winter. Beatie sold his house to Moore and it was then transferred by the latter to

John Reese, a member of the mercantile firm of J. & E. Reese, of Salt Lake City. In 1851 Reese sent out a wagon-train loaded with supplies for the overland trade and under the guidance of his nephew, Stephen A. Kinsey, he selected the same place as Beatie had chosen for the settlement of 1851, which was destined to be the first permanent settlement in Nevada. He had stopped for a while at a place on the lower Carson River called Ragtown, probably from the numerous samples of cast-off clothing left by the emigrants when they put on their best togs for their triumphant entry into California. This point did not seem favorable, and Reese moved up the river into one of the most fertile valleys in the West.

When the Mormons came to Utah in 1847 they organized, without the sanction of any recognized government, the State of Deseret, embracing what we now know as Utah, Nevada, Arizona, most of California and parts of Idaho and Oregon. After the Mexican War Congress defined the boundaries of Utah as extending to the Sierra Nevada mountains. No steps were taken by the Utah authorities to establish a government for the traders and settlers in the western part of that territory, so the mere handful of people interested met on the 12th of November, 1851, and organized a settlers' government, which resembled in most respects a township organization, while in others it partook of the nature of a county government. The head of this organization was called a Justice of the Peace and he was authorized to call four citizens to sit on the bench with him and act as Associate Justices. The executive was styled a Sheriff. A Surveyor was appointed and regulations concerning land claims and timber reserves adopted. At a later meeting it was provided that an appeal could be made from the Justice court to a jury of twelve citizens, from whose decision there was no appeal. E. L. Barnard was elected Justice of the Peace and William Byrnes Sheriff. Up to 1853 seven land-claims were recorded in Carson Valley, viz., those of John Reese, E. L. Barnard, S. A. Kinsey, James C. Fain, J. Brown, Wm. Byrnes and the Scott brothers.

The pioneer court had but little business to transact for outsiders, but eventually furnished material for some other Court. Barnard, the presiding Judge, absconded with the proceeds of the sale of a large band of cattle belonging to Reese & Company, and broke up the firm; Haskill, a member of the Executive Council, invited Wm. Byrnes, the Sheriff, out

to shoot at a mark, and when Byrnes had emptied his pistol the high and mighty counselor selected the High Sheriff as his especial target and filled him with lead. Byrnes was left for dead, but the doughty Texas ranger was not destined to die in that way. A miners' court intimated to Haskill that other climes were more congenial to his health, and he obediently crossed the range to California. Byrnes recovered and soon evinced a fondness for making trips to California. On his return from one of these trips he remarked that he was satisfied.

In 1851 Joseph P. Barnard, Frank Barnard, George Follensbee, A. J. Rollins, Frank Hall and Warren L. Hall came from California to Carson Valley to hunt for gold, but not finding it in paying quantities they took up a ranch on what is now the site of Carson City. In 1852 Dr. B. L. King settled at the mouth of what is now called King's Canyon, in Eagle Valley, and near him, in Rose Canyon, Jacob Rose made his home. During this year Israel Mott founded Mottsville, four miles south of Mormon Station, and a man named Clark built a cabin in Washoe Valley. This cabin was soon deserted by Clark, and the year following it became the temporary home of a young man who had come across the plains on his way to California. His mother had died on the trip and a young brother and a sister had been left in his charge. It is related that one day while the older brother was absent an Indian came to the cabin and asked for something to eat. Food was scarce and the children did not like to give any away; whereupon the Indian indicated in pantomime that he would cut the little girl's curls off. The children fled into the house and the Indian followed. The little boy in terror seized a rifle and fired at the intruder, who fell across the doorstep dead. The older brother lost no time in taking the two children to a place of safety, and fearing the vengeance of the Washoes, quickly made his way to California. On the Truckee Meadows a Mormon named Jameson had established a trading station, but the exact location of this place seems to be unknown.

In March, 1852, the Utah Legislature divided the western part of their territory into counties and called these Weber, Desert, Tooele, Juab, Millard, Iron and Washington. Of these, but two, Millard and Juab, including the Carson Valley settlements, had any inhabitants.

A story is told of a foot-sore and hungry immigrant who learned of the existence of a potato-patch on the Carson river below Dayton. He left camp with his only remaining piece of money, a quarter, to buy a

supply of new potatoes. Approaching the owner of the garden, he inquired the price and was laconically informed, "Twenty-five cents." "I'll take a bushel." "The price is twenty-five cents a pound, my friend." "I'll take a pound."

In 1850 two immigrants named Robinson and Cole discovered gold in the creek that empties into the Carson river at the mouth of Gold Canyon, on the site of the present town of Dayton. The claim was not rich and the miners hurried on to California. Jos. Barnard, Frank and Warren Hall, and two other men, came from California in 1851 to prospect for gold in Nevada, but not finding it in sufficient quantity built a cabin on the site of Carson City. Frank Hall, who is still living and at present residing in Carson, one day saw an eagle flying near the cabin and being a good shot very soon brought the eagle down, and its wings soon adorned the front of the cabin. This circumstance gave the station the name of Eagle Station and the name was also applied to the valley.

Washoe valley was settled in 1852 and a cabin erected by a man named Clark, who did not remain very long, as he was afraid of the Washoe Indians. His cabin was probably near the southern end of Washoe Lake.

Dr. B. L. King settled at the mouth of the canyon that bears his name in 1852, and Jacob Rose built a house near him in Rose Canyon. Jacob Rose was interested in a land claim in Washoe valley and built a house in the extreme southwestern corner of that valley. He was also interested in bringing Chinamen from California to work on a ditch taken out of the Carson river two miles above Dayton and intended to turn water into Gold Canyon for mining purposes; and he was honored by having his name applied to the highest mountain peaks in the Washoe region. During the same year, Israel Mott, founder of Mottsville, came to Carson valley and settled four miles south of Mormon Station. Mrs. Mott was probably the first woman settler in Nevada. Among the first settlers in Carson was James Fennimore, or Finney, better known as "Old Virginia," who gave a name to the greatest mining camp in the world.

During 1852 Reese & Company were the principal traders in Carson valley, but they had a rival in Ben Holliday, who was afterward the famous overland stage man. By 1853 most of the available and desirable land was taken up and the river valleys presented a scene of activity. The Utah Legislature had divided western Utah into the counties of Weber, Deseret, Tooele, Juab, Millard, Iron and Washington, and the first three

embraced all of the Northern Nevada as far south as Pyramid Lake. Carson valley was in Juab and Millard. Spafford Hall had established a trading station at Gold Canyon on the site now occupied by Douglass & Company buildings in Dayton, and the place was known as Hall's Station. Providence has been liberal with Dayton in the matter of names, for it has been known successively as Gold Canyon, Hall's Station, McMarlin's Station, Chinatown, Mineral Rapids, Nevada City and Dayton. Dayton has also the distinction of being the first place in Nevada to have a marriage, a divorce and a dance. The last named event was the proclamation to the world that society was fully organized in western Utah. The dance was held on New Year's Eve, 1853-4, in the room above Hall's store. All the women in western Utah, young and old, were present. There were nine all told, and there were only one hundred and thirty men to escort them; and an observing writer has recorded the fact that for once at least the men had a monopoly of the wall-flower industry. The heavy fantastic toe was tripped until daylight, and we use the word "heavy" advisedly, as heavy mining shoes were the only kind in evidence in those days. Even the stolid Piutes caught the spirit of festivity on this occasion, for while the white population were busy dancing the old year out and the new one in, the Indians stole all the horses tied around the building, drove them five miles to the Chalk hills and held a barbecue of roast horsemeat. About two miles below Dayton, at James Ellis's ranch, was born James B. Ellis, the first white child in Western Utah, May 1, 1854.

In January, 1854, the Utah Legislature reorganized the counties and created Carson County, embracing nearly all western Nevada. At an election held September 20, 1854, James C. Fain was elected Sheriff; Richard D. Sides, Treasurer; H. M. Hodges and James A. Williams, Constables; Charles D. Daggett, Prosecuting Attorney; Nicholas Ambrosia ("Dutch Nick") and Henry Van Sickle, Justices of the Peace; Henry D. Sears, William P. Allen and James McMarlin, Selectmen. George Stiles, United States Judge of the Third Judicial District; Joseph L. Haywood, United States Marshal, and Probate Judge Orson Hyde came to western Utah to establish a stable government and to settle with commissioners from California the boundary line on the west. No satisfactory settlement was made at that time and the uncertainty caused by

the indefinite line afterward produced serious trouble in Honey Lake Valley.

The citizens of Honey Lake Valley did not know for many years whether they were citizens of California or Nevada. Finally they decided that they were in Roop County, Nevada, and organized as a county, electing W. H. Nalleight Sheriff. Plumas County, in California, claimed jurisdiction and sent its Sheriff to Honey Lake to serve a warrant, and by such action brought up the legal status of the residents of Honey Lake Valley. He was resisted and was compelled to call in a company of militia to aid in the service of the legal paper. The residents of the valley gathered about twenty-six fighting men and fortified themselves in a log-house on the outskirts of Susanville and waited the coming of the troops. The company from Quincy marched in, ninety strong, and took possession of a log-house within gunshot of the one held by the Honey Lakers. The militia sent out a detail to drag in a log for defensive purposes and the citizens fired, wounding one of the men quite seriously. For a couple of days there was considerable desultory firing and several men on both sides were wounded. With true Western zeal the Honey Lakers extracted some fun out of the occurrence by raising their hats carefully poised on sticks just over the ridge-pole of their log-house to attract the fire of the enemy. Several volleys were fired, but one of the jokers raised his hat a little too far and the militia saw the stick and ceased firing. A compromise was finally made and the militia accomplished their end. Roop County moved east and the Honey Lake passed into the Golden State.

At another time, the citizens of Aurora, being doubtful as to which State they owed allegiance, cast their votes for county and State officers in one polling place supposed to be in Nevada, and then marched down the street and cast their votes in California, and by this means obtained representation in both Legislatures. And, still more strange to relate, the assemblymen elected by the vote of Aurora were both successful in obtaining similar offices, one being elected Speaker pro tem. of the California Assembly and the other to a like position in the Nevada Legislature.

THE MORMON COLONIZATION

No history of Nevada would be complete without at least a short review of Mormon history. In 1847, after a most eventful career in

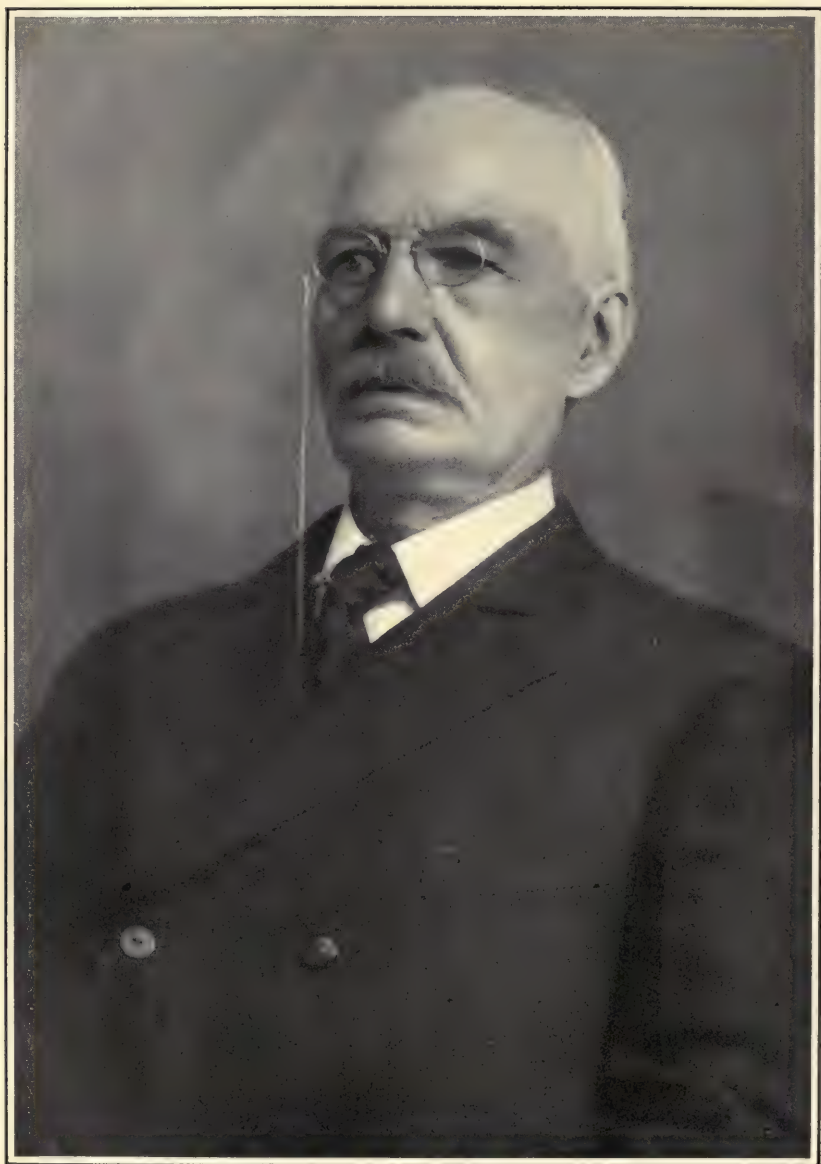
Illinois and Missouri, the Mormons sent their first expedition to select a new home in the West, far away from hostile neighbors and reckless mobs, where they could pursue their way in peace. The magnificent Salt Lake valley was chosen and, as heretofore stated, they claimed all the land included in the Great Basin and beyond to the Pacific Ocean. The first organized territorial government was established in 1849, but its real governmental powers covered only the immediate vicinity of the Great Salt Lake Valley. This government was not authorized by any enabling act of Congress, nor did the Mormons really care whether it would ever be recognized, asking simply to be left alone. As they were so far away from the authority of the United States, they could do about as they pleased. Brigham Young was elected Governor and Heber C. Kimball chosen Chief Justice. Recognizing, however, that it would be better to have the sanction of Congress, the Mormons sent a representative to ask admission of Deseret as a full-fledged State, but this request was coolly received, and it was not until September, 1850, that the territory of Utah, not Deseret, was given recognition. Brigham Young was appointed Governor and held the office until the coming of Governor Alfred Cummings in 1857. The Gentile officials, appointed by Presidents Fillmore and Pierce, found their lots cast in very unpleasant places in Utah and most of them found their way East before their terms expired.

From the beginning to the end of Governor Young's administration trouble with the United States authorities had been growing more and more acute, until there was actual defiance of authority. Troops were ordered West, with General Harney in command, and the old veteran, when told of the resistance he might expect, replied: "The government has ordered me West, and I will camp in the Great Salt Lake Valley or in hell." However, General Harney was needed in Kansas, and General Albert Sidney Johnston was placed in command of the Utah troops. The Mormons destroyed the supply-wagons and Johnston had to send to New Mexico for other supplies. In due time he arrived in Salt Lake and compelled obedience to United States authority.

While the troops were on their way across the plains, the leaders had called in all the adherents of the church to resist what was called unlawful invasion of sovereign territory. Cummings and Johnston finally induced the Mormons to accept legal government, and Johnston withdrew the troops from the town in order that their presence might not

anger the citizens, crossed the river Jordan and built a fort, in order that the troops might be near when wanted.

This brief outline brings us to the reason for introducing it, the better understanding of certain events in our history. The early settlements in western Nevada were made by a very cosmopolitan class of people, but most of the settlers were doubtless Mormons and, as such, kept in close touch with the Utah brethren. Among these faithful, Orson Hyde came to Washoe in 1854 and remained until 1856, being interested in dispensing justice and in running a sawmill. On his return to Salt Lake he leased the mill at Franktown to Jacob Rose and Richard Sides. In 1857 all the Mormons in the outlying settlements were recalled to Salt Lake to resist the invasion of Johnston's army, and in a few weeks all property had to be disposed of at ruinous figures to the non-Mormon settlers. Among the property thus changing hands was Orson Hyde's sawmill at Franktown. Sides retained possession of it under what he claimed was a valid purchase, but Hyde refused to recognize its transfer without the payment of ten thousand dollars. Finally in 1862, after many vain efforts to get a settlement, Hyde pronounced a curse upon the people of Washoe and Carson, and especially upon the head of Richard Sides, calling for fire, flood, famine and dire disaster to fall upon their unhappy lives unless they paid the ten thousand dollars, and as much more for interest. And it is a curious instance of the accidental fulfilment of a portion of the curse, that in 1880, a flood, caused by the breaking of a mountain dam, did wash out of existence the very site of the old mill, the town below it, and covered the ranch that once belonged to Sides with such quantities of sand that it was rendered practically worthless. Even more, for a couple of years later, the breaking of another mountain dam destroyed what little there remained of Franktown's neighbor, Ophir. Still searching for strange manifestations, we may state that the flood which visited Franktown wreaked its greatest fury upon the only remaining sign of Mormonism, bore the old Mormon church farther than any other building and left its ruins on the shores of Washoe Lake.



R. K. Coleord

CHAPTER VII.

LIFE IN THE TERRITORY.

BY EX-GOVERNOR R. K. COLCORD.

As a boy of 17 in California I began chasing gold excitements in many parts of that State. When the big rush to Fraser River started in 1858 I made my way North, but met so many discouraged men returning that I turned back. In the spring of 1859 in company with Ab. Black, Bill Stevens and George Smart, I crossed the Sierra Nevada Mountains by the old Emigrant trail from Columbia, Tuolumne County, in search of more gold at Monoville or Mono Diggins, as it was then called.

It is difficult to give a very good idea of the location of Mono Diggings for the reason that no well known objects were within reach on which to base a description. Now, however, the town of Bodie, sixteen miles north, and Mono Lake, four miles east, are not only well known but rather famous in a way. Mark Twain's "Roughing It" (a book which everybody has read with pleasure) gives a good and true description of many places and incidents which occurred during his stay there. For instance, he tells us that the waters of that lake will take the hair off a dog, which I am quite willing to believe, though the dog must stay in it some time. Really, though, it is quite as strong as a whiskey cocktail in a country hotel. The last time I took a swim in that lake, a few years ago, I took an unintentional drink of some of it through the nose and every time I think of it now it gives me an inclination to sneeze. I am of the opinion it might be a good investment to establish a bottling works there and put that stuff on the market as a catarrh cure.

Seriously, though, Mono Lake has not received the attention it deserves from the few magazine men who have written it up after camping there a day or two. It is situated in a little valley or basin at the base of, and on the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada range of mountains, and held in place by low, detached hills of volcanic ash, lava and obsidian. It is about fifty miles in circumference, one mile above sea level, with a num-

ber of streams flowing into it but with no outlet. It can discount the English Channel in getting up a chop of a sea. A few years ago Mr. James Ney, who kept a station on the lake, together with three companions, all expert boatmen and swimmers, while crossing the lake in a sailboat were caught in a squall and were all drowned. On another occasion the little steam tug used for towing lumber encountered a tornado and was driven so far inland that she has not come back yet.

The waters of the lake are not inhabited by anything that lives or breathes. On its surface, however, there are millions of insects which may best be described as winged worms. Their origin is unknown, but they are about the same color and just as useful as a rusty nail. These worms, flies, or bugs, as they might be classified, settle on the surface of the water, die, and are blown ashore and piled upon the beach in windrows for miles around. They are of an oily nature and must be very nutritious, as thousands of ducks swarm there every season and become hog-fat in a very short time. Those of us who have had experience do not hunt this game. Occasionally a stranger, or tenderfoot drops down there and fills his bag, but when he gets home and the cook starts the fire on him (the duck, not the tenderfoot) trouble begins. After these birds have feasted on that kind of food for a couple of weeks, the aroma arising from them while being roasted is not that of a camomile bed. I have tried them so I know.

The waters of the lake are so strongly alkaline that they are very buoyant. If I were to attempt to give a chemical analysis you would say "lie," which would be partly true though incorrectly spelled. The water preserves wood in such a way that many railroad ties were rafted across the lake and allowed to remain in the water a month or two, and are still in use, though the road was built in 1882.

It is a delightful place to swim providing one has no abrasions on the body, and keeps his mouth shut while in and takes a bath on coming out. It is often twenty below zero there, but ice never forms on the lake.

The reader may have difficulty in connecting the above with the story I started out on, but that is his stunt, not mine, and does not worry me. Now that I have attempted to do justice to the "Little Dead Sea" in the high desert I will go back to my tale.

About seventy men had preceded us and I doubt if any one knew or cared whether we were in California, Utah or Nevada. So far as we

were aware there were no other inhabitants within a hundred miles in any direction. All had crossed the mountains from Sonora, Columbia, and vicinity. Two or three among the crowd I had known slightly in California; Sol. Carter, who was running a pack train over the old Sonora trail, Ex-Senator W. W. Williams, now a wealthy stock man of Churchill County, and Teddy Brodigan, father of our present Secretary of State. I found Mr. Brodigan a genial, jolly Irishman of the old school and retained his friendship for more than forty years. Another, Frank Shaw, who was known as a gentleman gambler in Columbia, had the only sizeable tent where he was dealing monte, taking bets in gold dust, as there was but little coin in camp. Later, Shaw became a wealthy cattle man and for a number of years was County Commissioner of Inyo County, Cal. He was an excellent citizen and a thoroughly honorable man.

At that time no one knew where the boundary line was which separated Nevada Territory from California. I found little encouragement to prospect for gold in the district as there was scarcely water enough for rockers after September, though a few men made money sluicing earlier in the season. Nearly the entire outfit left the country before the storms commenced and returned to the western slope, crossing the Big Meadows, near where the town of Bridgeport now stands.

The following summer the mines at Aurora were discovered by J. M. Vorey, James M. Braly and a man named Hicks. Mt. Corey, near the town of Hawthorne, and Mt. Braly, south of Aurora, were named for the two former pioneers. These men made the first mining locations in that district. The first location was made on the high outcrop at the base of Mt. Braly and was named the Montauk, since known as the Old Esmeralda. The first man to discover gold in the Bodie District was W. S. Body, for whom the town was named, though the spelling was changed. This man Body, if my memory serves me rightly, was a camp fellow of Brodigans at Mono during my stay there. Body worked some placer ground at the base of Silver Hill and late in the fall of '59 located the first quartz claim in that famous district which is twelve miles south of Aurora. In the early spring of the following year he was caught in a Bodie blizzard in Cottonwood Canyon, lost his bearings and perished in the snow. His remains were found a few months later, taken to camp and given a Christian burial by the miners who, by that time, were quite numerous in the camp.

My next venture in these regions, after taking in Washoe City, Galena, Carson and Virginia City, was Aurora. This town enjoyed its greatest boom in the early spring and summer of 1863. Men swarmed there from all quarters by stage, fast freight, horseback and on foot. My first night's slumber was in a corral, and the next few nights I hit the straw in a quartz mill. It was a wide open town and everybody was happy with the possible exception of those who were sticklers for a more generous supply of law and order. One of the two newspapers published there claimed a population of 10,000, but about half that number, would, in my judgment be nearer the mark. Last Chance Hill was the bonanza, and the Real Del Monte and the Wide West were the big producers, both yielding enormously rich ore, though 100 feet in depth was the limit of milling ore. Nothing of value at greater depth has since been found in that hill, though the main shaft is down nearly 900 feet. This is not true of other localities in that district as the Humboldt, Middle Hill and Silver Hill have all been good producers at considerable depth. The limit of quartz mills was reached that year, fifteen or sixteen in all, with approximately about 200 stamps. The average recovery of bullion was about 80 per cent. and no tailings were saved. Big fortunes went down the canyon into Walker River. It would have been impossible then, nor has it been possible at any time since, to estimate, even approximately, the amount of bullion the camp has produced. The big yield lasted only about two years, and in my opinion \$10,000,000 would be the maximum, yet others equally familiar with the district, have placed it much higher.

The town that year became notorious as a refuge for the rough element. Two crowds of toughs located there, one from San Francisco, and the other from Sacramento, and they did not mix in anything approaching friendship. The good people of the town paid little or no attention to their killing and maiming among themselves, but when they committed a foul murder upon the person of a good citizen, W. R. Johnson, a Vigilance Committee was immediately organized with Captain Palmer as its chief. Then it was that the vigilantes got busy and under his leadership they worked so quickly and quietly that the entire gang found themselves locked up together before they knew what had happened. The place was surrounded by a guard of a hundred armed and determined men and there was no chance for escape.

The primary cause of the necessity for lynching these men was the

killing of one of their gang by a young fellow named Johnny Rogers, who died a few months ago at Reno. Rogers was in the employ of Johnson, who owned a ranch at Smith's Valley, when three hoboes on their way to Aurora, while passing through Wellington Station, took a saddle horse belonging to Johnson. As soon as the discovery was made, Johnson told Rogers to saddle the best horse, take a Colt's Navy and capture the stolen horse if he had to kill all of the three men. Rogers struck out at a pony rider's gait and came up to them near Sweetwater Station. He ordered them to halt, and they replied with bullets. Brave little Rogers limbered up his battery without delay and the two who were riding, immediately dismounted. One of them, Jimmy Sayres, is there yet. The others broke for the willows, and Johnny returned with the stolen horse without a scratch. Sayres was an active member of the San Francisco gun men and was greatly missed, and though they appeared to hold no grudge against Rogers, they notified Johnson that it would not be healthy for him to show up in Aurora. He did not heed their warning and made several trips to town selling produce. He, however, went once too often, and late that fall his body was found one morning lying in the street.

For the murder of Johnson the Vigilance Committee arrested about a dozen of the worst characters, gave all a fair trial, which resulted in the conviction and hanging of Daly, Buckley, Masterson, McDonald and one other whose name I have forgotten. Irish Tom Carberry escaped the hemp by one vote. He was reported killed a few years later in a gun fight at Austin.

Immediately following the hanging, and disbanding of the Committee the town became as quiet and uninteresting as the face of a professional mourner. In 1886 I was engaged in the erection of a quartz mill, now known as the Syndicate Mill, on the road from Bodie to Aurora, and among the laborers I discovered Tom Carberry, "Irish Tom." He had never ventured into town and the story of his experiences while in the hands of the vigilantes was most amusing. He said that when the gang was led out of the pen, one at a time, the presumption was that they were to hang singly. He was one of the first taken out, but when they put him back he concluded it was all off and he would hang with the others. This, together with the sight of a gang of carpenters putting up a gallows frame was the last straw. Their courage gave way and Johnny Daly asked Three Fingered Jack McDonald, "Jack, do you know any prayer?

If so, turn it loose before it's too late." Tom said, in explaining his own feelings that his first sensation was a dizziness in the knees, then his stomach felt as though a whole family was moving out. His under jaw sagged and the lump in his throat was the size of a billiard ball.

The organizing of this Vigilance Committee in Aurora was Captain Palmer's second experience in that line. I was a witness of his work in getting together a search party on the night of July 4, 1857, when one of his chief lieutenants, Bill Carder, captured the murderer of John Leary, city marshal of the town of Columbia. After due trial they hung him to the flume which crossed the road on the divide between Columbia and Gold Springs.

Some years later this same Bill Carder was killed by Mose Brockman at Aurora. I may explain that the killing of Bill Carder was a necessity. The bravest fighters of that day feared the man who could push his hat off the back of his head, draw, and put a bullet through it before it reached the ground. Brockman had been repeatedly warned that he must face this man or be killed at sight. He decided to take no chances and, watching Carder's movements, saw him enter the saloon in the Novacovich building, then secreted himself in an unused doorway. When Carder appeared, Brockman gave him both barrels of buckshot, which resulted in the placing of a tombstone in the Aurora Cemetery bearing the name of Bill Carder. This affair occurred long after the other fighting gangs had left the country and had no connection with them.

The conditions at Aurora were practically the same as at all other mining camps. A few men became rich quickly and were ruined later through speculation in stocks and dissipation. Alec. Gamble, who had been a college president in Maine, was one of the original owners of the Wild West Mine, and during the first stock boom sold his holdings for \$275,000, and bought a bunch of Real Del Monte at a low figure. This stock within a few months sold up to \$500 a share and Gamble became a rich man. A few years later he was wearing an unlaundered shirt and living at a two-bit restaurant in San Francisco.

Another instance of a change of character and clothes as well as fortune was that of Pat. Reddy. He was the terror of the town in 1863, and became one of the most brilliant and successful lawyers of the Coast. James Starke, a noted actor of that day, together with J. W. Tucker, a Montgomery Street jeweler, owned a ten-stamp mill on the ground where

the Del Monte Station now stands. A forty-stamp mill was erected that summer of 1863 for the Real Del Monte Company, just below the Starke and Tucker Mill under contract with the Miner's Foundry, owned by Howland, Angell and King, for \$250,000. All freight was transported by team from Sacramento at 10 cents a pound. I put in five months on that job as millwright and one of my fellow workmen was Alec. Tannahill, father of our present State Senator from Storey County.

It has been the custom for all old-timers at Aurora to claim acquaintance with Mark Twain. Unfortunately for me I did not know him at all except to nod in passing. Many claim to have been partners with him in mining claims, others that they had loaned him money, etc. I was loaded with wild cat stocks and much more likely to want to borrow than to lend and when he lived at Aurora he did not look like a promising subject to tackle for a loan, though it was there that he believed himself a "millionaire for ten days," therefore I missed coming in contact with him.

I was well acquainted with Bob Howland, who was a nephew of Territorial Governor Nye, a chum of Mark Twain's and a royal good fellow. Bob was city marshal at a time when it required nerve to hold down the job. Politics ran high that year of the war as it was a case of union or secession. Not knowing whether we were in California or Nevada we held one of the most unique elections ever held in the country. Polls were opened in two places and all hands voted twice the same day; the California ticket at one precinct and for the territorial candidates at the other. Something over 2,300 votes were cast at each.

Among other amusements that year we were treated to a real display of arms on the field of honor. It was no French affair, on the contrary it was a genuine pistol duel for blood. Two of our most prominent citizens violated the laws of the land, or would have done so were it not for the fact that it was neutral ground in the absence of a boundary line, where neither sheriff could prove jurisdiction. The principals of this affair were Dr. Eichelroth, and the editor of the *Times*, whose name I do not recall. The Doctor was of medium height and weighed close to 220 pounds, while the editor was a six-footer with the build of a telegraph pole. "Doc" made his reputation as marksman by clipping a piece out of the shin of that live wire, and the honor of each was appeased. Captain Teal, our sheriff, was on hand, but did not interfere.

Ex-Judge Jim Hardy, who was impeached for treasonable utterances

while District Judge of Calaveras County, Cal., was quite an important personage in the town. Also Judge Quint, a noted attorney of California. Pauling & Kendall was a law firm of note. Kendall was elected to Congress after Nevada became a State.

The first telegraph line to reach Aurora was in June, 1863. The town was strongly Union in sentiment, though some of the leading men were rank Secessionists, among whom being Col. L. B. Hopkins, Superintendent of the Real Del Monte; Harry Newton, a prominent mining man; Milt. Elstner, a mill superintendent; R. B. Sanchez, of the banking house of Howard & Sanchez, and others of lesser prominence. Mrs. Sanchez was the leading spirit in all good works, moral, social, educational and religious—a most charming lady. She was the daughter of the famous lawyer of San Francisco, A. P. Crittenden, who was shot to death at the ferry landing by Laura D. Fair.

To the best of my recollection, John Neidy was the only man who located at Aurora in 1860 and lived there continuously until his death—about forty years. John was a California pioneer, a natural optimist, genial, jolly, generous and companionable. Horace Marden was another early settler there, but left about 1892. He was a member of the Legislature in 1889. He is still living and actively engaged in the logging business in the Siskiyou Mountains. He looks and appears like a man of 60, but he is over 80. Doubtless there are others living who were witnesses of these strenuous scenes and who could render a more vivid account of the lively doings, though I cannot now call to mind one, except Mr. Marden, with whom I had an acquaintance there in the early days.

In 1890, while campaigning throughout the State, it was my privilege to renew my acquaintance with Capt. J. A. Palmer, mentioned above as chief of the Vigilance Committee, who presided at our meeting held at Carlin, Elko County. His introductory remarks in presenting me to the audience, were quite characteristic of the man, though rather shy on polish. Here is his speech:

“Friends and neighbors: Something like thirty-five years ago I met a green hayseed of a boy over in Tuolumne County who had just landed on the Coast. He looked as though he wanted to go home. Now, after all these years he shows up here, six feet high, with broad shoulders and a big head. It’s up to you to judge if there’s anything in it. Ladies and





James Morris

gentlemen, I take pleasure in introducing your candidate, Mr. R. K. Colcord, of Esmeralda County."

Within less than ten years from the first discovery of gold at Aurora, practically all active mining and milling operations ceased, and more than half of the buildings in the town were vacant. Since that time at least three attempts have been made to bring it to the front again, involving the expenditure of more than a million dollars with very slight returns. The first of these was made by a corporation with a capital of \$5,000,000, and a board of directors consisting of H. M. Yerington, N. K. Masten, R. M. Graves, Daniel Cook, and A. J. Ralston, all men of wealth, not one of whom is now living. This company installed heavy machinery, and started to sink a thousand foot shaft on Last Chance Hill. The flow of water became so great that their seventeen-inch Cornish pumps could not cope with it, and the enterprise had to be abandoned before reaching the 900-foot level.

This ended all operations for a few years, causing the practical abandonment of the place a second time. The next outfit to take hold was an English company, promoted by A. E. Ann, and under the management of W. G. Tiffany, a society man of New York, London and Paris. This company spent about \$400,000 and shipped about \$120,000 in bullion. The town then took another vacation for a few years, causing such a thinning of the population that the Post Office was abandoned. Later a company of Nevada and California men spent something over \$100,000, recovering very little in the way of returns and finally selling out their interests to a power company at a profit.

I trust and sincerely hope that this is not the final ending of the dear old town, for I hold the kindest feelings toward the place and the people whom I have known there, living and dead.

This account may appear somewhat overdrawn to those who are not familiar with frontier life. To these I will say that, to the best of my knowledge and belief, it is substantially correct. Necessarily allowances must be made for lapse of memory.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE LAWLESS ELEMENT.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

Incidental with every newly settled country are the men who defy the law and who pose as "man eaters" and "gun fighters." Nevada was not without this most undesirable element and, for a time, they held a reign of terror over the community. In the grand scramble for wealth in this new region the robbing of the Wells-Fargo stages became a recognized industry of that section. The long distances between stations opened a most inviting field for the enterprise and daring of highwaymen. And if a stage was held up it was generally for the bullion it was carrying. The passengers were seldom molested. The stage drivers didn't consider the fighting of robbers any part of their duty. And when masked men stepped out from behind a boulder in the desert, or a clump of sagebrush at a sharp turn of the road and called out "hands up," as they covered the driver with their shotguns, the hands went up and the subsequent sharp command to "throw down the box" was readily complied with. These preliminaries being settled, the stage drove on, leaving the road agents to demolish the box and divide the plunder. The Wells-Fargo Company finally had to accompany their stages, when carrying bullion with "messengers" who were armed to the teeth and paid a liberal stipend to battle with the enemy.

These men liked fighting and generally gave a good account of themselves when they came to close quarters with the bandits of the desert. Hume was the most feared of all the Wells-Fargo men. He never lost a fight with the road agents and many of them fell before his unerring aim. He was alert and courageous and his superb gun-play won him the admiration even of the men whose lives he was after.

A few of the early Nevada road agents were of the depraved and vicious class, but the majority of them were good citizens until accident

steered them on a wrong course. They were good neighbors, pleasant acquaintances, and associated on an equal footing with the leading men of their respective communities until the prison door closed suddenly on them and interrupted the friendly intercourse. Jack Davis, the most notorious of them all, might have been mistaken for a studious professor or a clergyman of remarkable placidity and meekness; and the judges, lawyers and bankers of the Comstock, when sitting down to a stiff game of poker, welcomed no one more warmly to a seat with them than they did him.

With but two or three exceptions, all the old Nevada highwaymen have been engaged in reputable occupations—ranching, mining, teaming, or whatever it might be. But want of success or dislike for hard labor rendered the treasure-laden stages seductive objects of contemplation to them, as undoubtedly they were to thousands of others who remained innocent, solely through lack of nerve, not from any saving grace.

The general community hated the Wells-Fargo Company because of its extortions and only laughed when its stages were robbed. For a highwayman to request an express company or any other corporation to surrender a portion of its winnings would appear, in their judgment, like a mere wrangle among robbers over the division of a common spoil, in whose acquisition the only difference is that the corporate robber has the advantage of operating under the law. From the time the stages began carrying their immense loads of bullion and bringing large shipments of coin in return, stage robbery became one of the most lively and profitable industries in Nevada. The week that went by without one or more coaches being held up produced a feeling of dull times generally, and was sure to be followed by a depression in the tenderloin district. But the energetic road agents seldom let the community settle into a gloom of that kind. From the Placerville, Henness, Dutch Flat, Overland, Esmeralda, or some other route, news of a robbery could be depended upon nearly every day. Most of the depredations, however, were committed near the large towns, to which the highwaymen would return and mingle with the crowd before the plundered stage arrived, or before the news of the occurrence was brought back, if it were a departing coach.

There was little or no indiscriminate waylaying. The robbers would ascertain what particular stage offered a fat prize and then go for it.

They had spies hanging about the express offices, confederates in the service of the stage companies, and employed various other means to obtain this information. A stable-boy has been seen to swing his lantern after the departure of the stage, and within five miles that coach would be stopped and robbed. Poor Baldy Green, one of the old-time drivers, was held up so often that he was finally discharged, either from a superstitious belief in his bad luck or a suspicion of his fidelity.

For a number of years there were few arrests and no convictions. There was never any doubt about the identity of the bolder operators, but the difficulty was to obtain proof of their guilt. The trial of Jack Harris, Al Waterman, Mose Haines, Pitcher and Love, in 1865, for the robbery of a stage near Silver City, was the first notable arraignment of our knights of the road. The result was not very satisfactory to the authorities. Harris, the leader, was acquitted; Haines escaped by turning State's evidence; Waterman was sentenced to fifteen years in the penitentiary, and the others to shorter terms.

Meantime the stages were robbed as regularly as ever. It was evident that more skillful men were devoting themselves to the duty. In 1866 two stages, both crowded with passengers, were stopped together at the top of the Geiger grade by seven highwaymen and the express boxes and the passengers' pockets rifled alike. The robbers extemporized a fete champetre for the despoiled, generously regaling them with delicacies and champagne discovered in the boot of one of the coaches. Rugs were spread for the ladies and the affair was conducted throughout in the elegant and courteous style of old-time highwaymen. The duration of the entertainment and the free and easy way in which the robbers mingled with their guests, left little doubt in the mind of many of the passengers as to the identity of the highwaymen, though they were masked.

Jack Davis had long been suspected of directing the principal operations on the road. No conclusive evidence could be found against him, however. To all appearances he was a substantial and prosperous millman. Together with Cockerill, Squires and some others, he had taken a lease on a quartz mill near Flowery, in Six-Mile Canyon, about three miles from Virginia City, and seemed to be running it profitably. No one could discover from what source he obtained paying-rock, nevertheless the mill kept turning out a steady stream of bullion. The fact was, as it afterwards came out, there never was any paying rock. The mill had

been hired simply to facilitate the remelting and marketing of the bullion secured by systematic stage robbery.

Davis and some of his gang were arrested for the Geiger grade stage robbery; but no one could swear positively to their identity and they were discharged.

The building of the Central Pacific and the Virginia & Truckee Railroad was a severe blow to these industrious millmen; it threatened their business with ruin. Thereafter all the treasure was carried by train, with the exception of unimportant shipments to and from outlying districts. It was a discouraging outlook for an established industry. But the genius and daring of Davis rose to the occasion. He planned and executed the first train robbery on record.

On the morning of November 1, 1870, news was flashed throughout the civilized world that the Overland Express train that had left San Francisco the previous morning, carrying gold to the miners at Virginia City, had been "held up" and robbed near Verdi, a station about ten miles west of Reno, and that over \$40,000 had been taken from the Wells-Fargo strong box by masked men heavily armed. This being the first train robbery in the world, it almost took the public breath away, and for a while caused great excitement and much newspaper comment on two continents.

Every enemy of law and order was vociferous in the praise of the boldness and nerve of the perpetrators of the robbery, and Nevada acquired the dubious credit of being the first in the Union that could produce a set of outlaws daring enough to stop and rob an express train.

Immediately large rewards were offered by the authorities of Washoe County, by the State of Nevada, by the then Central Pacific Railroad and by the Wells-Fargo Express Company, for the apprehension of the robbers, these rewards aggregating \$30,000.

Among other prominent leaders of this class were "Farmer" Peel, Sam Brown and Printiss. For a time, on the Comstock, it was a common saying that there was a "man for breakfast" every morning.

Of all the desperadoes that ever scourged the Comstock, Sam Brown excepted, no one ever attained the distinction of Farmer Peel. He came to Virginia from Salt Lake, with a record of five murders. Within a year or two he had added as many more to his score, and his comparative youth and vigor promised an abundant continuance of the harvest.

Farmer Peel was a singular character. With his blonde beard and pleasant features, his appearance was decidedly prepossessing. When sober, he was as mild and agreeable a gentleman as one could wish to meet; but when in liquor he was a demon. But, drunk or sober, his instinct was to kill. Not that he was quarrelsome, but he bore the invidious title of "Chief," and had to be always ready to defend it; and he was careful that no one should ever get the drop on him. Thus, when El Dorado Johnny, a silly little Irishman and fresh-comer, with pretensions as a bad man, walked into Pat Lynch's saloon one morning and casually inquired if there were any "chiefs" about—

"You probably intend that remark for me," said Farmer Peel, who was standing at the bar.

"Anyone can take it up that likes," replied Johnny.

"Very well; we'll settle it right now," rejoined Peel. "Come into the street."

Poor, guileless Johnny went out into the street as proposed, but Peel stopped at the doorway, and, as Johnny turned to look for him, fired a shot that dropped him dead in his tracks.

Peel was never punished for any of his Virginia City killings; in fact, he was never even arrested. They were confined to a class which the authorities probably considered better dead than alive; at any rate, the police did not appear anxious to meddle with him. But one day he got drunk and behaved so outrageously that there was a unanimous demand for his arrest, which was finally accomplished, though with difficulty, by a lot of officers and a posse of citizens. He was taken before Police Judge Davenport, who sentenced him to a fine of \$100 or twenty days in the city jail. Peel said he hadn't the money with him to pay the fine, but that if the judge would let him go on his own recognizance he would get it and settle up. Judge Davenport, who was a mild man with an excessively long beard, of which he was very proud, readily consented. Peel simply went out and ginned up afresh. In about half an hour he returned to the court, which was still in session, and walking up to Davenport, said:

"Judge, I've come to settle that fine."

"Very good of you, Mr. Peel," replied the judge, stroking his beard with complacency at the subdued manner of the desperado. Thereupon, quick as a flash, Peel seized Davenport by his long chin whiskers with

both hands and pounded his head against the wall till he was almost dead. Half a dozen officers were in the room, but they made no attempt to arrest the ruffian. They knew him too well to tackle him while in that mood. When he had "wooled" the judge to his heart's content, he walked calmly out of the courtroom, and that was the last of the affair so far as the authorities were concerned. The fine was considered settled.

Of the many desperate characters who terrorized the State in the early days was Sam Brown. He was simply a human brute of the reptilian order. Big, slouchy and slow of movement, except when he made one of his fatal springs, he impressed one as a huge Saurian lying in wait for his prey. His hair was coarse and tawny and his sandy whiskers so long that he kept them tied under his chin. He was absolutely repulsive and loathsome. No one ever had to be told of his character, as his looks constantly expressed it. He began his career of bloodshed in Nevada in 1860, when he carved a man to pieces with a knife. There had been no trouble between them. He saw his man, picked a quarrel with him and glutted his thirst for blood by stabbing him again and again. When he had finished his work, he wrapped the blanket of a card table about him and fell asleep on the floor alongside the mutilated corpse.

He shot men down without the slightest provocation and no peace officer was anxious to arrest him. With half a dozen wanton killings as his death score he swaggered about the saloons of the State vain of the fact that every one gave him a wide berth. Hearing that a man was being tried for murder at Genoa, he remarked that he would go up and clear him with his testimony and that he would make the court accept it. When he entered the court room next day his appearance caused consternation to the judge, jury and spectators. Some of the latter jumped out of windows and others got down behind the benches, expecting him to begin shooting up the place merely for the fun of it. The only intrepid man in the court was Senator William M. Stewart, who was assisting the District Attorney in prosecuting the case.

He saw the effect of Brown's presence and before Brown could pull a weapon Stewart covered him with two Colt's revolvers and ordered him to throw up his hands. Brown, paralyzed with fear, obeyed, and Stewart ordered him to the witness stand and he was sworn.

"Now, Mr. Brown," said Stewart calmly, "you have bragged that you would come in here and swear this defendant free and make the court

accept your testimony. I am here to tell you that if you attempt any of your gun play here or give any false testimony I will blow your fool brains out." Stewart kept him covered with his weapon while he examined him and made him admit that he knew nothing of the case whatever. Stewart, still covering him with his weapon, made him admit that the defendant had a bad reputation and really succeeded in making a fairly good State witness out of him. When charged by the defendant's attorney with "intimidating the witness," Stewart insisted that he was merely preventing the witness from intimidating other people and then asked the witness if he felt that he was in any way being intimidated. Brown, who had bullied the entire State for years, was loath to admit that he was being "intimidated," and finally extricated himself from his dilemma by stating to Stewart that he was under indictment in Plumas County, California, for an assault with a deadly weapon and, needing an attorney, retained Stewart as his counsel. Rising from the witness chair he proffered Stewart \$500 as a retainer, which Stewart accepted, and Brown asked the court to adjourn while he treated every one in sight. It being late in the afternoon the court adjourned and Brown, apparently in good humor, treated everybody and, mounting his horse, rode away. He had not gone far before he reached the residence of Henry Vansickle, a German rancher, who also kept a sort of wayside inn about three miles from Genoa.

"Hello, Van," was his cheery call to Vansickle. "How are you feeling?" "Tip-top," was the rejoinder. "Guess you are feeling too d—well and I guess I'll take a shot at you just for luck." Pulling his revolver he proceeded to pump lead at Vansickle, laughing as he did so. Vansickle sprang for his seat and after two shots had been fired, which missed him, he got inside his door and, passing quickly to the rear of his house, armed himself with a double-barreled shotgun loaded with buckshot and, saddling a horse, rapidly reached a spot where he knew Brown would have to pass. Meanwhile Brown, oblivious of danger, and supposing that Vansickle was quaking with fear in his house, rode on his way, in company with a man named Henderson.

Suddenly, at a turn of the road, the men were confronted by Vansickle. He ordered Henderson to get out of the way and give him a chance at Brown and a moment later he discharged both barrels at Brown, who fell wounded from his horse. It was at long range and the wounds

were not serious, for Brown remounted and returned the fire with his pistol and, putting spurs to his horse, rode away as fast as possible. Vansickle followed with his empty fowling piece to William Cosser's house where Brown took refuge.

By this time several persons had followed Vansickle and, knowing that he had but two charges, brought him fresh ammunition. Vansickle watched the house after reloading and Brown finally came out and made another attempt to flee, with Vansickle in pursuit. The latter had the fleetest horse and soon overtook his man and emptied both barrels of his gun without effect, while Brown sent three wild shots in return. By this time Brown was in mortal terror and realized that he was up against a man who was determined to kill him.

He finally reached the residence of Mrs. Mott and, leaping from his horse, begged her to protect him. He got inside the house and Vansickle, who had loaded his gun, again waited for him to come out and renew the battle. But Brown, who had shot down so many inoffensive people who were making no defense, did not dare to face his Nemesis and made his way out of the rear of the house and stole away in the darkness. Vansickle prevailed upon a passer-by to enter the house and he soon returned stating that the bird had flown. Vansickle then rode on to Luther Old's hotel, expecting to find Brown, but he was not there and he waited for him. In about half an hour Brown's spurs were heard to jingle in the darkness and Vansickle knew that he was again within striking distance of his man. As Brown was dismounting from his horse Vansickle stepped up at short range and covered him. Brown, with a scream of terror, begged for his life.

"I've got you this time, Sam," was all Vansickle said and, discharging both barrels, blew everything of Brown's head off above the eyes. This was on the 6th of July, and on the 8th the coroner's jury brought in a verdict that Samuel Brown had come to his death from "a just dispensation of an all-wise Providence." Vansickle was fully exonerated and a wave of exultation passed over the State that a monster of murder and iniquity had been thus disposed of.

Another name that has gone down in the State history with a homicidal record is that of Thomas Peasley. While he was credited with killing two men in bloody street duels, the circumstances attending the

tragedies should be taken into consideration and recited as doing some tardy justice to his memory. He was thirty-two years old when he came to the Comstock, just in the prime of a manhood endowed with more physical energy and vitality of temperament than falls to the lot of one in 10,000. Tall, but compactly built, powerful but quick as a leopard, he was a splendid specimen of manly strength and grace. His early training had made him redoubtable in the use of nature's weapons, while his later experience unfortunately rendered him equally expert with deadlier ones.

He established the old Sazarac saloon on C Street, near Union, which at once became headquarters for the firemen and a resort for political aspirants anxious to gain their support. He was successively foreman of the first hook-and-ladder company, and the first engine company formed in Virginia City, and upon the organization of the Fire Department was chosen chief engineer. He was sheriff from 1862 to 1864. At one session of the Territorial Legislature he was doorkeeper of the House, and he was sergeant-at-arms of the State Senate in 1865. But these modest preferments convey no adequate impression of his prominence in the community. For a number of years Tom Peasley was a more conspicuous figure than most of the men who have since won State or national reputations.

He was a man of better parts and instincts than his record shows. Aspiring, resolute, indomitable, a better schooling and start in life would certainly have made his name a familiar one in public affairs, whether in the field or forum, for he was born to be a leader in whatever situation circumstance might place him. There was the making of a Broderick in him, if not more. Missing leadership on a lofty plane, the spirit of mastery asserted itself on a lower level. To rule the rude and turbulent spirits with whom his lot was cast, it was necessary to be the roughest of the rough when occasion required, and he attained a distinction in that respect which gained him the pre-eminence he aimed at.

His excess of animal spirits, his exultation in his giant strength, an occasional indulgence in the cup that overcheers, a quick temper—and more than all these, perhaps, the consciousness that something unusual and daring was expected of him—led him to the commission of acts deeply regretted and most humbly apologized for afterwards. To knock a friend down with a playful slap upon the back was not an unusual form

of salutation with him, and to break in a door instead of unlatching it only denoted the feeling of particular intimacy on his part.

Among the many foolish youths who affected tough airs and sought fellowship with the man-slayers, was a tall, wax-faced, loose-jointed young fellow who passed through a brief career in Virginia City and on into eternity with no other appellation ever heard than that of Sugar-foot Jack. If search was not made for his birth register the angels probably call him by that name yet, for that was the only one made use of in the credentials he took with him. His was a singular case of false pretense. He hadn't a single qualification for a desperado, except the silly ambition to be considered one. In reality he was a nerveless, inoffensive boy—a veritable lamb in wolf's clothing—but all the same, he paid the penalty of his disguise.

At a free-and-easy masquerade, late in 1863, Peasley knocked Sugar-foot Jack down, in one of his excesses of rough playfulness. The affront was too gross to be tamely borne by one who was posing as a terror; but the poor fellow lacked the courage to resent it on the spot. He left the ballroom with muttered threats, and proclaimed his bloody purpose about town, until some of Peasley's friends hastened to inform him that Sugar-foot Jack had armed himself and was laying for him. It was the same kindly officiousness that has led to so many unfortunate results. The counter-hunt was immediately begun. Sugar-foot was discovered hiding behind an awning-post, an inferred position of vantage and defense, but the poor devil was really cringing there in fright. Peasley drew his pistol and riddled the unarmed craven with bullets, and the aspiring boy won the crown at last by dying with his boots on.

The most exciting murder case in the history of Nevada—one that divided the community into factions and came near precipitating a general conflict—occurred the first year after the organization of the Territory. For thrilling interest and romance the story of the crime, conviction and escape of Bill Mayfield is without parallel in the annals of the State.

In 1859-'60, John L. Blackburn was Deputy United States Marshal for that portion of Utah known as Carson County, and when it was organized into Nevada Territory in 1861 he was elected sheriff of Ormsby County. He was a tall, full-bearded, handsome man, with the air of a Southerner, though a native of Illinois. His popularity at the start is to be inferred from his success as an office-seeker, but to accept

his official station as a true indication of his character would lead one widely astray. Whatever may have been his qualifications for office at the beginning, by the summer of 1861 he had entirely impaired them by dissipation and the unbridled license given to his temper, so that instead of being regarded as a bulwark of the law and a conservator of the peace, he was looked upon as about the most dangerous man in the Territory, and without exception the most reckless law-breaker.

A single example will depict his nature. He arrested a man for some minor offense out at one of the stations on the old emigrant road and brought him to Carson City. Instead of going directly to the jail he entered Bill Rice's saloon to refresh himself after the dusty ride. The prisoner was very drunk and insisted on singing in a boisterous manner. Blackburn cautioned him a number of times to be silent. The poor, irresponsible fellow paid no attention to the warning, but kept up the noise until Blackburn, in an access of fury, pulled his pistol and shot him dead, remarking that he guessed the son-of-a-gun would be quiet now. The body lay stretched immediately in front of the bar. To show his coolness and indifference, Blackburn asked the bystanders up to drink, and without a sign of agitation pleasantly clinked glasses with them over the corpse of his victim.

With the inevitable tendency that has marked the downward career of all desperate men, Blackburn had grown to thirst for blood every time he was in liquor, an occurrence daily becoming more frequent with him, as if the two fatal thirsts reacted upon each other. He didn't confine his attacks to dangerous or disreputable characters. He assaulted some of the most prominent and esteemed citizens, whose escape from his onsets was almost miraculous. A feeling of insecurity and terror pervaded the community. No one could rest assured that his own life would not be sought next. In short, things had come to a pitch where most of the leading citizens felt that the man who should kill Blackburn would be doing a public service.

At this stage of affairs, sometime in November, 1861, Henry Plummer—the arch fiend in the hideous demonarchy of those days, who afterward organized and, while sheriff, directed the operations of the most notorious band of road agents and murderers that ever terrorized the mining regions, and who was hanged by the vigilance committee at Bannock, Montana, in 1864—came to Carson City. He was already a murderer

and fugitive from justice in California. A requisition had preceded him, and the Nevada authorities were on the alert.

Plummer found an old acquaintance and friend in William H. Mayfield, a professional gambler, who hid him in his cabin until preparations were made for more safely secreting him in the loft of Jack Harris's house by cutting through the lining of the ceiling and placing a bed, provisions and other necessities, together with the fugitive himself, upon the girders, and then closing and concealing the aperture.

Sheriff Blackburn had a warrant for the arrest of Plummer. Suspecting Mayfield of harboring a fugitive, he searched his cabin, but too late; the culprit had been transferred to the loft. Mayfield frankly told the sheriff, however, that Plummer had been there, but had gone away. The thought of having been foiled rankled in Blackburn's breast, and when as was customary with him now he proceeded to get drunk, it was the uppermost thing in his mind. Meeting Mayfield, he accused him of still concealing Plummer. Mayfield succeeded in avoiding him at the time, but later in the evening they met in the St. Nicholas saloon, when Blackburn renewed his charges more aggressively.

"I will arrest Plummer," said he, "and no one can prevent it. I can arrest anybody. I can arrest you, Bill Mayfield, if I wish to."

"You can arrest me if you have a warrant for my arrest," replied Mayfield, "but you can't without."

"I tell you I can arrest you or any one else," rejoined Blackburn, "and d—— you, I'll arrest you anyhow."

Blackburn made a movement as if to draw a weapon, but John D. Winters and other friends caught hold of him and tried to force him from the room. He broke away from them, however, and made for Mayfield again. Like a flash the latter plunged a bowie-knife into his assailant's breast, repeating the thrust half a dozen times as the wounded man tried to close with him. Blackburn fell to the floor and died within ten minutes.

In the confusion Mayfield escaped from the saloon. He lay hidden all that night in a hogpen. The next day friends provided for his concealment in more savory quarters, but a large reward being offered for his arrest a few days afterward, some one revealed his hiding place and he was taken into custody.

Political feeling ran very high at that time. Blackburn was a Unionist, Mayfield a Secessionist. It looked for a while as if the case was going to resolve itself into a purely partisan question, and a conflict appeared imminent. In expectation of an attempt at rescue, Governor Nye made a requisition on the commandant at Fort Churchill for a military force, and fifty soldiers were sent to guard the prisoner.

The trial was brought on with the least possible delay. John R. McConnell, the distinguished Secessionist who had just been defeated for Governor of California, and Jonas Seely, as pronounced a Unionist, were counsel for the defense. It was claimed by them and by Mayfield's friends that he was not given a fair trial, inasmuch as there was not a single Democrat on the jury. Fairly or not, he was convicted and sentenced to be hanged February 28, 1862.

There were men of both parties, however, who felt no political interest in the case, but only thankfulness for Blackburn's death and a grateful desire to save his slayer, whom they regarded as a benefactor. They immediately set about devising ways to effect Mayfield's release. A pardon was out of the question, and in the existing state of public feeling there was scarcely more hope in a motion for a new trial, or in an appeal to the Supreme Court. But an effort was made, and by means notoriously effective in influencing some of the Supreme Judges in those days, two of them were induced to order a stay of proceedings in Mayfield's sentence until his case could be brought before the court *en banc*. This order rendered the time of execution a matter of extreme uncertainty, and the authorities were easily persuaded under the circumstances to dispense with the military guard and transfer the condemned man to the Territorial prison for safe keeping.

Uncle Abe Curry was warden of the prison, as good and kind-hearted a man as ever lived, and a prominent and public-spirited citizen moreover. What wonder, then, if he shared the feeling of other good citizens to an extent that rendered him careless about keeping strict watch over one they believed to have done a public service, and who was not one of his prisoners anyhow? Mayfield was furnished with tools for cutting off his irons, which he proceeded to do just cautiously enough not to attract the attention of some uninitiated guards.

About 9 o'clock on the evening of the 15th of March, 1862, he crept out of the prison and by prearrangement met a friend who delivered to

him \$1,000 in money and the fleetest horse in the Territory, and who told the fugitive at the same time to strike for the wilds of Idaho, as nothing could save him if he fell into the clutches of the authorities again.

Mayfield subsequently sent back an account of his escape to the Enterprise. He took to himself all the credit for it, and pictured himself to be a very Jack Sheppard at prison-breaking. One passage, however, had a touch of vivid description and humor in it that indicated Nevada might have developed another Mark Twain had the aspirant not gone wrong.

"The guard," wrote Mayfield, "was walking back and forth in the ward room, while old man Curry was sitting playing poker with some of the work hands about ten feet from my cell. I got down on my knees, and, watching the old man's eyes, started for the door. As I got to it I saw the old man raising the hand that had just been dealt to him, and, as his eyes were directed toward me, I thought I would wait until he got a big hand, for, being an old gambler myself, I knew it would always excite an unsophisticated gambler to have a high hand dealt to him. A few minutes afterward a big Irishman who was playing in the game got a big hand, queens and sevens, before the draw. He bet 'twenty beans.' The old man saw it, and they took one card each. The old man drew a king, making him a king full; the Irishman drew a queen, making him a queen full. They bet and bet until they had about 200 beans in the pot. All this time I was fixing to go, and I came to the conclusion that if I couldn't go out on that hand I never could, and so I went."

Mayfield made good use of his first few hours of liberty, getting as far as Peavine valley and well within the boundaries of California. But there he hesitated and finally discontinued his flight. Every mile was separating him further from a Carson City girl with whom he was madly infatuated. A fierce conflict was raging in his breast; but his love for the woman proved stronger than his love for life and liberty, and he deliberately turned and rode back to Huffaker's, in the Truckee Meadows, whence he could communicate with his sweetheart, and remained there a couple of weeks. His whereabouts became a matter of public notoriety. Friends and well-wishers urged him to renew his flight, but in vain.

Sheriff Gasherie of Ormsby county, who had been elected soon after Blackburn's death and who naturally disliked to show ingratitude to the man who had made a vacancy for him, at length notified the friends and

well-wishers that popular clamor compelled him to take cognizance of Mayfield's presence at Huffaker's. He informed them of the time of his intended visit, and word was sent to the fugitive to make himself scarce before the Sheriff and his posse should appear.

Mayfield had become so indifferent that he paid no attention to the warning until the officers arrived. Then Mrs. Huffaker hastily concealed him behind some dresses hanging against the wall. The hiding was merely of the ostrich kind, his feet and legs being plainly discernible at a glance. But the officers searched the house from cellar to garret without success. Sheriff Gasherie tersely explained the dilemma to one of the well-wishers in this way:

"I couldn't find him, though I could see him all the time."

The vain search at last abandoned, and the Sheriff and his officers returned to Carson City and reported that the rumor of Mayfield's presence at Huffakers' was untrue and never had the slightest foundation.

The folly and perversity of Mayfield began to weary his partisans, and they told him plainly that unless he left the Territory they would abandon him to his fate. This threat succeeded in awakening him to a sense of his danger, and at last he made his way through Humboldt county to the Salmon river region in Idaho.

His reprieve, however, was scarcely worth the trouble and expense by which it had been secured. The following year at Placerville, Idaho, he got into a difficulty with a man named Evans over a game of cards. Mayfield drew his revolver, but Evans exclaimed:

"I'm not heeled."

"Then go and heel yourself," said Mayfield, "and be ready the next time we meet. One of us must die."

"The next day Mayfield and two friends were walking along the street and came to a muddy place they had to cross in single file upon a plank. As Mayfield was in the center of the crossing, Evans, who had carefully obeyed the injunction to 'heel' himself, and was lying concealed in a cabin close by, poured two charges of buckshot into his adversary's body, and within an hour Bill Mayfield, who came so near involving Nevada Territory in a bloody strife, was beyond the reach of human justice or mercy."

"Peasley was not held for the murder, the threats and actions of his silly victim making it a plausible case of self-defense. But his own

conscience did not acquit him as readily. From that time he was a changed man in most respects. The old boisterousness gave place to a restrained and gentle manner, and there was a noticeable unbending and softening in his whole nature.

"He withdrew from the saloon business and engaged in theatrical management. In 1865 he was sergeant-at-arms of the State Senate. While holding the position an incident occurred that led to his death a year later.

"Standing at a bar with a party of friends, one night, some one nearby made a remark which Peasley construed as an insult, whereupon he turned angrily and knocked down an innocent bystander whom he mistook for the offender. Being convinced of his mistake, he apologized to the young man he had assaulted and offered to make any other reparation within his power. But young Barnhart, the aggrieved party, received the conciliatory offer in a churlish spirit, nursing a resentment that nothing but blood could appease.

"During the following summer, while both were at Glenbrook Lake Tahoe, Barnhart sent a challenge to his aggressor to fight him with pistols. Peasley declined to accept it, alleging his disinclination to add further harm to the injury he so sincerely regretted. This did not satisfy Barnhart. It seems only to have begotten a delusion that Peasley was afraid to fight him, and to have made him bloodthirstier than ever.

"The following winter Peasley visited Carson City, to meet his old friends in the Legislature. While he and Ned Ingham were playing billiards in a saloon the earlier part of the night, they noticed Barnhart and two companions come in and drink at the bar several times, but as he said nothing nor made any demonstration they paid little attention to his actions. About 2 o'clock in the morning he went to his hotel, the Ormsby House, and sat down by the stove to finish his cigar. J. C. Lewis, the veteran editor, John A. Benham, an attache of the Legislature, and some others were sitting around the stove also. Presently Barnhart and his two companions came in, but went out after drinking at the bar. They returned in a few minutes, and Barnhart approached Peasley and asked:

" 'Why didn't you fight me last summer at the Glenbrook House?'

" 'I don't know,' was the hesitating reply. 'Are you always on the fight?'

" 'Yes,' replied Barnhart, with a vile epithet, at the same time pulling his pistol.

" 'You don't mean to murder me, do you?' exclaimed Peasley.

"The answer was two bullets fired in quick succession into the region of his heart. As he started to rise, Barnhart caught him by the shoulder and beat him over the head with the barrel of the pistol, breaking his skull. Peasley, in his helplessness, called out:

" 'Don't let him murder me! What are you all doing?'

"Barnhart broke his pistol by the repeated blows, the barrel falling to the floor. Editor Lewis wrenched the stock from his hands, saying:

" 'There, that will do; you've shot and beaten him enough.'

"By this time Peasley had staggered to his feet and drawn his pistol. Seeing the action, Barnhart made a rush for an adjoining cardroom, shouting:

" 'Don't let him shoot me!'

"Peasley pursued him, fired once through the glazed door as it closed behind the fugitive, then threw it open and aimed a deadly shot at his cowering antagonist. Before he could fire again, he suddenly reeled.

" 'My God, I'm shot through and through!' he exclaimed, and fell full length upon the floor.

"It was thought he was dead, but signaling Ned Ingham to come close to him he requested that his brother Andy be sent for. He also inquired about Barnhart, and smiled grimly when told that he was dead.

"Then came the final injunction, that his boots be taken off. And thus Tom Peasley went out of the world fearlessly and bare-footed.

On one occasion a man was shot between the eyes in a billiard saloon in Virginia City, meeting his death about four in the morning.

He fell half under the billiard table and his body was not taken in charge by the coroner until nearly noon. The games went on however as if nothing had happened and the players in making their shots were obliged at times to stand with one foot each side of the dead body.

Jack Williams began his career in 1861. He was town watchman at the time and one night went into the Washoe Saloon to warm up.

Suddenly Billy Brown, a gambler, came in under the influence of liquor and seeing Williams pulled his gun and told him to draw.

Williams dodged under a billiard table and Brown fired, the ball

striking the bed of the table and glancing upward. Williams then sent a ball through the other's breast killing him instantly.

As the body lay upon the floor a little boy came in and throwing himself upon it sobbed and cried as he begged "poor Billy" to speak to him. Over and over he kissed the responseless form as Williams stood by with tears rolling down his cheeks. Williams gave himself up to the Sheriff and was exonerated.

This started him on his career as a gun man and he took part in many bloody encounters until he died with his boots on two years later with sixteen buckshot in his chest. A man of unquestioned varacity told me that he overheard two men in an adjoining room disputing as to which of the two should kill him, each claiming the right. They finally shook dice and the winner ten minutes later went out and "got his man."

During the first few years homicides were so frequent that they ceased to attract much attention. No attempt was made to bring men to justice who shot down fellow beings with slight provocation, and sometimes none at all. They became so bold and shameless that there was a general feeling in the community that some stand must soon be made by the law-abiding element. It came when William Janes shot and killed P. H. Dowd in Gold Hill while they were quarreling over some business matter. Neither man was of any prominence in the community and in the ordinary course of events the affair would have been forgotten in a week, along with the other homicides of almost daily occurrence; but by a singular chain of circumstances, the murder grew into a matter of great moment and the slayer became the most conspicuous figure in the public sight for the next two years.

Janes was tried within a month from the time he committed the crime, was speedily found guilty of murder in the first degree and was sentenced to be hanged the 2d of June following. The witness and sternness of the proceedings fairly took people's breath away. After the hundreds of wanton killings that had gone unpunished, there was to be a wholesome example of justice at last!

But owing to a legal quibble in the wording of the death sentence Sheriff Howard refused to carry it out. An appeal was made to Governor Nye to help the Storey County authorities out of the muddle and he, good, easy old man, as the best way that suggested itself to him, commuted the sentence of Janes, whatever style or degree of hanging it

might apply, to imprisonment for life in the Territorial penitentiary; but Janes was subsequently pardoned by Governor Nye.

The first judge to make his authority felt in Nevada was Judge Cradlebaugh. Buchanan appointed John Cradlebaugh in 1857 as one of the associate judges of Utah Territory with his seat at Provo. Buchanan was indebted to him for political services rendered during the campaign of 1856 when the judge canvassed the State of Ohio for his election.

During his official career Judge Cradlebaugh tried some of the most important mining cases in the State, where millions were involved, and there was never a suspicion of his integrity.

The first court room that he occupied was in Genoa, then the county seat of Carson County, Utah Territory. It was located in a hay loft over a livery stable. It was a dingy, ill ventilated, badly lighted place, where at times the atmosphere was redolent of the odors of the stable and often the proceedings of the court were interrupted with the profanity of the stablemen who were dealing with refractory horses downstairs. The loft was reached by a ladder and when the court room was full the ladder was pulled up by the bailiff as an intimation to outsiders that they need not attempt to obtrude.

Under the idea, however, that "for justice, all places a temple and all seasons summer" this old hay loft in Genoa became immortalized by Judge Cradlebaugh as the spot where a righteous judge and a courageous one dispensed the law to the best of his honest ability and where litigants felt sure of a square hearing.

THE PONY EXPRESS.

The gold discovery in California in 1848 led to a wonderful exodus to the Pacific Coast. The rush of American gold seekers swept across the plains in vast caravans and they crossed the region now embracing the State of Nevada without stopping to investigate mineral deposits which were fully as rich as the gold fields they were seeking further away. Within ten years the population of California had so increased that more rapid communication with the east was needed. The demand of the California miners was taken to Washington and Senator Gwinn, in 1859, induced the firm of Russell, Majors & Waddell to establish the "Pony

Express." This firm already had a daily stage line between the Missouri River and Salt Lake, with stations every ten or twelve miles along the route. In less than sixty days Russell extended his route to the Pacific Coast, and started his riders on their long race across the continent.

One can scarcely comprehend the magnitude of this undertaking. To carry the mail from St. Joseph, Missouri, to San Francisco, 1,950 miles across the desert and mountain, required 500 selected horses, 190 stations, 200 men to take charge of them and nearly 100 skilled riders. The stations were sometimes 65 and even 100 miles apart. Prior to that the fastest time ever made on the Butterfield route was 21 days. But the Pony Express cut it to 18.

These riders were always ready at their stations for any emergency that might arise, as they were frequently called upon for double duty; at any moment they must be prepared to spring into the saddle and be off like a shot. The animals employed were magnificent specimens, selected for speed and endurance, most carefully fed and housed. On the road they were pushed to the utmost, spurred ten miles at the very limit of speed, they came into the next station flecked with foam, wet with perspiration. Nearly 2,000 miles must be covered in ten days or less. The rider was allowed but two minutes at a station to change mounts, yet it scarcely required more than two seconds. Almost before he touched the ground the man was off again, a dim speck down the trail.

Two hundred and fifty miles a day was the distance traveled and the rider could carry no surplus weight. His sole arms were a revolver and a knife; his case of precious letters made into a bundle no larger than an ordinary writing tablet. The mail-bags were two pouches of leather, impervious to rain, sealed and strapped securely to the saddle both before and behind. They never contained over twenty pounds in weight, and inside, for better protection from possible exposure, the letters and the dispatches were wrapped in oil silk, and separately sealed. The pouches were not opened between river and coast.

These riders were paid from \$100 to \$125 a month and "found." The postage charged during the earlier months of the service was \$5.00 per half ounce, but was later reduced to \$1.00, at which sum it remained until the completion of the overland telegraph in October, 1861. Letters thus carried were written on the thinnest tissue paper; papers destined for the coast were printed on the same thin paper, and had to be sent in letter

envelopes at letter postage. A messenger has recorded that he remembered handling one letter which had on it twenty-five Pony Express stamps of \$1.00 each, and twenty-five United States 10-cent stamps. It is safe to say that no mail was thus sent unless it was considered of great value. And the Pony Express had a proud record for safety, as well as efficiency. In all its career it lost but one mail. Another came very near doubling the list, as the rider was waylaid by Indians and scalped. But the pony broke away and came clattering into the next station, severely wounded, with the saddle-bags intact, leaving his rider dead in the desert. All the riding was not the same, as the distance to be covered, and the length between stations, was largely determined by the character of the country. Along some parts of the route the trail had to be covered at the astounding pace of 25 miles an hour.

The first day of the start was the third of April, 1850, the time noon. At exactly the same hour the riders, one facing east, the other west, left Sacramento and St. Joseph. The first starter from California was Harry Roff, on a half-breed bronco.

The adventures of these Pony Express riders, the stories of their hardihood and marvelous horsemanship, are numberless. Perhaps the best known among them is that of William F. Cody ("Buffalo Bill"), who began in the service when a boy of fourteen.

As has been said, the schedule time between Missouri and Sacramento was established at ten days. Never once did the Pony Express fail to make it, and on many occasions the daring riders came in far ahead. Buchanan's last message was whisked across the 2,000 miles in eight days and a few hours; the news of Lincoln's election covered the 665 miles to Denver in 2 days and 21 hours. But the record for such long distance riding was completely shattered when Lincoln's inaugural was borne by rider to rider to the coast in the marvelous space of but 7 days and 17 hours. It was a Pony Express rider who made the most wonderful straight-away ride ever made by man, but it was not performed in the course of duty. The rider was a Canadian, Francis Xavier Aubrey, and he rode on a bet that he could cover the distance between Sante Fe and Independence, 800 miles, in eight days. One thousand dollars was involved. In the whole distance he did not stop to rest, changing horses only every 100 miles, and he made it in 5 days and 13 hours. Aubrey has

been described as of stocky build, light-hearted, genial, adventurous and absolutely fearless. He was later killed in Santa Fe.

The adobe forts were built at the sink on the Carson at Sand Springs, twenty miles east from Carson sink, another at Cold Springs, thirty-seven miles east of Sand Springs. One rider was a Mexican. He rode into Sand Springs one day, shot through and through by an Indian and died shortly after reaching the station.

It was just as wild work at the eastern end of the line, then an open country.

Bill Cody ("Buffalo Bill") was a boy then, and he rode between Red Butte on the Platte and Three Crossings on the Sweetwater. He had to cross the Platte and make fifteen miles an hour, regardless of delays or detours, to avoid Indians. Cody probably made the most remarkable ride on record. He rode without rest from Three Crossings to Red Butte, then, because a rider had been killed, he rode eighty-five miles further and back to Three Crossings, in all 322 miles, without rest, and made the trip on time.

Of course, the Pony Express never paid, but it was the means through which the firm who put it on got a great subsidy for running a great stage line across the continent. The nerve and the endurance needed to ride that express required men of the very highest kind. The desert was not dotted with homes as it is now. It was just a waste, and save the little puny stations established by the express company, there was not a house between Dayton and Camp Floyd. The Sioux were on the war path in the east; the Piutes in the west. Major Ormsby and Meredith and half of their command were killed in a fight with Winnemucca and his braves, and still those express boys, with one or two exceptions, rode through with safety, although sometimes it was a running fight with the Indians for miles before they reached a station. They had the advantage of having good horses that outstripped the Indian ponies. Bob Haslam ran into a band of thirty with war paint on, three or four miles from a station. He had a revolver and two cylinders loaded. He meant to sell his life as dearly as he could and rode full speed into the Indians. One of the Indians cried out, "You pretty good fellow, you go ahead,"

and he went ahead, but he kept his eye on those Indians until out of range. They generally were not so considerate.

The Pony Express did a great work. It enabled the people in the east to see that the desert was not impassable. It brought the east and the west ten days nearer together, which was a great thing in 1860. A great many people who believed that the country was impossible for a railroad began to have visions of a time when, possibly, roads could be built everywhere except over the Sierras and over the Rockies. Nine years after that the road was completed all the way, but to understand what it meant one should see a profile of the old road drawn on a small scale. By it they will see that the road ran up and down hill all the way and that it was the gigantic work of the age to build it. Or, perhaps, it was the thought behind it that was the great thing. We see a man take a hodful of brick and mount to the sixth story of a building and we shudder at the thought of that work, but that man began by carrying the brick to the first story, then to the second and after that he grew indifferent to the height of the building. So when the charter was got for the Union Pacific and the old Central Pacific, and George Gorham went to Washington and moved the foothills down within twelve miles of Sacramento, where the double subsidy would begin, the men who built the first mile found that they were not out a cent, but rather, that they had \$10,000 in their pockets—a bonus. Then it was easy to build the second mile and they had \$10,000 more, and so the road crept over the Sierras and crept up over the Rockies and finally came together at Promontory, west of Ogden, and it was a change of front for our country.

It went out to the world that a railroad had been built clear across the American continent and it was possible in a palace car to start from New York and to keep that car until the city by the Golden Gate was reached and then China was but twenty days away. It took away the terror of the desert. It moved the frontier back. It subdued the red man more than all the armies of the world could have subdued him, for they found they had an enemy there which was impervious to their arrows or their guns—"all wagon, no oxen," something that could outspeed their ponies. It made possible the settling up of the desert. It stopped the expense of

Indian wars along that route, which had been costly for thirty years before, and the government would have made money really had it never received back what it advanced for the building of that road.

It taught another lesson. The old rule was never to build a railroad until enough trade was secured to make a promise of a fair interest on the money. When this road was built it was demonstrated that a railroad was the greatest pathfinder that ever went into the desert, because all along its lines settlements were started, and then the Nevada mines gave a revenue which was never dreamed of when the road was projected.

CHAPTER IX.

NEVADA AND THE CIVIL WAR.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

In the Civil War no State was as great a factor in the saving of the Union cause as Nevada. The State came into existence when Columbia was in the throes of the greatest struggle for human liberty ever fought.

Lincoln, with his keen and far seeing intelligence, decided that he needed another pawn on the political chessboard and figured that the Territory of Nevada was the piece required and that to make the piece of proper utility it must be made a State.

Lincoln, the supreme politician of his time, determined upon the abolition of human slavery which would require an amendment to the Constitution and such amendment would be equivalent to a million more men in the field of war.

It would be easier to amend the Constitution at that time than to raise the new army.

It required a three-fourths vote of the States and the admission of Nevada into the Union would complete the necessary three-fourths vote.

Charles A. Dana, in his "Recollections of the Civil War," thus speaks of an incident which meant so much for the future of the country:

"I have heard people complain of Nevada as superfluous and petty, and not big enough to be a State; but when I hear that complaint I always hear Abraham Lincoln saying: 'It is easier to admit Nevada than to raise another million of soldiers.'"

In March of 1864, the question of allowing Nevada to form a State government finally came to the House of Representatives and there was strong opposition. Dana tells of the politics necessary to pave the way for Nevada's admission as follows:

"At last, late one afternoon, the President came into my office, in the third story of the War Department. He used to come there sometimes

rather than send for me, because he was fond of walking and liked to get away from the crowd in the White House. He came in and shut the door.

"'Dana,' he said, 'I am very anxious about this vote. It has got to be taken next week. The time is very short. It is going to be a great deal closer than I wish it was.'

"'There are plenty of Democrats who will vote for it,' I replied. 'There is James E. English, of Connecticut; I think he is sure, isn't he?'

"'Oh, yes; he is sure on the merits of the question.'

"'Then,' said I, 'there's "Sunset" Cox, of Ohio. How is he?'

"'He is sure and fearless. But there are some others that I am not clear about. There are three that you can deal with better than anybody else, perhaps, as you know them all. I wish you would send for them.'

"'He told me who they were; it isn't necessary to repeat the names here. One man was from New Jersey and two from New York.

"'What will they be likely to want?' I asked.

"'I don't know,' said the President; 'I don't know. It makes no difference, though, what they want. Here is the alternative; that we carry this vote, or be compelled to raise another million, and I don't know how many more men, and fight no one knows how long. It is a question of three votes or new armies.'

"'Well, sir,' said I, 'What shall I say to these gentlemen?'

"'I don't know,' said he, 'but whatever promise you make to them I will perform.'

"'I sent for the men and saw them one by one. I found that they were afraid of their party. They said that some fellows in the party would be down on them. Two of them wanted internal revenue collector's appointments. 'You shall have it,' I said. Another man wanted a very important appointment about the Custom House of New York. I knew the man well whom he wanted to have appointed. He was a Republican, though the Congressman was a Democrat. I had served with him in the Republican County Committee of New York. The office was worth perhaps twenty thousand a year. When the Congressman stated the case, I asked him, 'Do you want that?'

"'Yes,' said he.

"'Well,' I answered, 'you shall have it.'

"'I understand, of course,' said he, 'that you are not saying this on your own authority?'

"'Oh, no,' said I; 'I am saying it on the authority of the President.'

"Well, these men voted that Nevada be allowed to form a State Government, and thus they helped to secure the vote which was required. The next October the President signed the proclamation admitting the State. In the February following, Nevada was one of the States which ratified the Thirteenth amendment, by which slavery was abolished by constitutional prohibition in all of the United States. I have always felt that this little bit of side politics was one of the most judicious, humane, and wise uses of executive authority that I have ever assisted in or witnessed.

"The appointment in the New York Custom House was to wait till the term of the actual incumbent had run out. My friend, the Democratic Congressman, was quite willing. 'That's all right,' he said; 'I am in no hurry.' Before the time had expired, Mr. Lincoln was murdered and Andrew Johnson became President. I was in the West, when one day I got a telegram from Roscoe Conkling:

"'Come to Washington.' So I went.

"'I want you to go and see President Johnson,' Mr. Conkling said, 'and tell him that the appointment of this man to the Custom House is a sacred promise of Mr. Lincoln's, and that it must be kept.'

"Then I went to the White House, and saw President Johnson.

"'This is Mr. Lincoln's promise,' I urged. 'He regarded it as saving the necessity of another call for troops and raising, perhaps, a million more men to continue the war. I trust, Mr. President, that you will see your way clear to execute this promise.'

"'Well, Mr. Dana,' he replied, 'I don't say that I won't; but I have observed in the course of my experience that such bargains tend to immorality.'

"The appointment was not made. I am happy to say, however, that the gentleman to whom the promise was given never found any fault either with President Lincoln or with the Assistant Secretary who had been the means of making the promise to him."

Lincoln always had great faith in the mineral richness of the West and had a soft spot in his heart for the Nevada miner. After the war, when the Colfax party visited the Comstock, Colfax, in his speech to the miners, read a letter he had received from Lincoln. It was as follows:

"Mr. Colfax, I want you to take a message from me to the miners whom you visit. I have very large ideas of the mineral wealth of our Nation. I believe it is practically inexhaustible. It abounds all over the western country, from the

Rocky Mountains to the Pacific, and its development has scarcely commenced. During the war when we were adding a couple of millions of dollars every day to our national debt, I did not care about encouraging the increase in the volume of our precious metals. We had the country to save first. But now that the rebellion is overthrown and we know pretty nearly the amount of our national debt, the more gold and silver we mine makes the payment of that debt so much the easier. Now I am going to encourage that in every possible way. We shall have hundreds of thousands of disbanded soldiers, and many have feared that their return home in such great numbers might paralyze industry by furnishing suddenly a greater supply of labor than there will be demand for. I am going to try to attract them to the hidden wealth of our mountain ranges, where there is room enough for all. Immigration, which even the war has not stopped, will land on our shores hundreds of thousands more per year from overcrowded Europe. I intend to point them to the gold and silver that wait for them in the West. Tell the miners from me that I shall promote their interests to the utmost of my ability; because their prosperity is the prosperity of the Nation, and we shall prove in a very few years that we are indeed the treasury of the world." ✓

During the war there were many southern sympathizers in Nevada.

The Federal Government maintained a military post known as Fort Churchill, in Nevada, the dismantled walls of which can still be seen not far from the railway that runs from Dayton to Tonapah.

When men became too pronounced in their utterances against the Union they were taken to Fort Churchill and incarcerated.

Virginia City was the leading town in the State and for a long time the Union men and the sympathizers with the South were about evenly divided. The men who kept the fires of Unionism most actively burning on the eastern slope of Mt. Davidson were the members of the old Virginia City Fire Department. Most of them had formerly been New York firemen. They were as robust and fearless a lot as ever lived. Tom Peasley, Jack Perry, George Birdsall, Pete Larkin, Bruce Garvey, Riff Williams, Louis Wardell, Ned Ingham, Ben Ballou, and hundreds of others whose names I cannot recall, belonged to that intrepid phalanx.

Their original training in combat had been with fists, spanners and fire trumpets, but they quickly acquired the knack of knife and pistol, and were a formidable crowd to be reckoned with. Big, powerful, good-natured, these men, though rough, were not depraved or vicious, and they always arrayed themselves on the side of law and order whenever an issue was made with lawlessness and disorder. A spirit of comradeship and organization animated them at all times, and this solidarity made them a wholesome menace to the more humorous but less compacted criminal element.

One of the first instances in which they showed their strength occurred in 1861, early in the War of the Rebellion. At the outset of that strife,

Nevada had proportionally more Southerners and sympathizers with their cause than any other part of the coast. Many of them went to join the rebel army, but enough remained to impress a superficial observer by their loud demonstration with the idea that they were in the majority and ruled the territory.

The only Confederate flag ever raised on this coast floated a whole day over Johnny Newman's old stone saloon. There was not lacking loyalty to resent the treasonable display, but it remained prudently silent and inactive in the presence of Johnny Newman himself patrolling the sidewalk with a rifle on his shoulder and hundreds of armed abettors standing about him. Old John A. Collins rode frantically on horseback to Fort Churchill, but before the troops sent by Major McDermitt arrived Newman had got pretty much over his jag, and Max Waterhouse, his partner, had persuaded him to pull down the secession flag and run up the Stars and Stripes.

But, for all these glaring displays of disloyalty, Unionism was the predominant sentiment. It lay deep down in the hearts of men unaccustomed to boast or make an exhibition of their sentiments. Yet there was one section of it nearly as outspoken and aggressive as secessionism itself; and it was that element that precipitated and settled forever the question of superiority.

Without an exception, the members of the Virginia City Fire Department were all strong Union men. The enthusiasm that attended the organization of Ellsworth's regiment of New York Fire Zouaves imparted itself to them, and their hearts marched with their old comrades to the scene of conflict.

The opening events of the war were very discouraging. Everything went adversely. No tidings of success or advantage ever came to gladden the millions whose hopes were on the issue. It was nothing but continuous disaster and defeat. Only an invincible faith in the ultimate triumph of right upheld the spirit of the people in those first awful days. And just in proportion that the gloomy news depressed the Unionists, the sympathizers with secession were elated. Everything was going their way, and they rejoiced like the sons of the Philistines.

In Virginia City at every rebel success one might easily have fancied

himself in the victorious camp, so loud was the rejoicing. This exultation was particularly galling to the firemen, who frequented the saloons and other resorts where it was most pronounced. But the unchanging tide of adversity seemed to cower their spirits and keep them in subjection. The final straw had not yet been laid on the back of their forbearance; but it was placed there on a certain midsummer day in 1861.

There was no transcontinental telegraph then. The dispatches were brought from St. Joe to Fort Churchill by pony express, and in consequence the news of the battle of Bull Run did not reach the Coast until the first days in August. The *Enterprise* was getting out an extra containing the particulars of the disastrous defeat, about noon, when Jack Perry, who was an old pressman and therefore a privileged character, dropped into the office and asked to see the proofs. The giant fireman read the dispatches all through, how our army had been routed and the New York Fire Zouaves cut to pieces, without saying a word, but with the tears streaming like two great water courses down his cheeks. Then he got up, slid his pistol a little more to the front where it would be handier, and left the office, remarking simply:

"No damned secesh had better crow within my hearing today."

He must have infected every member of the Fire Department with his feeling; for an hour later when the extra was issued and the Southern sympathizers began to exult, one would have thought the battle of Bull Run itself had struck the Comstock, instead of a mere account of it. Not a rejoicing mouth opened but it was instantly closed by a massive fist. Not a head exhibiting a secession tendency showed itself but it was unmercifully hit. Not an appeal was made to the arbitrament of pistol or knife but it was responded to so quickly and effectively that recourse to that style of proceeding was speedily abandoned. The rout was complete and final. When the sun sank behind Mount Davidson that afternoon it had looked for the last time on secession domination in Nevada Territory. The rough element of the Union spirit had asserted itself, and the timid, but more numerous part, quickly rallied to its support. Thereafter there was no open jubilation over Southern victories.

It was in this spirit of militant loyalty, inspired chiefly by those

rough Virginia City firemen, that Nevada came into the Union in 1864 as the "Battle-born" State. She well deserves the proud distinction, for in proportion to her population and wealth she contributed more to the Federal cause than any other State in the Union. With less than 40,000 inhabitants, she sent 1,200 of them to the army, she voted, without being asked, her proportion of the war debt; she contributed upward of \$200,000 to the sanitary fund, and it was her treasures more than any other single factor that sustained the credit of the Government during the war and finally enabled it to resume specie payment.

Lincoln's faith in the mineral resources of the State and his estimate of Nevada's value as the pivotal factor in the Civil War, has been fully verified and the results accomplished are part of the world's history. Yet, in spite of the services rendered to the nation, Congress, forgetful of the country's obligation to the Silver State, demonetized the white metal in 1873 and since then many eastern journals have gravely discussed the proposition of compelling Nevada to surrender her Statehood.





Frank H. Horvoss

CHAPTER X.

THE BENCH AND BAR.

BY HON. FRANK H. NORCROSS.

The history of the Bench and Bar of Nevada may be divided into three periods. First, the period when Nevada was a part of the Territory of Utah; second, from the organization of the Territorial Government of Nevada to the organization of the State government; third, from the organization of the State Government to the present time.

The Utah Regime.—Prior to the organization of Carson County, Utah, Territory, there appears to have been little necessity for courts within the vast, nearly uninhabited territory lying between the Great Salt Lake and the Sierra Nevada Mountains. The Legislative Assembly of Utah Territory, by an act approved by Governor Brigham Young, January 17, 1854, created Carson County, which embraced the major portion of what is now Nevada. By the terms of the act of the Governor was empowered "to appoint a Probate Judge for said county, when he shall deem it expedient, and said Probate Judge, when appointed, shall proceed to organize said county, by dividing the county into precincts and causing an election to be held according to law, to fill the various county and precinct offices and locate the county-seat thereof."

Prior to the organization of the county, however, a squatter government was established at "Mormon Station" (now Genoa). As early as 1853, one E. L. Barnard was acting as Justice of the Peace, and the first case ever instituted in the territory was begun on March 14 of that year. The case was entitled John Reese v. Woodward & Co., and was an attachment suit for the recovery of \$675.

"An Act in relation to the Judiciary," adopted by the Legislative council and approved by the Governor of Utah Territory, February 4, 1852, established District, Probate and County courts. In the case of District courts it was provided that "by the consent of the court and the parties any person may be selected to act as judge for the trial of any particu-

lar cause or question; and while thus acting he shall possess all the powers of the District Judge in the case." This provision had at least the merit of elasticity in relieving courts from congestion.

By this act, Probate Judges in their respective counties, in addition to having the ordinary jurisdiction of such courts in estate and guardianship matters, had power "to exercise original jurisdiction both civil and criminal, as well in chancery as at common law, when not prohibited by legislative enactments." Appeals were allowed therefrom to the District Court. Probate Courts were provided with a clerk and were courts of record.

The act further provided that "The Probate Judge, in connection with the select men is hereby invested with the usual powers and jurisdiction of county commissioners, * * * and in this connection they shall be known as the county court." This court had "the management of all county business." It will thus be seen that the Probate Judge was a functionary of no little importance.

In 1855, Orson Hyde was appointed Probate Judge for Carson County, and proceeded to organize the county by establishing the county seat at Mormon Station, giving to it the name Genoa.

On the third of October, 1855, the first session of the Probate Court was held. The first record entry was in the case of James McIntyre v. Asa A. Knouse, and was designated an action of "debit and damages." The proceedings upon that day seem to have consisted of the filing of the complaint for recovery of \$187.75. A copy of the complaint and writ were issued, which latter was made returnable October 12, at nine o'clock. "On this day," says the record, "parties met at Cowin's house, and proceeded to trial without a jury, by agreement. Defendant filed his answer, and set off in the sum of \$209.25, leaving a balance in his favor of \$19.50. The court, on hearing the evidence and the pleas of the parties, and on careful examination of the accounts, ordered that judgment be rendered against McIntyre, the plaintiff, in the sum of \$24.50 (more than was asked in the set-off), together with the costs of suit, \$14.00; making the full amount of judgment against the plaintiff of \$38.50."

THE FIRST CRIMINAL CASE.

On the 2nd of November, 1855, this court exercised its criminal jurisdiction for the first time in the case of a negro named Thacker, who was

brought before Hyde, as Probate Judge, "for using language of a highly threatening character," he, Thacker, having said "That he had spite enough in his heart against A. J. Wyckoff to kill him," and "that he could cut the heart out of Mrs. Jacob Rose and roast it on the coals."

This inhuman wretch was dealt with in the vigorous manner following, as shown by the "docket." To protect the life of Thacker being taken on the spot, the judge ordered his arrest, and although the language was proven to have been uttered by the accused, yet the Judge held that it was no threat; but, nevertheless, summed up by taxing Thacker with fifty dollars, for costs of suit, and advising him, "for his own safety," to go over the mountains to his master, in California.

The court records the remark that "A man may have malice enough at heart to kill another and judgment and discretion to prevent him from committing the deed; he may have the ability to cut a lady's heart out and roast it upon the coals, and at the same time he may have sense enough not to do it."

First Admission to the Bar.—On the 2d of November, 1855, Dr. Charles D. Daggett and Solomon C. Perren were admitted to practice before the Probate Court.

By the Act of Congress, approved September 9, 1850, creating the Territory of Utah, it was provided "That the judicial power of said territory shall be vested in a Supreme Court, district courts, probate courts and justices of the peace." The Supreme Court consisted of a chief justice and two associate justices who were to be appointed by the President. Their salary was fixed at \$1,800 per annum. The territory was divided into three districts, each district having assigned to it one of the justices of the Supreme Court. The Chief Justices of the Territory of Utah, from the organization of that territory until the organization of the Territory of Nevada, were, in the order of their appointment, Lemuel G. Brandeburg, Lozarus H. Read, John F. Kinney and Delana R. Eckels. The Associate Justices were Perry E. Brocchus, Z. Snow, Leonidas Shaver, G. P. Stiles, C. W. Drummond, E. D. Potter, C. E. Sinclair, John Cradlebaugh, R. P. Flennicken and Henry R. Crosbie.

The first District Judge of the Territory of Utah to hold court in Carson County, was Judge C. W. Drummond, who was appointed to his position by President Pierce and was commissioned September 12, 1854. In July of the year 1856, there came into Carson Valley from Salt Lake

City about one hundred families and with them came Judge Drummond for the purpose of holding a session of the Territorial District Court. His first official act appears to have been the drawing of a grand jury. This jury had no representative of the Mormon faith upon it and it would seem that this was an oversight which was not pleasing to the majority of the community. Nine days after the jury was impanelled, the Judge removed seven of the twenty-three gentile members and substituted Mormons in their places.

The court was held at Mottsville, near Genoa, in Mott's barn, while the Grand Jury held its sessions in the house, or in the hotter portions of the day, in the blacksmith shop.

The Grand Jury, after its reformation as above mentioned, found a true bill against two parties, one of whom bore the name of E. Lamb, for stealing two horses. Lamb made his escape from Mottsville and the indictment, in consequence, was never tried, but it was stoutly contended by the friends of Lamb that he was "innocent as a lamb."

For some act of contumacy, it is said that Judge Drummond threatened to "iron" the Grand Jury, but this does not seem to have taken the form of a judicial order, nor was the threat carried into effect. The Judge remained at Mottsville for about six weeks, and then departed for California. From whence he never returned to again hold court in the county.

It was thought that his judicial administration was as unsatisfactory to himself and all concerned, as the record of his proceedings is meager.

Drummond Succeeded by Cradlebaugh.—Judge Drummond was succeeded by John Cradlebaugh, commissioned as Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of Utah, by President Buchanan, June 4, 1858. Judge Cradlebaugh was assigned to the district which included Carson County. He convened court at Genoa on the fifth day of September, 1859, with Alfred James for clerk and George W. Hepperly as Deputy United States Marshal and Bailiff of the court.

Admission of Attorneys.—On the tenth day of October of that year, the following entry was made upon the record of the court:

"On motion of G. D. Hall, and the Court being satisfied of the good standing in the profession of Messrs. Charles H. Bryan, Robert Anderson, G. D. Hall, John J. Musser, W. H. Brunfield and Wellington Stewart, practising attorneys in the courts of other States and Territories, said

gentlemen are admitted to practice as attorneys in the courts of this Territory."

A Grand Jury Impanelled.—On that day the Grand Jury was impanelled, with George W. Chedic as the foreman. Wellington Stewart was appointed by the Court as Prosecuting Attorney for the district, in place of Alexander Wilson, who had resigned as United States Attorney for Utah Territory, upon the ground that he could not, for some reason, attend upon the courts in Carson County.

The First Indictment.—On the twenty-first day of October, 1859, the first indictment for murder was found against William Sides, for a homicide committed at Gold Hill, shortly after the discovery of the Comstock Lode. At the same time two bills of indictment were found for lewdness, one for adultery, and one for robbery. In fact, the criminal calendar for the year 1859 would indicate an older settlement, a more extensive population, and a degree of demoralization rather exceptional. In that year five bills of indictment for lewdness, one for adultery, one for robbery, six for assault with intent to kill, three for murder and one for felony were found by the Grand Jury. On the thirtieth day of November, 1859, the Court expenses foot up \$537.50—the Prosecuting Attorney's fees being \$10 per day, and the traveling expenses of the Judge to and from Salt Lake being \$150 for the estimated distance of 1,500 miles.

Special Term of Court.—A special term of court was held on June 11, 1860. John L. Blackburn was the Deputy Marshal in attendance. The term seems to have continued in session from time to time until February 19, 1861, when the last record entries were made.

In 1859, three indictments for murder seem to have been found. On September 19th, the case of Wm. Sides was dismissed, on motion of the acting Prosecuting Attorney, P. H. Clayton. There was, in fact, but little efficiency shown in the prosecution of the criminal docket, or else the indictments were in the main without merit.

Early in 1860, President Buchanan removed Judge Cradlebaugh and on May 11, 1860, commissioned R. B. Flennicken, a Justice of the Supreme Court of Utah Territory, vice Cradlebaugh removed. In October of that year Judge Flennicken arrived to assume the duties of District Judge of the district, including Carson County. He had a letter of introduction to John S. Child, then the Probate Judge of the county. The

Judge was accompanied by Henry Grace, appointed to act as the marshal of his court.

A controversy at once arose between Judge Cradlebaugh and Judge Flennicken as to who was the lawful judge of the district. Judge Cradlebaugh contended that the President had no power to remove him and appoint a successor and that he was still the lawful judge. "Some doubt had been thrown on this question by the language of the Utah Act, and on account of the opinion rendered by Justice John McLean of the Supreme Court of the United States." (Reminiscences of William M. Stewart.)

Concerning this controversy, Senator Stewart, in his "Reminiscences," says:

"In June, 1860, Terry (Judge David S. Terry) and myself met in Carson and agreed that we would recognize the authority of Judge Cradlebaugh and try cases before him. * * *

"Later R. P. Flennicken arrived and Terry told me that he would discontinue our arrangement to try cases before Judge Cradlebaugh; that he was confident that Fennicken was the legal judge, and that he should try cases in his court with a marshal and clerk, a man by the name of Grice being his marshal.

"Cradlebaugh continued to hold court, and tried the criminal cases. For the purpose of testing the question of Cradlebaugh's right to continue in office, I caused to be appealed to the Supreme Court of Utah, sitting at Salt Lake, a criminal case in which the question raised involved the validity of Cradlebaugh's authority.

"Very little civic business was done for several months; but finally, in February, 1861, Judge Terry's clients went upon a claim called the St. Louis, between what is known as the Devil's Gate and Silver City, on the main road to Virginia City. There was a considerable quantity of rich ore on the surface of the St. Louis. Terry's clients and associates had procured about eighty old muskets which had been brought over the mountains from California during a recent Indian war. They erected a fort and manned it with about seventy-five men.

"I brought suit and obtained an injunction in Cradlebaugh's court, which was served upon the occupants of the fort. They disobeyed the injunction and continued to work the mine. The situation was embarrassing; all the arms available for a battle were in the hands of the

enemy. It was absolutely certain that if a warrant was placed in the hands of John Blackburn, the marshal of Cradlebaugh's court, he would be resisted by the armed forces in the fort. I knew that Blackburn, being a desperate man, would make every effort to serve the warrant, and that the inevitable consequence would be the shedding of blood to no purpose.

"Two young men were associated with me in the case—Moses Kirkpatrick, afterward a leading lawyer of Butte, Montana, and William F. Anderson, who became a popular lawyer in Idaho. I proposed to them that we visit Flennicken and arrange a compromise if possible. Accordingly we called on Flennicken at his chambers and told him that we were anxious to avoid bloodshed; that Judge Cradlebaugh's order had been disobeyed by the men in a fort on the St. Louis mine, near Silver City; that if it was agreeable to him we would commence a suit in his court, and if our showing was sufficient to satisfy him that an injunction ought to be issued we would serve his injunction and make a joint effort with his marshal and the marshal of Judge Cradlebaugh to enforce the orders of the two courts. Flennicken said that would be entirely agreeable to him.

"We further said to him that the controversy between the two judges was very injurious to the business of the Territory and ought to be terminated, and that Judge Cradlebaugh had agreed to resign if the Supreme Court of the Territory of Utah decided against him, or if Lincoln's administration, when it should be inaugurated, refused to pay him his salary and paid it to Judge Flennicken. Flennicken said that would be entirely satisfactory to him, and he would then and there make the same agreement Judge Cradlebaugh had made.

"We went to my office, prepared the papers, and the next morning called on Flennicken again and asked him to issue an injunction. He not only refused to do that, but denied ever having any conversation with us on the subject; and, in fact, he went so far as to deny that we had ever visited him at all.

"While we were studying what to do next, early in the evening the pony express came in from Utah bringing the decision of the Supreme Court of that Territory in favor of the right of Judge Cradlebaugh to hold court; whereupon Judge Flennicken got out upon the street and publicly declared that he was no longer judge. I met him in the

presence of several gentlemen and questioned him personally to know if he would sustain Judge Cradlebaugh. He assured me that he would.

"I then got an order for arrest for contempt for the occupants of the fort and placed it in the hands of the marshal, Blackburn, and retired for the night. The next morning, before the sun was up, Kirkpatrick and Anderson called at my house and told me that Judge Flennicken was on the street claiming to be judge and denying the right of Judge Cradlebaugh. I belted on my pistols and started down town, seeking Judge Flennicken. I met him on the square, now occupied by the State House, in front of Pete Hopkins's saloon. 'Good morning,' he said. 'Good morning.' 'What's the news?' 'Bad news, indeed,' I said. 'They are slandering you. They say that you are claiming to be judge and defying the authority of Judge Cradlebaugh.'

"I told him I anticipated that something might go wrong and had taken the precaution to be deputized by Marshal Blackburn to summon a posse to assist in executing the orders of Judge Cradlebaugh, and that I summoned him to carry a musket and give the lie to the slander that he was usurping the functions of Judge Cradlebaugh.

"He stepped back, and I grabbed him by the collar and jerked him on to his knees, and drawing my pistol told him he would carry a musket in front of me, and there was no evading it. He raised his hands imploringly, saying:

"'Is there no way to avert it?' 'Yes, if you will do as I say,' I replied. He consented by not resisting, and I took him by the coat collar into Flyshacker's store, which was conducted by F. A. Tritle, subsequently Governor of Arizona. There was a telegraph station in the middle of the floor, surrounded by a railing. Pete Lovell was the telegraph operator and was at his post. I told Tritle to write as I dictated. I dictated four or five dispatches for Flennicken to sign, which declared in emphatic terms that he was not judge, that Cradlebaugh was, and his orders must be obeyed. I sent one to Flennicken's marshal of the court, one to his clerk, one to Cradlebaugh's marshal, and several others to prominent men at Silver City.

"I then had Lovell come outside the railing and stand where he could hear the messages in reply, but not where he could touch the wires. News came of consultation of all parties concerned. Finally Lovell said the forces under the marshal of Flennicken's court had surrendered and agreed to accompany Marshal Blackburn to Carson, a distance of about



Tasker L. Oddie.

ten miles. I waited about an hour, when it was announced that Marshal Blackburn and his prisoners were within four miles of Carson, and then had Judge Cradlebaugh open court. As the prisoners were led in I moved their discharge on the ground that they had been misled by a usurper by the name of Flennicken, who falsely pretended to be the judge; that they were good citizens, but they had defied the authority of the court under a mistake, and that I hoped they would be allowed to depart without punishment. Accordingly, Judge Cradlebaugh, acting on my motion, discharged the prisoners.

"Joe Vaughn was a partner of Judge Terry and was managing the business while Judge Terry was in San Francisco. He came to me and requested the privilege of seeing the original dispatches signed by Flennicken. I took him to the telegraph office. He read them and was satisfied that they were genuine.

"The next day Judge Terry arrived. Everybody supposed that he would be very indignant and that something sensational might occur. On the contrary, the Judge came to my office, saluted me good-naturedly as usual, and said that I had taught him and his party a very valuable lesson, never to go to war unless you have your General in your own camp. You had both Generals in your camp and you won the victory,' he said.

"Judge Terry left that evening and proceeded immediately to the Confederate Army, in which he fought bravely until the end of the war."

The appeal in the criminal case mentioned in Senator Stewart's *Memoirs* does not appear in the reports of decisions of the Territorial Court.

From the organization of the Territorial Supreme Court of Utah to the time of the organization of the Territory of Nevada, opinions in but seven cases are in the Utah Reports, but one of which reported cases originated in Carson County.

The case of *Joseph Stone v. Leonard Savage* was tried in the Territorial District Court. It was appealed to the Supreme Court at Salt Lake and is reported in 1 Utah, 35. The decision does not appear to have been rendered until after the Territory of Nevada was created for the report of the case recites: "Appeal from the District Court of Carson County (now in Nevada)." Whether the court, because of this latter fact, had jurisdiction to determine the case was a question which does not appear to have been raised or determined. The reporter's note to this decision

also states: "The names of the attorneys for the respective parties do not appear in the record."

It appears from the opinion in the case that Stone sold Savage a mining claim at Virginia for which Savage "promised verbally to pay \$3,000." To secure this sum a mortgage was given on the property containing a power to sell at public auction. Under this power, Stone subsequently sold the property for \$700, and then brought an action for the balance, \$2,300, alleged to be due on the verbal contract. Judgment was for the plaintiff. Defendant appealed and the judgment was affirmed.

The difficulties which beset those early judges in the performance of their duties is illustrated by the following extract from the opinion:

"We regret that we are compelled to establish a rule without the aid of a single text-book, and with the assistance of but few adjudicated cases."

The Leonard Savage who was a party to the action gave his name to one of the great Comstock mines.

The first case before the Territorial Supreme Court of Utah—The People v. Maroni Green, decided in 1856 (1 Utah, 11)—is of interest, for in that case it was held that section 17 of the Act of Congress creating the Territory, and which provided: "That the Constitution and laws of the United States are hereby extended over and declared to be in force in said Territory of Utah, so far as the same, or any provision thereof, may be applicable"—extended the Common Law over the Territory of Utah.

The opinion was written by Judge Drummond, the same who first held a session of the District Court in Carson County, and we conclude this account of the history of the Bench and Bar of Nevada, under the Utah regime, by quoting the following eloquent passage from the opinion in the Maroni Green case, by one of our earliest jurists:

"The Spirit of the Law, reverence for the age in which we live, and regard for the happiness of unborn millions, as well as a duty paramount to all else which we owe to the Judiciary, forbid that this Court should be the first in America to establish a doctrine so hateful in its features and so repugnant to all the finer feelings of man in an improved and scientific age, and filled with all the blasts and mildews of an ever intelligent and hopeful confiding American Judiciary."

Courts Under Nevada Territory.—By Act of Congress, approved by President Lincoln, March 2, 1861, the Territory of Nevada was created.

So far as the judicial system established under this act was concerned, it was the same as that prescribed in the act creating the Territory of Utah. President Lincoln appointed as Governor of the Territory of Nevada, James W. Nye, of New York, who had previously been a lawyer and a judge of distinction in his native state. Governor Nye arrived at Carson, the capital of the new Territory, July 8, 1861, and nine days later the Governor divided the Territory into three judicial districts.

President Lincoln appointed as Chief Justice of the new Territory, Hon. George Turner and as associate justices, Hon. Gordon N. Mott and Hon. Horatio M. Jones. Their salary was fixed at \$1,800.

The first session of the Territorial Supreme Court was held at Carson, June 2, 1862. With the exception of a recital of two cases which appeared upon the calendar—*People v. Mayfield* and *Grigsby v. Rice*—the following are the minutes of the court for that day:

"Supreme Court of the Territory of Nevada, June Term, A. D. 1862. 1st day, Monday, June 2. Be it remembered, that at a regular term of the Supreme Court of Nevada Territory, begun and held at Carson City, the Capital of said Territory, on this 2d day of June, A. D. 1862, pursuant to Statute, there were present His Honor George Turner, Chief Justice; Gordon N. Mott and H. M. Jones, Associate Justices; J. McC. Reardan, Clerk, and Y. D. Gasherie, Sheriff, and that thereupon the following proceedings were had, to-wit:

"Ordered, that Jos. G. Baldwin, G. W. North, Wm. M. Stewart, J. R. McConnell, ——— Ralston, Jonas Seely, S. F. Gilcrist, T. B. Reardan, Thomas E. Hayden, G. D. Hall, Horace Smith, H. P. Clayton, W. H. Lindsey, Wm. Patterson, J. J. Foster, A. W. Baldwin, J. Neely Johnson, J. J. Musser and Chas. H. S. Williams, be and they are hereby admitted as attorneys and counsellors and solicitors in Chancery of this Court.

"On motion, it was by the Court ordered that Messrs. Jos. G. Baldwin, T. B. Reardan and Chas. H. S. Williams be and they are hereby appointed a Committee to draft and report rules for the government of proceedings in this Court.

* * * * *

"On motion, it was by the Court ordered that Judge Ralston, Wm. M. Stewart and C. H. Bryan be and they are hereby appointed a Committee to examine ——— McBride as to his qualifications to be admitted as an Attorney and Counsellor at Law and Solicitor in Chancery of this Court.

"Ordered, that Court adjourn until June 3d, 1862, at 9 o'clock A. M."

The Territorial Judges were destined to have a stormy career. The following account of the Territorial courts is from the pen of Judge C. N. Harris, twice a District Judge under the State government. (Thompson and West's History of Nevada, 1881.)

"The Governor divided the Territory into three judicial districts and assigned the judges as follows:

"First Judicial District—The County of Carson, including all that portion of Nevada lying west of the 118th degree of longitude west from Greenwich; Gordon N. Mott, Judge.

"Second Judicial District—All that portion of the Territory lying between the 117th and 111th degrees of longitude; George Turner, Judge.

"Third Judicial District—All that portion of the Territory lying east of the 117th degree of longitude; Horatio M. Jones, Judge."

Thus was established the first regular beginning of that judicial history which is distinctively Nevadan, and disconnects it from the influence of the Mormon Church in Utah, although it should be here remarked that Judge Cradlebaugh made for himself a national reputation by his firm attitude in opposition to the Mormon power during his term of judicial administration. The newly organized Territorial courts, especially the First Judicial District, commenced the administration of justice under conditions that were novel and, in some respects, anomalous. The court for the First District was held principally at Virginia City, and the litigation was, in the main, the outgrowth of conflicting claims to mining properties, that were held to represent enormous values. The questions involved were largely determinable by a sort of common law, or the custom of miners in mining districts. The ablest representatives of the California bar, in those times, flocked to Virginia City, and were, without exception, prominent in the forensic discussions that were almost continually occupying the courts. In those days the law concerning mineral-bearing ledges, their location, possession and development, was largely formulated and ultimately received the substantial recognition of approving Congressional legislation. The trial of many causes was the scene of almost continual excitement. The stock boards of San Francisco and Virginia were often tremendously swayed by the result of judicial rulings. Perjury was conceded to be common, and the bribery of witnesses and juries was spoken of as notorious. It was impossible that the judges

should escape the suspicion, and even the open charge of being corrupt. The peculiar conformation of the giant lode, known as the Comstock, occasioned two antagonizing theories, which struggled for the legal ascendancy. They were respectively known as the "one-ledge" and "two-ledge" theories. The excitement in the legal circles among the litigants culminated in the year 1863.

Judge Mott Succeeded by Judge North.—Judge Mott resigned and Hon. J. W. North, who was the first Surveyor General of Nevada, was appointed by President Lincoln as his successor in the First District, and continued in office until Nevada was admitted into the Union in October, 1864. He was accused of corruption by Hon. W. M. Stewart, afterwards United States Senator. This resulted in a law suit for libel with a claim for \$100,000 damages, which was tried by referees in 1865, who rendered a judgment exonerating Judge North and found the accusations of Stewart to be without any basis of fact.

The One-ledge and Two-ledge Theories.—During this period of continued activity and excitement in the courts, the "one-ledge" and "two-ledge" theories alternated in obtaining ascendancy. The decisions were not uniform—no one case seemed to be authoritative in the next—although at the close of 1864 the "two-ledge" party seemed the rather to prevail. It is a question that has not even yet (1881) been finally determined, although the system of United States patents for mining ground and ledges, conjoined with the consolidated ownership in a few persons of many of the conflicting claims, has reduced the question to one of vastly less practical importance. Indeed, it may now in a general way be asserted as the prevailing notion, that the so-called Comstock lode is a gigantic deposit, or upheaval, of vein or mineral-bearing matter of indefinite width eastwardly from Mt. Davidson, and of an unknown extent in length north and south. Its superficial or surface indications are irregular, and often lead to the supposition that there are a series of parallel veins, but through explorations at profound depths, this idea is in the main dispelled. Of course, the attention of our courts has always been drawn to a line of civil questions similar to those arising in any other community, but as mining is the main resource for the prosperity of the State, just so has so-called mining law always maintained the ascendancy.

Changes of Prosecuting Attorneys.—In 1861, Hon. Dighton Corsen was appointed the Prosecuting Attorney for the First District, Carson

County, and Hon. Marcus D. Larrowe for the Second District. In 1862, Hon. E. B. Zabriskie was appointed Prosecuting Attorney for the Third District, and continued in office from March till November 17, of that year, when he resigned to enter the army as one of the Nevada Volunteers, where he was appointed upon the staff of General P. E. Connor as Judge Advocate, with the rank of Captain. He was succeeded in the office of Prosecuting Attorney by Hon. Franklin H. Kennedy. In May, 1863, Hon. John J. Musser was appointed District or Prosecuting Attorney to succeed Hon. Marcus D. Larrowe, who resigned.

Homily Upon Nevada Courts.—After the Territorial courts were once organized, the course of legal procedure in Nevada Territory was characterized by a regularity and certainty that was a vast improvement upon the desultory methods and plans of administering justice that had obtained under the Mormon regime. There was a binding force to the organic law of the Territory and the Acts of the Legislature, that at once justified a larger measure of wished for tranquillity, especially in the mining camps, than had heretofore been possible.

But, as already remarked, the vast values that were constantly the subject of judicial action, caused immense friction and distrust. The judges were the victims of open charges of bribery and the determinations of the courts and juries were seldom received in good faith by those who had not prevailed. The prime cause of this dissatisfaction was the recklessness and assurance with which witnesses were induced to commit perjury, and the acknowledged fact that many who sat on juries were to a moral certainty subject to the seductions of money rewards. In fact, a general demoralization of the public mind had so far gained ground that it was scarcely to be wondered at that the courts were unable to enforce the authority and respect due to the law no matter how honorable might be the personal character of the judges. It was especially "on the Comstock," a sense of reckless greed for the making of fortunes, and no consideration stood in the way of its realization.

In the First District, Judge Mott retired, and Hon J. W. North was, in 1863, appointed to succeed him. He was a man of honorable character and his personal history had been unexceptionable, but his career was characterized by as savage and bitter attacks from members of

the bar and litigants as had been the case during the incumbency of his predecessor.

Hon. William M. Stewart, afterwards one of the United States Senators from Nevada, was especially prominent in charges of corrupt conduct on the part of Judge North. The latter resigned in the summer of 1864. In August of that year forty-nine members of the bar met at Virginia and agreed by a vote of twenty-six against twenty-one for Hon. H. O. Beatty, and two for Hon. C. M. Brosnan, to support Hon. R. S. Messick as a candidate for the Presidential appointment to succeed Judge North. The appointment of North's successor was never made by the President. The Constitution of Nevada had already been framed, and on the first Wednesday of the following month of September the Constitution was adopted by the people of the Territory. Hon. Horatio M. Jones, prior to the formation of the State government, had resigned, and Hon. E. B. Locke had been appointed as his successor. Provision had been made for an election of a full set of State officers on the first Tuesday after the first Monday of the following November. The State was admitted by proclamation of President Lincoln prior to that election, and the Statehood of the then Territory was to all interests an accomplished fact.

Among the reminders of the legal turmoil that had embittered both Bench and Bar during the Territorial days, was a suit by Judge North against Senator Stewart for \$100,000 damages for libel. This suit was brought in Washoe County before the District Court in the spring of 1865, and was tried before referees at Virginia, on stipulation of the parties, the damage being waived. The findings of the referees were favorable to the plaintiff and adverse to the defendant on all points.

The course of judicial government in the central and eastern settlements of the Territory was much more quiet and regular, although there were not wanting fierce charges of judicial corruption. Austin, or "Reese River," was a mining camp of some pretensions in those days, but not so productive of litigation as the Comstock lode.

The fabulous wealth of the Comstock mines was the occasion for many law suits. It would seem from contemporaneous writers that the cases involving the principal mines reeked with criminations and recriminations of bribery and perjury. According to William M. Stewart, who was leading counsel on one side of all the principal cases

tried, the estimated expense of litigation over the mines "rose to the enormous sum of \$10,000,000." Senator Stewart stated that he received during four years of litigation over these mines fees in the modest sum of \$500,000.

The following is Senator Stewart's own account of a portion of that litigation, with his comments on the courts and his part in the resignation of the Territorial judges:

"One of the leading controversies with regard to the Comstock lode arose between the Chollar and the Potosi. The Chollar was the old location and the Potosi the parallel location on the east. The Potosi entered upon the Chollar mine; the Chollar brought suit and recovered judgment.

"After judgment was obtained by the Chollar, the Potosi sunk down on the dip of the vein and claimed the ore as a separate lead. The Chollar again brought suit, and undoubtedly would have recovered if there had not been a change of judges. I quote again from Mr. Elliot Lord's 'History of the Comstock':

" 'Potosi stock, which had rallied somewhat, suffered another sharp decline, but the managers of the company were by no means disposed to give up the contest. A shaft was sunk accordingly, outside the eastern boundary surface line of the Chollar Company, and a deposit of rich ore was soon reached. The contention was instantly renewed, and cross suits were instituted by both companies. The managers of the Potosi Company believed that Judge Gordon N. Mott was biased in favor of the claims of the Chollar Company, and as the Chief Justice, George Turner, was accounted a Chollar partisan, they resolved to change the constitution of the bench by inducing Judge Mott to resign and obtaining the appointment of James W. North, a lawyer who was known to have a different opinion as to the rightfulness of their claims. How this plan was carried out was bluntly stated by the *Virginia City Territorial Enterprise*, July 26, 1864, fully endorsed by the *Gold Hill News* of the same date, and subsequently confirmed by the decision of referees in a libel suit instituted December 6, 1864: "We assert that Judge North's place on the bench was bought for him. The price paid was \$25,000. The payee was Gordon N. Mott. The person paying it was John Atchison, in behalf of the Potosi Company. We believe that there was some flimsy pretext of railroad business which glossed over the payment of the money to Mott, but it will not be pretended that the object of paying Mott was any other than to get North on the bench." "



Ray. H. H. H. H. H.

"Whether the appointment of North was bought with an understanding that he belonged to the litigators who bought him, or whether he had a peculiar mind is immaterial. Every decision he rendered in every case over which he presided, except one, exhibited evidence of a strong bias against the owners of the Comstock claim in the litigation with regard to the Potosi; while the court subsequently held that a judgment in favor of the Chollar stopped the Chollar from what was recovered by that same judgment. This may look paradoxical, but it was North's idea of justice.

"Judge Locke, who was put on the bench soon after North, was probably the most ignorant man who ever acted in any judicial capacity in any part of the world. While the case was being argued in the Supreme Court as to whether the Chollar was entitled to what it had won by the judgment of the court, Locke met an old friend from Missouri who was driving an ox-team, and undertook to explain to him before some bystanders the question that was before the Supreme Court. His explanation was as follows:

"'You see, the Potosi fellows say the Chollar fellows ought to be stopped and that they have no right to sue. Now, don't you think if anybody wants to sue, they have got a right to sue?'

"And the teamster said he did. But, notwithstanding the sound advice given him by the teamster, Locke decided both ways several times in that important question.

"I do not wish to revive old scandals; besides, if I did, it would take several volumes to tell all I know of the three judges who resigned in one day at my suggestion, the details of which I will briefly state:

"There was an extension north from the Potosi, called the North Potosi. It was a long claim lying parallel to the Hale and Norcross, the Savage, the Gould and Curry, and extending to some point below the Consolidated Virginia.

"A suit had been brought by the Savage Company against the North Potosi, and was one of the long-pending suits which had not been brought to trial. Immediately after the appointment of North, William R. Garrison and other speculative capitalists in San Francisco, bought up the North Potosi and boomed the stock from \$2 or \$3 to \$100 a share. It was impossible for the Savage Company to get a continuance, and the trial was had before Judge North as soon as possible after his appointment. I had for an assistant in that case, R. P. Crittenden, an eminent

lawyer from Kentucky, who afterward met with a violent death at the hands of the notorious Laura Fair.

"There was great difficulty in obtaining a jury to try the case, because every man with sufficient intelligence to sit upon the jury had committed himself on one side or the other of the controversy. To my great astonishment, men came forward who had been active in litigation involving the question under consideration, and declared they had no opinion, bias or prejudice. Eight of the jurors whom I was compelled to accept I knew very well were violent partisans of the opposite side. Four, whom I knew to be men of character and sterling worth, confessed that they entertained an opinion that there were several parallel ledges in the Comstock formation, but they said in answer to my questions that they had no bias or prejudice that would prevent them from deciding according to law and the evidence. I realized that both the law and the evidence were on my side, because the Savage and the North Potosi were clearly connected in the same body of ore.

"I introduced witnesses to prove the title to the Savage, and that the Potosi was working in the body of ore which everybody conceded belonged to the Savage.

"The case of the plaintiffs was not a long or a difficult one, but a most disgraceful incident occurred when the defendant's counsel called their first witness. His name was Richard Brown, a person I knew very well, who had been deputy sheriff in Sierra County at the time of the trial of Ellis. The day before the trial Brown came to my office in company with Joe Stow, a sharp, slippery manipulator. Stow stated that if Brown could be induced to stay he would give very valuable testimony in favor of the Savage, and that if I would give him \$500 he would stay, because he would lose that much by neglecting business which he had in a distant town. Knowing that he could give no testimony of any value to either side, I told him he had better go and attend to his business.

"He then went to Bob Morrow, who was at that time superintending the Savage mine, and told him he would give very damaging testimony against the Savage, but that if he would give him \$500 he would go away and not give the testimony. Bob Morrow, very inconsiderately and without consulting me, gave him the money.

"When called as a witness, Brown came forward very pompously and said that before he testified he desired to deposit in court \$500 which the superintendent of the Savage had given him if he would leave and not

give his testimony. I appreciated, from my knowledge of the parties and the circumstances, that it was a trick, and that he had been paid for performing it, but my associate, Mr. Crittenden, very nearly fainted.

"I was sitting near enough to him to grasp his arm, and if I didn't make it black and blue I know I gave him great pain, for he evinced considerable agony. I whispered to him to say nothing until court adjourned for dinner. During the noon recess I told him I believed Dick Brown got \$1,500 for playing that trick; but that did not restore his nerve.

"I saw from the conduct of the eight jurors and the pleasure they expressed at Brown's trick that they were in the game also. I was confident that they were bribed. The jury, after it was panelled, was kept separate in a room in charge of a little deputy who was a noted horse jockey.

"His name at that time was Billy Brown. I determined to ascertain from Billy Brown how the jury had been bribed. It would naturally be performed through him, as he was the very kind of a man they would use. I knew, however, that Billy would not dare tell me unless his safety was secured. He knew that if he let out the secret he would not live to old age.

"There was a celebrated old racehorse in the town and as soon as court had adjourned I sent a man to buy the horse for \$500, saddled and bridled it, and had it tied under my office window.

"I then hunted up Brown, and took him *volens volens* to my room, locked the door and told him I wanted a private conversation with him.

"If you tell me what pay each juror has received, the conversation which has passed and the kind of money paid, I will give you as much money as you paid the jury," I said.

"Don't ask me such a question. I would be killed if I told," he replied.

"Look down there; do you see what horse that is? If you were on that horse do you think anybody could catch you?"

"Not on your life!" said the jockey.

"I had provided myself with \$14,000 in greenbacks, on which there was a slight discount, but this was before greenbacks were very low. I took the money from my pocket. His eyes glistened, and with a foxy grin he told me how he had bribed eight members of the jury, paying them \$13,000; the kind of money he had paid to each, and how much, and where the transactions took place; and he also repeated quite accurately

what each juror had said. Four of the twelve he had not dared to approach.

"When he had finished his story, which occupied fully an hour, I handed him the \$14,000. Brown grabbed the money, ran down the stairs, and without waiting to go to his home to change his clothes, jumped on the racehorse and galloped away. Maybe he played jockey again, but if he ever did he must have changed his name. Anyhow, I never heard of Billy Brown after that.

"The testimony for the defense was not lengthy and was concluded the next day. The day following the argument commenced. Crittenden opened with a very lame statement.

"Three able lawyers made strong speeches for the Potosi. They were Jim Hardy, one of the leading attorneys in mining cases on the Pacific coast; Frank Hereford, who was afterward United States Senator from West Virginia, and Todd Robinson, their star attorney, who concluded.

"He had a habit of winding up an argument by fainting away and falling on the floor before a jury. He could play that trick so well that anybody would swear it was the real thing.

"As he reached the climax he swayed about, grabbed at the air, and fell flat on his back. The effect was electrical. The great mass of the people filling the courtroom were interested in the many-ledge theory, and were crazed with joy at the apparent complete triumph of their case.

"I waited a moment for the restoration of order, and then proceeded. It so happened that the four jurors who had not been corrupted were at my left, near the end of the bench, toward the judge. The other eight were sitting together at the other end of the jury-box. I walked up to the most remote juror, looked at him a minute—I presume with an earnest expression, for I *was* in earnest—and told him in distinct language how a juror might be bribed. I illustrated it by repeating the conversation that had taken place between him and Billy Brown, telling him the place, the amount and kind of money, and all the details of his corruption.

"Frank Hereford, who had apparently fainted away, sprang to his feet and protested against my manner of addressing the jury.

"I turned to the judge and demanded that he should look at that juror and tell me if my argument was not in order. By that time everybody was looking at the juror, who fell back in his seat, pale and trembling. The judge, taken by surprise, said in a low tone, 'Go on.'

"I then addressed the next juror, and the next, until I completed the panel of the eight, giving every detail of the bribery. Before I concluded the eight were so agitated and prostrated that everybody knew they had been bribed. I then took a map and proceeded to discuss the merits of the case with the other four jurors. I said:

"Gentlemen of the jury, you truthfully said on your oath before you were sworn in as jurors, that you could render a verdict according to the law and evidence, and here is the evidence. Both companies are working in the same vein; the Savage is the prior location, and whether there are many or few ledges, the Potosi is certainly on the ledge of the Savage. But this jury will never discuss this matter in the jury-box; you four will never discuss it with the eight; you see the reason why.'

"The jury went out and within an hour they were called in. They informed the court they never would agree, and never would discuss the subject together, and they were discharged. Three of the jurors, one after another, rushed to my office and begged me not to prosecute them. I simply told them to go home and attend to their business.

"The Potosi stock fell to some five or six dollars a share the next day, and I telegraphed to my clients to secure a majority of the stock, which they did. That was the last great struggle between the Comstock and the parallel ledges. There were, however, various settlements, but nothing affecting the main question. The Comstock people having control of the North Potosi, that company consented that the controversy between it and the Gould and Curry, which lay north of the Savage, should be submitted to John Nugent as referee. He heard at length the testimony as to whether or not the porphyry belt contained more than one lode, and he made a report, demonstrating by conclusive proof and argument the one-ledge theory. His report is given at length in the book of Mr. Gordon of Clarence King's Geological Survey party.

"Judge North partially regained my confidence by his fairness in the trial of the Savage against the North Potosi. It is true he had very little opportunity to be unfair, for if he had stopped me in my argument to the jury, with the one jurymen already fainting, the effect on him would have been disastrous.

"I could not afford to wink at any act of bribery or corruption perpetrated by any of my clients on the Comstock. If the community had really become suspicious of my honesty, my lease on life would have

been short, and my clients would have been overwhelmed, because nine-tenths of the community were interested in parallel vein locations. Judge North, aside from the question of his appointment to office, was, to say the least, a very indiscreet man. He built a quartz mill with money borrowed from litigants. He crushed ore for the Comstock companies, particularly the Gould and Curry, and was continually demanding better ore out of which he could make more money.

"To save myself and my clients from reproach, I denounced North publicly as a dishonest judge, and my charges were reiterated in the public press. I also denounced the Chief Justice, George Turner, as corrupt. As for Judge Locke, he was too ignorant for denunciation. Partisans of the judges defended them in the public press, but in turn they were overwhelmed with counter-charges.

Finally a notice was published that the Supreme Court would meet on a certain Monday, and that it would strike my name from the bar. It so happened that Abe Meyer, who was a money-lender and a remarkably bright business man, frequented my office, and in emergencies, such as the Sierra Nevada against the American, he furnished me money to prepare for the trial. It was paid by the company with a good commission. It was very convenient to have an emergency man in those times.

"About two months before this notice appeared, some parties entered upon the Hale and Norcross, of which Meyer was president, without any show of title, and began removing ore. I brought suit for an injunction which was readily granted by Chief Justice Turner. The suit was so simple and the injunction so absolutely proper that no one would have supposed it necessary to bribe the judge, but I was sufficiently familiar with the greed of Judge Turner to entertain a different opinion.

"When I received the notice that I would be disbarred I told Meyer I wanted an affidavit with the exhibits showing that he paid Turner for the Hale and Norcross injunction. He hesitated, and I told him that it was necessary for me to have them. He said, 'I sees if I gets 'em,' and went out. He came back in about three minutes with a receipt signed by Turner for \$2,000 and a check drawn in favor of Judge Turner for \$3,000, and endorsed by him, making a total of \$5,000 paid for the injunction.

"I drew an affidavit and attached the receipt and check as exhibits. When the court met at Carson, I appeared at the bar with Meyer

standing beside me, and I occasionally pulled out the affidavit and some other documents I had and looked them over, and looked up at the court.

"As soon as the judges were seated on the bench, Judge North announced his resignation. Judge Turner then announced that court would take a recess until seven o'clock that evening. He sent word to me that if I would let up on him he would resign. I sent back word that he must put his resignation in a letter addressed to the President, and also in a telegraphic dispatch; that he must put both in an unsealed envelope and deliver them to me before he went on the bench, or I would swear out a warrant before the justice of the peace and have him arrested for bribery. He sent the resignations as demanded. I mailed one and telegraphed the other.

"At seven o'clock Judge Turner came into court and made a self-glorifying speech in which he reviewed his course and spoke of his kindly relations with all the bar, and his pleasant judicial duties. He said that inasmuch as the resignation of Judge North had destroyed the usefulness of the court for business, he would resign, and the bystanders gave him room to go out.

"I thought it was about time for me to express my appreciation of the situation, so I invited the bar, over one hundred being present, to an evening's entertainment. It was then nearly eight o'clock. Pete Hopkins's saloon was under the room where the court was held, and there was a very large back-room in which various entertainments took place, such as dances and other festivities not quite so respectable. We gathered in there and elected H. P. Beatty president of the meeting, as he was the oldest man in the party.

"After the champagne and other good things were brought in and the party was drinking, smoking and telling stories, I stated to the president that it was in order to call Judge Locke and allow him to resign. I knew very well that Judge Locke would avoid appearance if possible, so I moved that two young lawyers, physically strong and endowed with a reasonable amount of courage, be appointed as a committee to fetch him to the meeting. 'If he is locked in his room,' said I, 'locks can be broken.'

"They found him in his room, dressed him hurriedly and seated him on a bench by my side. Judge Beatty in fatherly language told him that the object of the meeting was to give him an opportunity to

resign; that the other two judges had resigned and that we wanted a new bench.

"Locke turned to me for advice and asked what I thought he ought to do.

"'Do?' said I. 'Resign, and do it quickly!' I called to one of the gentlemen who was serving the good things to appease the appetite to bring pen and ink. 'Now,' I added, 'write your resignation.'

"It was read aloud, to be sure that it was all right, signed and mailed; after which the whole meeting became hilarious and Judge Locke imbibed so freely that he became more stupid than usual.

"The condition of the judiciary was a very potent argument in favor of State government. The administration at Washington undertook to appoint more Territorial judges, and President Lincoln nominated John F. Swift for Chief Justice. I called a meeting of the bar and passed resolutions to the effect that we wanted no more courts until Nevada became a State. We were tired of Territorial judges.

"Swift, under the circumstances, declined to accept the position, but said he would get even by writing a book exhibiting the condition and character of the Nevada bar. He wrote the book, which was humorous and reasonably good-natured, and styled it 'Robert Greathouse.' The soubriquet which he gave me was rather high-sounding, being Mr. Napoleon B. Spelter. He made me one of the heroes of his novel, although I am unable to appreciate his flattery. Afterward I became well acquainted with him as a public man and a gentleman. He was for a long time Minister to Japan."

The following appears as a part of the minutes of the Territorial Supreme Court for Monday, August 22, 1864, and concludes the minute entries made by that court:

"SUPREME COURT, AUGUST SESSION, 1864.

"Monday, August 22d, 1864.

* * *

"RESIGNATION OF CHIEF JUSTICE TURNER.

"Judge North having given notice of his resignation during the afternoon session of said Court, at the opening of the evening session of the same, Chief Justice Turner said to the Bar from his place as follows:

"'This Court has been emasculated by the resignation of one of its

members, at the previous session,—this was entirely new and unexpected to me. I never heard of Judge North's design to resign until today and his resignation has placed the Court in a new condition. This tribunal consists, when full, of only three members, the lowest number to which the majority rule can apply. One of our number has left us, he declines to participate further in our judicial action here; two judges cannot conduct this court. Counsel have publicly here objected to the hearing of their causes by only two judges. In this I think they are right—a divided bench consisting of two can decide nothing.

“This is the last term of this Court; before the next term provided for by law the new judiciary under the State government will sit.

“In this state of facts it is evident that the usefulness of this Court is at an end; for the judges to remain and pretend to act as we are now left is an empty form; by the resignation of one more of our number the business will not be retarded, nor will the public suffer any inconvenience. We cannot do the business here as we are now left.

“I have served upon this bench for nearly four years, faithfully, as I believe, and I am happy to know that, no matter how other districts may be situated as to their business, the duties of my Judicial District have been regularly held, every case has been tried as fast as they were gotten ready for trial, no cause is at issue in my district and awaiting trial; all are disposed of. The public, I am assured, is fully satisfied and no complaints from any quarter in my district have been made. As a member of this Court, and its presiding officer, I am pleased to state that all the business of this Court has been regularly and fully done.

“In this state of the case I have concluded of my own motion to resign my place upon this bench. I have notified no one of this determination until this occasion; you are the first persons to receive this notice, and the conditions in which the Court is left, as I have before stated, are the reasons and the only ones that govern me in my action. I never dreamed of taking this course until this day and since the action of my associate.

“I wish further to express to you gentlemen of the bar my sincere thanks for the uniform kindness and courtesy which you have all extended to me for the past three years, even in the difficult and often heated controversies which my duty has required me to adjust with you—a courtesy I may say which exceeds that ordinarily extended.

“I therefore have concluded to give you notice of my intention to

resign my position and that I shall therefore no longer participate in the proceedings of this Court.

"The business of my own district, until my successor is appointed, qualified and on the ground ready to discharge the duties of the position, I shall endeavor to take care of, as far as I can, so that the public may not suffer by my resignation.

"Again I thank you, gentlemen.

"(Signed) 'GEO. TURNER,
'Chf. Jus. N. T.'

"Court adjourned sine die."

The minutes of the Territorial Supreme Court disclose that a comparatively large number of appealed cases were considered and disposed of. In some of the more important of these cases opinions were written and published in the press. None of these opinions are on file with the Clerk of the State Supreme Court, and whether they are now in existence anywhere is unknown. Neither does there appear to be in existence copies of the newspapers in which they were published. James McC. Reardan was Clerk of the Court from its organization until July, 1863, when Alfred Helm was appointed and served until the court went out of existence. About the time of the appointment of Helm, Thomas Fitch, a member of the bar, was appointed Reporter of the Supreme Court. Fitch was at that time acting editor of the *Union*, published at Virginia. Under the rules the Court Reporter was entitled to the original opinions and briefs.

The question of the disposal of these opinions and the matter of authenticity of printed copies in the possession of Judge Turner was investigated by a special committee of the Senate of the first session of the State Legislature. Senator W. H. Claggett, a lawyer and member from Storey County, was chairman of this committee. The testimony of the two clerks and Judge Turner was taken by this committee and is reported in full in "Appendix to Senate Journal, First Session." Mr. Reardan, in his testimony before the committee, recounted the troubles which beset his office as follows:

"I do not know where those opinions are now. I have never seen them since they were handed over to my successor. I never recorded any of them for the reason that I had no facilities for so doing.

"Everything was done loosely in the Supreme Court; no rules of the court were observed or enforced when I was clerk.

"No office was furnished me, except for six, or perhaps seven, months. The Legislature refused to audit and pay my accounts for books, stationery, tables and seal."

The report of the committee found on pages 200, 201, of the Senate Journal of the First Session concludes:

"Your committee would further report that the result of their investigations exonerated the Hon. George Turner, late Chief Justice of the Territory of Nevada, from all censure; that all statements, wherever and whenever made, to the effect that he had, at any time, improperly obtained possession of the original opinions of the Supreme Court of said Territory, are unsustained, and that the copies of such opinions now in his possession, and which he proposes to publish, under the sanction and by the authority of the State, are correct copies of the opinions actually rendered by said court."

Among the more prominent law firms practicing before the Territorial courts may be mentioned Stewart, Kirkpatrick & Rising; Johnson & Baldwin; Bryan & Foster; Smith, Clayton & Lansing; Brumfield & Gilchrist; Anderson & Lansing; Ralston & Griffith; McConnell & Reardan; Platt & Davenport. Other lawyers of prominence include the names of Charles H. Williams, J. W. North, Thomas E. Haydon, Wm. Haydon, James Hardey, J. J. Musser, Samuel Sankey, H. O. Beatty, C. N. Brosnan and Thomas Fitch.

It may be said, relative to the Territorial judges, that few judges in history were ever confronted with more stupendous problems than those with which these judges had to deal. The volume of court business was immense. Many cases involving millions of dollars in mining properties presented new questions of law, for at that time there were no Federal statutes dealing with the subject of mines.

The State Courts.—President Lincoln having, on the 31st day of October, 1864, issued his proclamation declaring Nevada a State, an election was held, pursuant to the provisions of the Constitution, November 8, 1864. At that election, C. M. Brosnan, H. O. Beatty, J. F. Lewis, W. E. McKinsty, W. C. Wallace and J. R. McConnell were candidates for Justices of the Supreme Court. The first three named were elected as Republicans. The other candidates were Democrats.

On the first Monday of December, 1864, the first Judges of the Supreme Court were sworn in and entered upon the discharge of their duties. The

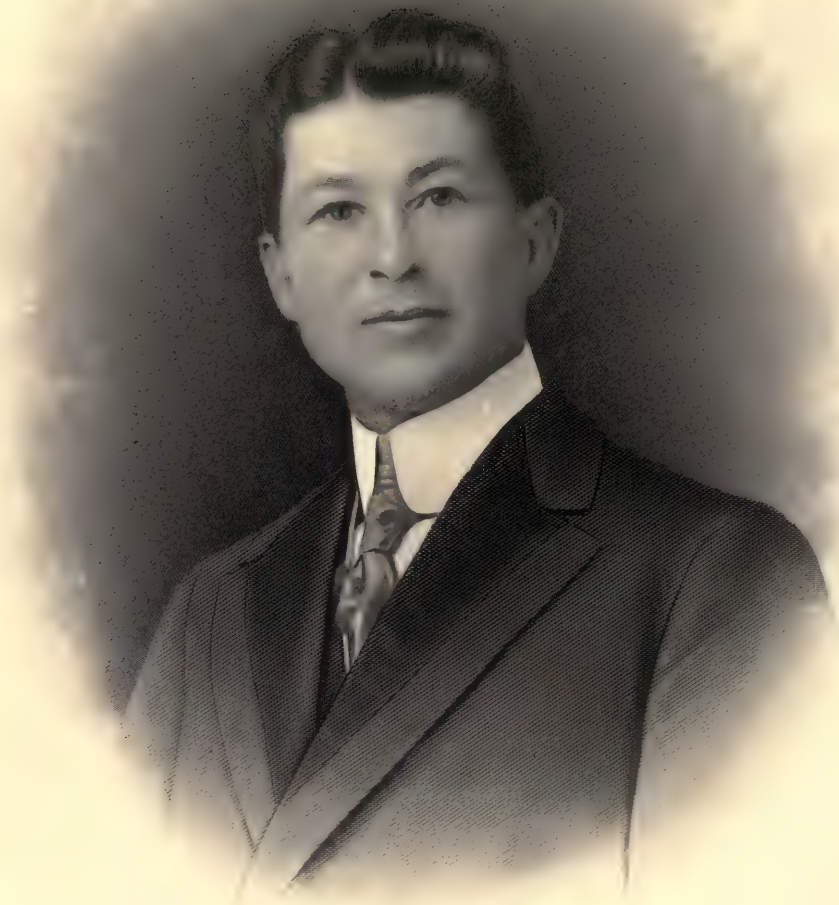
first regular term of the Supreme Court was held in January, 1865. Other officers of the court were Alfred Helm, Clerk, and George A. Nourse, Attorney-General.

By the provisions of the Constitution, the first three justices elected were to determine by lot their respective terms of two, four and six years. Thereafter at each general election, a justice was to be chosen for six years. It was further provided that the justice drawing the shortest term should be Chief Justice and thereafter the one having the next shortest term should be Chief Justice, after which the senior justice in commission should be Chief Justice. Judge Lewis drew the short term and became the first Chief Justice. Judge Lewis has the distinction of being the youngest man ever elected to the Supreme Court and the youngest Chief Justice, he not having attained his twenty-ninth year when he assumed the duties of his important office. Judge Lewis was a native of Wales, where he was born May 4, 1836. He was re-elected in 1866 and retired from the bench in 1873 to enter the practice of the law. His death occurred suddenly and unexpectedly while engaged in the active duties of his profession on August 17, 1886. Judge Lewis was possessed of a good education and had an exceptionally keen legal mind. Upon his death a high tribute was paid to his ability and personal character by his successors on the bench, which was summed up in the following sentence: "An able and upright judge, an honest lawyer, a good citizen, he commanded and retained the confidence and respect of his fellow men."

H. O. Beatty, who drew the four-year term, was an example of splendid, rugged and sterling American manhood. He had for a number of years been a prominent member of the Sacramento Bar before the lure of the Comstock brought him to Nevada. Past fifty years of age, he brought to the bench a mind trained from years of experience upon the Pacific Coast. Like his associates, the purity of his character, together with his legal ability, commanded the respect and confidence of the bar. Judge Beatty was not a candidate for re-election and resigned November 9, 1868, about two months before his term expired. Judge B. C. Whitman, who was elected his successor, was appointed to fill out the unexpired term. Judge Beatty later had the satisfaction of seeing his son, W. H. Beatty, elevated to the Supreme Bench.

Judge B. C. Whitman was elected in 1868 to succeed Justice Beatty,





Eng. by E. C. Williams & Co. N.Y.

James G. Sweeney

defeating R. H. Taylor. He served one term and was succeeded by the son of the man he had succeeded. The following extracts from the pen of Judge C. C. Goodwin, a pioneer lawyer, judge and journalist of Nevada, portraying Judge Whitman as he remembered him, are worthy of record here:

"So far as I could ever see, there was not one flaw in the character of Judge Whitman. A gentleman, a gentleman always; educated, refined, so exalted in his integrity that it was never questioned; * * *

"He practiced law many years in Virginia City in those years when gladiators in the profession met in the arena and fought to the limit, and held his own there. * * *

"When elected to the Supreme Bench and he took his seat, it seemed to those who watched him as though the seat had long been waiting for him, so natural was it to think of him as a judge.

"I do not think he was as profound a lawyer as Judge Mesick, or C. J. Hillyer, or General Charles H. Williams, but he was great enough to have the perfect confidence of the whole bar, not only in his perfect integrity, but in his knowledge and his utter absence of prejudice."

Upon retiring from the bench, Judge Whitman went to San Francisco and there entered upon the practice of the law. He died very suddenly August 5, 1885.

Cornelius M. Brosnan was a native of Ireland, born in 1813. For four years he attended Maynooth College in his native land. In 1831 he came to America and twenty years later located in California. In 1863 he came to Nevada. He died in office, April 21, 1867. In announcing his death to the Supreme Court, Robert M. Clarke, then Attorney-General, paid an eloquent tribute to his character, from which the following passages are selected:

"He reached Virginia when the tide was receding. Reaction had punctured the balloon and the inflation was rapidly subsiding. The legitimate ground of the profession was preoccupied. Besides, at that day, the practice of the law had to some extent degenerated into the practice of villainy. Chicanery won more suits than eloquence and learning, and bribery and corruption more than solid merit. Judge Brosnan honored his profession and scorned these practices. He would have perished a beggar in the streets rather than dishonor his calling. A pettifogger shocked him; his high sense of honor revolted at a trick. No man in

Nevada is more highly, favorably or intimately identified with our political and judicial history than Cornelius M. Brosnan. In this respect he was a pioneer. He assisted in planning and completing our political edifice; he was a master mechanic, laid the foundation and erected the superstructure. As a member of the convention that framed the Constitution of Nevada, he rendered the people invaluable service and won for himself an enviable distinction. As chairman of the Judiciary Committee, he first originated and then enforced our present system of judiciary. His learning and judgment were promptly recognized, and his opinions were to a great extent adopted by the convention. His genius engrafted itself upon our fundamental law, which will forever stand a monument to his memory.

"Nevada became a State to escape the deadfall of her Territorial courts. Her Temple of Justice had been transformed into a den of iniquity, from which the ermine seldom escapes untainted, and justice never unscathed. An outraged public, writhing in the fury of its indignation, cried aloud for reform. An honest court, composed of men as solid, as pure, as incorruptible as unalloyed and polished gold, was demanded. The public demand was satisfied in the selection of Cornelius Brosnan. To receive a nomination and election for Justice of the Supreme Court, at such a moment and under such circumstances, was indeed a splendid tribute to his judicial ability and purity."

J. Neely Johnson was appointed to the vacancy created by the death of Justice Brosnan. Justice Johnson was a lawyer of distinction and ability. He had been Lieutenant-Governor of California before coming to Nevada. He was chosen president of the Constitutional Convention of 1861, in which capacity he rendered the State invaluable service. The Legislature of 1866 appointed him a commissioner to prepare and report a civil practice act, the ground work of said act to be the Civil Practice acts of the States of New York and California. For this service he was allowed \$3,000. The Act of 1869 was the result of his labors, and it was not materially changed until the adoption of the Code of 1912.

In 1868 he was elected to fill out the unexpired term of Justice Brosnan, but was not a candidate to succeed himself.

At the election of 1870, John Garber defeated J. S. Slawson and succeeded Justice Johnson on the bench. Justice Garber was the first Democrat to be elected a member of the Supreme Court. He was a

native of the State of Virginia and a graduate of its university. He came to Nevada in 1863, locating at Austin, where he formed a law partnership with George S. Hupp. He served less than two years upon the bench, resigning November 7, 1872, to enter the practice of his profession. He died at his home at Berkeley, California, December 13, 1908, the acknowledged leader of the California Bar.

Judge C. H. Belknap was appointed by Governor Bradley to succeed Justice Garber.

At the election of 1872, Judge Thomas P. Hawley was elected to succeed Justice Lewis, defeating W. M. Seawell. Justice Hawley was re-elected in 1878 and again in 1884, defeating Fred W. Cole and W. M. Seawell, respectively. Justice Hawley, the Chief Justice, resigned September 27, 1890, to accept the appointment of U. S. District Judge, Ninth Circuit, District of Nevada, made by President Harrison. Judge Hawley served upon the State and Federal bench for nearly thirty-five years, the time being divided almost equally between the two courts. For many years he was assigned to sit upon the Federal Court of Appeals, which held its sessions in San Francisco. An imperishable monument to the learning and ability of Judge Hawley is to be found in the many opinions he wrote during his long service. History will accord him a place among the really great judges of America. Judge Hawley was a native of Indiana, where he was born in July, 1830. He died October 17, 1907, in the full possession of his faculties, and was buried beneath the sunny skies of the State which honored and was honored by him.

At the general election of 1874, W. H. Beatty was elected to succeed Justice B. C. Whitmore, defeating A. M. Hillhouse, and Warner Earll was elected to fill out the balance of the unexpired term of John Garber, defeating Justice C. H. Belknap, the incumbent. Judge Beatty was the son of H. O. Beatty, one of the first justices, and a lawyer of marked ability. In the political revolution which occurred in 1880 he was defeated for re-election by Judge C. H. Belknap. Justice Beatty was destined, however, not to remain long without judicial honors. Having moved to California in the meantime, he was elected in 1888, Chief Justice of that State, which position he has filled with distinguished honor to the present time.

Justice Earll served but two years and was not a candidate to succeed

himself. A tribute to his memory, worth and ability was pronounced by Justice Hawley and appears in the 19 Nevada Report.

At the election of 1876, O. R. Leonard was elected to succeed Justice Earll and was re-elected in 1882, defeating M. Kirkpatrick and M. N. Stone, respectively. Judge Leonard was a native of Vermont and received his education at Dartmouth College. He was admitted to the Bar of California in April, 1863, and the following month moved to Humboldt County. He served two years as Judge of the Fourth Judicial District, 1872-1874. During his fourteen years upon the bench of Nevada, he rendered conspicuous service to the State.

At the election of 1880, former Justice C. H. Belknap was elected over W. H. Beatty and was re-elected in 1886, 1892 and 1898. He was elected without opposition in 1892 and in 1898 his only opponent was a farmer by the name of M. J. Price, who was nominated to fill out the Populist ticket. T. D. Edwards was the defeated candidate in 1886. His service of twenty years upon the Supreme Bench is the highest testimonial to his character and ability that could be offered. He retired from the bench January 1, 1905, and a few years later moved to San Francisco, where he now resides.

In 1888, M. A. Murphy was elected to succeed Justice Leonard, defeating W. M. Seawell, the Democratic nominee. Six years later Justice Murphy, who was a staunch Republican, lost the election to M. S. Bonni-field, the nominee of the new Silver Party, which was then all-powerful in this State. Judge Murphy was a native of New York, where he was born September 29, 1837. His death occurred at Carson City, October 26, 1909. He came to California in 1853 and ten years later moved to Aurora, Nevada. His ability and sterling character marked him for prominence in his adopted State. After serving a term as District Attorney of his county he was elected, in 1878, Attorney-General and upon the conclusion of his term was elected District Judge of his District. In 1903 he was again elected Judge of the First Judicial District.

In 1890, R. R. Bigelow, then District Judge of Elko County, was elected to succeed Justice Hawley, defeating J. H. MacMillan, and upon the resignation of Justice Hawley was appointed to fill out the unexpired term. He served the full term of six years and then retired to enter private practice. He died at San Francisco in 1907, in his fifty-ninth

year. From the memorial to Justice Bigelow, found in 29 Nevada Report, we quote:

"Judge Bigelow in his professional and private life exemplified the highest type of patriotic citizenship, of the skilled and honest lawyer; in his official life, of the able and upright judge."

Justice M. S. Bonnifield, who was elected in 1894, served his full term and retired to private practice at Winnumucca, Nevada, where he still resides. The opinions written by Justice Bonnifield speak for his ability and legal learning. Prior to his election he had served as District Judge of his District.

In 1896, W. A. Massey was elected to succeed Justice Bigelow, defeating ex-Justice M. A. Murphy and B. F. Curler. A few months prior to the expiration of his term, Judge Massey, then Chief Justice, resigned to enter private practice, since which time he has been one of the foremost members of the Nevada Bar. Upon the death of Senator Nixon, in 1912, Judge Massey was appointed United States Senator until the election of his successor by the Legislature of 1913. Governor Sadler appointed T. V. Julien, a member of the Washoe County Bar, to fill out the unexpired term of Justice Massey. Justice Julien has the distinction of being the only member of the court who ever wrote an opinion during his incumbency of office.

At the election in 1900, Judge A. L. Fitzgerald, then Judge of the Third Judicial District, was elected to succeed Justice Bonnifield, defeating Trenmor Coffin, the Republican nominee. Justice Fitzgerald served his full term, but was not a candidate to succeed himself. Upon his retirement he entered private practice at his former home at Eureka. In 1908 he became a candidate for Congress on the Independence League ticket. He is a member of the Legislature of the 26th session. Judge Fitzgerald is a great student of the money question, upon which he is an authority.

In 1902, George F. Talbot was elected to succeed Justice Massey, defeating P. M. Bowler, Jr., and was again elected in 1908, defeating Hugh H. Brown, the Republican nominee, and Emil Lorke, Socialist. Prior to his election to the Supreme Bench, Judge Talbot had served the people as District Attorney of Elko County and as District Judge of the Fourth District. By virtue of his office, he is the present Chief Justice. In addition to his long service on the bench, he is the president of the State Historical Society.

At the election in 1904, Frank H. Norcross was elected to succeed Justice Belknap, defeating Hon. H. F. Bartine. He was re-elected in 1910 without opposition. Justice Norcross has the distinction of being the first native-born Nevadan to be elected to the Supreme Bench. Prior to his election as a Justice of the Supreme Court, Judge Norcross served the people of his county, Washoe, as County Surveyor, District Attorney and member of the Assembly.

At the election of 1906, James G. Sweeney was elected to succeed Justice Fitzgerald, defeating E. R. Dodge, Republican, and A. B. Anderson, Socialist. Justice Sweeney is also a native Nevadan, and with the exception of Justice Lewis, the youngest member ever elected to the Supreme Bench. He had previously served the public in the capacity of District Attorney, Assembliesman and Attorney-General. He did not become a candidate to succeed himself and has entered the private practice of the law.

Justice Sweeney was succeeded by P. A. McCarran, the last member of the court to be elected. Justice McCarran is also a native of Nevada. At the election of 1912, he defeated George A. Bartlett, Independent; W. R. Thomas, Progressive, and J. M. Lockhart, Republican candidate. Prior to ascending to the bench, Judge McCarran served a term as District Attorney of Nye County. Judge McCarran is an orator of ability and had gained an enviable reputation as a successful criminal lawyer.

Since the organization of the State Supreme Court, it has considered over two thousand cases, which are comprehended in thirty-four volumes of Nevada Reports. Many of the cases considered by this court involved millions of dollars of property. The questions which it has considered cover a very wide range of law. Some of the most prominent members of the American Bar have appeared as counsel before the court.

Clerks of the Supreme Court.—The first clerk of the Supreme Court was Alfred Helm, who had previously served as Clerk of the Territorial Court. He was thrice elected and held office from the organization of the court in December, 1864, to January 1, 1875. C. F. Bicknell was elected clerk November 13, 1874, and was thrice thereafter re-elected, holding office until January 1, 1891. At the general election in 1890 Joseph Josephs was elected, holding office until January 1, 1895.

The Legislature of 1893 passed an act making the Secretary of State ex-officio Clerk of the Supreme Court. Under the provisions of this act,

Eugene Howell, who was elected Secretary of State in 1894, acted as ex-officio Clerk of the Supreme Court for a period of eight years. Following the incumbency of Mr. Howell, W. G. Douglas, who filled the office of Secretary of State for two terms, was ex-officio Clerk of the Court, his deputy, Mr. J. W. Legate, transacting the official duties of clerk for his principal. Prior to the election of 1910, Mr. Joseph Josephs, who had formerly served as clerk, filed nomination papers for the office as clerk. In mandamus proceeding brought before the court to compel the Secretary of State to file his nomination papers, the Supreme Court determined that the Legislature was without power to attach an elective constitutional office to that of another State officer and held the act making the Secretary of State ex-officio clerk unconstitutional. Mr. Josephs and Mr. J. W. Legate were rival candidates for the office, the former defeating the latter upon official count by eleven votes. A contest was instituted by Mr. Legate before the Supreme Court which lasted the greater part of two years, resulting in favor of the election of Mr. Josephs.

Official Court Reporter.—The Legislature of 1907 made provisions for an official court reporter. Mr. James D. Finch, a lawyer and expert stenographer was appointed to this position, subsequently resigning the same to accept the position of private secretary to the Governor. Mr. Robert Richards, also an attorney and efficient stenographer, was appointed to succeed Mr. Finch. After serving two years he resigned to enter the private practice of the law. His brother, Mr. John Richards, possessing the same qualifications, was appointed his successor.

Attorneys-General.—It is interesting to note that there has never been a succession in the office of the Attorney-General. Attorneys-General in the order of their election are as follows:

George A. Nourse, Robert M. Clarke, L. A. Buckner, John R. Kittrell, M. A. Murphy, W. H. Davenport, John F. Alexander, J. D. Torreyson, Robert M. Beatty, W. D. Jones, Jas. G. Sweeney, Richard C. Stoddard and Cleveland H. Baker. Robert M. Beatty died in office and Jas. R. Judge was appointed his successor. W. D. Jones resigned to accept the appointment as District Judge and Hon. Wm. Woodburn was appointed to the vacancy. Cleveland H. Baker died in office and George B. Thatcher was appointed for the unexpired term. Mr. George Springmeyer, who was the opposing candidate against Cleveland H. Baker for

the election, instituted a contest for the office which, after consuming the greater portion of two years, was abandoned by the contestant.

District Courts.—The Constitution divided the State into nine judicial districts, as follows: First, the County of Storey; second, the County of Ormsby; Third, the County of Lyon; Fourth, the County of Washoe; Fifth, the Counties of Nye and Churchill; Sixth, the County of Humboldt; Seventh, the County of Lander; Eighth, the County of Douglas; Ninth, the County of Esmeralda. District judges first to be elected under the Constitution were as follows: First District (which was allowed three judges), R. S. Mesick, Richard Burbank and Richard Rising; Second, S. H. Wright; Third, Wm. Hayden; Fourth, C. C. Goodwin; Fifth, S. L. Baker; Sixth, E. F. Dunn; Seventh, W. H. Beatty; Eighth, D. W. Virgin; Ninth, S. H. Chase.

Prior to the Act of March 5, 1869, which went into effect on the first Monday in January, 1871, some confusion existed in the manner in which the State was districted. An Act of 1866 districted the State as follows: First, the County of Storey; Second, the Counties of Ormsby and Douglas; Third, the County of Washoe; Fourth, the County of Lyon; Fifth, the County of Humboldt; sixth, the County of Lander; Seventh, the Counties of Nye and Churchill; Eighth, the County of Esmeralda.

The County of White Pine was created by the Legislature of 1869 and designated the Eighth Judicial District. The County of Lincoln was created and comprised the Ninth Judicial District. The County of Elko was created and designated the Eleventh District. By this arrangement there were two Eighth Judicial Districts and none numbered Ten.

The judges who held office until 1871, under the foregoing statute, were: First District, Richard Rising; Second District, S. H. Wright; Third District, C. N. Harris; Fourth District, Wm. Haydon; Fifth District, G. G. Berry; Sixth District, John H. Boalt, Seventh District, Benj. Carler; Eighth District (Esmeralda), J. G. McClinton; Eighth District (White Pine), Wm. H. Beatty; Ninth District, Charles A. Leake (deceased) and John D. Gorin; Eleventh District, George D. Keeney.

The Legislature of 1869 redistricted the State, to take effect in 1871, as follows: First, the County of Storey; Second, the Counties of Ormsby, Douglas and Washoe; Third, the Counties of Lyon and Esmeralda; Fourth, the County of Humboldt; Fifth, the Counties of Nye and Church-

ill; Sixth, the County of Lander; Seventh, the County of Lincoln; Eighth, the County of White Pine; Ninth, the County of Elko.

Under the statute last mentioned the following were elected judges of the several districts: First District, Hon. Richard Rising; Second District, Hon. C. N. Harris; Third District, Hon. W. M. Seawell; Fourth District, Hon. G. G. Berry; Fifth District, Hon. O. R. Leonard and Benj. Curler; Sixth, Hon. D. C. McKinney; Seventh, Hon. Mortimer Fuller; Eighth District, Hon. Wm. H. Beatty; Ninth District, Hon. J. H. Flack. Judge G. G. Berry was succeeded as judge of the Fourth District in 1872 by Hon. O. R. Leonard.

The Legislature of 1873 redistricted the State. The First, Fourth, Seventh and Ninth Districts were not changed in their boundaries. The Third was changed to include the County of Lyon only; the Fifth to include the Counties of Lander, Nye and Churchill; the Sixth to include the Counties of White Pine and Eureka; the Eighth to include the County of Esmeralda. The judges elected for the term beginning January 1, 1875, were as follows: First District, Hon. Richard Rising; Second District, Hon. F. H. Wright; Third District, Hon. W. M. Seawell; Fourth District, Hon. W. S. Bonnifield; Fifth District, Hon. D. C. McKenney; Sixth District, Hon. F. W. Cole; Seventh District, Hon. Henry Rives; Eighth District, Hon. J. S. Jameson; Ninth District, Hon. J. H. Flack.

The Legislature of 1877 redistricted the State, reducing the number from nine to seven. The boundaries of the First, Second, Fourth and Fifth were not changed; the Third was changed to include the Counties of Nye and Esmeralda; the Sixth to include the Counties of Eureka, White Pine and Lincoln; the Seventh to include the County of Elko, corresponding to the Ninth District under the preceding act. The judges of the several districts for the years 1879-1883 were: First District, Hon. Richard Rising; Second District, Hon. S. D. King; Third District, Hon. W. M. Seawell; Fourth District, Hon. W. S. Bonnifield; Fifth District, Hon. D. C. McKenney; Sixth District, Hon. Henry Rives; Seventh District, J. H. Flack. Judge Flack died during the last year of his term and R. R. Bigelow was appointed his successor.

The Legislature of 1881 redistricted the State. The First, Fifth and Sixth Districts remained as provided in the preceding act; the Second was changed to include the Counties of Ormsby and Douglas; the Third, the Counties of Lyon and Esmeralda; the Fourth, the Counties of Hum-

boldt and Elko; the Seventh, the County of Washoe. The judges elected to serve for the term beginning January 1, 1883, were as follows: First District, Hon. Richard Rising; Second District, Hon. T. D. Edwards; Third District, Hon. M. A. Murphy; Fourth District, Hon. R. R. Bigelow; Fifth District, Hon. D. C. McKenney; Sixth District, Hon. Henry Rives; Seventh District, Hon. W. M. Boardman.

The Legislature of 1885 passed an act constituting the entire State one judicial district and providing for three judges thereof; under this act, at the general election of 1886, Richard Rising, R. R. Bigelow, A. L. Fitzgerald were elected. The act provided for the selection of a presiding judge and Richard Rising was selected for that position.

The Legislature of 1887 provided for an additional judge and Thomas H. Wells was appointed to the position. The State remained one district for a period of eight years. Judge R. R. Bigelow, who had been elected a judge of the Supreme Court at the general election of 1890, resigned his office as District Judge, December 2, 1890, and A. E. Cheney was appointed his successor. At the general election of 1890 the District Judges elected were Richard Rising, A. L. Fitzgerald, A. E. Cheney and George F. Talbot.

The Legislature of 1891 again divided the State into judicial districts, comprising four, as follows: The First included the Counties of Storey, Ormsby, Douglas, Lyon and Esmeralda; the Second, the Counties of Washoe, Churchill and Humboldt; the Third, the Counties of Nye, Lander and Eureka; the Fourth, the Counties of Elko, White Pine and Lincoln. At the general election of 1894 the judges elected for the several districts were as follows: First District, Hon. Chas. E. Mack; Second District, Hon. A. E. Cheney; Third District, Hon. A. L. Fitzgerald; Fourth District, Hon. Geo. F. Talbot. On November 25, 1898, Judge Cheney resigned and B. F. Curler was appointed to fill the unexpired term.

The Legislature of 1897 created a new district out of the County of Humboldt, the same being designated as the Fifth District. At the general election of 1898, judges were elected to serve in the several districts as follows: First District, Hon. Chas. E. Mack; Second District, Hon. B. F. Curler; Third District, Hon. A. L. Fitzgerald; Fourth District, Hon. Geo. F. Talbot; Fifth District, Hon. S. J. Bonfield. After serving two years of his term, Judge Fitzgerald was elected a Justice of

the Supreme Court, resigning his office to take the latter position. W. D. Jones was appointed his successor.

At the general election of 1902, judges of the several districts were elected as follows: First District, Hon. M. A. Murphy; Second District, Hon. B. F. Curler; Third District, Hon. Peter Breen; Fourth District, Hon. Geo. S. Brown; Fifth District, Hon. S. J. Bonnifield.

The Legislature of 1903 attached Humboldt County to the Second District and provided two judges therefor, and created the Fifth District out of the County of Nye. At the general election of 1906 the following judges were elected for the several districts: First District, Hon. Frank P. Langan; Second District, Hon. John S. Orr and Hon. W. H. A. Pike; Third District, Hon. Peter Breen; Fourth District, Hon. George S. Brown; Fifth District, Hon. J. P. O'Brien.

The Legislature of 1907 passed an act redistricting the State by adding two additional districts. Humboldt County was taken out of the Second District and constituted the Sixth District. Esmeralda County was taken out of the First District and constituted the Seventh District, for which two judges were provided. In order that the County of Esmeralda might immediately have the benefit of two additional judges, Judge Langan resigned and was immediately re-appointed as Judge of the First District and Theron Stephens and Peter J. Somers were appointed judges of the Seventh.

The Legislature of 1909 redistricted the State, providing for nine districts. Churchill County was made the Eighth District and White Pine the Ninth. The Seventh District, Esmeralda County, was reduced to one judge. At the general election of 1910 the following judges were elected: First District, Hon. F. P. Langan; Second District, Hon. John S. Orr and Hon. T. F. Moran; Third District, Hon. Peter Breen; Fourth District, Hon. E. K. L. Taber; Fifth District, Hon. M. R. Averill; Sixth District, Hon. E. A. Ducker; Seventh District, Hon. Peter J. Somers; Eighth District, Hon. L. N. French; Ninth District, Hon. B. W. Coleman. January 1, 1913, Judge John S. Orr resigned and Cole L. Harwood was appointed his successor.

Federal Courts.—Judge Alex. Baldwin was appointed Federal District Judge in 1865. He died four years later and Judge Edgar W. Hillyer was appointed his successor. Judge Hillyer died suddenly as a result of an accident in 1882. A beautiful tribute to the memory of Judge

Hillyer is to be found in the 8th Sawyer Report. Ex-Chief Justice Whitman closed a splendid eulogy in these words:

"May we all live so that at the quickly coming supreme moment our life sheaf may be as full of garnered loveliness, goodness and usefulness as that our dead brother brought."

George M. Sabin was appointed to the vacancy created by the death of Judge Hillyer and served until his own death in 1890. Judge Thomas P. Hawley succeeded Judge Sabin and remained on the District Bench until his retirement in 1906. Hon. E. S. Farrington was appointed as the successor of Judge Hawley and is the present District Judge.

In the earlier history of the District and Circuit Courts of the Ninth Circuit for the District of Nevada, it was the practice of Circuit Judge Lorenzo Sawyer to sit in the Circuit Court at Carson and try cases. Justice Stephen J. Field, of the Supreme Court of the United States, who was assigned to the Ninth Circuit, would also occasionally sit in bank with the Circuit and District Judge in the trial of cases. For the past twenty years, however, the business of the District and Circuit Courts has been left almost entirely to the District Judge. In recent years, particularly after the appointment of Judge Farrington, Circuit Judge W. W. Morrow and District Judges Van Fleet and De Haven, occasionally held court in cases in which Judge Farrington was disqualified by reason of having been attorney for litigants prior to his appointment.

Thomas J. Edwards has been Clerk of the Federal Court for nearly thirty years.

United States Attorneys.—Upon the organization of the State government, President Lincoln appointed Robert M. Clarke United States Attorney for the District of Nevada. Other U. S. District Attorneys in the order of their succession are Charles S. Varian, J. G. Whitcher, Thomas E. Haydon, Trenmor Coffin, Charles A. Jones, Sardis Summerfield and Samuel Platt. Charles A. Jones was shot and killed during his incumbency in office by one Guinan.

The Bar in Public Life.—The Bar of Nevada has played a prominent part in public affairs. The first constitutional convention which met in 1862 to frame a constitution for the "State of Washoe" was composed of thirty-eight members, of whom nine, at least, were lawyers, to-wit: J. Neely Johnson, L. O. Sterns, J. H. Ralston, Marcus D. Larrowe, F. N.





J. H. Masser

Kennedy, William M. Stewart, Cornelius M. Brosnan, John A. Collins and J. W. North.

The convention, which met July 4, 1864, and adopted the Constitution, which was finally ratified, contained eleven lawyers among its members, as follows: Cornelius M. Brosnan, Charles E. DeLong, E. F. Dunne, Thomas Fitch, Lloyd Frizell, Albert T. Hawley, J. Neely Johnson, Frances H. Kennedy, George A. Nourse, Francis M. Proctor and J. H. Warwick. J. Neely Johnson was president of the convention.

But two lawyers have been Governors—James W. Nye, Governor of the Territory, and Tasker L. Oddie, the present Governor of the State.

The list of Lieutenant-Governors includes the following members of the bar: J. Poujade, James R. Judge and Lemuel Allen.

The following lawyers have been Speakers of the Assembly: R. D. Ferguson, Robert E. Lowery, John Bowman, H. A. Gaston, Charles S. Varian, Trenmor Coffin, Charles F. Bicknell, Lemuel Allen, C. D. Van Duzer, Marion S. Wilson, Samuel Platt and T. A. Brandon.

Of the nine men who have represented the State in the U. S. Senate, five have been lawyers: James W. Nye, William M. Stewart, Francis G. Newlands, William A. Massey and Key Pittman.

With but two exceptions, the Representatives of the State in Congress have all been lawyers. The list comprises H. G. Worthington, Delos R. Ashley, Thomas Fitch, Charles W. Kendall, William Woodburn, Thomas Wren, Horace F. Bartine, Francis G. Newlands, Clarence Dunn Van Duzer, George A. Bartlett and Edward E. Roberts. John W. Cradlebaugh represented the Territory in the Thirty-seventh Congress. John J. Musser was chosen a provisional representative of the Territory in Congress, but was never seated.

Nevada Bar Association.—The need of an association of the lawyers of Nevada had been apparent for many years. There were several highly efficient local associations, but the State as a whole had none. From time to time the subject was discussed, but little, if any, progress was made. However, early in 1911, the matter assumed tangible form. The lawyers were informally addressed upon the subject and communications passed between them, with the result that certain of the profession issued a general call for a meeting to permanently organize the Bar of Nevada. There was a ready response to this call and the meeting convened on September 23, 1911, in the Washoe County Court House, Reno, Nevada.

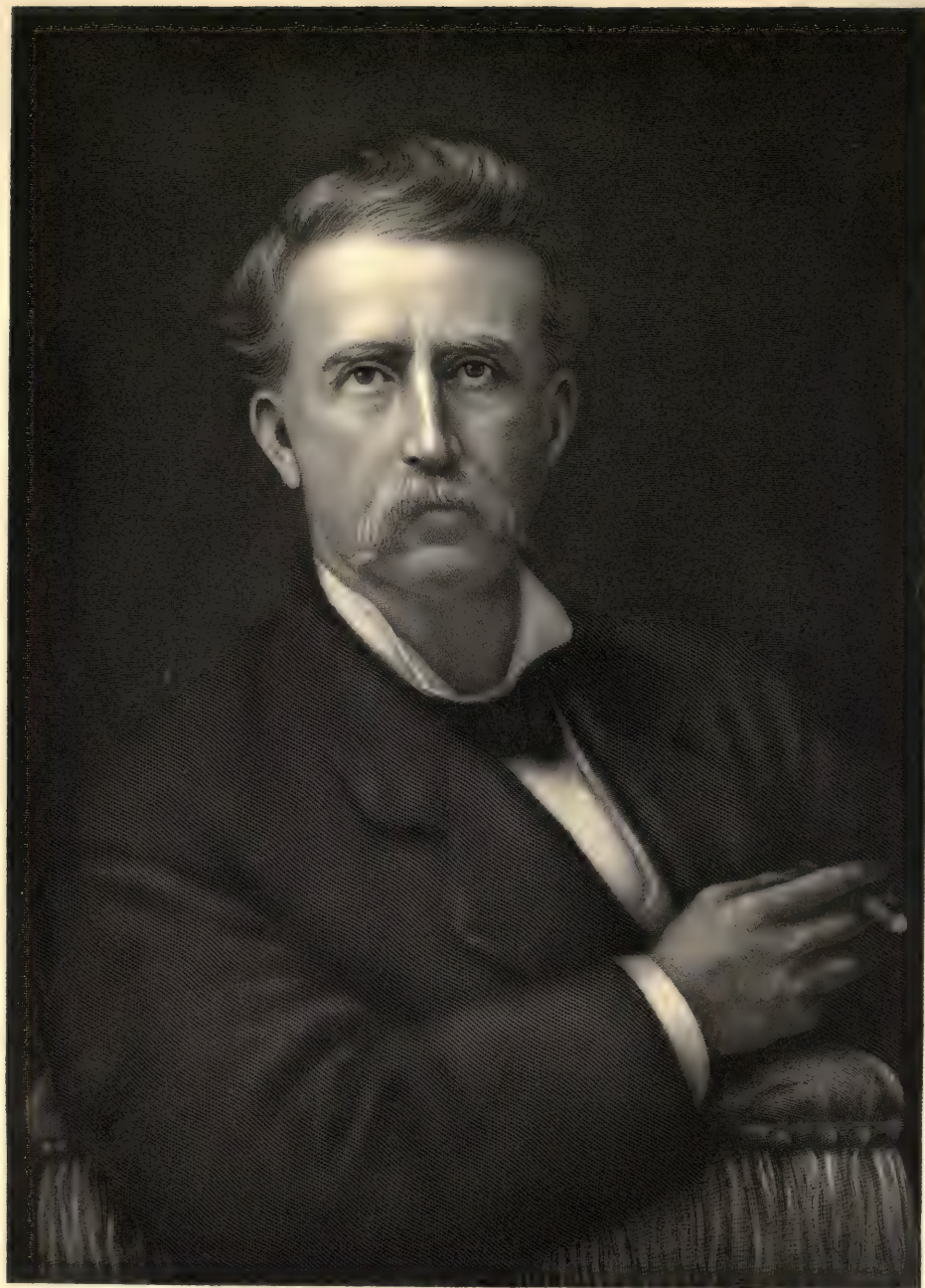
Lawyers from all parts of the State attended this meeting. A permanent organization was effected under the name of Nevada Bar Association. A constitution and by-laws were adopted, officers elected and committees appointed. The object of the association, as stated in its constitution, is "to cultivate and advance the science of jurisprudence; to promote reform in the law and in judicial procedure; to facilitate the administration of justice; to uphold and elevate the standard of honor, integrity and courtesy in the legal profession; to encourage legal education and to promote a spirit of cordiality and brotherhood among members of the bar."

The association meets annually and there may be special meetings. At the request of the American Bar Association, a special meeting was held on May 1, 1912, at Reno, Nevada, for the purpose of obtaining the action of the association defining its position on the principle of recall of judicial officers. At this meeting it was determined to take a vote of the members through the United States mail, which was accordingly done, and as a result of said vote, it appeared that forty members favored, and forty-five members opposed the application of the recall to judicial officers.

The second annual meeting of the association was held November 15 and 16, 1912, in Reno, Nevada, and was addressed by the president, Hugh H. Brown, upon the subject, "Unfair Criticism of the Courts," and addresses were also delivered as follows: "The Legal Profession and the Social Crisis," by Curtis H. Lindley, Esq., of San Francisco, California; "The Lawyer After Election," by Samuel Platt, Esq., of Carson City, Nevada, and "Shall the Extra Lateral Vein Right be Abolished," by L. G. Campbell, Esq., of Winnemucca, Nevada.

The Reno Bar Association was organized in 1907, with Judge W. A. Massey as president and Albert D. Ayres as secretary. This association prosecuted two cases before the Supreme Court for disbarment of attorneys who had been guilty of conduct unbecoming an attorney in matters of divorce practice. Both attorneys were suspended.

The Nye County Bar Association was organized at about the same time, with James F. Dennis president and Harry H. Atkinson as secretary.



Eng. by W. T. Bateman, N.Y.

John S. M. 1849

CHAPTER XI.

HISTORY OF MINING IN NEVADA.

BY GEORGE J. YOUNG.

Fifty-four years does not seem a long period for which to review the events of the past, and for many states this task would not be difficult, but for Nevada a bewildering series of scenes were shifted and a great number of events was compressed into these few decades. The capabilities of the best would be taxed to adequately present the mining history. In no other country, with no other people could such a composite, as is represented by the history of mining in Nevada, be found. Throughout, the dominating motive was the desire of wealth, not the slow up-building of a fortune, not the thorough development of a state, but the rapid acquirement of wealth. People rushed to Nevada that they might secure fortune and return to their former homes, there to spend and enjoy the remainder of their lives amid surroundings more congenial than the naked deserts and bare brown hills of Nevada. Nevada was looked upon as the treasure vault to be dipped into alike by honest man, thief and adventurer. Some realized their air castles and returned to their distant homes; others settled upon the Pacific Coast and developed an empire there; while some few found in Nevada a permanent home and varied opportunities.

While gold was found as early as 1849, Nevada was for a decade only a highway for gold-seekers and emigrants on their way to California. The end of the rainbow dipped into California and few tarried on their way thither. The scanty placers about Gold Canyon (Dayton) failed to stop more than a handful. Of these, two brothers, Ethan Allen and Hosea Ballou Grosh, after working the placers for a while, began prospecting at the head of Gold Canyon and discovered in 1856 indications of silver (this must have been in the vicinity of Gold Hill). Misfortune overtook them and they were unable to return to their discovery. Again the Goddess of Fortune beckoned and this time it was

James Finney who put his "location notice" on a likely looking ledge of rock (on what was afterwards the Ophir Mine). He was too shiftless to work his ledge and nothing came of it. Better fortune overtook the more persistent prospectors, Patrick McLaughlin and Peter O'Riley. They worked up Six Mile Canyon and in June, 1859, prospected the same ground upon which Finney had placed his scrap of paper. They washed the surface material in their rocker and the quantity of "whitish gold" which they found soon brought them to a realization of the value of their find. Henry Comstock enters the scene just as they are cleaning the gold from their rocker one evening. By boldly "bluffing" them he obtains a share in their discovery. About this time the "black sand" which had troubled the placer miners was discovered to be a silver mineral. Melville Atwood, a young assayer, assayed a small bit of black rock which B. A. Harrison had taken with him from Gold Canyon and reported it to be a rich silver ore. This "finger specimen" whispered through the cupel to young Atwood. He in turn whispered the secret to his friends, and together they set out for the Washoe region. Dame Fortune turns the minds of even the most stable men, and long before our friends reached their destination the "whisper" had become a roar, and silver ore in the Washoe district stirred the minds and hearts of men. "On to Washoe" was the slogan which may be said to have initiated mining in Nevada.

From then until now fortune's rainbow has touched now here, now there, the broad area of Nevada. Following its wake came the prospector, miner, millman, engineer, capitalist, business man, promoter and adventurer. Many a pot of gold and silver has rewarded the efforts of this throng.

Dan De Quille, Mark Twain, Ross Brown, Eliot Lord and Charles H. Shinn have told the story of the Comstock, and the story of many of the older camps of Nevada is similar. The story of the present day camps will be told by others more competent. I propose to take up the history of the mining industry rather than the life of the mining camps. The technical details of mining and the development of the industry are subjects which receive scant attention at the hands of historians, and it is to these that the following pages will be given.

Five time-periods may be made. From 1859 to 1864 may be called the period of discovery, shallow mining and litigation. It might also

be termed a period of experimentation in ore-treatment processes and mill building. From 1864 to 1868 may be considered as a period of reaction resulting from the intense excitement and litigation of the first period. Consolidation of mining claims and mills, systematic working, and deep development mark the period from 1868 to 1886. A reaction and depression in mining characterizes the fourteen years from 1886 to 1900. From 1900 to 1913 marks the rejuvenation of mining in Nevada. During the whole time mining continued, but the first, third and last periods mark periods of prosperity and crests in the mining wave, while the intervening periods mark the troughs or periods of depression. The stream of bullion production never ceased, although it reached a maximum during the prosperous periods, and fell to a trickle during the periods of reaction. Various estimates have been made of the total bullion production of Nevada, and one of these gives the bullion production of Nevada up to and including 1908, as \$770,314,439. This does not include copper, lead or zinc.

The first period marked the rapid development of the surface leads of the Comstock, the construction of mills, the building of roads and the City of Virginia. In 1864 a bullion production of \$16,000,000 was made by the Comstock mines. Prospectors spread out over the State and the search for another Comstock caused many other mines and districts to be discovered. Mining litigation, arising out of the uncertainty of the titles and boundaries of the early claims and the cupidity of the claim owners, characterized the years from 1860 to 1866. Ten million dollars were spent in almost endless litigation during this time. The fashion for litigation became fastened upon the mining communities of the west, and to this day it still continues, although litigants of the present day more often compromise their difficulties out of court. The exhaustion of the ore bodies first discovered, troubles with water encountered in the mines, and a stock panic in San Francisco, combined with the interminable litigation, soon caused a temporary set-back to the Comstock. Shrewd men saw the combination of interests and the securing of sufficient capital to properly equip and work the mines was necessary if successful mining was to be carried on.

The period which followed was one of readjustment. William Sharon appeared upon the scene and as representative of the Bank of California became an active participant in mining affairs. He acquired control of

a number of mills, and formed the Union Mill and Mining Company. Associated with him were D. O. Mills, Alvinza Hayward, Thomas Sunderland, W. C. Ralston, Charles Bonner, Thomas Bell and William E. Barron. Through the control of the mines they were able to provide their mills with ores, and by making favorable contracts with themselves they secured large profits. The organization, known as the Bank of California ring, continued to exercise a dominating position in Comstock affairs well into the next period. Sharon organized and constructed the Virginia and Truckee Railroad between Carson and Virginia. Adolf Sutro conceived the idea of a drain tunnel and in spite of the active opposition of the Bank of California interests he successfully started the tunnel and pushed it to completion in the next period. Discoveries of ore in the Hale and Norcross, Chollar-Potosi and Yellow Jacket sustained the stock market for a while, but towards the close of this period Comstock affairs were depressed.

The next period was one of great expansion. The first few years were years of uncertainty. No dividends were being paid and no new discoveries had been made. With the discovery of the ore body in the Kentuck mine in 1871 by John P. Jones, a healthier tone supplanted the pessimism. The discovery of this ore body signaled the entry of a new controlling interest in Comstock affairs, the alliance between Alvinza Hayward and Jones. They founded the Nevada Mill and Mining Company and successfully competed with the Sharon interests. About the beginning of this period John W. Mackay and James G. Fair became associated in the Hale and Norcross. Their successful work encouraged them to undertake the opening of the ground between the Gould and Curry and the Ophir. This strip was 1,500 feet long and between mines which had steadily produced. Some development had been attempted but with discouraging results. Mackay, Fair, O'Brien and Flood, after carefully clearing up the title, acquired control of this strip and began active work to find an ore body. Through the persistence of Fair, ore was at last discovered in 1873 upon Con Virginia ground. The discovery came none too soon as the treasury of the Con Virginia was nearly empty. Rapid work upon the ore body soon gave some idea of its great extent and richness. A bonanza had been struck and it was "the big bonanza." The four men associated in this third controlling and new combination were known as the four bonanza kings. They

quickly acquired their own mills and started reduction of their ores. The bullion production of the Comstock exceeded \$21,000,000 in 1873 and steadily increased until it reached a maximum of over \$36,000,000 in 1877. The discovery of ore at depth rejuvenated the Comstock. Deep shafts were projected and started. Bigger plants were constructed and heavier machinery was installed. The stock market boomed. In 1878 the Sutro Tunnel intersected the lode and shortly afterwards the drainage of the mines through this adit began. Pumps were still necessary, for many of the mines reached below the tunnel level. Large and expensive installations of pumping machinery were made. A great fire which practically destroyed Virginia City, a stock panic in San Francisco, and the suspension of the Bank of California marked the year 1875. These temporary difficulties were soon overcome and stock speculation went merrily on. In 1877 the sales upon the San Francisco Exchange totaled \$119,699,730. By 1879 the inevitable decline began. In 1882 an immense flow of hot water was struck in the Exchequer Mine and the lower workings of the Yellow Jacket, Crown Point, Belcher, Overman, Confidence and Imperial mines were flooded. The Gold Hill mines were practically abandoned below the Sutro Tunnel level and work ceased at this point. The succeeding years marked a constant struggle with heat and water in the north end mines, and finally in 1886 all work ceased below the Sutro Tunnel level from end to end of the Comstock. The miners returned to the upper levels and the low grade ores which had been left in the mad search for bonanza ore were extracted. With the end in sight the stock market slumped even more rapidly than the mines. Bullion production continued but in steadily diminishing amounts.

During this period mines in other parts of the State were developed and production was made. The principal district was Eureka, and here the smelting of silver lead ores on a large scale was carried out. How general mining was can best be judged by the bullion production of the different counties. Following are the bullion productions for 1870 and 1875:

County.	1870.	1875.
Storey	\$8,704,235	\$25,825,521
Esmeralda	92,910	1,410,308
Eureka		2,117,070
Nye	204,558	642,338
White Pine	1,235,210	821,873

Humboldt	378,840	267,879
Elko	219,169	321,212
Lander	1,104,590	882,820
Lincoln	1,662,912	679,531

In 1870 there were 152 mills in the State and over 2,058 stamps were contained in these mills. Two smelting plants were in operation in the Eureka district. Roads had been constructed reaching into almost all parts of the State. The period was also one of railroad development. Outside of the Washoe district the districts which attracted attention to a greater or less extent were Belmont, Revielle, Tybo, Eureka, Tuscarora, Candelaria, Aurora, Pioche, Bristol, Hamilton, Rebel Creek, Unionville and Winnemucca. Many of these camps declined either before or during the decline of Virginia City.

No doubt the reputation of Nevada as a silver mining State, the decline in production of many of the camps and the rapid decline in the value of silver contributed to make the next period one of great depression. Industrial depression in the United States made capital hard to secure. During this period small amounts of ore and tailings were worked in Virginia City, and desultory mining and prospecting were carried out in the State. The only important discovery in this period was the Bamberger-De Lamar mine in Lincoln County. This mine was discovered in 1893 and soon became a producer. Until 1900 this mine made the principal bullion production of the State. The end of this period was marked by more active prospecting. Upon the Comstock the question of reopening the mines was agitated, and in 1898 the Comstock Pumping Association was formed. In 1899 Leon M. Hall installed the Evans Hydraulic elevator in the C & C shaft and the water was lowered below the Sutro Tunnel level. In 1900 electric power was generated at a hydro-electric plant upon the Truckee River and transmitted to Virginia. The advent of cheap power caused a hopeful feeling to prevail at Virginia. The steady lowering of the water followed and in 1902 electric driven Reidler pumps were installed upon the 2,150 level of the C & C shaft. The opening up of an ore body in Con Virginia ground furnished sufficient impetus to rejuvenate the Comstock, not to anything like its former glory, but a good start.

The discovery of rich surface ores at Tonopah by J. L. Butler marked the beginning of the mining revival in the State. Fast upon the heels

of this discovery came that of Goldfield, and once more Nevada became the Mecca for an army of adventurers, miners and others, all seeking a short-cut to fortune. The distinctive feature of the opening up of these camps was the introduction of the leasing system. Tributing or leasing is not uncommon during the last stages of a mine, but it is uncommon during the initial stages of a mine's development. The system was introduced from Colorado and proved successful in rapidly opening up and developing the mines. Tonopah was 60 miles from the nearest railroad, the Carson and Colorado, and in a desert country. Until 1904 all supplies and ore had to be hauled over this distance. Automobiles and stages brought the people into the camp. In spite of the many difficulties before the end of 1901 the lessees had extracted ore of a value greater than \$4,000,000. January 1902 marked the end of the leasing period and the beginning of company operation. Philadelphia capitalists had acquired the principal claims from Butler and organized the Tonopah Mining Company of Nevada. Until 1903 no attempt was made to work the ores by milling. At that time the Midway mill was constructed by leasers to work their low grade ores. This mill was designed by A. J. McCone and M. P. Boss. It was erected and successfully operated upon the Tonopah ores. The Tonopah Mining Company constructed a narrow gauge railroad in 1904. In 1905 the Carson and Colorado was practically swamped with the business furnished by Tonopah and Goldfield, and it was widened to a standard gauge road. The Tonopah line was likewise widened and 1905 saw both camps provided with adequate transportation facilities. Capital for the operation of the Comstock mines was obtained largely by the assessment system, but this system had many drawbacks, and in the case of the Tonopah mines a different plan was adopted. Companies were organized on the 1,000,000 share plan. A certain part of the shares was divided among the owners and the remainder reserved as treasury stock. The treasury stock was sold as capital was required. This plan has worked fairly well, and has been followed to a considerable extent both by leasing companies and mine-owning companies. In the early period of Tonopah many companies were floated and much development work done. The companies which have since developed into mines and which have made production are the Tonopah of Nevada, Montana Tonopah, Tonopah Belmont, Midway, West End, McNamara, Jim Butler, Tonopah Extension, North

Star and Halifax. In 1906 the 100 stamp mill of the Desert Power and Milling Company was completed at Millers, fourteen miles west of Tonopah, and the ores of the Tonopah Mining Company's mines were treated. From this time on mills were rapidly installed until, at the present time, there are six mills of an aggregate daily capacity of 1,550 tons in steady operation and another mill is in course of construction. Unlike the Comstock, the mills have been erected by the mining companies and whatever profits accrue from milling operations go to the shareholders of the mines. At the present time over 11,000 tons per week of value over \$240,000 are being produced. More or less speculation in stocks marked the early times in Tonopah, but since then stock values have not fluctuated much and stocks have been bought largely for investment purposes.

In 1902 Goldfield was discovered, and in 1903 a rush to that locality followed. The leasing system was adopted and rapid development followed. The progress of the camp was steady and more and more attention was drawn to it. Many of the leases were successful and rich gold ores were produced. The rich strike by Hayes and Monette upon the Mohawk claim in 1906 introduced an era of intense excitement. Other discoveries added to it. There was much the same feeling that marked the time of the Big Bonanza upon the Comstock. The extent and richness of the ore bodies were uncertain. Other ore bodies of similar value might exist in neighboring claims. Stocks boomed. The general prevalence of high grading made money free and easy. The population of Goldfield reached 15,000. Five mills were in operation and two sampling works received ores for shipment to the distant smelters. George Wingfield and George S. Nixon organized the Goldfield Consolidated Mines Company, a \$50,000,000 corporation. A railroad was constructed connecting with the Tonopah railroad. In 1907 the Goldfield boom began to subside. Company operation succeeded the leasing system. High grading ceased and labor troubles contributed to bring about stable conditions. Systematic development followed. The Goldfield Consolidated Mines Company completed a 100 stamp mill and connected it with the mines by a standard gauge railroad. The Florence mine erected a mill. The population of Goldfield steadily diminished until it reached a comparatively stable figure at about 5,000. Goldfield still continues to pour out dividends. The Goldfield Con Mines Company is the most

important gold mine in America at present. It has paid in dividends since October 1907 over \$24,000,000. In 1912 and 1913 other companies, notably the Goldfield Merger Mines Company, the Goldfield Ore and the Lone Star Consolidated Company, began to sink deeper shafts and to explore the ground outside of the productive area covered by the Goldfield Con and Florence mines.

At Ely vast deposits of low grade copper ores were developed and that district was opened up by a railroad. Robinson Canyon, along which the principal deposits are located, was long known as a low grade gold camp. Two cyanide plants had been erected but both companies failed. Oxidized copper minerals and some copper ore had been discovered and attempts had been made to smelt copper ores, but without much success. The distance from railroad transportation was responsible for the lack of interest shown in the copper indications. M. L. Requa, F. D. Bradley and John McKenzie acquired interests in the district and organized the Nevada Consolidated Mining Company. Carefully and persistently they developed the large bodies of copper ore. It was realized early that the copper ores were low grade but the amount of ore could only be determined by extensive workings. The Ruth mine was extensively developed and gave the first insight into the importance of the Ely district. A mill was erected and the practicability of concentrating a two per cent sulphide copper ore demonstrated. Andrew C. Lawson made a detailed report upon the geological conditions and L. Parke Channing in 1904 reported upon the mining and economic features. The Guggenheim interests then purchased stock control of the Nevada Consolidated and the opening up of the district followed. A railroad, the Nevada Northern, was completed into Ely in 1907 and following its completion the Ely copper mines were boomed and considerable work was done upon claims outside of the main groups of claims covered by the Nevada Consolidated and Cumberland Ely. These two companies started the erection of a concentrator and smelter and in 1908 copper was produced. In 1909 the first dividend was paid. At the present time the Ely district produces about 11,000 tons of ore per day, and over 65,000,000 pounds of copper per annum of a value over \$8,000,000. Recently the Giroux mine has joined the producers and is the chief copper producer outside of the Nevada Consolidated.

In the Yerington district in the western part of the State another

group of copper mines was developed. The Yerington Copper Company and the Mason Valley Copper Company acquired groups of claims and systematically developed them. Success rewarded their efforts and while this district does not show the tonnages that have been developed in the Ely district, it does show promise of considerable importance. In 1910 a railroad, the Nevada Copper Belt, was constructed between the mines and Wabuska. In 1912 a smelter was constructed and put in operation. At present over 2,000 tons per day are supplied from the Yerington district.

At Virginia City drainage work steadily proceeded. The levels below the Sutro Tunnel were unwatered and finally the 2,500 level of the Ophir mine was reached. The Con Virginia, Ophir and Mexican Mines were open on this level. In the Gold Hill section attempts were made to unwater from the Ward Shaft. This shaft was opened to a depth of 2,550 feet and an electric driven express pump installed upon the 2,475 station. The pump failed to operate satisfactorily and was removed, and two pumping stations equipped with multi-plunger electrical driven pumps were installed. These pumps had hardly been put in operation when a fire broke out in the lower pump station and the shaft had to be flooded before it could be controlled. The abandonment of the shaft followed early in 1913. In the ground unwatered at the north end a rich ore body was discovered in the Mexican mine. The ore was opened up and a mill of 100 tons capacity constructed at the Union Shaft to work it. The mill has been in successful operation for some time. Upon the Choller croppings lessees mined considerable ore and treated it at the Butters Plant. In Ophir ground the Hardy vein supplied ore for several years and when this was about exhausted the old bonanza stopes were entered and low grade ore taken out and sent through the Sutro Tunnel to the mill owned by the Tunnel Company. In the Gold Hill mines above the Sutro Tunnel levels low grade ore has been mined steadily from the Crown Point, and to some extent from the Yellow Jacket. The Belcher dump was also worked. The ore from the Gold Hill mines was treated in a 200 ton Kinkead concentrating mill. East of the Comstock the Comstock Phoenix opened up a good vein and has been a steady producer. The old Monte Cristo mine was acquired by the Mexican mine and opened up, and ores shipped to the Mexican mill by a wire rope tram. The Kinkead Mill operated during the period steadily upon old

dump material and the low grade ores of the Ophir and Con Virginia. In the latter part of 1912 the Ophir Mining Company erected a 100 ton cyanide mill and worked the tailings which had accumulated from the Kinkead Mill. Charles Butters entered the Virginia City district during this period and constructed a tailing plant for the working of the tailings in Six Mile Canyon. After working these with indifferent results the plant was improved by the addition of 20 stamps and 2 tube mills, and ores from Tonopah were worked. Experiments were first carried out by crushing the Tonopah ores in the Best and Belcher concentrating mill, and fluming the tailings to the cyanide plant in Six Mile Canyon. This proved successful and the addition to the mill mentioned above followed. A two mile wire rope tram was installed for the transport of the ores from the railroad at Virginia City to the plant. Later the Butters Plant operated upon ores from the Choller croppings. At present three controlling interests are in command, the interests represented by the Mexican Mine, the interest represented by the Comstock Pumping and Ward Shaft Association, and the Sturgis interest in the Yellow Jacket, Crown Point and Belcher. Between the Pumping Associations and the Mexican Mine a bitter struggle for control is taking place. For a time it looked as if pumping would cease, but at present a truce has been declared, and work is going along about as usual. Interest in Comstock stocks, needless to say, has diminished almost to the vanishing point.

Many other events transpired in this period and only brief mention can be made of them. In 1904 Rhyolite, Beatty and Pioneer in southern Nevada came into prominence. The Montgomery-Shoshone mine attracted the most attention, and a mill was erected and for a time bullion produced. In 1908 the Rhyolite boom collapsed and the district rapidly became depopulated. In 1906 the Walker Indian Reservation was thrown open and a rush of some 4,000 eager fortune-seekers followed. Little was found to warrant the extravagant expectations, and the rush subsided almost as rapidly as it had taken place. In 1907 the Pittsburgh Silver Peak Company at Blair started operations in its mill and has continued to be a steady producer. In 1907 Rawhide was discovered and a boom was on by 1908. Within two years it was over and at present the operations in this camp are limited to a few small mines and one mill. In 1907 the Green water bubble was burst. Fairview and Man-

hattan were discovered in 1905, and both have been producers and are important, although small mining camps. The Nevada Hills Mine at Fairview is a dividend payer. In 1909 National Jarbridge, Chafey and Lucky Boy were discovered. Of these, National produced very rich gold ore and is still producing. Jarbridge has also become a producer, and the Lucky Boy maintained steady production and is now being further developed. Mines in the Eureka-Tuscarora, Austin and Aurora districts have been reopened and these old camps may yet be producers. Pioche has been reopened and several steady producers are shipping ores to the Salt Lake smelters.

The last mining camp to be discovered is Rochester, some 12 miles east of the old mining town of Oreana. This was discovered late in 1912 and early in 1913 a small rush started. The absence of high grade ore prevented this rush from assuming any size, although several thousand people went to the new camp. Conservative development has marked the work already done and while it is too soon to predict that Rochester will become a camp of size the work already done is sufficient to indicate ore of milling grade in moderate quantity. At present shipments are being regularly made and a narrow guage railroad is being constructed to make connections with the camp and the Central Pacific Railroad.

The importance of this period may best be judged from the summary which follows:

SUMMARY FOR 1911 (FROM MINERAL RESOURCES).

Number of mines in operation and from which a production has been made during the year, 661; of these 72 were placers and 589 were deep mines.

Number of tons of ore mined, 4,132,721.

Value of product, \$33,952,529.

Dividends paid, \$11,627,956.

Mills for treatment of ores, 141; of these 89 were in operation and 40 idle.

Number of miners employed estimated as 5,500.

Number of mining districts, 176; of these probably only one-third are active.

From a silver State Nevada has passed, in this last period, to a State of varied mineral resources. It has become an important copper producer. Zinc ores are mined in Clark County, and some 3,500,000 pounds of zinc produced in 1911. Iron ore is mined at Barth, and supplies the smelters at Salt Lake with basic flux. The gypsum industry is established and three plants are steadily operating and supplying Nevada and



W. T. 100-17

Whitman Symmes

the Pacific Coast with their products. In the seventies and eighties Nevada produced much lead, but lead production has fallen to 3,263,000 pounds in 1911 and remains at about this figure.

Railroad and power plant development mark this period. The following railroads were put in operation: The Western Pacific, The Tonopah and Tidewater, The Tonopah and Las Vegas, The Tonopah and Goldfield, The Nevada Northern, the Fallon branch of the Southern Pacific, the Fernley-Lassen branch of the Southern Pacific, The San Pedro, Los Angeles and Salt Lake Railroad, the Moapa branch, The Nevada Copper Belt, The Yellow Pine Mining Company Railroad between Jean and Goodsprings, the Blair to Blair Junction Railroad, and Pioche to Caliente Railroad. In addition a 4½ mile wire rope tram was constructed at Blair, a 4 mile wire rope tram at Dayton connecting the Rock Point Mill with the Haywood mine; a 2 mile wire rope tram at Virginia City by the Butters Company, and a mile tram at Mound House. In the south the Nevada-California Power Company developed 30,000 horse power at Bishop Creek and vicinity and supplies Tonopah, Goldfield, Manhattan, Round Mountain, Cuprite, Rhyolite, Pioneer, Bullfrog and Silver Peak. In the north the Truckee General Electric Company from its power plants upon the Truckee River supplies Virginia City, Silver City, Dayton, Fairview and the Yerington district. The Wonder district is supplied from a plant in Lundy Canyon, Mono County, California. The Bamberger-DeLamar mine in Clark County was supplied by a power plant in the Meadow Valley wash, twelve miles distant from the mines. At present preparations are being made by the Wingfield interests to supply power to their mines at Buckhorn from a steam power plant on the line of the Central Pacific and with electrical transmission to Buckhorn. At Ely a steam driven power plant and electrical transmission supplies power to the whole district.

Mining methods were not characterized by any particular novelty until the invention of the square-set system of mining by Philip Deidesheimer. When wide ore-bodies were discovered upon the Comstock ordinary methods of timbering proved inadequate and Deidesheimer was called in to solve the difficulty. His method has since been used in almost every mining district in the world. It is one of the important contributions made by the Comstock engineers to mining. Overhand stoping and square setting became the accepted method in use throughout Nevada

until the opening up of the Ely district. Until 1868 black powder was used in all blasting operations. Shallow holes $1\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 inches in diameter were drilled and charged with powder. In 1868 dynamite cartridges were first used in the Gould and Curray mine. The miners had considerable difficulty with them at first, but in a few months dynamite came into general use and has continued in use up to the present. When it was first introduced it sold for \$1.50 per pound against 10 cents per pound for black powder. In spite of its high price it proved economical, since holes of much smaller diameter could be drilled. Instead of two strikers and a driller, either single or double hand work could be done. Deeper holes were used. The use of drilling appliances came in 1874, when Burleigh drills were used in the Sutro Tunnel. By their use a much greater speed was practicable. In 1875 an average monthly rate of 312 feet was made in this tunnel. It was not until 1880 that power drills were introduced into the mines. Since then they have been used in all mining work of any magnitude. In 1865 attempts were made to use steam engines underground for power purposes, but they proved impracticable and were displaced by compressed air mains and air-driven engines. The air compressor came into use at this time. At present all large mines are equipped with both electrical and compressed air power. The high heat of the Comstock mines caused their engineers to look into the ventilation problem early in the history of these mines. In 1868 the Belcher mine installed Root Blowers and air pipes with which to ventilate. Underground small wooden fans driven by compressed air engines were used for local ventilation. In 1875, Root Blowers were installed for the ventilation of the Sutro Tunnel. Connection with the neighboring shafts was the system used for primary ventilation and the small fans for local distribution. In the last period, the present decade, large fans were installed in two cases upon the Comstock for the general ventilation of a mine (at the Ward shaft and at the Ophir). The most important fact contributed by the ventilating experience of the Comstock was the use of pressure instead of exhaust fans and metal air pipes. In this way air could be delivered to the working faces with low moisture content, and the miners could endure comparatively high heat.

In 1860 the first steam-hoist was installed upon the Comstock. It was used by the Ophir mine. At the Mexican mine a rawhide bucket

and head strap was in use at the same time. The early Comstock hoists were all of the geared type. Single and double drums were used and simple jaw clutches enabled either drum to be put in action. Both band and post brakes were in use. As the mines deepened the type of hoist remained the same and was simply increased in size. About 1874 a gear-driven single conical drum-hoist was constructed for the Savage Mining Company. In 1875 a direct connected steam-driven hoist was designed and installed by W. H. Patton. The C & C and the Union shafts were equipped with these hoists. At the present time several of the older types of gear-driven hoists are in operation, and one of the large direct connected steam-hoists is in operation. The last period was signalized by the introduction of a number of electrically-driven hoists. Two types were installed. One was the simple drum type driven by gears from an induction motor, and the other was a hoist patterned after the Whiting hoist. This last was known as the Risdon hoist and was installed at the Union shaft, C & C and the old Yellow Jacket shaft by Leon M. Hall. Shaft practice has not materially changed. In the first three periods cages were usually used, and single, double, triple, and four-deck cages were in use. It is of interest to note that the self-dumping skip used in so many modern mines was invented by I. L. Requa and used in the Combination and a few other shafts. In other districts of the State Comstock practice was generally followed. In the present period the gasoline engine-driven hoist found considerable use in opening up Tonopah and Goldfield. Until the general introduction of electrical power, the gasoline-hoist was the standard for prospecting purposes. Needless to say, the familiar hand operated windlass was used, and is used to some extent at the present time. In Tonopah most of the hoists are electrically-driven. A few are steam-driven and in one instance the hoist is driven by compressed air supplied by a motor-driven compressor. One of the hoists of the Goldfield Consolidated Mines is driven in the same manner. At Ely, the Giroux mine is equipped with a first motion steam hoist. All the other mines are equipped with gear-driven electric hoists. The Comstock is also noteworthy on account of the general use of the flat rope and reel hoist. Tapered ropes were experimented with. In 1865 there was a general agitation for the use of safety catches and hooks on mine cages. Since this time they have come into general use. The safety catch used in 1875 on the Comstock has not

suffered any material change. Detaching hooks are not, and as far as I have been able to discover, were not in general use. But few shafts are at present equipped with this device.

Mining methods in most of the districts have not changed materially. In Ely, open-pit mining with steam shovels was introduced and closely followed the methods used in the iron mines of Minnesota. In the Giroux and Vetern mines caving methods are in use, and these are modified and follow after the methods used in the iron mines of the Lake Superior district. In the Belmont mine, shrinkage stopping has been introduced in place of the square-set system. Perhaps the most important new feature in mining methods is the use of the air hammer or stoping drill. This small one-man drill is extensively used in Tonopah, Goldfield, Virginia and other districts in the State. Its use has resulted in important economies in breaking ore and in development work. The machine drill of 1878 weighed about 600 pounds and required four men to set it up. The modern one-man drill weighs from 75 to 100 pounds.

The most important single piece of mining work from an engineering standpoint was the Sutro Tunnel. In our time we have become accustomed to engineering projects of considerable magnitude and perhaps cannot fully realize the difficulties under which Adolf Sutro labored. The conception of a great mining tunnel for the Comstock mines was in itself noteworthy; the carrying out of the idea in the face of opposition from entrenched financial interests and the overcoming of the physical difficulties mark the character of the man. Not only did Sutro show great engineering skill, but he also won a reputation as a financier. After securing the necessary grants from Congress and raising the money for the initial work, Sutro started the tunnel October 19, 1869. At first only 15 men were employed. Sutro's time was divided between superintending the work and raising money for the Company. Failing to secure the aid of Congress, Sutro finally secured financial assistance from European capitalists. By 1871 the tunnel had been driven 2,665 feet. In 1872, 815 feet had been added; in 1873 an advance of 1,919 feet was made. It should be noted that hand drilling was used during the first few years and it was not until April 25, 1874, that the first machine drill was used. Other machine drills were speedily installed and the monthly progress increased from 105 to 223 feet. Attempts were made to increase the rate of progress by sinking shafts to the tunnel

line and starting faces on the tunnel line. Four shafts were started, but two only reached the tunnel level. Work from the two shafts was started, but both workings were eventually drowned out and work from the shafts was abandoned. During 1875 an average monthly progress of 310.75 feet was reached and the total distance driven during the year was 3,728 feet. This was a notable achievement for the time. On July 8, 1878, connection was made with the workings of the Savage mine. The two principal difficulties encountered in driving the Sutro Tunnel were excessive water and excessive heat. After breaking through into the Savage the north and south laterals were completed and connections made with the north and south-end mines. In 1879 the tunnel was used as a drainage adit. Since its completion it has been in use and has served its purpose well.

In pumping practice, the Comstock affords an interesting study in the development of mechanical appliances. The early small crude pumps were soon displaced by Cornish pumps. By 1875 these pumps were well developed. Tandem compound condensing steam engines directly connected to the pump bobs were in use at the larger shafts. In 1880 the pumping plant of the Union shaft, designed by W. H. Patton, was installed and operated. This was a compound condensing steam engine of the fly-wheel type. It pumped to the Sutro Tunnel level, and was perhaps the largest pumping machine upon the Comstock. In 1881 the first hydraulic pump was installed at the Combination shaft. This pump was operated by pressure water from the Virginia water supply. Other hydraulic pumps were installed in this shaft before it was closed down. Power for pumping ranged in cost from \$34 to \$11 per horsepower per month and was a heavy tax upon the mines. In the work dating after 1898 the Evans hydraulic elevator gave excellent service as a sinking pump, and has been perhaps the most important factor in unwatering the old levels. High speed, electrically-driven pumps of the Riedler type were installed as an auxiliary when the lift became too great for the hydraulic elevator and these are in operation at the present time. Multistage bronze centrifugal pumps have been placed upon the 2,300 level of the C & C shaft, and lift the water at present to the Riedler pumps. Additional pumps of the same type are proposed for the lower levels. The electrically-driven multistage centrifugal pump perhaps given the best all round service for the conditions to be met

upon the Comstock. At present writing the hydraulic elevator has been discarded. In other mining districts where moderate quantities of water are encountered the multiplunger pump driven by silent chain or gear is most used. Wood lined column pipe was introduced by Whitman Symmes at the Ward shaft.

In boring methods, Nevada has contributed nothing of great importance. The diamond drill was used upon the Comstock in the '70s, in prospecting for ore. In the latter work at the Ward shaft the diamond drill was extensively used as a means of testing for and tapping water. In later work upon the Brunswick lode the Davis chilled shot method was used in boring for prospecting purposes. At Tonopah, the diamond drill has been used to some extent by the Tonopah Mining Company for prospecting. In the Ely district the churn drill of the type used in boring wells was extensively used, and is used for development purposes. Ore bodies have their extent and value determined by the results from samples taken by churn drills. More or less prospecting in other districts has been done with the same agent. It was a natural step to use the churn drill for drilling holes for blasting in open pit work, and this is the practice in the open pit mining at Ely. Deep holes, some 60 feet in depth, are put down and sprung with heavy charges of dynamite. They are then loaded with heavy charges of black powder and blasted.

In underground transportation but little change has taken place. Hand-tramming is almost universally used. The moderate output of most metalliferous mines, and the short distances over which it is necessary to handle ores, are the reasons for the retention of this system. In the Sutro Tunnel mule-haulage has been in use almost since the inception of the work. Leon M. Hall installed a storage battery locomotive in the tunnel, and this gave fairly good service for a time. It has been discarded. In the Pittsburgh Silver Peak Mine an electric locomotive using the trolley system is in use on the main haulage levels. For service transportation about mines and mills, horse or mule haulage is common where the distance is more than nominal. In many of the Tonopah and Goldfield mills belt conveyors are in use for transporting the ore from the rock-breakers to the mill bins. The wire rope tram has been used in a number of instances where distances of a mile or more separated mine from mill. The introduction of this system is characteristic of the last period, although some early wire rope trams constructed

upon the Hallidie system were installed. The Bleichert and Leschen systems are most used. About Virginia City some $8\frac{1}{2}$ miles of modern wire rope tram are in use. Within the last three years the auto-truck has come into use. At the West End Mine in Tonopah an auto-truck is in use for transporting ore from the shaft to the mill.

Transportation has been and will always be one of the limitations upon mining in Nevada. In the early development of the State, horse and mule-drawn wagons brought supplies to and from the mining camps. The prospector used either mule or burro then as he usually does now. Roads and trails were usually rudely constructed, and haulage over them was costly. The system of toll-roads was early established and led to the construction of good highways about the more important camps. The transsierran highways to Virginia City were notable roads. Fast stages operated between Virginia City and Placerville. All machinery, food and supplies had to be hauled over these roads. At first, pack-trains were used and then, after road construction, wagons and stages. Before the completion of the Central Pacific Railroad more than 1,400 freight teams were regularly employed across the Sierras, and from 45,000 to 70,000 tons of freight were annually transported. The number of animals in service was from 12,000 to 15,000 and some 2,000 men were employed in transportation alone. Between Sacramento and Virginia City the schedule time was reduced to 18 hours, and with special teams it was even reduced to $12\frac{1}{2}$ hours. About ten hours would be the time required by the railroads at the present time. In 1861 an experiment was made in desert transport. Nine Bactrian camels were used in transporting salt from Sand Springs to Virginia. The use of camels proved impracticable. It is interesting to note that the Legislature of 1875 passed an act to prohibit camels running at large upon public highways. The period from 1868 to 1886 marked the first period in railroad construction and the last decade was also one of great railroad development. The opening up of an important mining camp reflects the same steps as were illustrated in the case of Virginia City. First wagon haulage, and then railroad construction. A feature of the opening up of Tonopah and Goldfield was the extensive use made of the automobile. This convenient vehicle is in considerable use in the State, and where the traffic warrants a regular automobile service is maintained to many mining camps. The auto truck is being slowly introduced and may be expected

to play an important role in the future. One novel feature should not escape mention and that is the use made of the Gasoline locomotive for train haulage by the Yellow Pine Mining Company in Clark County. The gasoline locomotive will, without doubt, find considerable application in coping with desert conditions.

In her metallurgical development Nevada presents an interesting field of study. The early attempts to work the ores of the Comstock were confined to the arrastra and amalgamation. Almarin B. Paul, a mill man of Nevada City, California, was the first to experiment upon the treatment of the Comstock ores. He was familiar with California mill practice and he had read extensively the literature pertaining to the treatment of silver ores. He treated the silver sulphides with the same chemicals used in the Patio process and used the pans which were coming into use in the gold mills in California. His experiments convinced him that the ores could be treated by this system. He organized the Washoe Gold and Silver Mining Company, and in 1860 began the erection of a mill near the Devil's Gate close to the present site of Silver City. He signed contracts to work the ore from several claims in the vicinity of Gold Hill and made a treatment charge of \$30 per ton. He started his mill on August 11, 1860. The mill was equipped with 24 stamps and the ore was crushed dry. Knox pans were used for amalgamation. Each pan held a charge of 300 pounds, and was treated with 40 pounds of quicksilver, a pint of salt, and a few ounces of copper filings or sulphate. The pans were heated by fires placed underneath. Success attended the mill from the start and thus was the Washoe process introduced to the world. Paul suggested the use of steam for heating and the Howland pan with false bottom for the circulation of steam followed. The Wheeler, Varney, and other types of pans were soon upon the field and the process was perfected in many details, but remained the same in its essential principles. Many mills were speedily erected. Wet crushing with the use of vats as settlers was soon introduced. The pan developed until the standard flat bottomed pan holding a charge of 3,000 pounds of ore came into use. By 1861 seventy-six mills were in operation. Some experiments were made with the Freiberg amalgamating barrel, but the use of this appliance did not secure any foothold. The treatment of comparatively high grade ore caused the tailings to run high in value and it was early recognized that re-working would in time become of

importance. The tailings were saved by running them into ponds and settling them. In spite of this the early treatment was characterized by considerable loss of silver in the slime which was generally allowed to run to waste. More than one of the early writers upon metallurgical methods called attention to this waste but the mine owners were making a profit and the demand for quick returns prevented any very detailed studies upon the problem of increasing the extraction and preventing waste. Most of the early mills were placed upon the Carson River where water power could be developed. In Washoe Valley several mills were operated for a long time. In Virginia, in later times, several steam-driven mills were constructed. The most notable were the Consolidated California and Virginia Mill, the Brunswick Mill on the Carson River, the Morgan Mill on the Carson River at Empire and the Mexican Mill. In the early days Kustel and Atwood attempted the introduction of the Freiberg process, (chloridizin roasting and barrel amalgamation). This process was adopted at the Ophir Mine, at Dall's Mill in Washoe Valley, at the Mexican Mill in Empire, and at the Central Mill in Virginia City. The ores of the Comstock did not require chloridizing roasting, and as a consequence the Freiberg process was soon discarded in favor of the simpler Washoe system. The chief development in the Washoe process during the flourishing period of the Comstock was in mechanical details. The chemistry of the process was not developed. Chemicals were used and were supposed to facilitate amalgamation. One mill followed the practice of the other. When trouble was experienced the imagination was drawn upon for an explanation. Witness the remedy of one millman for floured quicksilver—"the trouble arose from too great activity of the quicksilver and therefore there should be introduced into the mass opium as a sedative, in order to keep it quiet, to make it sleep and thus enable it to catch the precious metals."

As early as 1867 attempts were made at concentration of the tailings from the mills. Blanket sluices were not uncommon and effected some little saving. The concentrates were worked in pans. The high values in the tailings attracted the attention of many, but it was not until 1868 that the Janin brothers, Louis and Henry, by systematic experimentation, solved the problem and began to collect tailings in reservoirs. The Dayton Reservoir mill was purchased by Louis Janin and Leon Baldwin from E. Wertheman and Dr. Briarly, and the successful working of

tailings followed. McCone pans holding a charge of from 4,000 to 5,000 pounds were used and from three to five charges were treated daily. Janin's success speedily brought competitors and imitators. The most successful operator was George Langtry, who persuaded Birdsall to turn the Lyon mill into a tailings plant. This mill was operated and yielded large dividends, up to 1878. The re-working of tailings in pans continued until 1880, but after this date and until the introduction of the cyanide process there was nothing more than desultory work.

In the early days of Tonopah the lessees shipped their high grade ores and reserved all medium and low grade ores. At the end of the leasing period there was a considerable accumulation of this ore. The Midway Mill was erected for its treatment. This mill was designed by A. J. McCone and M. P. Boss. It followed the Boss system of continuous pan-amalgamation. The mill was unique in that it was constructed throughout of steel and reinforced concrete. The mechanical design and construction could not be improved upon. A Diesel crude oil engine, the first used in the Western mining States, was used to drive the mill. The mill was operated successfully and good extractions obtained and working costs were not excessive. After working the ore of the lessees the mill was shut down and has since been dismantled. The cyanide process superseded the Washoe process.

While the ores of the Washoe district could for the most part be worked by raw pan amalgamation, this was not the case with the ores of the Reese River or Austin district. These ores contained arsenic and antimony combined with the silver. The early metallurgists recognized that chloridizing roasting was an essential step and this led to the invention of and experimentation with various types of roasting furnaces. As early as 1865 White had patented a revolving cylindrical furnace consisting of a central fire flue and six outside flues for roasting the ore. This furnace developed into the Howell-White cylindrical furnace consisting of a single flue which served as a fire flue, and in which the ore passed in a continuous stream as well. A number of furnaces of this type were used where chloridizing roasting was necessary. Out of this roasting furnace was developed the modern cylindrical ore drying furnace. Carl A. Stetefeldt took the German shelf-roasting furnace and by experimentation developed the shaft roasting furnace known as the Stetefeldt furnace. The first furnace of this kind was erected at the Murphy

Mine in Ophir Canyon at Austin. It was 22 feet high, 3 feet square at the top, and 4 feet square at the bottom. From the descriptions of this furnace it would appear that the early furnaces had shelves and that these were omitted at some later time. The furnace worked successfully, the cost of roasting in small, reverberatory furnaces in the Austin district was given at \$16 per ton, and by the Stetefeldt furnace as \$7 per ton. The Stetefeldt furnace used at Reno, Austin, and at Candelaria (at Belleville where most of the ore from Candelaria was reduced). The roasted ore was treated by amalgamation in the same type of pan which had been developed for the Washoe process. The process came to be known as the Reese River process, or the Roast-Amalgamation process. Its use was general for arsenical and antimonial silver ores. Other experimenters were working upon the roasting furnace and seeking to improve upon the crude reverberatory. In 1866 Bruckner invented his revolving roasting furnace, and a furnace of this type was in use at the Central Mill in Virginia City. For the roasting of slimes the Janin Brothers put into use the O'Hara and Thompson roasting furnace (sometimes known as the Yerington furnace from the name of the owner of the patent). This furnace made use of a mechanical rabbling device. It consisted of a horizontal flue 4 feet wide, 11 inches high, and 80 feet long. Three fire places were placed on the side of the furnace. The rabbles were attached to a chain and were dragged through the furnace and returned over the top. The scrapers were angled, and thus the forward movement of the ore was regulated. The furnace was successfully used, but did not come into general use. In 1868 a furnace of this type was constructed at the Rising Star Mine in Idaho. In the Virginia district a furnace of this kind was built at the Merrimac Mill on the Carson River, and roasting costs varying from \$5 to \$7.50 per ton obtained. This furnace was undoubtedly the forerunner of the modern mechanical reverberatory furnace. In 1867 a revolving hearth roasting furnace with stationary rabble was set up and experimented with at the works of the Pacific Foundry. Kustel and Hofman worked upon methods to take the place of the amalgamation of chloridized ore. They experimented with the Patera process and lixiviated the ores with a solution of hyposulphite of soda. They also experimented with a combined process for the extraction of both gold and silver from a chloridized ore. They extracted the chloride of gold by means of leaching with hot water and

then used a solution of hyposulphite of soda. The latter process never amounted to anything, but the Patera process was afterwards used in other States. The leaching of silver ores was not used in Nevada except at the Wedekind Mint near Reno. Here a small plant was erected in 1902-03, and calcium hyposulphite used as a leaching agent for an ore which had been given a chloridizing roasting in a Bruckner roasting furnace. The plant shut down after a short period of operation.

The Plattner, or chlorination process never secured a foothold in Nevada. At the DeLamar Mine the Barrel chlorination process was installed in 1895 and tried for a time. It was discarded in favor of fine grinding and cyaniding. At Goldfield in 1908, the Greenwalt chlorination process was installed. A custom mill was erected but failed to secure sufficient ore for continuous operation. This mill is of interest in that the vats were charged and emptied by a clam-shell bucket operated from a traveling crane. Chlorine was generated electrolytically from a saturated salt solution, and the roasted ores were leached with a brine solution, saturated with chlorine gas. It is a matter of regret that this plant did not operate sufficiently to thoroughly try out the Greenwalt process.

The use of concentrating appliances did not command the attention of the early metallurgists. In the Washoe district as early as 1867 blanket sluices were in use and concentrates were obtained and worked in pans. In 1866, \$72,000 was produced from this source, and in 1867, \$164,000. In California, Hendy's Improved concentrator, Hungerford's Improved concentrator, and Thomas V. Varney's concentrator were advertised, and no doubt more or less used from 1866 to 1868. They were all developments of the stationary and the revolving buddle. Rapid oscillation and reciprocation was early recognized as a useful aid in the separation of the heavy mineral particles, and was incorporated in these early machines. In 1867 George Johnson and E. G. Smith obtained a patent upon a traveling belt concentrator to which a short reciprocating motion was given. In 1874 their machine was sold to W. B. Frue and came to be known as the Frue Vanner. This machine was used in California, but was not introduced into Nevada at that time to any extent as far as I can discover. J. H. Kinkead erected a small concentrator in Virginia City in the nineties. This mill was equipped with Kinkead crushers and Frue vanners. Second class ore from the mines and waste

material from the dumps were successfully treated. This mill is in operation at the present time. In 1900 the Gould and Curry Mill, afterwards known as the Best and Belcher Mill, was constructed and put in operation. Fine crushing in two stages in Kinkead crushers, and concentration with three sets of Frue vanners was carried out. Spitzkasten were used for the classification of the pulp. On account of the unsuitability of the ore the mill did not give satisfactory results and it was closed down. It was afterwards used for crushing and concentrating Tonopah ores and gave very satisfactory results. The tailings from this mill were treated by the cyanide process at the Butters Plant. In Tonopah the Desert Mill was equipped as a combined concentrating and cyanide plant. Wilfley and Frue concentrators were used. Both the Montana-Tonopah and the Belmont Mill were equipped with concentrators, and these were considered necessary for the treatment of the higher grade ores. Later, in the Tonopah Extension Mill, concentrators were discarded as they did not materially increase the extraction over simple cyaniding. In Goldfield, at the Combination Mill, Wilfley tables and Frue vanners were used. In the Goldfield Consolidated Mill Diester concentrators are used. In all of the Goldfield mills concentration is considered necessary and is in use. In the Ely district the mill of the Nevada Consolidated is the largest plant in the State using concentration exclusively. In this plant 11,000 tons of copper ore per day are concentrated. Wilfleys, vanners, and to some extent, jigs are in use. Classification of the pulp is carried out before concentration. Richards Janney classifiers and Callow dewatering cones are in use. In most cases where concentration is carried out in Nevada, fine crushing is necessary. In 1910 experiments were carried out at Austin upon the electrostatic method. A mill was erected and, it was claimed, successfully operated. It has since closed down.

The first smelting of lead ores was done at the Montezuma Mine near Oreana. This plant was equipped with reverberatory lead smelting furnaces and small reverberatory roasting furnaces. The capacity was limited to 8 tons in 24 hours. The silver and gold was separated from the lead in a refining furnace. A lead and antimony alloy was made as well, and shipped to San Francisco and used as type metal. Eureka was the scene of extensive smelting of silver lead ores in the seventies. In 1869 G. C. Robbins built the first successful furnace and demonstrated

that the Eureka ores could be readily smelted. Small vertical blast or cupola furnaces were used. These were brick-lined furnaces and were served by three tuyers. Ch. Von Liebenau constructed a six-sided furnace for the Eureka Smelting Company. Five tuyers were used. The height from tuyer to feed opening was sixteen feet. The furnace had a capacity of 24 tons per day. By 1870 there were 14 furnaces in the Eureka district. The type of furnace finally adopted and used in the Eureka district was the Piltz type. By 1874 the furnaces had been increased to a capacity of 50 tons per day. In 1870 Albert Arentz invented the siphon tap which has since been used upon lead blast furnaces, and has simplified the operation of these furnaces. Charcoal was the fuel used at Eureka. In 1874 Root blowers were substituted for Sturtevant fans. Boiler plate water jackets came into use in the early eighties. Water jacket blast furnaces were in use at the Germania Works in Utah as early as 1874. At the Richmond Works a dust flue was installed in 1874. The flue was 800 feet in length and reduced the furnace losses from 20 to 12 per cent. In 1874 a modification of the Pattinson process (the Luce and Rozan process) for refining and desilverizing lead bullion was installed by the Richmond Consolidated. The rich lead was cupelled in English cupel hearths. The poor litharge was reduced in a reverberatory and the lead sold as market lead, while the rich litharge was returned to the blast furnaces. Flue dust was treated by mixing to a thick paste with clay and water, and after partial drying it was charged into the blast furnace. The Eureka ores were of a class known as self-fluxing, and they gave little trouble in the smelting furnaces. The presence of more or less arsenic caused speiss to be produced. The speiss often carried gold and silver, values and its treatment was a problem. Davies developed a process which was of peculiar interest. He used a small cylindrical converter, lined with fire brick. This held 800 pounds of molten speiss. About 20 per cent. of lead was added and air was then blown through by means of a small tuyer in the bottom of the converter. Some of the arsenic was burned off, the iron was slagged by the silica of the lining, and the gold and silver were collected by the lead. Good results were obtained as far as the recovery of the gold and silver were concerned and the loss of lead was small.

Since the decline of the Eureka district lead smelting in Nevada has been at a standstill. A small lead smelting plant has been erected in



W. J. Eastman, N.Y.

J. J. Mangel.

recent years at Lodi, but it is not at present in operation. In copper smelting in early years a few small, round type water jacket furnaces were erected, but in no case was smelting continued for any length of time. With the opening up of the Ely district came the establishment of the copper smelting industry in Nevada. At McGill a large smeltery is in operation for the treatment of the copper concentrates obtained from ores of that district. The treatment is the usual one of roasting in McDougall furnaces and smelting in oil fired reverberatory furnaces to a matte. The matte is treated in basic converters and blown to blister copper, in which condition it is shipped to eastern refineries. At Wabuska a large copper smelter has recently been put into operation for the treatment of the copper ores of the Yerington district. This smelter uses blast furnaces and smelts to a matte which is shipped to refineries. The Dwight-Lloyd sintering furnace is used for roasting.

The first cyanide plant in Nevada was constructed in 1896 for the treatment of Comstock tailings at Silver City by R. D. Jackson. There is a record that the first plant in use was in the Silver Peak district, but I have been unable to find corroboration of this. The first two large cyanide plants were the De Lamar plant at De Lamar, and the Eureka Cyanide plant on the Carson River above Dayton. The De Lamar plant was constructed in 1896 or 1897. The Eureka Cyanide was erected in 1897 by A. J. McCone. The former plant employed Griffin mills for fine grinding and treated the raw pulverized ore in leaching vats. Until the advent of the Butters plant this plant was the only cyanide plant treating raw ores in Nevada. At this plant zinc dust was used successfully as a precipitant in place of the usual practice of zinc boxes and zinc thread. Practically all other early cyanide plants in the State were erected for the treatment of tailings. The Eureka Cyanide plant is of special interest in that mechanical conveying appliances were used by McCone for the charging of the sand to the vats. The sand was sluiced out after treatment. At this plant the practice of retorting the zinc precipitates, after treatment with acid, and the recovery of the mercury in the tailings, was carried out.

The erection of the Butters Plant at Virginia marked the introduction of a number of novelties in cyanide plant design. After numerous experiments upon the tailings the Butters Company erected a large plant. The plant was a close copy of the South African cyanide plant. The

new features were the use of conveyor belts for the transference of the sand from the collecting vats to the treatment vats, the retransference of the sand from the first treatment vat to a second vat for a second treatment. The sand was removed from the vats by a Blaisdell excavator and was distributed by a Blaisdell distributor which aerated the sand as it was charged. The final discharge of the sand was accomplished by sluicing. The slime was first mixed with sulphurous acid in order to dissolve the copper which was always present in small amount in the tailing from the Washoe pan process. The acid was removed by decantation and washing. The slime was then neutralized with lime and cyanide solutions added. After agitation the slime was settled and the pregnant solution removed by decantation. Electrical precipitation removed the gold from the solutions. This elaborate treatment scheme proved a failure, and the acid treatment was discarded and the slime treated by cyanide alone. Great difficulty was experienced with the settlement of the slime and the plant operated with indifferent results. How to remove the solution from the slime became the problem. Filtration was tried and out of the experiments was evolved the Butters filter. This well known device proved very successful, and has since been largely introduced into slime-treatment practice. The introduction of the Butters filter marks a turning point in the metallurgy of the cyanide process. The electrical precipitation was discarded in favor of zinc thread. While the Butters plant was overcoming its difficulties, considerable experimentation was going on at Goldfield. Several small mills were erected and preparations made to use filter presses for the handling of the slime. Some presses were actually installed, but were not used to any considerable extent. The erection of the Combination Mill marked the crystallizing of the first experimental stage at Goldfield. Fine crushing, followed by concentration and the separation of the sand and slime by hydraulic classifiers of the cone type, and then the leaching of the sand in vats and the treatment of the slime by agitation followed by the removal of pregnant solutions, and washing by means of the Butters filter marked the process at this time. A tube mill was experimented with although the fine crushing was first accomplished by stamps followed by Bryan mills. The tube mill was found to be much more satisfactory than the Bryan mill, and is a feature of the fine crushing department of practically all modern mills. Mechanical stirrers and centrifugal pumps

were used in the agitation of the slime. On the Combination Mill battery and plate amalgamation was used as well as concentration and cyaniding. Later, at this plant, considerable experimentation was carried out in slime concentration. The Wilfley slime concentrator was tried out but did not secure a foothold. Wilfleys, vanners and Diesters were also tried. A canvas plant of the type used in the gold mills of California was put in use and gave good results. Recoveries above 90 per cent. were averaged and a maximum of 93 per cent. was obtained. The costs in this plant in 1906 were between \$5 and \$6 per ton.

At Tonopah, in 1906, the experimental stage had passed to the mill-building period, and the first large mill was the 100 stamp concentrating and cyanide plant of the Desert Power and Milling Company. This plant was erected to treat the ores of the Tonopah Mining Company's mines. Stamps and Huntington mills were used for the crushing. The separation of sand from slime was accomplished in vats of the type used at the Butters plant, and common in South Africa. The sand was treated by leaching, and the Blaisdell system was used for the mechanical handling of the sand into and out of the vats. A system of conveyors was used to convey the tailing to a dump. The slime was settled in large vats and then transferred by centrifugal pumps to treatment vats, where it was agitated by stirrers and pumps, and then filtered and washed in a Butters filter. Crushing was carried out in cyanide solution. Concentration was effected upon Wilfley tables. Precipitation was by the zinc thread method. An extraction of about 90 per cent. of the gold, and 86 per cent. of the silver was obtained. With minor changes this mill has continued in constant operation from the time it was erected. The Belmont mill followed closely the general design of the Desert Mill. In 1907 the Montana-Tonopah Mining Company constructed a 40-stamp concentrating and cyanide mill. This mill introduced a new system in the treatment of gold-silver ores. It was designed by F. L. Bosqui. The system used is commonly known as the "all-sliming." Stamps followed by tube mills accomplished the "sliming." Wilfley tables were used for concentrating the product of the batteries, while the product of the tube mill, after thickening in cones, was treated upon vanners. The tailing from the concentrator passed to collecting vats, from which it was drawn off as required to Hendrix agitators. From the agitators the slime was passed to the Butters filter and the pregnant

solution removed. The Merrill system of zinc dust precipitation was used. Steam coils in the agitators were used for the heating of the slime pulp. Crushing was done in cyanide solutions. This mill made an average extraction of both gold and silver, of 90 per cent., and of this, 40 per cent. was by concentration, and 50 per cent. by cyaniding. The cost of treatment varied from \$3.50 to \$4. With some changes the Montana-Tonopah Mill has served as a type from which most of the later mills were patterned. With low grade ores in the Tonopah district concentration has been omitted. This was done in the Tonopah-Extension Mill. The concentrates from the Tonopah ores are shipped to smelters.

Goldfield gives the next step in the evolution of cyaniding in Nevada. The Goldfield Consolidated Mines Company's mill was erected in 1908. F. L. Bosqui and J. B. Fleming were principally concerned in the designing. The mill was a combined amalgamation, concentrating and cyanide plant. Crushing was effected by stamps and tube mills. Deister slime concentrators were used for concentration. Agitation was carried out in Pachuca tanks by means of compressed air. Slime filtration was done by the Butters Filter. The plant was "all-sliming." Later improvements consisted in the use of stamps followed by chilian mills and then tube mills. By this arrangement much greater capacity was obtained. The Merrill system of zinc dust precipitation was used. The concentrates were treated at the plant by a method invented by J. W. Hutchinson. Cyanide solutions were used for the solution of the gold, and the solutions were separated by means of a Kelly filter. Later work upon the tailings from this concentrate plant consisted in the erection of a roasting furnace, and the roasting of the concentrate tailing and its re-treatment by cyanide solutions. An extraction of over 93 per cent. is made upon an ore which averaged, in 1912, \$19.77 per ton. The cost of milling in 1912 was \$1.66, and of concentrate treatment \$0.39 or a total of \$2.50 per ton.

At Blair still another type of cyanide plant was developed. The plant was designed by Charles A. Merrill. Merrill developed the system of sand and slime treatment in use at the Homestake mills in South Dakota. The Blair mill is closely patterned after the Homestake plants. Crushing in stamp batteries, followed by plate amalgamation and separation of sand and slime by Merrill classifiers constituted the first division of

the plant. The sand was deposited in deep vats and leached. The slime was sent to deep conical bottomed tanks and thickened by the removal of the excess water. The thickened slime was treated with cyanide solutions and then sent to Merrill filter presses. Pregnant solution was removed and washing of the slime was effected in the presses. The Merrill system of zinc dust precipitation was used. The plant is well designed and constructed. Steel and concrete is largely used. The mill is still in operation and is used for the reduction of the ores of the Pittsburgh Silver Peak Mining Company's mines.

It would be impracticable to discuss all of the mills in the State, and to recognize many of the valuable improvements which have been made in different plants. The whole trend of the metallurgical practice has been toward the increase of extractions and the decrease of working costs. The metallurgist of the Comstock period was a millman, the metallurgist of the present day is a technically trained man. The old time millman was content to get a part of the metallic contents from his ores, and he left tailings which have enriched many. The spent product from many of the present mills in the State will probably never be reworked.

The Legislature of the State has shown commendable effort in providing laws for the regulation of the mining industry. Sometimes they closed the doors of the barn after the horse had been stolen, but in the main they acted with wisdom. Early Legislation had to do principally with the location and acquirement of title to mining claims and placers. When the Washoe district was organized, district regulations, amounting to the same thing as laws, were made. More or less confusion and dissatisfaction, not to mention the many law suits, grew out of these local and State laws, and it was not until Senator W. M. Stewart drafted the Federal law and Congress passed it in 1866 that questions of location and ownership began to receive definite answers. The Federal laws have received practically only one additional feature by State Legislation, and that is the requirement of location work upon claims within 90 days of location. Regulations for the recording of claims and provision for the better preservation of records were the subject of several enactments. In 1873 provision was made for the location of borax and salines. In 1907 an important law was passed. This gave anyone the right to locate a claim upon unimproved or unfenced land not in the

ownership of a mining company. Title could be secured to the claim by action of the District Court and the payment of a reasonable value for the land to the owner. In valuing the land its value was taken without reference to the mineral discovered. So far as I am informed little advantage has been taken of this law.

The regulation of mining companies has received considerable attention. In 1866 mining companies were required to publish quarterly a statement of their receipts and disbursements. Co-owners were required to pay their share of the expenses incurred in the working of claims or forfeit their ownership. In 1879 the conditions under which stockholders could demand and secure admittance to a mine were prescribed. In 1883 an act affecting the consolidation of mines was passed. As an outgrowth of the "wild-catting" period of Tonopah and Goldfield, mining companies are now required (1909-11) to file statements showing operations and expenditures with the county recorders and Attorney General, and to send copies of this statement to each shareholder. The issuance and sale of the stock in leasing companies was protected by the same requirement. Grubstake contracts were protected by an act in 1907. The right of eminent domain received attention in 1866, and was afterwards amended several times.

In 1874 an act was passed regulating the business of assaying and providing for the marking of all bullion bars. In 1907, as an outgrowth of the "highgrading" at Goldfield, an act was passed facilitating the recovery of stolen ores.

The protection of life and limb did not command the attention of the Legislature in the early days of mining. Except for an act relating to the protection of abandoned shafts, passed in 1866, nothing was done until 1879. Apparently the man who could get from the eastern States to the west, and wanted to undertake manual work in mining, was considered able to look after himself. Bonneted safety cages in all shafts deeper than 350 feet were required in 1879. In 1903 the dangerous set-screw on shafting and pulleys received attention. In 1909 the hazardous nature of mining received recognition in the passage of the State Mine Inspector Act. This provided for a mine inspector and gave him authority to draft whatever regulations were necessary for the safe operation of mines. In 1911 this act was amended by the passage of detailed mine regulations. In 1913 the dangers arising from the presence of dust in

mine and mill was recognized by requiring all mine companies to use water sprays upon all drilling machines, and to spray dusty places in the mine or in sampling mills. Influx of foreign labor has resulted in considerable difficulty from the lack of understanding the English language. All men employed underground must now be able to speak and read the English language (passed 1913). As a direct outcome of the Belmont Mine fire, and the one in the Giroux shaft, the State requires all large mines to be equipped with a certain number of fine helmets, and has provided the mine inspector's office with oxygen helmets and pulmotors for use in mine fires.

The interests of the miner have been well looked after. An eight-hour law is in force for all underground men and all men employed in mill or smelter. Open pit and quarry work is provided for in a similar manner. A workman's compensation act was passed in 1905 and further acts upon the same subject in 1911 and 1913. In 1907 an act was passed regulating the liability of mill and mine owners.

Taxation of mines was provided for in 1871. This was a tax upon the net proceeds of a mine. It was known as the "bullion tax." In 1885 a tax commission was appointed and one of the duties of this commission was to collect the tax upon the proceeds of mines. In 1905 this was superseded by the provision for a State license and bullion tax collector. This system is in operation at present.

In early mining and metallurgy the only technically trained men were practically all from the Freiberg Mining Academy. Later a few graduates from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology found their way to the Comstock. Americans who wanted technical training in mining went to Freiberg, and in 1868 one-half the students at this school were Americans. Agitation for technical education was more or less common, but did not yield any definite results. In 1868 there was considerable discussion about a national school of mines, but nothing came of it. Perhaps the first attempt at technical instruction was made at Santa Clara College, California. This school was established in 1850 and had, in 1851, some 216 students. Mineralogy, geology and assaying, in addition to classical and scientific subjects, were taught. In 1865 St. Ignatius College in San Francisco gave courses in mineralogy, geology and the arts and sciences. In 1866 the College of California at Oakland established a department of assaying and mining. W. P. Blake delivered

the opening lecture which started this school off on its useful mission. In 1865 an act was passed by the Nevada Legislature which had for its object the establishment of an agricultural and mechanical college in Washoe County. Nothing came of this. In 1874 the University of Nevada was started at Elko, and in 1882 a mining department in charge of J. E. Gignoux was added. In 1885 the University was moved to Reno. The mining department slowly developed, but equipment and resources were hard to obtain, and it was not until Clarence H. Mackay and his mother, Marie Louise Mackay, in memory of John W. Mackay, gave generously that adequate facilities were in the hands of students and faculty. A completely equipped building was given to the State of Nevada for use in mining instruction. At the time of the dedication of this gift a statue in memory of John W. Mackay was unveiled and presented to the State. In 1912 Clarence H. Mackay endowed the Mackay School of Mines with a magnificent fund. This fund brings in an annual sum of \$6,000. The course of instruction is the same as that in mining schools of the best class.

In 1903 provision was made in the Legislature for a secondary school for miners. This was established at Virginia City, and was for the instruction of miners in mathematics, surveying, drafting and a few technical subjects. It has served a useful purpose and has enabled the miner to secure, while working, an education which would fit him for advanced positions.

In geology but little has been done by the State. In 1865 an act was passed by which the office of State geologist was established, but very little came of this office. A few annual descriptive reports were published, and in 1877 the office was abolished. The principal work in geology has been done by the United States Geological Survey. Clarence King published a very complete review of mining in Nevada in the Fortieth Parallel Survey. The Hayden, Wheeler and Fortieth Parallel Surveys furnished much general information concerning the geology of the region. The reports of Dr. R. W. Raymond gave much valuable information about the early mining conditions. John A. Church and George F. Becker contributed important monographs on the geology of the Comstock. Joseph S. Curtis contributed the monograph upon the silver lead deposits of the Eureka district. Israel C. Russel and G. K. Gilbert published valuable contributions on the quarternary geology.



Engr. by E. & W. Williams, N.Y.

W. Brougner.

Charles D. Walcott made detailed studies upon the paleontology of the Eureka district. Arnold Hague reported upon the geology of the Eureka district. In the past decade the Geological Survey has made Nevada an important field for study and research. J. E. Spurr, F. R. Ransome and many other geologists have contributed to the mining geology of the State. George D. Louderback of the University of Nevada made studies of the Basin Ranges and the gypsum deposits. While the geological literature is extensive the State is still an inviting field for the geologist.

While this systematic investigation of mineral resources of the State is largely in the hands of the Federal Government, the State has made some effort to make the path of the prospector easier. A State mining laboratory was established in 1895. This had for its object the examination of ores and minerals for the prospector. The laboratory was placed under the control of the Mackay School of Mines and has served a useful purpose since its inception.

From "On to Washoe" to "On to Rochester," the mining camp recently discovered is not a long time, but many changes have been wrought. Mining has lost some of its glamor with the spread of knowledge. Investors insist upon more business-like management. Better trained men are in charge of mining operations. The development of a mine more often precedes the installation of mills, and the lavish expenditure of money, while it still goes on in some instances, is less often seen than the careful investment in "legitimate mining." Thanks to the activity of the postal authorities and State officials it is becoming harder for the charlatans, who infest the mining camps, to pursue their fraudulent operations. Mining costs are being steadily reduced. The stockholder comes in for his fair share of the proceeds. The total production of the Comstock for the first forty years was, in round numbers, \$350,000,000. Of this vast sum, \$133,101,590, was returned as dividends to stockholders. This was 38 per cent. of the total production. Of assessments almost \$79,000,000, was collected during the same time. In 1912 the Goldfield Consolidated Mines Company reported 59.44 per cent. of the total production for the year as the net sum realized from their operations.

Nevada owes much to the mining industry. The first incentive for the development of the State came from the discovery of mineral. The future of the State is dependent upon mining in a large measure. Agri-

cultural development received its first stimulus from the needs of the mining camps. Business flourishes in proportion as mining develops. At present probably more than one-half the population of the State, directly and indirectly, is dependent on this industry.

Acknowledgment is made of the use in preparing this review of the publications of the United States Geological Survey, the Engineering and Mining Journal, the Mining and Scientific Press, the reports of R. W. Raymond, the reports of Ross Brown and other publications.

CHRONOLOGY OF MINING IN NEVADA.

1849.

Gold discovered at Dayton by William Prouse. Twenty to one hundred men engaged in gold washing.

1849 to 1859.

Nevada used as highway for emigrants on their way to California. Population of the area, known as Nevada, estimated at 1,000.

1859.

Bullion production, \$3,500,000.

Comstock discovered. Peter O'Reilly and Patrick McLaughlin discovered gold on the Ophir property. First lode claim made by James Fennimore. Grosh Brothers in 1857 had discovered both gold and silver in the vicinity of what was most likely Gold Hill, but misfortune overtook them and they were unable to take advantage of their discovery. Henry Comstock and others located claims a few days after the discovery made by O'Reilly and McLaughlin. Comstock secures interest in their claims.

Mining regulations for Gold Hill framed.

In June, 1859, B. A. Harrison gave a fragment of "black rock" to Melville Atwood, an assayer. His returns showed high values in silver. The rapid development of the Comstock as a gold and silver camp followed.

1860.

Bullion production, \$750,000.

Virginia.

First quartz mill constructed by Almarin B. Paul. It consisted of 24 stamps and 24 pans and initiated the "Washoe Process." By August another mill was in operation.

Philip Deidesheimer invents the "square set" system of mine timbering.

Rush to Comstock continues. Rapid development of mines begins.

Ophir Mining Company organized.

Potosi Mine in Lincoln County, southern Nevada, discovered by Mormons, and worked for lead and silver.

1861.

Bullion production, \$3,500,000.

March 2 Territory of Nevada established. Population of Nevada estimated as 17,000. Telegraph line from Fort Churchill to Salt Lake completed and connections made with Virginia.

Virginia.

Latrobe Tunnel (3,200 feet long) started.

The Washoe Gold and Silver Mining Company No. 1 erects their second mill at Gold Hill (64 stamps).

First steam engine used by the Ophir Mining Company.

James W. Nye, the first Governor of the Territory, arrives in Virginia.

This year and the next witness the construction of excellent toll roads over the Placerville route to California. All freight goes over this road.

Virginia City incorporated.

Eighty-six mining companies organized and working in the vicinity of Virginia.

Humboldt district discovered.

1862.

Bullion production, \$7,000,000

Virginia.

Population estimated at 10,000.

Eighty quartz mills in operation.

San Francisco Stock and Exchange Board organized by stock brokers.

Stock speculation is systematized.

Reese River district discovered. Austin district organized by W. M. Talcott.

Rush to Austin begins.

1863.

Bullion production, \$12,400,000.

Virginia.

Miners' Protective Association formed.

Gas Plant completed in Virginia and streets lighted by gas.

First flat iron wire rope made by A. S. Hallidie for the Sierra Nevada Mine.

Rush to Big Creek, 12 miles from Austin.

Mormons discover silver ore at Austin.

1864.

Nevada admitted as State.

Bullion production, \$16,000,000.

Virginia.

Slack times in Virginia, continuing until 1868.

Miners' League of Storey County formed.

Sack of flour sold for benefit of Sanitary Fund.

On October 18 the Sutro Tunnel was started.

Eureka district discovered by Fairchild and others.

Columbus Marsh located as a salt bed by Smith and Eaton.

1865.

Bullion production, \$15,833,720.

Virginia.

Washoe Mine Managers Association formed.

Von Richthoven makes a study of geological conditions on the Comstock lode.
 Estimate of 57½ miles of workings on Comstock.
 Sutro Tunnel Company incorporated.
 Philadelphia District discovered (Belmont).
 Hamilton District organized.

1866.

Bullion production, \$14,907,895.
 Virginia.
 Government gives Sutro Tunnel Grant.
 Systematic mining fairly begins on Comstock. By autumn there were 66 mills in operation, and some 1,271 stamps, 919 pans.
 Forty-four steam engines were in use for hoisting and pumping.
 A mine fire occurred on the 260 level of the Empire Mine.
 Unusual heat was first noted on the 900-foot level of the Belcher Mine.
 J. W. Haines invents the "V" flume for the transport of lumber.
 Bruckner's Roasting Furnace used at Central Mill, Virginia.
 Law passed requiring mining companies to publish each quarter liabilities, assets, proceeds and disbursements.
 Nevada Legislature passes laws relating to location of mining claims.
 Federal mining Legislation passed.

1867.

Population of Nevada estimated between 30,000 and 40,000.
 Bullion production, \$13,738,608.
 Virginia.
 Forty-seven steam engines in operation on the Comstock.
 The necessity for cooperation among the different mines pointed out.
 H. De Groot points out that leading Comstock mines are not worked in the interests of the stockholders.
 Report of the Mechanics Institute of San Francisco points out the necessity of the Sutro Tunnel.
 A committee of 300 miners from the Miners' Union visit the management of the Savage Mine and secure a uniform rate of \$4 per day for all men underground. This becomes the wage scale of the Virginia district and is in force up to the present day.
 Union Mill and Mining Company formed by W. Sharon and others. Bank of California begins to appear as an active controlling agent.
 Period of consolidation both of mines and mills begins.
 Mines on McCoy Hill, Eureka district, discovered.
 Tuscarora mines discovered. This district reached maximum production in 1877, 1878 and 1879.
 Discovery of Hubnerite in Enterprise Mine, Nye County.
 Pacific Railroad Survey started by King.
 Treasure Hill Mine discovered at Hamilton.
 Lead-smelting at Oreana. Ores from the Montezuma Mine.

1868.

Bullion production, \$8,479,769.
 Virginia.
 Prosperity and renewed activity returns to Virginia City. Much prospecting goes on.
 Strike of rich ore on 800-900 level of the Yellow Jacket Mine. "Ore is put in sacks and tenderly cared for."

R. H. Stretch completes four general maps of the Comstock Mines for the Fortieth Parallel Survey.

Giant powder cartridges used in the Gould and Curry Mine, with and without tamping. At first they were not satisfactory, but a few months later came into general use.

Attempts were made to use electrical signaling in shafts. Results were not satisfactory and the wires were replaced by bell-cords.

White Pine rush starts. Hamilton and vicinity assume prominence.

Black Mountain district, 40 miles south of Walker Lake, discovered by Greene and L'Ameroux.

Reported discoveries at Duckwater, 30 miles south of White Pine District.

Discovery of Arizona Mine at Unionville.

Erection of 40 stamp mill by Great Basin Company at Silver Peak.

Charles E. Hofman buys claims from F. L. A. Pioche at Pioche.

Aurora has 25 mines working.

Smelting operations on Owens River started.

First test of Stetefeldt Roasting Furnace at Murphy Mine, Twin River.

1869.

Bullion production, \$7,405,578.

Virginia.

Virginia and Truckee Railroad completed between Carson and Gold Hill.

End of wagon hauling to mills.

Fire in Crown Point and Yellow Jacket mines results in death of 34 miners.

Steam blown into mine for purpose of extinguishing fire.

J. G. Fair and J. W. Mackay secure control of Hale and Norcross mine.

Bullion product of mines, \$2,040,885; dividends, \$588,000; assessments, \$156,200.

Buckeye, Champion and mines on Ruby Hill, Eureka District, discovered.

Eureka District begins to attract considerable attention.

G. C. Robbins builds small furnace at Eureka and successfully smelts ores.

Eureka Consolidated Mines Company organized.

Hamilton, White Pine County, has population of 10,000 and for the surrounding country 25,000.

Junction of the Union Pacific Railroad and Central Pacific Railroad takes place at Promontory.

1870.

Bullion production, \$16,742,198.

Virginia.

Sutro Tunnel reaches 1,900 feet.

Commission of engineers to examine and report upon Sutro Tunnel.

Much doubt thrown upon Sutro Tunnel enterprise. Alleged barrenness of the Comstock in depth hinders prosecution of work.

New discoveries of ore and increased reserves of ores in mines.

Eureka becomes a large producer. Fourteen smelting furnaces are in operation.

At Hamilton, 197 mining companies operating, 23 mills (200 stamps) crushing ores and 9 smelters in use.

Invention of Arentz syphon tap for lead blast furnaces by Albert Arentz.

Fortieth Parallel Survey published.

THE HISTORY OF NEVADA

DISTRIBUTION OF MILLS IN 1870.

County.	No. of Mills.	No. of Arastras.	No. of Stamps.
Churchill	1	3	10
Elko	3		22
Esmeralda	17		225
Humboldt	10		89
Lander	6		88
Lincoln	6		65
Lyon	30		407
Nye	15		200
Ormsby	6		160
Storey	29		433
Washoe	6	16	155
White Pine	23		204
Total	152	19	2,058

1871.

Bullion production, \$22,612,143.

Richmond Consolidated Smelter built at Eureka.

1872.

Bullion production, \$24,986,731.

Virginia.

Mackay, Fair, Flood and O'Brien secure control of Best and Belcher, California and Central mines.

Virginia and Truckee Railroad completed to Reno.

Federal laws for location and acquirement of title to mineral lands passed.

1873.

Production of bullion, \$33,611,630.

Virginia.

Pipe line for supply of Virginia City started June 11, and completed and water delivered August 1.

Fair strikes ore in Best and Belcher. Big Bonanza discovered in Con Virginia mine.

Beginning of great excitement in Virginia.

Eureka produces 12,000 tons base bullion from 8 smelting works and 17 furnaces.

Demonetization of silver.

1874.

Bullion production for year, \$35,752,233.

Virginia.

By July 1, 6,200 feet of Sutro Tunnel completed.

Burleigh drills first used in the Sutro Tunnel.

Bullion product of Comstock, \$22,400,783 from 527,623 tons of ore.

Virginia Con Mining Company erects 60 stamp mill.

Ophir mine attains depth of 1,400 feet; Con Virginia shaft, 1,580 feet; Gould and Curry, 1,700 feet; Savage, 2,200 feet; Hale and Norcross, 2,200 feet; Chollar, 1,300 feet; Imperial, 2,100 feet; Yellow Jacket, 1,840 feet; Crown Point, 1,700 feet;

Belcher, 1,580 feet; Overman, 1,150 feet; Silver Hill, 368 feet; Dayton mine, 450 feet.

Chollar Mine working low grade ores from and near surface at rate of 60 tons per day, of \$20 rock.

Great activity throughout the whole region of the Comstock.

No. 2 shaft of the Sutro Tunnel reaches the tunnel level and encounters large volumes of water and is abandoned.

Richmond Con Company at Eureka erects dust chambers and refinery.

A Pattinson process of lead refining introduced in Eureka; steam stirring of bullion and mechanical handling of products introduced.

Lead and silver losses in smelting Eureka ores reduced to 12 per cent.

Root blowers substituted in place of Sturtevant fan. Receipts of Eureka Con Mining Company, \$1,349,554.

Dunderberg and Pleiades mines steadily worked (Eureka District).

At Austin, the Manhattan Silver Mining Company the principal mine operating kept 20 stamp mill in use. Receipts, \$354,692. Stetefeldt furnace increased in height. Concentration of low grade ores of Reese River District being investigated. Krom's dry separators tried.

Ore shipped from Galena, twelve miles south of Battle Mountain.

Arizona Mine worked with force of 60 to 70 men. Ore shipped to Winnemucca and Reno, as well as worked at Unionville.

Antimony ore shipped to San Francisco at rate of ten tons per week from mine one mile southeast of Unionville.

Smelting works at Oreana idle.

Jersey District, south of Battle Mountain 40 miles, discovered.

Many small mills and mines in Humboldt County erected and worked.

Most of mines and mills of White Pine County idle.

In White Pine District the North Aurora is the principal mine working.

In Nye County more or less activity at Belmont and Tybo.

Northern Bell, Candelaria, worked throughout the year with very satisfactory results. Northern Bell Mill, equipped with Stetefeldt roasting furnace and pans, works satisfactorily.

Considerable activity at Pioche. Raymond and Ely Mine worked, also Meadow Valley Mining Company produces bullion.

University of Nevada established at Elko.

1875.

Bullion production of the year, \$40,784,469.
Virginia.

In October a great fire destroys Virginia and causes a property loss of \$10,000,000.

By use of Burleigh and Ingersoll drills the Sutro Tunnel is advanced in 1875 and 1876, a distance of 7,398 feet, and in 1875 an average monthly progress of 312 feet was made.

Two Root blowers were installed to ventilate the Sutro Tunnel.

First direct connected steam hoist designed by W. H. Patton.

The installation of heavy mining machinery, both for hoisting and pumping, marks this and the next several years.

Self-dumping skips invented by I. L. Requa and used in several shafts.

Bullion production of the Comstock reaches \$25,825,521.54.

Combination shaft started.

Savage and Hale and Norcross mines flooded from 2,200 to 1,750 level.

Stock panic.

Eureka still continues to produce and more or less activity marks the mining districts of the State.

Eureka and Palisade Railroad completed.
Suspension of the Bank of California.

1876.

Bullion production of the year, \$44,356,290.
Virginia.
New Yellow Jacket shaft begun.
Bullion production reaches \$31,618,660.
Activity continues.
Stock speculation continues.

1877.

Bullion production for the year, \$44,983,381.
Virginia.
John A. Church examines mines of Comstock and prepares report for Government.
Bullion production reaches \$36,301,536. This year marks maximum production and from this date production of Comstock rapidly declines.
Sales upon Stock Exchange of San Francisco total \$119,699,730.
Jack Rabbit Mine at Pioche located by I. N. Garrison.

1878.

Bullion production for the year, \$44,570,549.
Virginia.
Bullion production, \$19,661,394.
Deep mining on Comstock begins in earnest.
On July 8, Sutro Tunnel breaks through and connects with mine workings.
Nevada Central Railroad, connecting Battle Mountain and Austin, started.
Joseph Le Conte publishes "Elements of Geology."

1879.

Bullion production for the year, \$21,963,940.
Virginia.
Bullion production falls to \$7,003,485.
The Con California Mine only mine which paid dividends.
North-end mines reach 2,000 foot level.
The Ophir Mine begins to stope upon the Hardy Vein on 2,150 level.
On June 30 mines began to use Sutro Tunnel as a drainage adit.
Eureka begins to decline.
Como District, south of Virginia City, discovered.

1880.

Bullion production for the year, \$17,318,909.
Virginia.
Bullion production falls to \$5,129,015.
By October 4, north lateral of Sutro Tunnel is driven 4,403 feet to connection with mine workings. The tunnel drains water to the amount of 3,500,000 gallons per 24 hours.
Aggregate footage of mine galleries, 140 miles.
Total tonnage of ore produced, 7,000,000; bullion produced, \$306,000,000, and \$116,000,000 in dividends paid.

First power drill manufactured by Hotchkiss and Gardner put in operation by Chollar-Potosi Mining Company.

A depth of 2,770 feet attained at this period.

Pumping plant of the Union shaft started.

Dr. G. F. Becker begins preparation of his monograph upon the Comstock.

Eureka mines attain a depth of 1,000 feet. Eureka almost destroyed by fire.

In Spring Valley District, 100 Chinese placer miners at work.

1881.

Bullion production for the year, \$11,964,487.

Virginia.

Bullion production is \$1,075,620.

South lateral of the Sutro Tunnel reaches the Yellow Jacket shaft.

C and C Shaft reaches a depth of 2,500 feet.

J. P. Jones starts milling low grade ore in the Mexican Mill.

By March 1st., South Lateral of the Sutro Tunnel reaches 4,114 feet.

Hydraulic pumps are installed at the Combination Shaft.

City government of Virginia discontinued.

Eureka Con Mines encounter water at 756 feet.

Eureka Con vs. Richmond Con law-suit decided in favor of the Eureka Con.

1882.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,641,000.

Virginia.

Bullion production is \$1,743,464.

On February 2nd, miners in Exchequer Mine strike immense flow of hot water which floods the lower workings of the Yellow Jacket, Crown Point, Belcher, Overman, Confidence and Imperial Mines. Gold Hill Mines flooded.

Mexican Mine stopes ore on the 2,700 level.

Hydraulic pumps at the Combination Shaft started.

G. F. Becker's monograph on Comstock Mines published, U. S. G. S.

E. Lord publishes monograph on Comstock Mining and Miners, U. S. G. S.

Pine Grove Mines, Yerington District, close down after a production of \$6,000,000.

Mining Department added to University of Nevada. Work placed in charge of

J. E. Gignoux.

1883.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,128,312.

Virginia.

Bullion production, \$2,006,348.

Mexican-Ophir winze reaches a depth of 3,100 feet.

Population of Nevada, 66,265.

1884.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,332,413.

Virginia.

Bullion production, \$2,838,752.

In December pumps were abandoned at the Alta Shaft.

Mexican-Ophir winze reaches a depth of 3,300 feet; deepest working on the Comstock.

In December Mexican-Ophir winze flooded by diamond drill tapping water in the bottom.

A second hydraulic pump installed at the Combination Shaft.

Eureka Mines fall off greatly in production.

J. S. Curtis publishes monograph on Eureka Mines, U. S. G. S.

1885.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,974,442.

Virginia.

Bullion production, \$3,144,602.

North-end mines flooded to 2,000 foot level.

Third hydraulic pump installed at the Combination Shaft.

University of Nevada moved to Reno.

1886.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,736,218.

Virginia.

In October Pumping stopes at the Combination Shaft and deep mining on the Comstock ceases.

Bullion production, \$3,736,218.

Return is made to the upper levels and low grade ores removed.

1887.

Bullion production for the year, \$9,521,320.

Virginia.

Bullion production, \$4,511,230.

Production and milling of low grade ores continue. About 30,000 tons of ore per month handled.

Virginia rapidly declining.

Hamilton and White Pine District rapidly decline.

1888.

Bullion production for the year, \$12,764,990.

Virginia.

Bullion produced, \$7,627,267. This was the maximum production since the days of the Big Bonanza, and was obtained by working the low grade ores above the Sutro Tunnel level.

Sutro Tunnel completed; south lateral extended to Alta Shaft, and north lateral connected with Sierra Nevada.

1889.

Bullion production for the year, \$11,547,552.

Virginia.

Bullion produced, \$5,949,923.

Eureka mines worked only by tributers. Production falls to 1489 tons of base bullion.

1890.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,553,535.

Virginia.

Bullion produced, \$4,980,872.

Low grade ores about exhausted.

Gold Hill Pumping Association formed. Comprised thirteen companies and spent \$640,000 in fruitless endeavor to lower water in Gold Hill mines by means of air driven Dow pumps.

Richmond Smelter at Eureka closed down. Eureka greatly declines.

Narrow gauge railroad constructed from Pioche to Jack Rabbit Mine.

1891.

Bullion production for the year, \$6,601,111.

Virginia.

Bullion produced, \$3,452,142.

Eureka Con Smelter closed down.

1892.

Bullion production for the year, \$4,796,500.

Virginia.

Bullion produced, \$2,173,247.

Virginia City enters upon period of depression.

Mining generally depressed throughout the State.

1893.

Bullion production for the year, \$2,148,500.

Virginia.

Bullion production, \$1,872,104.

De Lamar Mine discovered at De Lamar, Lincoln County.

Coal discovered by William Grozenger, at Coaldale near Silver Peak.

Industrial panic in United States.

Silver rapidly declines in price.

1894-1895.

Bullion production for the year 1894, \$1,789,064.

Bullion production for the year 1895, \$2,036,443.

Mining at a low ebb throughout the State.

1896.

Bullion production for the year, \$2,410,538.

First cyanide plant in Nevada erected at Silver City by R. D. Jackson. Note:—
In the Silver Peak District there is information to the effect that the first cyanide
plant was erected there, but I have been unable to run this down.

1897.

Bullion production for the year, \$3,896,850.

Virginia.

Production, \$373,014.

Output of Eureka District 1,121 tons.

1898.

Bullion production for the year, \$3,466,080.

Virginia.

Production, \$205,039.

Comstock Pumping Association formed by Charles Hirshfeld, and preparations
made to lower the water below the Sutro Tunnel level. Work of trailings by
Cyanide Process about to be started.

Southern Klondike, midway between Goldfield and Tonopah, is discovered by
James Courts.

The De Lamar Mine, De Lamar, is the largest gold producer in the State. The
cyanide process is used for the treatment of the ores.

Searchlight discovered.

1899.

Bullion production for the year, \$2,714,464.

Virginia.

Production, \$171,677.

Evans Hydraulic elevator used in the C and C Shaft, and water is lowered.

1900.

Bullion production for the year, \$2,848,594.

Population of Nevada, 42,235. Mining is at low ebb throughout the State. Virginia.

Electric power, generated on the Truckee River, is introduced upon the Comstock. The Gould and Curry Mill, a concentrating mill, first to use the power. Power costs reduced from \$34 per month to \$7.

Crown Point passes under management of W. E. Sharon.

In April Tonopah is discovered by J. L. Butler.

T. D. Lockhart locates Grand Trunk and C. B. Q. claims at Tonopah. These claims became the Tonopah Extension Mine.

Rush to Tonopah begins. Ore is shipped out. Leasers at work.

Wedekind Mine discovered in the vicinity of Reno.

By end of year mining shows signs of revival.

1901.

Bullion production for the year, \$951,300.

Drainage work continues at Virginia.

Eight claims of Butler at Tonopah purchased by O. A. Turner for \$336,000. These claims formed the nucleus of the Tonopah Mining Company of Nevada.

Rush to Tonopah continues; considerable activity marks the district.

At Olinghouse Canyon two small mills in operation, and small bullion production made.

Chainman cyanide mill constructed in the Ely District.

1902.

Bullion production for the year, \$4,886,786.

Virginia.

Ore body struck in Con Virginia.

Reidler Pumps installed at 2,150 level of C and C Shaft.

Goldfield discovered. First mine was the Sandstorm, and was discovered by Harry Stimler and Will Marsh.

Charles M. Schaub buys the Tonopah Extension for \$75,000. (Tonopah).

T. D. Lockhart buys the Florence Mine at Goldfield.

Dexter-Tuscarora treats 30,083 tons ore in cyanide plant.

Lucky Girl group at Edgemont produces 8,165 tons ore and is erecting a cyanide plant.

Erection of Midway mill on Tonopah started.

Twenty stamp-mills erected on Colorado River by Quartette Mine of Searchlight.

1903.

Bullion production for the year, \$6,115,270.

Virginia.

Ophir Mine stopes ore on the 2,050 level; workings are on Hardy vein.

Ward Shaft Association formed by middle mines.

C and C pumps operated by electricity.

Foreman shaft house burns.

Butters Tailings Plant (275 tons capacity) constructed.

Keane-Wonder Mine discovered.

Bullfrog discovered by E. Cross and F. Harris.

Rush to Goldfield begins.

Combination Mine located by A. D. Myers and T. Murphy (Goldfield).

Moore Slime Filter applied at Dexter Mine, Tuscarora.

Cyanide Plant of the Bamverger-De Lamar Mine remodeled.

Midway Mill constructed. Designed and erected by A. J. McCone and M. P. Boss.

1904.

Bullion production for the year, \$5,870,958.

Virginia.

Union Shaft House burned down; Union Shaft blocked; loss estimated at \$100,000.

Butters Filter installed at Butters Plant.

Ore shipped from Jumbo, Florence and January Mines.

Goldfield rush continues.

Montgomery-Shoshone Mine located (near Rhyolite) by E. A. Montgomery.

Tonopah Railroad completed to Tonopah from Sodaville.

Pneumonia epidemic at Tonopah.

1905.

Bullion production for the year, \$8,897,840.

Goldfield had population of 8,000.

B. J. Reilly finds rich ore in lease on Florence Mine, Goldfield. This lease produced \$750,000.

Sweeney lease on Florence ground produces, by January 15, \$650,000.

Patrick lease on January Mine produced \$500,000.

Five stamp mills and two samplers with capacity of 1,800 tons per week, at Goldfield.

Manhattan discovered and rush from Goldfield and Tonopah takes place.

Fairview discovered.

Consolidation of Richmond Con Mining Company and Eureka Con Mining Company at Eureka.

J. E. Spurr's report upon Tonopah published by U. S. G. S.

Southern Pacific changes gauge of C. & C. R. R. to broad gauge from Mound House to Mina. Tonopah Railroad also made broad gauge.

Los Angeles, San Pedro and Salt Lake Railroad completed to Caliente.

Tonopah and Goldfield Railroad completed between Tonopah and Goldfield.

Railroad franchise between Adelaide Mine and Great Republic Con Mine granted by Legislature.

1906.

Bullion production for year, \$14,486,200.

Hayes and Monette make a rich strike on Mohawk claim at Goldfield.

Many leases produced rich ore.

Fifty-six mining companies in operation and 2,250 miners at Goldfield.

High-grading became a feature of the district at this time.

Population of Goldfield 15,000.

Combination Mill installs two mills.

Mines and mills at Goldfield in flourishing condition.

Excessive stock gambling is a feature of the year.

Rush to Fairview.

Rush to Manhattan.

Wonder District discovered by J. L. Stroud and rush from Fairview follows.

Nevada Hills Mine located by P. Langsdan and sold to W. H. Clark, J. R. Davis and others.

Round Mountain discovered by L. D. Gordon and rush follows.

Seven Troughs and Rosebud discovered.

Walker Lake Indian Reservation thrown open and rush begins. Four thousand people go into district and two thousand claims located.

Mason Valley Copper Company, Yerington District, organized.

Consolidation of Shoshone Mine with Polaris and Crystal Bullfrog Mines by C. M. Schwab.

Goldfield Con Mining Company formed with G. Wingfield as President.

Sullivan Trust Company goes under.

Desert Power and Milling Company construct 100 stamp mill at Millers for ores of Tonopah Mining Company.

Jack Rabbit Mine at Pioche shows improvement and Pioche revives.

Zinc ores recognized in Potosi Mine, Lincoln County, and zinc mining begins.

Monte Cristo Mine, Yellow Pine Mining District, Lincoln County, discovered and first shipment of high grade zinc carbonate ores follows.

Railroad between Blair and Tonopah and Goldfield Railroad constructed.

J. E. Spurr publishes paper on Silver Peak Quadrangle, U. S. G. S.

1907.

Bullion production for year, \$19,778,939.

Butters Plant at Virginia City works Tonopah ores.

General financial crisis.

Bitter labor strike at Goldfield, and Federal troops called. Strike terminates without fatalities.

Combination Mine sold to Goldfield Con Mining Company for \$4,000,000.

Strike of Goldfield miners as to whether watchmen should belong to unions. After 41 days settled in favor of companies.

John W. Mackenzie succeeds J. W. Finch as general manager of Goldfield Con Mining Company.

Mining boom begins to subside.

Tonopah Mining Company pays \$1,100,000 in dividends.

Tonopah-Belmont completes and begins to operate 60 stamp mill at Millers.

Montana-Tonopah Mining Company constructs an "all-sliming" mill of 40 stamps at Tonopah. Mill in operation.

Keane Wonder Mine completes a 20 stamp mill.

Twenty stamps of the 100 stamp mill of the Pittsburgh Silver Peck Mining Company put in operation at Blair.

Gold Bullfrog Mining Company completes a 35 ton standard mill (9 miles northeast of Rhyolite).

Montgomery-Shoshone mill in operation at Rhyolite.

At Round Mountain a \$100,000 hydraulic plant is put in to work placers.

Potosi Mine, Clark County, makes regular shipment of zinc ores.

Eureka Con and Richmond mines at Eureka make preparations to work low grade ores.

Iron mine at Barth, near Palisade, acquired and worked by American Smelting and Refining Company. Regular shipments made to lead smelters.

First locations made in February and March upon Baloon Mountain and new camp of Rawhide discovered.

Gold Circle has a small boom.

Greenwater bubble bursts.

State Bank and Trust Company closes its doors.

Nye and Ormsby County Bank fails.

Nevada Northern Railroad completed to Ely.

Railroad completed between Pioche and Caliente.

Tonopah and Tidewater completed to Rhyolite and by purchase of Bullfrog and Goldfield Railroad connects with Goldfield.

Tonopah and Las Vegas Railroad completed between Las Vegas and Goldfield.

1908.

Bullion production for the year, \$16,715,973.

Jeffrey Storage Battery Locomotive used in Sutro Tunnel.

General financial crisis continues.

Troops withdrawn from Goldfield, March 7.

In Goldfield development of properties is pushed. Some leases continued active. The Little Florence lease produced \$1,500,000, and the Rogers \$500,000.

Goldfield Merger Mines Company formed by consolidation of St. Ives, Velvet Potlatch and Gold Horn Mining Companies.

Goldfield Con Mining Company and Jumbo Extension Mining Company reach a compromise on Wedge claim controversy.

In June there were 1,800 miners at work and the Goldfield payroll totaled \$200,000 per month. Production is 75,000 tons ore.

Goldfield Con Mining Company's 100 stamp mill completed. \$7,500,000.

Population of Goldfield estimated as 20,000. From this time on population steadily diminishes.

Greenwalt Chlorination Process introduced at Goldfield by Goldfield Chlorination Company. Plant erected.

Montgomery-Shoshone Mine a failure and Rhyolite becomes dead.

Tonopah mines steadily worked.

Explosion of compressed air main at Mispah Shaft, Tonopah.

Manhattan Ore Reduction and Refining Company erects mill at Manhattan.

Manhattan placers worked.

Gold Circle mines show improvement.

The 100 stamp mill of the Pittsburgh Silver Peak Mining Company produces in 10 months \$700,000.

Thirty thousand horse-power is developed at Bishop Creek, 113 miles west of Goldfield, and used at Goldfield, Tonopah and neighboring mining camps.

Copper production begins in Nevada. Three units of the Steptoe Concentrator treat 4,000 tons per day. The smaller turns out 3,000,000 pounds of copper per month. Open pit mining with steam shovels begins in the Ely District.

Rescue of entombed miner at the Alpha Shaft, Giroux Mine, Ely District, attracts widespread interest.

Yerington mines report large tonnages of copper ores developed.

Town of Mason is built by the Mason Valley Copper Company.

Lucky Boy Mine near Hawthorne discovered.

Rawhide booms. Fifty hoists are in operation. In September the town burns down. During year two banks fail.

Old camp of Dun Glen revived as the new camp of Chafey.

State Police formed as outgrowth of Goldfield strike.

Statue of John W. Mackay and Mackay School of Mines building and equipment given to the State by Marie Louise Mackay and Clarence H. Mackay.

1909.

Bullion production for year, \$21,597,806.

Virginia.

Wooden stave pipe installed in Sutro Tunnel. Sturges and Leonard secure control of Crown Point, Yellow Jacket, Con Virginia, Ophir, Mexican and Savage mines, and the Sutro Tunnel. They spend \$350,000 for the rehabilitation of the Sutro Tunnel. Operation of mines on Sundays stopped and profit-sharing with miners initiated. In January fire in Sutro Tunnel blocks tunnel; some 700 feet of tunnel timbering destroyed, and direct damage of \$10,000 done.

Joint east cross-cut of Mexican and Ophir discovers ore body.

Water is removed from 2,300 level of Ophir and Mexican.

Ward Shaft reaches 2,575 feet.

Exhaust fan installed at Ophir shaft for the improvement of ventilation of north-end mines.

Ophir Mine produces in November \$50,000. The Yellow Jacket, Crown Point

and Belcher produce low grade ore which is worked in the new 200 ton Kinkead Mill at Gold Hill.

Since 1902 Ophir produces \$1,700,000, and Con Virginia \$800,000.

Population of Goldfield estimated as 6,000. In Goldfield 18 mines operating, and 6,777 men employed, 18 leases operating employing 116 men.

F. L. Ransome's report upon Goldfield mines published by U. S. G. S. Nevada California Power Company connects with Millers and Manhattan. Chilian mills and additional concentrators added to Goldfield Con Mill.

Bonanza ore discovered at National on lease of George and Frank Stall.

Total production of Round Mountain estimated as \$1,069,000.

Claims located at Jarbridge by D. A. Bourne, M. Pavlak and P. Thourot.

Buckhorn Mine near Cortez acquired by G. Wingfield and development started. Lead smelter of 100 tons capacity constructed at Lodi.

Office of State Mine Inspector created and mine inspector law passed.

In State 286 mines are producing ore and 400 others are operating, but without production.

Miners at Vetern Mine, Ely District, strike.

Eureka Windfall Mine, Eureka District, installs \$30,000 cyanide plant and begins operations.

Legislature passes law designed to prevent fraudulent company promotion and stock manipulation.

1910.

Bullion production for the year, \$25,489,510.

Population of Nevada, 81,875.

Virginia.

Belcher shaft house burned down; damage \$25,000.

Con Virginia sends 40 tons per day of low grade ore through the Sutro Tunnel to mill of Comstock Tunnel Company.

Multi-plunger pumps are installed in the Ward Shaft and high speed direct-driven pumps are abandoned.

Estimated production of Ophir Mine \$257,000.

Rocky Point Mill constructed at Dayton to work ores from Haywood Mine in Silver City District. Four mile wire rope tramway constructed to transport ore.

Important strike made upon the 1,100 foot level of Tonopah-Belmont Mine.

Goldfield Con Mining Company pays quarterly dividend of \$1,779,549.

Tonopah Mining Company pays in dividends \$1,400,000.

Production of Tonopah District \$7,436,393.

Activity at Austin. Electrostatic separation tried upon ores.

Austin-Manhattan Mill at Austin begins operations.

Nevada Con Mining Company at Ely produces 65,000,000 pounds copper.

Western Pacific Railroad begins through service.

Los Angeles, Salt Lake and San Pedro Railroad washed out and service suspended.

Eureka and Palisade Railroad washed out and operations at Eureka are suspended.

Nevada Copper Belt Railroad constructed from Wabuska to Yerington mines.

1911.

Bullion production for year, \$24,645,865.

Virginia.

Dividends paid by the Mexican, Ophir and Comstock-Phoenix companies.

Deep prospecting at Goldfield by the Goldfield Deep Mines Company.

Gross value of Goldfield Mining Company is \$10,540,000, product.

Florence Mill at Goldfield destroyed by fire.

West End Con Mill in operation at Tonopah. Auto truck used for ore transportation.

Nevada Hills Mill, Fairview, put in operation.

Rawhide Queen Mill at Rawhide put in operation.

Yellow Pine Mill started and separation of lead and zinc ores successfully accomplished (Goodsprings, Clark County).

Population of Ely District estimated between 8,000 and 10,000.

Giroux Mine fire at Kimberly; seven men killed.

Belmont Mine fire at Tonopah; seventeen men killed.

Mine Inspector act amended and detailed regulations effecting operation of mines provided.

State provides oxygen helmets and pulmotor at Carson for fighting mine fires.

Bureau of Mines sends mine car for instruction in use of fire-fighting appliances.

General introduction of oxygen helmets and fire-fighting appliances by large mines of State.

Gates required on all cages used in hoisting men in shafts.

Destructive cloud-burst attended by loss of life and great property loss occurs at Seven Troughs and Mazuma.

Giroux Mine at Kimberly (Ely District) becomes a regular producer.

Railroad constructed by Yellow Pine Mining Company from Jean to Goodsprings. Gasoline locomotive used.

In December cooperative laboratory established at Mackay School of Mines. From this time until middle of 1913 more or less activity in search for salines, particularly potash bearing salts. Bureau of Soils, United States Geological Survey, and Mackay School of Mines begin investigation of salines in Nevada.

Legislature passes 8 hour labor law. This applies to all mines and mills.

Legislature amends laws to prevent fraudulent company promotion and manipulation.

Summary of Mining in 1911.

Number of mines in operation—Placer, 72; deep, 589; total, 661.

Number of miners employed—Estimated as 6,000.

Number of tons of ore produced, 4,132,721.

Value of product—Gold: Placer, 10,181 ozs., \$210,461; deep, 889,924 ozs., \$17,982,936; total, 900,105, \$18,193,397. Silver: Deep mines, 13,184,601 ozs., \$6,987,839. Copper, 67,377,518 pounds, \$8,422,190. Lead 3,263,657 pounds, \$146,865. Zinc, 3,448,032 pounds, \$202,238.

Total value of product for year, \$33,952,529.

Dividends paid, \$11,627,956.

In 1911 there were 141 plants for the treatment of ores. Of these 89 were in operation, 40 idle and 12 under construction.

Mills using amalgamation in number 32; of which 21 operating.

Mills using concentration in number 18; of which 9 operating.

Mills using cyanide process in number 24; of which 15 operating.

Mills using amalgamation and concentration in number 27; of which 17 operating.

Mills using cyanide and concentration in number 11; of which 8 operating.

Mills using amalgamation and cyaniding in number 16; of which 10 operating.

Mills using amalgamation, cyaniding and concentrating in number 10; of which 8 operating.

Chlorination plants in number 2; of which none operating.

Hyposulphite leaching plant in number 1; of which none operating.

Of non-metallic minerals Nevada produced approximately 100,000 tons of gypsum of a value of about \$330,000 in 1911. Three plants are in operation calcining gypsum and making wall-plaster and plaster of paris.

1912.

Virginia.

Ward shaft abandoned.

Mexican Mill in successful operation.

Ophir Mining Company constructs tailings mill.

Monte Cristo Mine acquired by Mexican Mining Company and developed. Later becomes a producer.

Yellow Jacket Mill at Gold Hill steadily operates upon ores from Crown Point Mine. Old stopes of Crown Point produce much low grade ore.

Fire on 2,475 pump station of Ward Shaft leads to flooding this level and later to the pulling of the pumps and the abandonment of the shaft.

Nevada Wonder Mill at Wonder completed.

Electric power introduced from Lundy Canyon, California, into Wonder District.

New 3,000 H. P. hydro-electric plant completed by Truckee General Electric Company at Verdi for supplying Yerington District with power.

New Tonopah-Belmont Mill completed at Tonopah.

Chilian mills replace Huntington mills at Desert Mill, Millers.

Copper smelter completed at Thompson and ores of Yerington District are worked.

Eureka and Palisade Railroad constructed.

Clarence H. Mackay gives permanent endowment fund to Mackay School of Mines.

Labor strike at mine, mill and smelter at Ely. Complete tie-up of Nevada Con, Vatern and Giroux Mines.

Camp of Rochester discovered by Joseph Nenzel. Rush follows.

1913.

Virginia.

Whitman Symmes attempts to wrest control of north-end mines from clique of brokers.

State passes law requiring use of sprays to allay dust in drilling and handling ore underground.

Merger of Giroux, Butte and Ely Copper Mines and Chainman Companies at Ely into \$8,000,000 corporation.

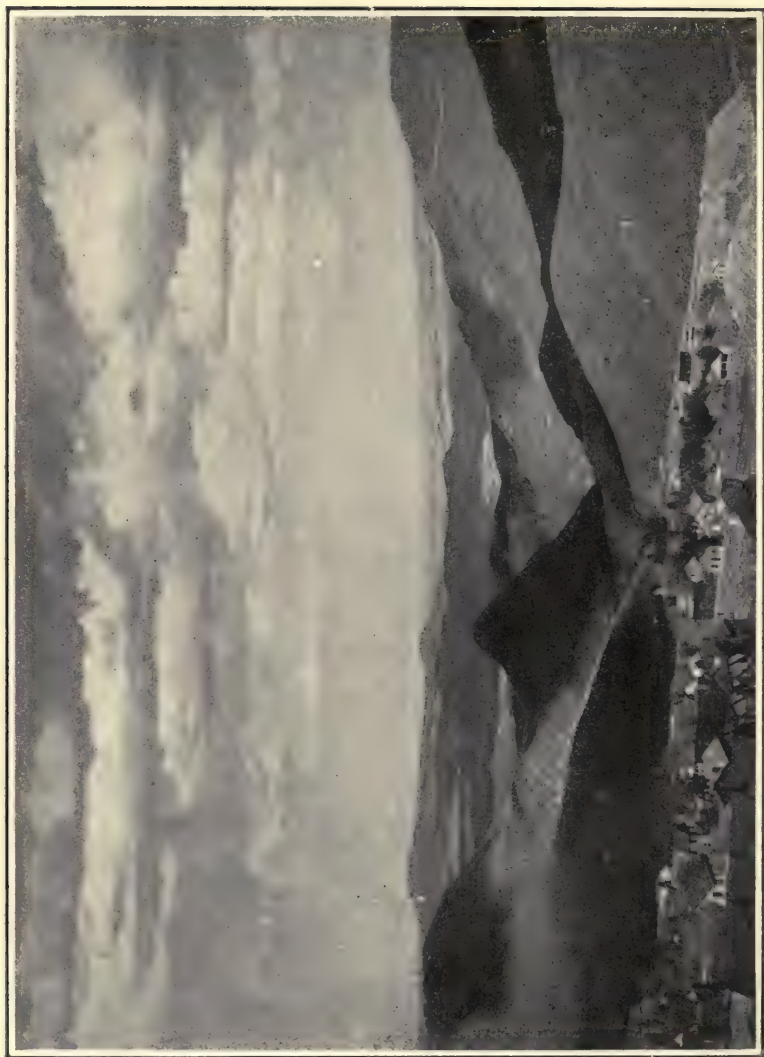
Buckhorn Mill being reconstructed.

Fernley-Lassen branch of Southern Pacific open for traffic to Susanville.

Total production of Goldfield Con Mining Company's mines to March 31, 1913, \$54,652,661. This sum includes production made during leasing period.

Total dividends paid by Goldfield Con Mining Company, \$24,906,811.

Settlement of Ely strike early in 1913.



VIRGINIA CITY, WHERE MANY MILLIONS WERE TAKEN FROM THE
COMSTOCK

CHAPTER XII.

THE GREAT COMSTOCK LODE.

By G. McM. Ross.

The story of the Comstock, for the purpose of the present book must be an impersonal one, and an epitome. The men and women who have taken part in its development cannot be named, not even those whose wit and wisdom have entertained and amused a world; the great jurists who have added luster to their profession; the soldiers who have added glory to their names; the financiers who have successfully managed vast enterprises, the engineers whose skill, practice and tireless energy overcame obstacles supposed to be insurmountable, and who, in their old age, seem to be planning the downfall of time; the great geologists who have visited, studied and written of the Comstock; the bold and reckless men who, as best they could, grasped and held fortunes greater than their wildest dreams could have outlined, whose fiercest spirits were not daunted when their bodies went down to a cold and loveless death, whose last moments were not comforted by an honest tear.

The statesmen who failed to convince their countrymen that those wise and good men who framed the Constitution of our country were right and that they were gifted with a strange prescience when they declared in that immortal document that "no State shall make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts," it would seem, must have foreseen the Comstock's production of gold and silver.

The few metallurgists who gave all of their energy, the best of their minds, and the better part of their lives to the evolution of a process that would extract the values from our ores; the mechanics whose combined skill gave to the mining world machines and ideas that enabled a development greater and faster than the world had ever seen; the miners whose splendid manhood made it possible to meet unheard-of difficulties; the noble women who in every phase of life performed their parts; none of these can be named.

The effect of the Comstock's product upon the social and economic life of the Nation and upon the world cannot here be stated, or its cost in blood and tears be estimated; all that can be done is to tell the story of its past, its present, and to outline its possible future.

The discovery of the Comstock was a natural consequence of the prior discovery of gold in California. To whom the honor of the discovery rightfully belongs will probably never be known. This is equally true of germs and of continents, and must remain true while men are held together in a civilization such as ours, where "the Creator showers upon us His gifts, more than enough for all; but, like swine scrambling for food, we tread them in the mire, while we tear and rend each other."

From the eastern slope of Mt. Davidson, whose peak is 7,900 feet high, in the year 1850 might be seen trains of emigrants moving westward. Those who had learned the limit of physical endurance of man and beast rested after their weary march across the desert along the meadows skirting the Carson River before undertaking the crossings of the Sierra Nevada Mountains, the last barrier between them and the land of gold. The young and vigorous men of these trains discovered that their camps were made in a plain below a splendid mountain range that could be reached through two canyons—one to the north, the other to the south. Through these two canyons the natural erosion of the mountains had been carried for ages. The lighter soils had been carried by melting snows to the plains below, while the coarser rocks and gravels remained where they were, protected from the rush of waters given up by cloudbursts that were not infrequent visitors to the eastern slopes of the Sierra Nevada Mountains. The canyons leading from the Comstock thus became natural concentrators of the values removed from the outcroppings of the lode by erosion. Gold could be seen and partly recovered by the most superficial means and indifferent labor. As early as 1850 gold was recovered from the canyons leading to the Comstock, and without cessation work has continued on these placers to the present moment, and is likely to continue as long as this part of the continent is inhabited by man.

The most northerly canyon forked within two miles of the lode, forming the Six-Mile and the Seven-Mile canyons, ends at a point on the lode just below a massive outcrop. At the end of this canyon, free gold and silver sulphides were found by prospectors in 1859 (on the 8th of June). Prior to this date from the mouth of the south canyon the placer miners

had followed the gold up through Gold Canyon, through where Silver City now stands, on up to Gold Hill, so that the Comstock Lode had been reached from both canyons by 1859.

The value of the silver sulphides was not discovered at once, as to all of the prospectors it was an unknown black metal. When the value of this rock was disclosed silver mining sprang into being and moved forward so rapidly that in a few years, through its vast product, the ideas of the world were so changed that a relentless war was started and has since been maintained against the use of silver as money. That such a war is without just cause can be learned from the fact that in the year of the greatest production of silver the mines of the world did not produce more than enough to make but one small silver button for each inhabitant of the earth. Present literature indicates that the money question is being more thoroughly and scientifically studied than in the past, so that a return to right reason and obedience to the Constitution may be expected in the monetary system of the United States. When this has been done the world will stop laughing at the "greatest nation on earth," as we have been engaged in the fantastic attempt of discrediting one of our greatest material blessings, and at the same time calling upon the nations of the earth to help us care for our silver, as we have more than we can manage. While we are less than six-tenths of one per cent. of the population of the earth, we produce at least half of the world's silver—but lack the genius to properly care for it.

The rich gold and silver ores were shipped to and sold in San Francisco, while experiments were being tried on the Comstock and in San Francisco on all sorts of processes and devices for the recovery of the values in gold and silver contained in the Comstock ores. The mining companies themselves undertook the reduction of their ores with an equipment whose magnificence was only equalled by its inefficiency. To this first work can be credited the imperfect and costly treatment of the Comstock ores that has lasted until the present day. Shrewd, hard-headed, practical men built mills for the reduction of Comstock ores, and as a result of their joint efforts the Washoe Process was evolved. When this process had been established as the one best adapted for the reduction of the ores, the profits derived from milling were so large that powerful milling companies were formed, and any efforts at the milling of their own ores by the mining companies were effectually discouraged.

THE WASHOE PROCESS.

The Washoe Process is the Americanized Mexican Patio process and is used for the extraction of gold and silver ores in the following way: The ore is crushed in wet-crushing five-stamp motors (any other device may be used) to a fineness ranging from twenty to forty mesh; the crushed ore is settled in square tanks, set on the pan-floor levels; the finest of the slimes is settled in reservoirs outside of the mill. The crushed ore, when settled, is charged into fast-running grinding pans holding a charge ranging from one to two tons; the pans are either steam-jacketed or arranged to take live steam into the charge; the ore is kept at such a consistency as, with the motion in the pans, will keep the quicksilver, which is added to each charge of ore, in suspension in the charge. Chemicals are used in the process, usually bluestone and salt, and the ore worked hot. The treatment lasts from three to six hours in the pans that are finally discharged into settlers (a slower-motion pan to which large quantities of water are added) to insure the settling of the quicksilver with its charge of gold and silver in such way that the pulp or ground ore will not settle; the pulp or ground ore is slowly discharged from the settlers, the quicksilver recovered and strained to secure the gold and silver amalgam, which is usually ground in a clean-up pan to remove all impurities, re-strained, and retorted; the resulting crude bullion is melted into bars of nearly fine gold and silver.

The mill arrangement and equipment is as follows: For ten stamps of 900 to 1,000 pounds each, four standard two-ton pans are required, with two settlers and a slow-motion clean-up pan, retort, assay office, etc. The actual horsepower required will be sixty, but to provide for extra rock-breaking service, a modification of the process, etc., it will be well to provide seventy-five horsepower for the work. Such a mill will treat from thirty to forty tons of ore per day at a cost ranging from \$3 to \$7 per ton, depending upon the loss of quicksilver, cost of water, power, etc. In the treatment of the ore such a mill will use 50,000 gallons of water per twenty-four hours; about fifty per cent. can be settled and used over again when water is scarce and expensive. The following modifications of the Washoe Process have been introduced: Plate and battery amalgamation is being used successfully. The free gold contained in the gold and silver ores is amalgamated and recovered from

the mortars and upon silvered copper plates that are used before the ore reaches the settling tanks; the ore is (after passing over these plates) treated in the same way by the Washoe Process as the ores first referred to.

CONCENTRATION BEFORE AMALGAMATION.

In ores containing heavy sulphides it has been found that, by removing these sulphides before treating the ore in amalgamating pans, a higher percentage of the values is recovered at a reduced cost. Any type or kind of concentrator can be used for the work that will remove the sulphides.

THE COMSTOCK'S PRODUCT.

With this process established, the production of gold and silver bullion from Comstock ores was rapidly increased. In 1860 the yield was: Gold, \$550,000; silver, \$200,000. In 1861: Gold, \$2,500,000; silver, \$1,000,000. By 1864 the production had reached: Gold, \$6,400,000; silver, \$9,600,000. By 1869 the output of gold and silver had dropped to \$7,405,578. From 1870 to 1877 there was a steady and rapidly increased product—in the last-named year, that of the greatest output, \$14,520,614.08 being gold and \$21,780,922.02 being silver, or a total of over \$3,000,000 per month in gold and silver from the Comstock mines. From 1879 to 1895 the output varied from \$7,000,000 to \$1,000,000. From 1896 to 1899 there was a steady decrease in output, that of 1889 being less than \$200,000 a year. Since then there has been a gaining output reaching about \$2,000,000 a year. The total output of the Comstock mines in gold and silver to the end of 1902 is probably very close to \$371,000,000. Of this sum there was about 60 per cent. silver, the remaining 40 per cent. being gold. These values were recovered; the losses are estimated at between \$60,000,000 and \$80,000,000. Of this loss modern methods would have saved 70 per cent.

THE MINING OF COMSTOCK ORE.

The discovery of the silver sulphides having been made by placer miners, it was some time before the nature of the Lode was understood. The first ore was found in small westerly dipping veins that on being fol-

lowed developed into great masses of ore that turned when nearing the easterly dipping footwall and the vein or fissure followed this wall to a depth of 3,200 feet below the surface. The great value of the Comstock ore created intense excitement throughout the world, so that in a short time after the discovery of the silver sulphides the mining world was fairly represented on the Comstock by men interested in some phase of mining. Added to them were the speculators and gamblers. The result of their combined efforts was to cover the surface of the earth with hundreds of mining locations, as the speculators and gamblers soon discovered that mining claims had a speculative value. These wild and reckless men were models of modesty and propriety when compared to their natural successors in modern mining districts. On the Comstock the main lode was soon outlined and reduced to ownership by many companies. Of these twenty-eight have maintained their organizations to the present time. The ore bodies of the main lode were so much larger and richer than anything found in the outlying mines that attention and work soon concentrated upon the mines of the main lode, notwithstanding the fact that to the east and west of the Comstock Lode ore of value was found in quantity which, under conditions less exciting than were brought about by the development of the main lode, would have been successfully worked, as is surely will be in the not distant future.

The high wages that were paid to the miners and mechanics on the Comstock was the magnet that attracted the most skillful of these men from the ends of the earth. The managers were thus enabled to meet the unusual difficulties of mining large bodies of ore, handling large quantities of water, and opening up new ground where the temperature was unusually high. All of these difficulties were fairly met, and, while it took nine years for the placer miners of Gold Canyon and the Six-Mile and Seven-Mile canyons to trace the gold they had found in 1851 at the mouth of these canyons to its source, the Comstock (the full circle of the distance from the mouth of Gold Canyon up to the Comstock and back through Six and Seven-Mile canyons can be walked by any vigorous man in one day), the quartz miners of the Comstock had penetrated the Lode to a depth of 3,000 feet within twenty years of the discovery of silver sulphides on the surface. Within that time the simple hand windlass had been superseded by more and more powerful machinery, until direct-acting hoisting engines of a thousand horsepower were being used. These

engines were designed for work to a depth of a mile below the surface. A tunnel was started and connected with the Lode from a point in the valley of the Carson River four miles distant, thus forming a new base of operations 1,600 feet below the surface. Powerful pumping machinery was installed at various points along the Lode, one such installation costing \$1,000,000. During these years of intense activity the Comstock mines, or group of mines, were controlled by individual owners or by small numbers of men with headquarters in San Francisco. The mines were irregular in size and in the number of shares that represented individual properties. The shares of these mines were regularly bought and sold, the controlling ownership often changed. The policy of those in control was always the same: to make the most money possible out of the properties in the shortest possible time, either by manipulating the stocks or by working the mines, or by both. While the management of the mines was, as a rule, brilliant, the spirit of the gambling speculator, not that of the reasonable business man, dominated the situation, and when the time of "Borrasca" came, as come it must after every Bonanza—the time in the Comstock's history when, after a splendid dash at attaining great depth, and but a partial development of these depths, that failed to bring forth a Bonanza, while being threatened on every side by known bodies of hot water—a retreat was ordered, and 1,700 feet of opened and partly developed depths were abandoned, and the hands upon the Comstock's dial were rudely thrust back, for at least a quarter of a century. The reason and excuse for this was the fact that no unity of interest had ever been acknowledged by those in control of the various mines or groups of mines on the Comstock, and even science failed to give a reasonably definite statement of what might be expected of the Comstock in depth.

The United States Geological Survey had devoted the time of its most eminent employees to a study of the Comstock; many great geologists of the world had in their time examined and reported upon this great lode, yet their combined work was not enough to prevent the abandonment of the lower levels. The keenest regret was felt by those who understood the mechanical conditions and possibilities of the various installations. A pump had been installed and operated under conditions that at that time had never before been encountered by an engineer, yet the pump was so perfect and efficient that, had a united effort been

made by the principal mines of the Comstock, this pump could have been operated and the lower levels need never have been abandoned.

A vertical depth of 3,300 feet was reached before the lower levels were abandoned. It was several years before the water again rose to the level of the drain tunnel, 1,700 feet above. During these years many millions of dollars were extracted from ore bodies that formed the margins of the old Bonanzas of the Comstock. It is one of the remarkable features of these ore bodies that they begin and end in quartz bodies—quartz being the gangue or matrix in which the ore is found, the ore forming a rough central core or lens surrounded by quartz, carrying but little ore. In Bonanza days, and during the mad rush to extract a great number of tons per day, the heart of the Bonanza was literally torn out of its quartz body, and in every instance where a Bonanza was found and mined it has paid to mine the ground again. It is also true that, in several instances, a greater tonnage was extracted during the second period of mining than during the first, even when it was not possible to mine the ground thoroughly. Had a more conservative and rational system of mining been adopted, there can be no doubt that many of the Comstock mines would have continued to pay dividends and would have remained on a paying basis for many years to come, and that the bullion production, instead of being less than four hundred millions of dollars, would have been at least double that sum.

By the year 1898 the conditions on the Comstock were cheerless and nearly hopeless. Many of the mines were practically abandoned; ruin and decay were the prominent features. At this period, a few men, to whom failure and defeat were unknown terms, with tireless energy and boundless faith in the Comstock, worked at, and succeeded in getting together, the loose ends of the many interests that centered in the Comstock and in convincing those in control of these interests that to save the Comstock from complete abandonment a united effort must be made to recover the lower levels of the Lode. These men were so far successful that a provisional and temporary union of all Comstock interests was formed by twenty-eight mines entering into and forming the Comstock Pumping Association. The operations of this association were successful. The original plan succeeded in recovering 400 feet in depth of the flooded levels, in the discovery of an ore body, and in the re-establish-

ment of sufficient confidence in the Comstock mines to warrant a general resumption of work along the Lode.

The device used for draining the Lode is a modified hydraulic elevator designed to use water under a head of 2,000 feet and over. Using water under such great pressure brought forward problems in hydraulics that are not yet solved. The advantages of the system are so great as to economy of space and first cost that every feature of the system deserves the most careful study, with the view of attaining final perfection and highest possible efficiency. Before a hundred thousand dollars had been expended in this system, more water was discharged into the drain tunnel at one time by it than had been discharged by the five million dollars worth of pumps formerly in operation on the Comstock Lode. Shortly after this system had been in fairly successful operation it was decided to operate the mines of the Comstock by electric power. A company was formed that secured contracts for power paid in advance of delivery and the power plant was built. The plant is now in successful operation, delivering power that is used in mining, pumping, milling ore, and for lighting, from a generating station at a point on the Truckee River thirty-three miles distant from the Comstock Lode.

VIRGINIA CITY.

Virginia City is situated on the eastern slope of Mt. Davidson, overlying the Comstock Lode, at an average elevation of 6,000 feet above the sea. It is a modern city in all that the term implies; electrically lighted, and supplied with an abundance of the purest and softest of mountain water. The wants of the community are supplied by dozens of keen competing merchants. Communication with the outside world is had through the best equipped and maintained railroad in the country, and by perfect telegraph and telephone service. The spiritual wants of the community are fairly met; the fraternal wants are supplied in superabundance; the educational facilities are what the people demand; the brokerage and banking facilities are of such magnitude and so far-reaching that visitors to the Comstock while on the ground can buy the controlling interest in one of the mines and arrange for its payment by telegraph transfer; the climate and scenery are to the normal person ideal. A sunrise as seen from Virginia City, looking eastward along the pathway

of the sun, has been aptly described as the "Purple Gate," as distinguished from California's Golden Gate as lit by the setting sun. One can see this sunrise on the "Purple Gate," and, leaving Virginia City before it sets, behold it rise again on the morrow on the Golden Gate.

THE FUTURE OF THE COMSTOCK.

This statement is not intended to be prophetic. The author has knowledge of Comstock history, and of the strange freaks it has produced in the lives of men and in the condition of things. In these actions and reactions, Bonanzas and Borrascas have played almost equal parts. The Bonanzas have deluged men with more money than they could count; the Borrascas have wafted our men and women to other scenes where fame and fortune became theirs. He also possesses information as to the fate of prophets, and will, therefore, submit the facts, hoping to assist the reader to paint his own picture of the Comstock's future.

The most striking fact in the history of the Comstock is revealed by a study of the working maps. While it is true that a vertical depth of 3,300 feet has been reached on a vein with an average dip of 45 degrees to the east, and that hundreds of miles of tunnels and drifts have been run, it is equally true that barely 20 per cent. of the lode above the 1,600-foot level has been prospected, that today good ore is being extracted within a few feet of the surface at many points, and that millions of tons of ore will yet be profitably worked from the croppings of the lode. Below the 1,600-foot level 7 per cent. would be a very liberal allowance for the prospected or developed ground of the Comstock Lode.

The second fact is that no modern complete milling plant for the reduction of ores exists on the Comstock. It is true that first-class modern work has been done, and that ores are now being reduced at a fraction of former costs, but the credit for this work is due to individual effort, and not to the direct action of any mining company. The data now available is conclusive as to what percentages of the values of Comstock ores can be recovered. The unaltered ores, treated by plate amalgamation and concentration, yield from 60 to 80 per cent. at once. Of the remaining 20 to 40 per cent. of the value, there can be recovered 60 to 70 per cent. by cyanide treatment. Of the other Comstock ores nearly equal results can be obtained and at not greater cost.

Our neighbors in California and to the east are treating ores in this way, crushing, amalgamating, concentrating and cyaniding the tailings in quantity for \$1 per ton of ore treated.

The third fact is that the Comstock has been most generous in "casting her bread" of men and treasure upon the waters of the world's affairs. What was prophesied of old must be true in this case. The patient, unselfish students of geology and mineralogy throughout the world are recording the results of their labors. The men engaged in the active work of mining and reducing ores are coming together and comparing results and methods.

From these facts, it is reasonable to assume that the law governing the occurrence and recurrence of ore bodies will be discovered and the discovery published for the benefit of mankind. The low costs of mining and milling, so general throughout the world, will at least be duplicated on the Comstock. Those in control of the mines will become students of the great Lode and give it at least the attention that the successful horseracing man gives his stable.

Those who have the best information of the Comstock Lode can safely say that there is no mining field known in the world that offers inducements so great and lasting to the student, the capitalist, the mining engineer, or the speculator. If the man exists who combines in himself the best of these qualities, the Comstock is the field provided by nature for the full development of every faculty with which he has been endowed.

For several years past, an important mining investigation has been conducted by the greatest combination of capital that the world has ever known. The gentleman in charge of the investigation that embraces the western half of the American continent and who worked in the mines of the Comstock Lode in the early days of its development, on a recent visit said: "I meet old Comstockers in nearly every mining camp or district that I visit, and I am prepared to say that I know of no mining camp or lode whose revival and success would call forth such universal and hearty congratulation as that of the Comstock."

It need only be added that the fissure veins carrying silver sulphides of the same type and character as found on the Comstock have been worked for a thousand years, to warrant a final and cheerful picture of the Comstock's future.

The gross yield of the Comstock during the past eight years is as fol-

lows: 1905, 515,771; 1906, 631,285; 1907, 258,538; 1908, 501,230; 1909, 825,117; 1910, 746,382; 1911, 513,809; 1912, 1,268,492.

When in 1904, I wrote the history of the great Comstock Lode, it was necessary that the story should be impersonal, due to the fact that I held an official position as manager of several of the Comstock mines and that there was then living, men who had been and were then interested in the control of the Comstock situation. Since 1904, death and time, have pursued the even tenor of their ways, so that there is now no reason for an impersonal story.

The names of engineers, in charge of the work, the manufacturers of the modern machinery used in the effort to recover the lost levels, the active San Francisco stock brokers, who still think that they are competent to act as directors of mining companies, and the optimistic capitalists from other mining regions who have done their best to improve old Comstock methods and discover new Bonanzas, the names of all these good people and things could be given, graphically and in detail without injury or offense, but our modern world calls for results, and as the combined efforts of the good people and the modern machinery have accomplished so little in the last eight years, there is now no reason or excuse for a personal story.

Since 1904 practically no work has been done on the Comstock proper; in the mines at Virginia City all of the work being confined to the nearly vertical spurs that were found in the Con Virginia, the Ophir, and the Mexican; these spurs were followed north, along a northeast course, while the Comstock Lode has a course north and south, so that the further north that these spurs were found, the greater the distance in a westerly line to the Comstock proper; except in the Con Virginia, no contact has been found or shown between these spurs and the Comstock Lode.

In the Gold Hill portion of the Comstock, no important new development has been made; the work has been largely along the margins and in the ground of the old Bonanzas and on the main Lode.

The production has varied between \$750,000 and \$2,000,000 annually. For the year 1912, the production will probably be about one million.

In the history of Nevada, the diminishing yield of the Goldfield District, and the increasing yield of the Tonopahs, still leaves the Comstock as Nevada's greatest gold and silver mine. What was said of the future of the Comstock in 1904, is true today. The opportunities are still there

and but little changed; the effort to unwater the great lode has not yet succeeded, there being several hundred feet of the old levels still under water.

There are indications that the man, or men, who will restore the Comstock to a profitable producer of gold and silver, are either now on the Comstock or that they are not far away.

Some ten years ago there was established at Virginia City, a mining school branch or extension of the University of Nevada presided over by an instructor provided by the University; the students were a self-governing set of men who paid their own expenses and arranged the class work so that the practical miners working underground on any one of the three shifts of men required to maintain continuous twenty-four hour underground service, could receive instruction from the professor in charge. The subjects taught were such that would enable any of the students who could successfully master them, and pass an examination at the University of Nevada to secure a degree of mining engineer. With slight modifications, the class has continued since it was started and it is now in successful operation, presided over by Professor D. T. Smith.

Many of the students of this class have become successful mining engineers and managers; they have been successful also as prospectors and as miners working for themselves. A company of these students has successfully opened, worked, and finally disposed of, at a good profit to themselves, a mining property just east of the Comstock Lode. The men of this class writing to me on the subject of this school in October last, expressed themselves as follows:

"It is with hearty good will and sincere appreciation for the service you rendered us in conceiving, and what is more important still, making that conception an actuality, in the Comstock Class of Mining and Metallurgy now known as the Virginia City School of Mines, that we send you this testimonial of our esteem.

"You desired to give the common miner a chance to improve his condition and surround him with an environment that would encourage and help him to become an assayer, surveyor or manager of a mining company.

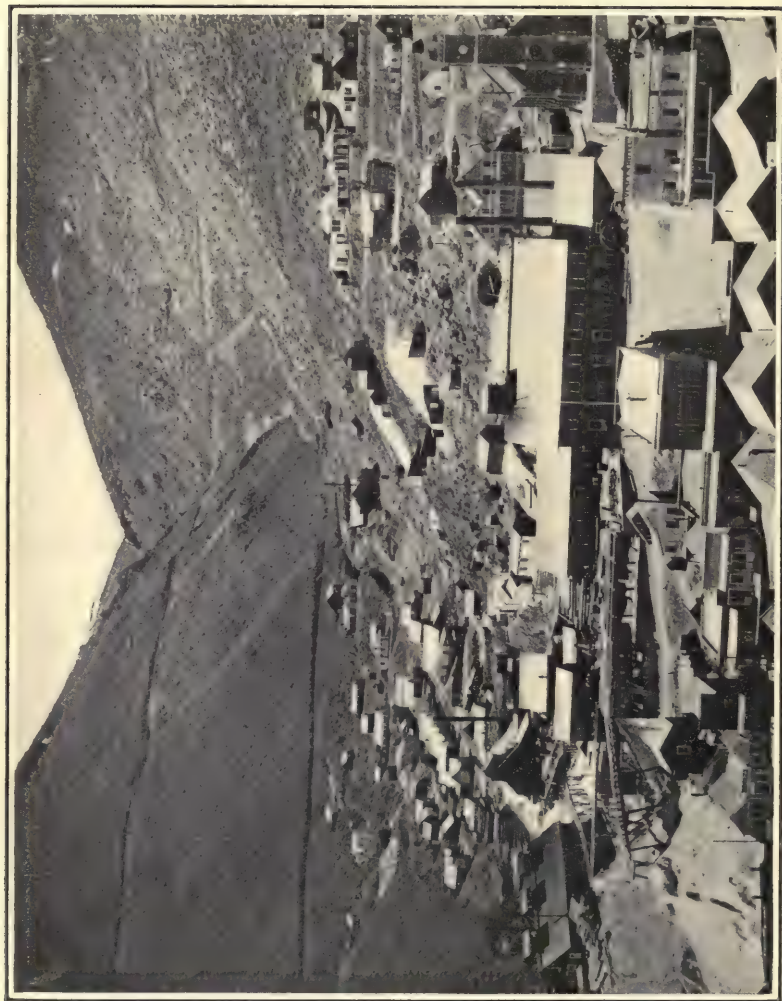
"A man of less energy and resourcefulness than yourself would have been daunted by the obstacles thrown in his path.

"It was a new idea in America; this invitation to the 'groundhog' to lift up his eyes and see the acorns on the tree of knowledge; to reach

the lower branches if he would and strive for the topmost branches if he could; and its practicability was derided by some, and doubted by many.

"Its feasibility is no longer a matter of doubt, and its former students are holding important positions from Alaska to Central America."

This letter is signed by forty-six miners. The excuse for introducing the subject is the fact that at Virginia City, Nevada, on the great Comstock Lode, was established the first successful school for working miners in America, and for the further reason that their experience may be taken as a safe guide for vocational education.



GOLD HILL, ONE OF THE LIVELIEST OF THE EARLY MINING CAMPS

CHAPTER XIII.

EARLY MINING DISCOVERIES.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

The story of the first discovery of gold at Sutter's mill, California, was the beginning of an epoch in the history of the United States which led to the mad rush of fortune-hunters to the Pacific Coast, and gave the world a romance of sudden wealth which has never been duplicated in the history of mining. For the next ten years the record was one of tragedy and greed, of gilded adventure and extraordinary happenings, in which the soldiers of fortune from the uttermost parts of the earth plunged into the seething melting-pot of fate and fought for spoils so vast and so easily acquired that it made the tale of Alladin's Lamp a jest and mockery.

The romance of California gold mining needed a sequel, and the opening chapter was written when the Grosh brothers, of Philadelphia, first discovered silver in Nevada, on the eastern slope of Mt. Davidson. Now and then a hand reaches down and brings up some fragment which calls to mind the incidents which cluster about that tremendous discovery which helps make a new State and contributes a page to the history of the world.

After the bloom had worn off the gold excitement in California some of the men who had rushed to the Coast doubled back along the trail and began to hunt for the precious metal in Nevada.

Gold is not a modest metal. It makes its presence known whenever it can and is always seeking recognition. When in its original matrix it is always subject to dislodgment from the attrition of the elements, the convulsions of Nature, and the thousand and one disturbances arising from the industry of man. The moment it is loosened from its original home it becomes subject to the law of gravitation, and every movement is downward. Every storm which beats upon it helps to disintegrate its prison walls, and at every turn the stones of the stream fall upon it

and hammer it flatter, while the wear of the water takes away its sharp edges, so that when a practiced prospector picks it up from the bottom of his pan scores of miles from the original ledge, the appearance of the little grain of gold gives him a tolerably good idea of the distance it has traveled.

Early in the fifties prospectors found gold in the Carson River, near where Dayton now stands, and they followed the indications up the ravine which carried away the wash of Mt. Davidson. They found the precious metal in paying quantities all along this gulch, and were finally washing out gold on the eastern slope of the mountain. Gold hunters were along the river from Placerville as early as 1854, and earning good wages with pick and pan in what is now known as Six-Mile Canyon.

The Grosh Brothers.—In 1857 E. Allen Grosh and Hosea B. Grosh, sons of Rev. A. B. Grosh, a Unitarian clergyman of Philadelphia, were working on the Comstock. From the testimony of many old miners who knew them, they were men of considerable scientific attainments, being chemists, assayers and metallurgists. In addition to all this, having quite an outfit of assaying implements, they also brought with them to a spot afterward occupied by the Trenck mill quite a formidable library of scientific works. Captain Gilpin and George Brown were also regarded as partners of the Grosh brothers. They went over into the gold region—now the Comstock—from Mud Springs, El Dorado County, California, in 1857, and continued to prospect for nearly a year. They came across a young man named McLoud and took him along with them. He was a Canadian, about twenty years of age, and had crossed the plains with some Mormon emigrants.

The Mormons, who were the early settlers of Nevada, wanted McLoud to remain with them, but he declined to accept their religion, and so cast his fortunes with the miners. The Grosh brothers occupied the cabin along with young McLoud, and Comstock, after whom the ledge was named, was a frequent visitor to their little home. By this time there was considerable mining done about Mt. Davidson, but it was all for gold. The black sulphurets, so rich in silver, were regarded as of no value and thrown away. In fact, the presence of these sulphurets was regarded everywhere with disfavor by the miners.

There is no authentic record of any assay made by the Grosh brothers, but they had the necessary appliances for the work and must have made

the assay, for in the fall of 1857 they told Comstock that they knew of rich silver mines in the vicinity, and were going back to Philadelphia to secure capital to work them. They asked Comstock to remain at their cabin during the winter with McLoud, who had been engaged by them to cut wood, etc., until they returned. At that time there was considerable stunted cedar in the vicinity, and this, with the sagebrush, was used for fuel.

It would be of great interest for the world to know the history of the first silver assay made by the Grosh brothers. What it amounted to they kept to themselves. The testimony of McLoud on this subject is interesting. After he reached Last Chance, with his feet frozen from exposure, he stated to Bill Leet, the storekeeper there, that he had come over the mountains with one of the Grosh brothers and that they had endured horrible sufferings on the way. McLoud stated to Leet that he saw the Groshes "pour some of the silver ore in a glass after pounding it in a pot and wetting it," and that after that "they got very much excited." This was McLoud's description of the formula of taking an assay. McLoud now lives in Montreal, Canada, where he is practicing medicine. The assay thus described by McLoud is unquestionably the first assay ever made of the silver deposits of the Comstock.

What a subject this scene would have made for a painter's brush—in the interior of a miner's camp at night, the faces of two fortune-seekers lit by the ruddy glow of the cupel-furnace, as they eagerly held up the glass where the silver-button had dissolved in the acid solution! On the result of that assay the fortune of thousands hung. Out of that assay sprang the millionaires of the Coast, blocks of the finest buildings which now adorn San Francisco, the great enterprises that have made Nevada and California famous, and along with it, a landslide of misery and bankruptcy that has carried thousands to the foot of the hill to be covered with the debris of shame and oblivion. Out of the little glass came a giant more powerful and relentless than the awful shape that sprang from the pan in the Arabian story, and this giant still lives to make and unmake the destinies of thousands. The men who made the assay are both dead. The grave of one is in California, and of the other in Nevada, and neither themselves nor their descendants ever realized a dollar from their discovery which added to the world's wealth over seven hundred millions of dollars and saved the American Union in the Civil War.

The Grosh brothers seemed to fully realize the importance of the discovery they had made, for they began to make plans for going back to Philadelphia to interest capitalists there to invest in their find. They at once staked off several claims, but there being no mining district there at the time, naturally they could not have recorded them. They told Comstock, who combined with them, what their intentions were, and where the find was located.

While preparations were being made for the departure of the Grosh brothers, Hosea, while prospecting, ran a pick in his foot, and the result was lockjaw, from which he died on the 2d of September. His grave was marked by a few boulders, but on June 27, 1865, Hon. Schuyler Colfax, who was en route for California overland, participated in the erection of a marble-slab over the grave. About 200 people took part in the ceremony. This slab had been sent from Philadelphia by the father of the deceased, and it was inscribed as follows:

"Hosea B., second son of Rev. A. B. Grosh.

Born at Marietta, Pa., April 23, 1826.

Died at Gold Canyon, Nev., Sept. 2, 1857."

George Brown, who was out on the Humboldt river, was in some way a partner of the Grosh boys, but in what way has never been clearly stated. He was murdered at Gravelly Ford on the Humboldt shortly before Hosea Grosh injured his foot. He was mentioned by the Grosh boys as "our partner," and they said that he was coming to help them with \$600. When they heard of his death they were very despondent. They learned the news of Brown's death from Mrs. Louisa M. Dettenrieder, whose name at that time was Mrs. Ellis. She is still living in Nevada, having first gone there in 1853. She states that she first met them in Nevada as early as 1854, after which they went to Volcano, Cal., to winter and returned to Nevada in 1855. They told Mrs. Ellis in 1857 of their discoveries, and also pointed to Mt. Davidson, saying that the big silver ledge was at the foot of the mountain, and that in locating their claims they had put her down for 300 feet.

Mrs. Ellis became quite interested in the discoveries, and made a proposition to sell her property in California and put \$1,500 into the scheme of developing the discovery. Winter came on, however, and Mrs. Ellis never had further opportunity to invest.

About November 1, Allen, the remaining Grosh brother, took young

McCloud and started across the mountains for Mud Springs by way of Georgetown. They crossed by way of Lake Tahoe, then known as Lake Bigler, and after being in a succession of snowstorms finally reached Last Chance, in Placer County, where Grosh died from the effects of the privations he had suffered, and McCloud was obliged to have his feet amputated.

Johnson Simmons, who was stopping temporarily at Last Chance at the time, and who now resides in Oakland, gives the following account: "I recall the time when two miners were brought into Last Chance in the winter of 1857. Some men were out hunting deer when they found the two lying in the snow, where they were dying of cold and hunger. The one named Grosh never spoke after he was brought in. The miners carried them from the place where they were first found, as they were too weak to walk. Grosh, I think, lived about three days after being brought in. His stomach refused nourishment and his legs were frozen. The other man we found pulled through, but they were obliged to amputate his feet. The miners then took him to Michigan Bar, where they kept him until spring and then raised a subscription to send him to his relatives in Canada. Before he left for Canada he told me of his trip. He said their provisions gave out after passing Lake Bigler and their sufferings were terrible. They had their provisions, etc., on a pack-mule, but there was nothing but small twigs for him to eat and he became so weak that they were obliged to kill him. After the mule was killed he was cut up and portions of his flesh roasted. The meat was lean, tough and unsavory, and only their terrible hunger made the repast endurable. They ate their last cooked mule on the banks of the Truckee, and, slinging as much of the roast meat as they could carry on their shoulders, they pushed on. They became so faint that they could no longer carry anything except their blankets, so they ate as much as they could and threw the rest away. At that point Allen Grosh, who had stuck to his maps and assays through all the journey, concluded to abandon them also, and so he tied them up into a piece of canvas and deposited them in the hollow of a large pine tree. McCloud said that he never saw the assays, Grosh being very close-mouthed regarding them. All that he knew of them was that they were high in silver, and from a conversation he overheard he believed them high in the thousands. The tree in which they were deposited had blown down in the wind, having broken about

twenty feet from the ground. Grosh told them that it was safer to select a tree of that kind than a standing one, liable in a storm to be uprooted. The hollow in the tree was quite small, and after depositing the records he cut a mark on the tree with his knife and rolled a good-sized stone in front of the hollow. The next day there was a big snowstorm, and they finally threw away their blankets, as they were useless from the wet, and their matches were useless from the same cause. After the snowstorm it turned colder, and for four days and nights they wandered in the mountains nearly dead and demented from exposure and hunger. At night they could hear the howling of the wolves, but none were ever near enough to attack them, and once they crossed the track of a bear. They finally sank down with exhaustion near some rocks, and Grosh said he had rather die there than make any further effort. After giving themselves up for lost they heard shots, and McLoud roused himself and went in the direction of the shots, when he came on a party of miners hunting deer. He took the party to Grosh, only a few hundred yards away, and then sank down alongside him. The miners carried the two to Last Chance, a camp near by, and there Grosh died after a few days, never having been able to speak. Had he been able to speak, McLoud felt confident he would have made some statement relative to his discoveries."

In the spring Comstock learned that Allen Grosh was dead, and concluded to take advantage of the knowledge then acquired. The partner of Grosh claimed afterward that Comstock ransacked the cabin for papers and data, and was thus enabled to relocate the ledge. It is not probable, however, that such was the case, as the Grosh brothers did not trust him with anything, nor was it likely that they left anything in the cabin that would benefit him. After they left he probably went over the ground where he had seen them prospecting and located the likeliest places.

The *Record-Union* of November 2, 1859, contained the following:

Nov. 2d, 5 p. m.

The tide is beginning to ebb slowly back. Parties of prospectors who went out yesterday and the day before are returning from the new diggings. I should think a dozen or fifteen have returned. I am sorry for some of these mines, and those who have founded their hopes upon them, but they do not appear to realize the anticipations of their friends. In

sober truth, no one seems to have found the exact locality. I have conversed with a reliable person who hunted for them up hill and down dale, a day and a half, and not only lost the scent, but got away from every trace of gold. He says, after crossing the hills northeast from Six-Mile Canyon, he entered upon a rugged country, where there was no quartz and where there was none of the other gold-bearing signs existing. He met or saw in all nearly a hundred persons looking for new diggings, but could not hear of anyone who had struck them. There were reports that the real spot lies somewhere across the Carson, in a direction south of east from here, and parties have gone in that direction.

The general belief appears to be that the new mines are a humbug of the first water. Nevertheless, I have this evening met and conversed with a man who professes to have come directly from the spot; his name is J. Clark, formerly of Placerville, and of late engaged in trading ventures to Ragtown and vicinity. He tells a moderate story and relates with an air of truthfulness what he professes to have himself seen. Instead of lumps, nuggets and chispas, his discourse is of surface prospects yielding 10 cents to the pan, which is not enough, I fear, to satisfy the restless craving of the excited fortune-hunters. Ragtown, as all of your readers may not be aware, is about seventy miles in a northeasterly direction from this place, on the edge of the Great Desert, and is the first trading post that is reached by the overland emigration after crossing that "melancholy waste" and arriving on the frontier settlements of our State. This side of Ragtown are still two other deserts which the emigrants have to cross before reaching Carson Valley proper.

When the miners came in the spring, Comstock was "on deck," claiming everything, and in the same year, 1859, he was deeding ground to the newcomers and sold the Burning Moscow, which seems to have been the second location on the Comstock, the Ophir being first. The first deed given by Comstock, and probably the first ever recorded on the ledge, was for the paltry consideration of \$40, and the next one was for \$30. The Virginia, or middle lead, commonly known as the Red Ledge, and lying parallel with, and adjoining the Comstock on the west and the Black Ledge on the east, was brought into prominence in 1859 by the Burning Moscow discovery, which developed a body of ore as rich as any ever found in the district before or since. It contained native silver and free gold in large quantities. Among other locations made by Comstock in the Virginia district was one on the Red Ledge, and appearing in Book A of the Gold Hill Mining Records. It reads as follows:

NOTICE

That I, the undersigned, claim from this stake six hundred feet (600) running from the water on the Mexican ravine north, known as the Calwide claim.

H. COMSTOCK.

Recorded June 27, 1859.

V. A. HOUSEWORTH, Recorder.

Adjoining this location the Ketch and Baker Company and the McBee Mining Company made a location on March 23, 1859, extending to Cedar ravine on the north, the notices of which location are recorded in Book A of the Virginia Mining Records. The ground located by these three notices was then conveyed to the Iowa Mining Company, which incorporated in 1862. Among the early promoters of this company were Louis McLane, Thomas Bee, William C. Ralston, Oliver Eldridge, W. F. Babcock, William Blanding and E. A. Miller. These names have since become familiar to business circles on the Coast and some of them are linked with the grandest enterprises in the Coast's history. Comstock, who started these men at the beginning of riches, died poor.

After the Grosh brothers had passed from the scene of their labors there was still nothing very tangible about the Comstock until Melville Atwood, a chemist and metallurgist residing at Grass Valley, made an assay of some rock brought from Nevada (then Utah) by a man named Walsh. This assay was from the first ton and a half of ore ever brought over the mountains from Nevada. The following are the original letters written by him regarding the find. He confounded the Truckee with the Carson River at the time of the writing.

Grass Valley, June 30, 1859.

My Dear Sir: On Monday morning a miner, a friend of Walsh, from Alpha, who had been locating a ranch near the Truckee River, came into our office with a sample of rock which he said was taken from the lead he had discovered near the Truckee River, and near which some miners had obtained large returns of gold. I recognized it as a rich silver ore, and Walsh got him to divide the ground he had taken up (3,900 feet) into six shares, of which Walsh and self are to have one-sixth each. I made the assay on Tuesday and they proved to be so rich that Walsh and a friend of his left yesterday morning for the mine. In the assay made at Nevada (Nevada City, Cal.) they did not discover

the silver—so much for California assays. The mine (the Ophir) is in the Utah Territory, about 120 miles from this place. I have just heard that there is great excitement in Nevada (Nevada City, Cal.) about it. I do hope Walsh will be in time to secure our ground. My assays gave from 15 to 20 per cent. silver. I am much hurried and will write you again on Walsh's return. He will bring 200 or 300 pounds of ore down with him. You may yet have something better than the sulphurets to ship to England. In great haste, yours most truly,

MELVILLE ATTWOOD.

To Donald Davidson, Esq., San Francisco.

The following are the first two Mint certificates issued on Comstock bullion. The first is numbered 648, and gives the following estimates: Weight of metal before melting, 118.30 ounces; after melting, 117.85 ounces; fineness, 864½; value of silver, \$136.95; gold, \$53.85; net value, \$186.72; deduction, \$3.81. The bullion was deposited by A. Martin for the Ophir mine, and assayed and purchased October 6, 1859.

The second, No. 679, was assayed and purchased October 12, 1859. It weighed in two bars 135.25 ounces, and ran \$130.07 silver and \$45.62 gold.

The following letters are interesting:

Gold Hill Mines, Grass Valley, July 15, 1859.

Dear Sir: I have forwarded you through Wells, Fargo & Co. a small box containing samples of silver ore from the mine Ophir referred to in my former letter. Mr. Walsh and Mr. Woodworth brought down about sixty pounds, and what I send you is some of the poorest of it. If you wet the pieces I have marked you will note the black sulphate of silver.

MELVILLE ATTWOOD.

Some years after the Comstock had become a heavy bullion producer the heirs of the Grosh brothers tried to secure their rights on the Comstock by litigation and employed Benjamin F. Butler, then the most noted lawyer in the United States to prosecute the case. He made a very thorough examination into the matter and stated to the litigants that there was no legal question about the absolute rights of the heirs to some of the most valuable ground on the Comstock, but he gave them the advice that the defendants were men so thoroughly intrenched in possession, and having unlimited money at their command they would be able to buy up any jury that could be selected to try the case, and that,

under the circumstances, the winning of such a case would be an impossibility. The heirs of the Groshes wisely concluded to drop the idea of attempting to wrest the big mines from the hands of William Sharon and the Bank of California.

The Comstock made the reputation of Nevada as a mining State and its record of an output of \$700,000,000 has never been eclipsed.

It is a common thing for the latter day mining men who are operating in Nevada to compare present achievement in mining operations and output with the record of the past, and the founders of new camps frequently mention their holdings as "another Comstock." The cold light of statistics beating on their claims, however, tell another story.

In closing this chapter one must not forget to pay a deserved tribute to the sturdy prospector who blazes the path which Midas is destined to tread later on. He lives on hope and braves the manifold dangers of the mountain and desert to unearth and tap the treasure vaults of Nature. He sows the harvest of wealth which others reap, the dreams that haunt the haze of his camp-fire are realized by others, yet without heed of self he presses on, leaving in his wake the pulsing life of populous cities and the hum of industries which spring into being from his wooing of the goddess of chance. The camp followers of the prospector dwell in the tabernacles of wealth, while his bones rot in some unmarked and forgotten grave, or bleach upon the sands of the pitiless waste he gave up his life to conquer.

CHAPTER XIV.

MINING LITIGATION.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

It is not supposable that the early struggle for the rich prizes of the Comstock went on without considerable contention. The Ledge became the Mecca of the legal fraternity and the courts soon found their calendars choked with litigation. The legal minds that grappled with the big cases came from all over the Union. Richard Mesick, W. M. Stewart, Jonas Seeley, Charles De Long, Charles Bryan, "W. H. Caxton," "Sandy" Baldwin, and scores of others, were there in the early days earning princely fees for their work. These attorneys made from one to two-hundred-thousand per annum in legitimate fees.

Naturally enough these cases where millions were at stake brought temptation to a corrupt and grasping judiciary. In fact it was because of the notorious corruption of the judges which was urged as a reason why Nevada should shed its Territorial swaddling-clothes and assume the garments of statehood. There were some good judges, but enough bad ones to render the courts a menace instead of a protection to property rights.

"The trouble really was not so much that they were corrupt, for that was a point of which all parties were only too ready to take advantage, but that they would not 'stay bought'—a fact that entirely demoralized the game and made it the most chance one ever known, whereas litigants felt there should be some certainty even in buying judges. There was no affected coyness or modesty on the part of the judges. They sent out their brokers and demanded a specific amount as the price of a favorable decision. There was no objection to that; it was straightforward and business-like. But the howl came when a mining company, after squarely meeting the judicial demand, encountered an adverse decision, only to learn that the opposing company had made a higher bid and won out.

"In the Yellow Jacket and Union case. The Union and Princess com-

panies claimed the Yellow Jacket ground by prior location. The popular opinion as to the merits of the case may be inferred from the fact that Union was selling at \$40 and Yellow Jacket at \$8. But the court decided in favor of the latter, whereat the Union and Princess went out of sight and the Yellow Jacket leaped to a high figure. 'I thought we had the case sure,' said a prominent lawyer, 'for we had given the judges about a quarter of the stock of the Union mine and were assured the decision would be in our favor; but it seems the Yellow Jacket people came in at the last minute and went us better.'

"When the Territory of Nevada was organized, in 1861, the judges appointed by President Lincoln were George Turner, Chief Justice, and Gordon N. Mott and Horatio M. Jones, associate Justices. They were to act also as district judges. Governor Nye assigned Mott to the western, Turner to the middle, and Jones to the eastern part of the Territory. This assignment gave Mott practically all the important mining cases as district judge; but that didn't count much, for upon appeal—and everything was invariably appealed—the cases went before the three, sitting as a Supreme Court.

"Judge Mott was a good man and an honest one, so far as being beyond the reach of any kind of influence in his decisions was concerned. He was very popular too, and was elected delegate to Congress in 1862, more than a year before he resigned from the Bench. His decisions were uniformly favorable to what was known as the one-ledge theory, but it was never breathed even by those opposed to that contention that he was influenced by any consideration other than his conviction of its correctness. However, with litigation bordering on a state of warfare and the compromising conduct of his associates, his position became an unpleasant one, and, besides, he was getting on in years and had grown to enjoy a seat at a faro table more than one on the bench. He was, moreover, the great obstacle in the way of the Potosi company in their fight with the Chollar. Under these conditions it is scarcely to be wondered at that the bad stars met in his horoscope, and that the judge who could not be bribed to decide against his convictions accepted \$40,000 to resign and make way for one who could. The public were disposed to criticise Mott's resignation with considerable asperity but he was afterwards elected to Congress, and then came

an episode in his life which restored him to popular favor all over the State.

"After the session of 1863-4 he was returning to Nevada by the overland stage route. The coach, in which he was the only passenger, was attacked by Indians near the headwaters of the Platte. The driver was mortally wounded at the first fire, but clung to the reins, while the team dashed wildly ahead. Judge Mott, who had been dozing inside the coach, awoke and realized the situation in an instant. By a surprising effort for one of his age he swung himself around the side of the coach to the driver's seat, took the reins from his hand, laid him in the boot, and then lashed the horses to their utmost speed. The Indians meanwhile were in full pursuit upon their ponies, firing at every opportunity. The race for life lasted more than 10 miles, but the old man won out and reached the station in safety.

"James W. North, who had been Surveyor General of the Territory, was appointed to succeed Judge Mott upon the resignation of the latter in 1863. No one ever charged North ever accepted money bribes, like Turner. He conscientiously side-stepped that gross practice, but he arrived at the same result in another way. He had built a mill in Washoe Valley, and when important suits were pending, litigants were duly notified that his mill must be supplied with a larger quantity and better quality of ore, and necessarily it had to be forthcoming.

Meanwhile Judge Turner began to earn a reputation for being the shallowest, most egotistical and mercenary occupant of the Supreme Bench. It was a matter of record that when he traveled in Europe he invariably signed his name on hotel registers as "Hon. George Turner, Chief Justice of the United States." Curiously enough it was Judge Turner that first attracted attention to Mark Twain, then "Samuel Clemens." He delivered a lecture in Carson City on some apparently important subject, but it turned out to be merely a history of his own vain-glorious achievements. Clemens reported the lecture for the Territorial Enterprise and spoke of Turner as "Mr. Personal Pronoun." The skit was regarded with such favor by Joseph Goodman, the editor of the paper, that he offered Clemens a permanent place upon the *Enterprise*, which was promptly accepted, and this incident launched Twain upon a literary career which gave him, later on, a world-wide reputation. The article was a scorching exposition of Turner's vanity, egotism and emptiness,

and created a great deal of discussion throughout the territory.

"This was soon followed by a signed article from the pen of R. E. Arick, the first Mayor of Virginia City, who charged the Chief Justice with being absolutely corrupt in his court decisions, and for sale to the highest bidder. Similar charges followed from other sources until in the summer of '62 the *Enterprise* was in full cry against him and demanding his resignation or removal. But it was not until 1863, when some of the big mining cases were appealed to the Supreme Court, that Judge Turner began playing the game for all that was in it. He did it in a regal way, his broker—a man named Johnson, a near relative—notifying litigants what a favorable decision by his royal highness would cost. In the first Chollar-Potosi trial it was only \$60,000 for Judge Turner himself and \$10,000 for his broker, which the Chollar company readily paid, of course; and in every other suit there was a similar demand.

"But occasionally time would not admit of an intermediary, and Judge Turner had to attend to the business himself. A gentleman who was interested in a case before the Supreme Court stated that after it had been argued, he was notified by Judge Turner that his decision would depend upon \$10,000 being delivered to him before the next morning. That amount of money was not procurable in Carson City, so the gentleman drove hurriedly to Virginia City, where he could obtain it only in gold coin. It was past midnight when he got back to Carson City. Concealing the sack of coin, which weighed over 50 pounds, he went to Judge Turner's rooms in the Ormsby House and knocked at the door. Directly a light shone through the transom and the door was softly opened. Mrs. Turner, clad only in a nightgown, was standing before the gentleman.

"Is the Judge in?" he asked.

"Yes, but he's asleep," she said.

"I have brought that money."

"I will receive it."

"The gentleman produced the ponderous sack, upon seeing which Mrs. Turner, woman-like, gathered up her nightgown as she would have done with an apron, and he dropped it into the improvised receptacle. The weight of the sack tore the nightgown completely off of Mrs. Tur-

ner and left her with the gold lying at her feet. The gentleman closed the door.

"North was opposed to the one-ledge theory, and, in consequence, the Potosi company had secured what they aimed at in buying Mott's resignation—a partisan of their cause upon the bench. But as Turner yet stood to his bargain with the Chollar company, and as Judge Jones seems to have been regarded as an uncertain quantity, a further readjustment of the Supreme Bench was necessary. This was effected late in 1863 when Judge Jones resigned and P. B. Locke was appointed in his place.

"It had been thought that Turner was the limit, but Locke quickly took precedence. He played fast and loose in every case until all parties joined in denouncing him. The appeal in the great Chollar-Potosi case, which Judge North as district judge had decided in favor of the Potosi company, was urged before the full bench in April, 1864. A few days later North filed a decision, concurred in by Locke, affirming his former decision and making a ruling in the nature of an injunction which practically debarred the Chollar company from any further proceedings.

"This would have been a clincher if all had held fast. But Locke was readily induced by the Chollar people to file a supplement to his decision which reopened the hearing of evidence. The Potosi crowd getting at him again in their turn, however, he ordered the addendum struck off the file. This hide-and-seek game was too much for even those who liked a pliant judge. Locke was too purchasable to suit anybody.

"The *Enterprise* opened fire on Judge Turner and demanded his removal as early as 1862. From that time it never ceased pouring hot shot into him and the Supreme Court, and by 1864 its attacks became a regular bombardment. In August of that year the Supreme Court convened for the fall term, but before any proceedings were had the judges were informed that the bar of the State unitedly refused to practice before them until they had vindicated themselves or taken action against the *Enterprise* for the charges of corruption it had made against them. The response was probably the most remarkable one ever seen in a court; all the judges descended from the bench—Turner and North resigning at once, and Locke a little later in the day.

"That was the last and best act ever performed by the Supreme Court of the Territory. A month later Nevada was admitted into the Union, and

C. M. Brosnan, H. O. Beatty and James F. Lewis—three as good men as ever benched together—were elected Supreme Judges. It was worth taking on the burden of a State government to secure so honest a bench.

"There was an aftermath of the Territorial judiciary fight which was almost comical. After resigning, Judge North sued William M. Stewart for slandering him in a speech, and the *Enterprise* for libel for having reported it. The cases dragged along without any apparent desire on North's part to push them, and at length it was stipulated to take them out of court and submit them to three referees. The three men agreed upon were George F. Jones, Mayor of Virginia City; Tod Robinson, a lawyer of considerable distinction, and W. H. Rhodes—or 'Caxton' Rhodes—another lawyer, with a literary turn. The evidence on both sides was laid before them, and a decision was hourly expected.

"But weeks went by and no decision was rendered. At last Mayor Jones came to the *Enterprise* office and said that his mind had been made up from the start, but that he thought the two other referees 'wanted to be seen.' He was requested to ascertain what they desired. He returned with the information that their desires were very modest: Rhodes wanted a gold watch and Robinson a suit of clothes—merely as compensation for their services. They got them; and the parties to the suits got in return a decision saying that no one was to blame—that Judge North was as spotless as snow, and that the motives of Mr. Stewart and the *Enterprise* were just as pure."

It is related of a district judge, who in a small suit received \$1,000 from the Savage mine and the next day got an additional sum of \$1,500 from the Norcross. After giving the matter considerable judicial thought he returned \$500 to the Norcross people explaining that he desired each company to be on an even footing before the court and with this arrangement the scales of justice were balanced evenly.

The case of Rollin Daggett and Cinc Barnes against the Bonanza mines for a portion of the ground occupied by the defendants was a notable and bitterly contested case. The United States Judge at Carson, before whom the case was tried, got down off the Bench and made a speech to the jury that was a better plea for the defense than that made by any attorney in that case. His officiousness in the matter caused Cinc Barnes to insinuate that possibly the Court had some of the defendant's money in his pocket when he made the talk. This accusation was hotly

resented by a friend of the Court and Barnes retorted. "If that man is talking merely for friendship, what a barn-burner of an argument he could make if he got a fee."

After the jury gave the defendants a verdict, Barnes selected one who might be easily scared and told him that he had an affidavit from two other jurors that he had received money from Fair's emissary in the case. Barnes, on account of the man's family, was willing to be merciful. All he asked was an affidavit regarding two other jurors in the case and if it was forthcoming, he would give the man no further trouble. He secured the necessary document and went down the line. In a few days he had affidavits from a majority of the jurors accusing the others of accepting money in the case. Armed with these documents he called on Col. Fair, and, putting them under his nose, demanded \$200,000 cash. Fair tried to grab the documents, but Barnes covered him with a six shooter, and Fair "came through" with the money.

Later Barnes, who knew every trick of mining litigation, drifted into Pioche one bleak fall day, on a mule, and clad mainly in a linen duster. He had not been in town twenty-four hours before he convinced the management of the Hermes mine that Raymond and Ely people were taking ore from within the boundaries of the Hermes. He showed them how easy it would be to start a suit. He then called on the other side and told them that the Hermes people were arranging to start a blackmail suit and that he would show them how to beat it. Before the week was over he was in the pay and confidence of both parties. He suggested some names for jurymen, giving the same names to both sides. He then manipulated the drawing of the jurors through the Court Clerk so that both sides thought they had the jury.

They were so positive that a thing occurred that has never been paralleled in Nevada litigation, where a large sum was involved, both sides accepted the jury without a challenge on the ground that any twelve men were good enough for a litigant whose case was so absolutely plain and righteous.

While the case was in progress the stock market in San Francisco responded to every turn of the evidence. Barnes, who was manipulating the case for both sides, handled the evidence so that it was apparent that the defendants of the Raymond and Ely would win. Meanwhile he had his agents in San Francisco annexing all the Hermes stock possible. After

the jury had retired, a clothes-line was let down from a window in response to a handful of gravel thrown against the pane by Barnes. A boot was attached to it and this boot was filled with gold marked R. & E. Again and again the boot was let down and it always came up full. Presently it was noticed that the boot marked R. & E. contained less gold every time and its place was taken by silver. After the boot came up empty they regarded the case as closed and "weighed the evidence." The Hermes evidence outweighed the other and Hermes won the case with heavy damages. Barnes through his agents was long on Hermes and short on R. & E. The conspiracy netted him and his associates about a quarter of a million.

Barnes was one of the queer characters of the west. He had a face like a moon, and seemed a guileless and innocent old rancher, walking about in slouchy clothes and usually a linen duster. He was full of wise saws and witty observations and was the man who said in speaking of Col. Fair. "The tears of widders and orphans is water on his wheel." The cause of most of the litigation in which valuable properties were often swallowed up in lawyer and court fees and the purchase of Judges and Juries, was the "law of the apex." The fact that miners could follow their ledges from the apex of discovery down indefinitely under and outside of their side-lines, was the cause of indeterminable litigation with adjoining mines. If all the money spent in such litigation could be estimated the sum would total all that has been made in legitimate mining in some sections of the country. Of late years it has become glaringly apparent that the "law of the apex" was formulated by some far-seeing legal mind who saw in its application lucrative for generations to come. Of the years there has been a movement in the direction of enacting a Federal statute making mining property subject to "square location" under which locators could only mine in the space bounded by their side and end lines.

CHAPTER XV.

THE SUTRO TUNNEL.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

No enterprise is more closely interwoven into the history of the State, or which had so much to do with its general advancement or its politics as the building of the Sutro Tunnel.

The first shovelful of earth was turned in the enterprise on the 19th of October and on the 8th of July, 1878, the tunnel reached the Savage mine on the Comstock. The connection was made with the east drift of the 1640 Level of the Savage.

After the last blast was fired that completed the connection, the blast of hot and impure air came up with such a rush that it hurled gravel and small pieces of ore into the air and nauseated the miners of the Savage for several hours.

Sutro came up from the tunnel soon after the blast was fired and his face had the smile of a man who had finally triumphed after many long tedious years of opposition.

Great festivities marked the initiation of the work of the tunnel and they were repeated when the enterprise reached the Savage mine after eight years, eight months and nineteen days of work.

To write the full history of that enterprise would require more than the space allotted in this history. The entire story would fill a large volume in itself, and much of it would be merely dry statistics.

"The most singular thing the situation suggests, however, is that the mining interests of the Comstock should now be mainly dependent upon a piece of work which, though fostered by them in its incipency, was finally constructed in face of their bitter opposition. I'm not going to review the history of the Sutro tunnel, but simply to recall some interesting facts that have been forgotten or were overlooked in several recent mentions of it. How foolish the rancor and strife engendered by the project appear, now that the conflicting interests are reconciled and all the combatants have passed away!

"The Sutro tunnel was not a novel scheme for tapping the Comstock lode at a deep level, nor was it on a much larger scale than other undertakings of the same character. When operations were first begun on the newly discovered silver

mines comparatively little was known about hoisting or pumping works. For a year or more all the ore was brought out of the Ophir and Mexican claims in rawhide buckets supported on the back of the Mexican miners by a strap that passed across the forehead, and the only means of ascent and descent were logs with steps cut in them which were placed at an incline from floor to floor. The little pumping necessary was done by hand for a long while, and I recollect that it was considered a remarkable piece of enterprise when a donkey engine was set up to do it by steam power.

"But with depth the water became more troublesome and the task of bringing up the ore more laborious, and tunneling at once suggested itself as the best means of overcoming these difficulties. None of the mines, that I recollect, undertook the work themselves, but several independent companies were organized for that purpose.

"The first of these was the Latrobe Tunnel and Mining Company, which began work early in 1861. This tunnel was a double-track one, intended for the use of animals to haul cars, and was constructed under contract with the mining companies whose ground it should penetrate, they having agreed to segregate a portion of their claims adjacent to it in compensation for drainage and prospecting. The tunnel started from a point a little over half a mile east of Virginia City, and the estimate was that it would strike the Comstock at a distance of somewhere near 3,000 feet and at a depth of about 600 below the outcroppings.

"At that time it was believed there were many veins between the mouth of the tunnel and the Virginia ledge, its objective point; but not a vein was cut until it reached the Comstock, and there—though it passed directly over and only about 500 feet above the big bonanza—the lode was so broken up and barren that the projectors became discouraged and the work was abandoned, I think, for I never heard any more about it.

"In 1862 the Cedar Hill Tunnel and Mining company undertook a similar work, but after tunneling about 2,000 feet into the mountain the project was given up, and the tunnel passed into the hands of the Sierra Nevada company.

"But a more important enterprise than either of these was inaugurated by the Gold Hill and Virginia Tunnel and Mining company in 1863. The plan was to begin at a point in Gold canyon, near Silver City, and run a tunnel the entire length of the lode to the Ophir mine, which it would cut at a depth of about 1,000 feet, and at a distance of 15,000. Work on this tunnel had been in progress nearly a year when the exhaustion of all the upper ore bodies on the lode and the failure to discover any new ones rendered the outlook for the mining industry on the Comstock so disheartening that capitalists refused to put more money into schemes dependent upon future developments; so work on the Gold Hill and Virginia tunnel was suspended, and never resumed.

"It was just at the close of this era of tunnels that Adolph Sutro came forward with his proposal to run one from a point near the Carson river, a distance of 20,000 feet, and cut the Comstock 1,600 feet below the surface. This was 600 feet deeper than the Gold Hill and Virginia tunnel, and therefore would offer better draining and ventilating facilities; but the chief superiority Sutro claimed for it was that it would afford a cheap means of transporting ore to the river for reduction by water power and of bringing in the immense amount of timber used in the mines—for neither of which purposes, by the way, has it ever been used.

"The mining companies had given encouragement to all the other tunnel projects, and they gave it the more readily to Sutro as he proposed to raise the money for the work abroad. So cordial was the feeling of the great corporation toward him that they signed contracts to pay a royalty of \$2 per ton on all ore extracted from above the tunnel level and toll for all ore or supplies passing through it; and when after two years of trial he failed to secure the necessary capital and represented that he would be unable to do so unless confidence in the undertaking

was shown by some home subscriptions, their disposition was still so kindly that they subscribed \$600,000 and granted an extension of time on the contracts they had made with him.

"But that was the last of the friendly relations. For some reason that will never be definitely known—though it was asserted to be only that under changed conditions the royalty and tolls agreed upon were excessive—the mining interests became opposed to Sutro and withdrew their subscriptions. Thereafter there was nothing but bitterness and warfare.

"Sutro singled out Sharon as his arch enemy, and it was against him more particularly that he leveled his satire and invectives in a long series of pamphlet, platform and magic lantern campaigns. Sharon didn't reply publicly, but in private he was equally unsparing of abuse and epithets. Chance gave him one expression which seemed to fill his heart with delight. The Rev. Israel Diehl, who had just returned from the Holy Land and Arabia, told his hearers during a lecture in Virginia City that they had the most perfect type of an Assyrian he had ever seen in the person of their distinguished fellow-townsmen, Mr. Adolph Sutro. Sharon drank in the words with avidity, and seldom afterward failed to refer to Sutro as 'that damned old Assyrian.'

"That Sutro succeeded in raising money to construct the tunnel in spite of the opposition of all the mining interests would seem incredible to anyone who didn't know his peculiar abilities. Of course, he had the charters and contracts, but his own personality was his chief asset. He was not great in the sense of having any extraordinary native talent or specially trained faculty, but he was intelligent and well educated, and had a prepossessing appearance and address. Patient, persistent and untiring he could not be dismissed."

Many stories are extant relative to what first gave him the idea. He owned a small patch of land on the Carson River now known as Sutro. Some say he thought of securing water for his vegetables by going into the hill and this idea enlarged as it was revolved in his busy brain. Another story is that he overheard some men who were speaking of the ground as a fine tunnel site. They conversed in German, a language with which he was familiar. In April 20th, 1860, he published a communication in the *Alta California* advocating the tunnel. Later he took up his residence on the Comstock and advocated the tunnel project but was only met with sneers or indifference. He talked tunnel so much that people referred to him as a man who had "bats in his belfry."

In 1864 he petitioned the legislature for a franchise. This was granted and while the act gave the tunnel the official sanction of the State, the amount of royalties to be paid by the mining companies after the completion of the work, was not provided for.

After eight months of hard work about nine-tenths of the companies agreed on a royalty of two dollars a ton to be paid the Sutro Tunnel Company on every ton extracted after the completion of the work. Some of them signed up to get rid of Sutro.

D. O. Mills, however, President of the Bank of California, encouraged

the idea and gave Sutro a letter to the Oriental Bank Corporation, London, in which he cordially endorsed Sutro and his project. Later on, for reasons best known to itself, the Bank of California was fighting the tunnel by every means in its power.

In July, 1866, Congress passed an Act by which the U. S. Government entered into a direct compact with Sutro for the completion of the tunnel and empowered him to purchase 4375 acres of land at the mouth of the tunnel and own all mines encountered within 2000 feet on each side. He next went to New York and was told there that if he could raise a few thousand on the Pacific Coast they would get \$3,000,000 for him in the east. Returning to California he submitted the matter to the mining companies and raised subscriptions amounting to \$600,000. Many private contributions were placed at his disposal and he seemed in a fair way to raise a million when suddenly the Bank of California stepped in and opened a most determined fight to break up the enterprise and induce the Mining Companies to repudiate their contracts. Hon. William Stewart was then Senator from Nevada and he was petitioned to fight it in the U. S. Senate. The names signed to the petition to Stewart were William Sharon, Charles Bonner, B. F. Sherwood, John B. Winters, John P. Jones, J. W. Mackay, Thomas G. Taylor, F. A. Tritle, and Isaac L. Requa. Alpheus Bull, of the Savage Mining Company, alone stood for the tunnel and for Sutro and recommended it over his signature. The mining men of the Ledge attempted to prove that Sutro had not kept his agreements and they carried the fight into Congress. He met them there and worsted them in every encounter.

The real reason of the opposition to the tunnel soon became evident. His scheme contemplated the erection of extensive reduction works at the mouth of the tunnel which would materially cripple the V. & T. R. R., a Sharon interest which carried ore to the mills on the Carson River, at Empire. The newspapers took up the fight against the tunnel and pictured a total destruction of Virginia City with property values falling to the extent of \$13,000,000 or \$14,000,000.

Baffled at the threshold of success Sutro visited Europe but the war between Prussia and France interfered with his raising capital and he again turned his attention to Congress. The result of his active winter campaign was that a House report recommended a loan of \$5,000,000 on the project. But Sutro's evil star was still ascendant and just as he

was about to secure the loan the impeachment of Andrew Johnson interrupted and nullified all his hard work.

In the summer of 1869 the Ways and Means Committee of the House visited California and Sutro managed to get them to visit the Comstock mines. But the California Bank people succeeded in getting hold of the guests and William Sharon entertained them. This did not prevent Sutro getting them to visit him at the International Hotel and he took them down in the mines and showed them the lay of the country. They were nearly prostrated with the terrible heat of the mines and felt convinced that the tunnel was needed to work and ventilate them.

Sutro's next move was to induce the miners to stand in and he made some speeches at the opera house in which he showed the inside of the conspiracy to break up the tunnel project. He showed a good deal of oratorical ability and worked the miners up to a pitch of excitement by showing them how much their lives were endangered if there was no tunnel in case of fire in the mines. He showed a picture from a magic lantern flashed on a screen reproducing the scenes of the terrible Yellow Jacket fire, with hundreds of miners falling headlong down the burning shaft while their wives and children were wringing their hands in despair, at the mouth of the shaft. Another picture represented miners emerging from the tunnel and being embraced by their families. At the end of his lecture the Miners' Union cheered Sutro and subscribed \$50,000. This was really the first real money to help start the work and soon the first shovel of earth was turned, in October, 1869.

It was planned to make a sort of gala day of this but none of the prominent men of the Comstock attended. The officers of the labor unions were there and some of the miners. At the end of the year 460 feet had been accomplished when Sutro was startled with the news that Tom Fitch had introduced a bill to repeal the third section of the law that gave him his royalty.

Sutro was fortunate in the fact that some of the members of the Ways and Means Committee had visited Virginia City on a previous occasion. They all favored him and the committee made an unanimous report against the repeal, except Sargent, of California. An attempt was made to show that there was no necessity of draining the Comstock, that the mines were dry. Hardy, the Superintendent of Ophir, testified before the committee that the Ophir shaft had always been dry. That night Sutro

wired to San Francisco to secure hundreds of letters Hardy had written to Sharon begging for more pumping machinery to keep the water down in Ophir.

Some of them read: "Must have more pumping machinery. Water two hundred feet in shaft and gaining" and so on ad infinitum.

Sutro, for a whole day, had the Ophir Superintendent on the rack reading those letters. The bill to deprive Sutro of his royalties was beaten 124 to 42.

He had been promised 15,000,000 francs from Paris but the Franco-Prussian war blocked the way.

He returned to Nevada and kept the work going in a small way, paying the miners \$3.00 a day in cash and a dollar in stock.

With almost the entire Pacific Coast representatives fighting him in Congress Sutro's chances looked worse than ever. The tunnel was denounced as a humbug and the paid newspapers of the California Bank ring were pouring hot shot into the project. They said it would ruin the Comstock and depopulate Virginia City. The only paper that stood by the project in Nevada was the Carson Appeal.

Sutro asked Congress to send a commission to Nevada and make a report on the tunnel. On the 4th of April, 1871, President Grant signed a bill appointing such a commission and Maj. Gen. H. G. Wright, Maj. Gen. John G. Foster and Prof. Wesley Newcomb visited Nevada, and returning, made a report that the work was perfectly feasible and estimated the cost at \$4,500,000. This enabled Sutro to raise money in Europe and after receiving advices from London that his friends had negotiated a loan he sailed on the 30th of August and in a few days received \$650,000 in gold and not long after raised \$800,000 more, nearly a million and a half in all.

The dirt began to fly in earnest after that and Sutro went to Washington and desired further investigation. He claimed that the committee were in error regarding many points connected with the project having been swayed by information furnished by his enemies. The committee was cited to appear and the evidence taken threw much new light on the case and completely vindicated Sutro. The report occupied 810 pages of printed matter. It recommended a government loan of \$2,000,000. A bill had been introduced providing for the sale of mineral lands to secure \$5,000,000 for the tunnel. The \$2,000,000 bill was offered as a substitute and its

passage recommended. The government was to be secured by one-half the royalty and everything seemed favorable to Sutro, but the bill was hung up in committee and never came to a vote.

From that time on Sutro decided to rely upon his own individual effort to complete the work. He encountered a thousand and one engineering difficulties one after another, but was able to surmount every obstacle. He raised considerable money in England and Germany, the McCalmut Bros. of Edinburgh, Scotland, contributing the most.

On the 8th of July, 1878, the tunnel reached the 1600 foot level of the Savage and the world knew that Sutro had accomplished his great work in the face of the most determined opposition and this opposition came curiously enough from the men who were in the end the most benefited by the work.

The tunnel saves 1600 feet of pumping which had been carried on at an expense of about \$3,000,000 per annum.

Lateral drifts were run connecting the tunnel with Yellow Jacket, Consolidated Imperial, Union Consolidated, Hale and Norcross, Ophir, California and Consolidated Virginia, aggregating a distance of nearly 10,000 feet along the Ledge.

In 1879, Sutro retired from his position as superintendent of the company and removed to San Francisco, where he lived in ease and opulence until his death. Thinking that the State of Nevada might be willing to give him some official recognition for his great services he crossed swords with Col. James G. Fair in a contest for the U. S. Senate. But his candidacy met with no favor and he failed to receive a single vote in the legislature. San Francisco, however, recognized his worth and elected him as mayor of the city by an overwhelming majority, the largest ever accorded a candidate for the office. He was opposed by every paper in the city, except the *Weekly Star*.

CHAPTER XVI.

WATER SUPPLY OF THE COMSTOCK.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

The Comstock Lode and Gold Hill, Virginia City and Silver City, are supplied with water by the Virginia and Gold Hill Company. In the early days Comstockers had but a limited supply produced from the springs and mining tunnels on the slope of Mt. Davidson. This water was very scarce and high priced and was brought into the city on the backs of mules.

Ned Foster, generally known as "Lame Foster" was practically the water company. He developed the springs and sold the water by the barrel or gallon to his customers and in the winter he packed thousands of sacks with snow, which he stored in the mining tunnels and sold at a stiff profit when cool drinks were in demand and no ice anywhere on the ledge.

As the population increased, additional water became a necessity and Marlette Lake, named after General Marlette, was selected as a source of supply. Herman Schussler, an eminent hydraulic engineer of San Francisco, was selected to take charge of the work. He planned and installed the first pipe line which brought the water from the high Sierras into Virginia City, thirty-five miles away. The difference in elevation between the intake and discharge is 465 feet on pipe lines Nos. 1 and 2 and on No. 3 is 565 feet.

The pipe lines, which are now three in number, run up and down nine canyons and are in the form of inverted syphons. The greatest perpendicular pressure is at the lowest point of Washoe Valley, 1720 feet. When the water was first turned in, this tremendous pressure, which registered 820 pounds on Nos. 1 and 2 pipes at Lake View, and 910 pounds on No. 3, was the heaviest known at that time on any water pipe in the world. It began spurting out in tiny pin holes which gradually increased in size until fountains played hundreds of feet in the air and finally burst the pipes. The main difficulty was that the lead calked in the joints would not hold. Capt. J. B. Overton, the superintendent of the company, immediately com-

menced the work of repairing and set all the blacksmiths he could find making wrought iron clamps which were placed at each joint with heavy bolts and prevented the lead from being forced out. The joints then stood the strain, and the pure, soft water of the Sierras, the product of almost perpetual snow, was landed in Virginia City amid demonstrations of public rejoicing and scenes of festivity.

Marlette Lake, from which the main supply is taken, has a storage capacity of over two billions of gallons. The masonry dam which impounds the water is over fifty feet high. After leaving the lake, the water is conducted five miles through a covered flume and thence through a tunnel four thousand feet which pierces the summit which forms the eastern rim of the Tahoe basin. From this point it proceeds through other covered flumes which convey the waters of Hobart Creek and other mountain streams to the intake of the three pipes which convey it across Washoe Valley to its final destination in Virginia City. Two twelve-inch and one ten-inch pipe perform the work. The first pipe was laid by Herman Schussler and the two others by Capt. J. B. Overton, and after a continuous service of over thirty years, they are still in excellent condition and capable of delivering seven millions of gallons to the Comstock every twenty-four hours.

The works of the company include forty-five miles of covered flumes, four storage reservoirs, twenty-one miles of ten and twelve-inch pipe lines and seventeen miles of distributing mains costing in the neighborhood of three and a half millions of dollars.

Of late years the unwatering of the Comstock has been carried on with the assistance of hydraulic elevators supplied with water from these lines. The water goes down into the mines through twelve-inch pipes to a depth of 2,700 feet. The lower end of the pipe curving upward discharges from an inch nozzle, sends a stream up into a large pipe and carries with it, under tremendous pressure, the waters in which it is submerged, and the water thus elevated to the 1,650 level, finds its outlet through the Sutro tunnel. The nozzles of these pipes are of phosphor-bronze and last but a short time owing to the great friction exerted by the water at the point of discharge, equalled nowhere in the world.

In view of the recent developments in the Comstock mines, the water company has practically rebuilt its flumes under the supervision of James M. Leonard, the present superintendent, and the entire system is now in a fine state of efficiency.

CHAPTER XVII.

SQUARE SETS OF TIMBERING AND V-FLUME.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

If one is to hunt the records of Nevada mining and find which particular individual did more than all the rest to make mining pay dividends in the Sagebrush State, the person in quest of the man who might well head the list would pause at the name of Philip Deidesheimer. He came to California from Germany, in 1851, and drifted onto the Comstock sometime in the sixties. He was the man who invented the plan of square-timbering. He never patented his great invention and never reaped the slightest pecuniary benefit from a device that netted millions to others.

When Judge Walsh, of Nevada City, bought the Ophir mine from old Comstock and his co-owners in the fall of 1859, he began operations on the ledge through a shaft operated by means of windlass and buckets. This was superseded, later, by a horse and whim. Finally, as the mine attained depth and water was encountered, a fifteen-horsepower steam engine was set up, which not only pumped out the water through a four-inch pipe, but was used to hoist ore and lower into or raise out of the shaft the miners. It was a great occasion when this engine was installed, and the Ophir hoist was one of the seven wonders of the camp. It was felt when this engine was set up and found to handle the water satisfactorily that the last Comstock mining problem had been solved. But there were far bigger breakers ahead.

As the miners went down on the big ore-body, followed from the surface, it widened and grew softer. The only method of timbering then known to mining science had been applied from the start on the Ophir, and with no stinting hand; for the Comstock has never been niggardly in dealing with any mining problem. From the very mouth of the shaft, and on to the bottom, round timbers of pine had been used to sheathe the sides of the incline and the branching drifts and crosscuts. Two upright pillars on each side of a drill, with a third resting across from top to top, had been

found sufficient to sustain the overhanging masses of rock in other mines.

But the Ophir ore-body, although far inferior in every dimension to the bonanza afterwards found in the Con Virginia, was of too great a width, and the ore-body of a density that varied too greatly for this primitive method to hold back its crushing force. Caves began to recur with ever-increasing frequency, and miners' lives were being sacrificed constantly. Finally, when the shaft had attained a depth of 215 feet and the ore-body was fully sixty-five feet wide, work in the Ophir had to be suspended altogether. To continue was impossible. Miners refused to go to the certain death that awaited under the menace of that ever-sinking mass of unwieldy quartz and the heavy wall that overlaid it.

A director of the Ophir company, living in San Francisco, gave much thought to the problem, which threatened an end to the productive power of the great property in which he was so vitally interested. By some fortunate inspiration he thought of Deidesheimer and laid the matter before him, asking what could be done. Deidesheimer had never heard of so big a deposit of ore before, and replied that he did not know what to do until he had seen the vein. Without delay, he was sent to the Comstock, and spent a month making experiments. At the end of that time he had evolved the square set.

It is hard to explain, without the use of a diagram, just what the square set is like, but, briefly stated, it is made up of timbers from four to six feet long, interlocked at the ends by means of mortises and tenons so that they may be constructed into a series of cribs, added indefinitely side by side, or built one on top of the other, so as to fill in any ore-chamber as fast as the ore is taken out. The unit in itself lies within the scope of a man's arms, but, built up in a series, it filled the vacant spaces left by the removal of the Con Virginia bonanza, hundreds of feet in height, in width, and in length.

The square-set idea became famous throughout the mining universe, and miners from all over Europe visited the Comstock for the purpose of making a personal inspection. Deidesheimer did not even reap the reward of having his name attached to the invention; perhaps, because his name is a somewhat unwieldy affair as judged by any but Teutonic lingual standards. He was retained as superintendent of the Ophir, and later was employed by Mackay and Fair as manager of the Hale and Norcross. He left the Comstock in the early '80s. His report on the Con Virginia

and California bonanza is said to have caused the demoralization of silver in Germany.

Next comes the name of Senator James Haines, of Genoa, who invented the V flume and, like Deidesheimer, his invention was a tremendous assistance to the mining industry. It took an enormous amount of timber to supply the demand furnished by the introduction of square sets. The consumption of the Comstock often exceeded 80,000,000 feet per annum. The mines became insatiable feeders on timber. One mine swallowed 6,000,000 feet in a year. The people of the Comstock walk daily over a forest of underground timbers of enormous dimensions. A great part of this is being slowly jammed to a wonderful thinness by the constant, unrelenting pressure of the moving earth. Pieces of such timbers taken from old workings in the Con Virginia, while originally fourteen inches thick, had been squeezed by this pressure to a thickness of two or three inches. Such timber is about as easy to cut as if it were so much iron. The natives refer to it as petrified wood, but while it does contain a little earthy matter from infiltration, it is chiefly the great pressure that gives it its intense hardness.

Of course, this tremendous supply of timber soon denuded the lower and middle slopes of the east side of the Sierras over Washoe Valley. Roads were built to the very top of this ridge, a height of 9,000 feet above sea level, but this was very expensive, seeing that each recurring winter, bringing washouts, rendered necessary new construction in the spring. In places where the grade was very steep, chutes of trees were formed, and the big logs slid down them. But in all but a few places this plan was impracticable. Then square flumes were used, waters being dammed up in the high mountains, and the trees washed down by the flume. Still this method was expensive and unsatisfactory.

Finally, in 1867, Jim Haines, afterwards State Senator from Douglas County, invented the V-shaped flume, each section of which consisted of two boards, each two feet wide, one and one-half inches thick and sixteen feet long, joined at right angles. Each section underlapped the one above it. The entire structure was upheld by props resting on the ground. Crossing ravines, trestles were used.

One of these flumes was fifteen miles long and took 2,000,000 feet of lumber in the building. It had a capacity of 500,000 feet of lumber a day. In 1880 there were ten such flumes in the State, making an aggregate

length of 80 miles. The cost of timbers and cordwood was greatly reduced by this invention, and still every man that supplied timbers and wood to the Comstock mines made a great fortune out of his business. Some of them even kept their money and died wealthy. Haines, himself, left a rather robust estate at the time of his demise, about the middle '90s.

As the inventions of Comstock miners were adopted by other mining operators throughout the world, so was this invention of a lumberman to supply timber to the Comstock mines copied others. Today the California lumbermen on the western slope of the Sierras employ an improved version of the Haines plan to flume their lumber from the higher slopes down to the valleys below, where a commercial demand exists.

But even with the reduction in price afforded by this method, Comstock mine operators, in many instances, fought shy of using timber as much as possible, and, owing to this commercial trait, many accidents occurred. Mexican, which in the early days of the lode was always noted as a recklessly managed mine, was a heavy sufferer from this cause. As early as 1863, one-half of the surface of the mine fell, with an attendant roar that alarmed the entire camp, and an acre of the surface was opened to a depth of more than 200 feet. The superintendent and twenty miners were underground at the time, but fortunately were not far from the bottom of the shaft, and so escaped being caught and crushed or smothered in a drift, or imprisoned to die of hunger and thirst.

Again, about eleven o'clock one night in the month of October, 1861, the surface of the Chollar mine, at a point about opposite the present site of the Virginia City High School, fell in with a great noise, engulfing a two-story building that stood there. The lower story was occupied by a grocery store, and the bookkeeper slept in the upper story. A little dog owned by the bookkeeper was wont to occupy a corner of this room at night, and on the night referred to kept up such a continuous scratching and whining that his master was unable to sleep. Arising from his bed, he dressed himself and went for a walk, accompanied by the restless canine, who bounded outside with great eagerness the moment the door was opened. It was during this walk that the building fell into the bowels of the earth.

CHAPTER XVIII.

COMSTOCK MILLING MONOPOLY.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

After the first rush to the Comstock, miners found themselves with accumulations of rich ore and no machinery at hand to extract the values. To meet the demand the "patios process" was first utilized. It was the most primitive of methods. The ore was placed in a pit and crushed beneath the feet of a drove of mules. Where ore ran into the thousands the miners felt that they could not wait for machinery, and it is said that in some instances the hoofs of the poor animals were worn almost to the fetlock stamping the ore to a pulp preparatory to having it treated with quicksilver. The charge for this work was \$20 a ton as an average, but at times it went higher, depending somewhat upon the richness of the ore and the anxiety of the owner to convert it into money.

Next came the Mexican *arastra*, with a stone dragged over the ore to crush it, and later the large, heavy wheel moved round in a circular box containing the ore, which was crushed beneath the wheel. The profits in treating ore were enormous, and presently mills sprang up on the Comstock on all sides and several earned as high as \$1,000 a day net profit.

The scarcity of reduction works and the high prices paid for crushing ore, in the early days on the lode, tempted many men of moderate fortune to build what were known as custom mills—that is, independently of any ownership or control of mines, but to do work for such mining companies as might choose to patronize them. Owing to the excessive cost of nearly everything, most of these parties had exhausted their means before the mills were completed and were forced to borrow. From the time of the establishment of its agency in Virginia City, in 1863, the Bank of California had stood ready to accommodate them, at a high rate of interest, to an amount of from one-sixth to one-tenth of the value of the property. There does not appear to have been any ulterior motive in these loans at

the start. It was strictly in the line of legitimate banking business, with a view to developing the mining industry.

But this innocent and benevolent phase of affairs was soon changed. The extraordinary decline of the ore yield in 1865-6 brought most of the independent mill owners to hard straits, and the bank began foreclosing and taking in the mills at the mortgage rate. At a first glance it may look as if the bank was getting the worst of it by being compelled to take over a lot of non-paying properties; but there is a vast difference between ownership without a pull and ownership with a dead sure one. And there is where the iniquity began. If the scheme had not been thought of before, the acquisition of these mills suggested a plan by which the whole Comstock lode could be squeezed like a lemon. The operation was not to be for the benefit of the stockholders in general, but only for those who became familiarly known as the Bank Ring. Early in 1867, the Union Mill and Mining Company was incorporated to relieve the Bank of California, at cost, of the seven mills which had fallen into its hands up to that date. The charter members were D. O. Mills, William Sharon, W. C. Ralston, Alvinza Hayward, Thomas Sunderland, Charles Bonner, Thomas Bell and William E. Barron.

Perhaps others were interested, but if so it was unnecessary, for that list represented the control of the Bank of California, and the bank at that time practically controlled every producing mine on the Comstock. The working of the scheme can readily be inferred. The seven mills of the new company were fed to their utmost capacity while the outside mills were starved. Independent mill owners offered to reduce ore and return as high a percentage of its assay value at one-half the price charged by the company, but not a pound of rock could they get to crush. So inexorably was this policy pursued that within two years ten more mills fell into the hands of the cormorant company at a mere fraction of their cost.

But the freezing out of independent mill owners was not the greatest wrong of which the Union Mill and Mining Company was guilty. At times, and especially as the number increased, the company found it difficult to get enough pay ore to keep all its mills running. Then the plant superintendents of the mines under its control were instructed to mix waste rock with the ore, and to such an extent was this method practised that some of the largest and richest deposits were exhausted without ever paying more than the expense of mining and milling, and in some cases the stock-

holders were actually assessed to make up the deficit in working a body of rich ore.

In addition to this deliberate robbery, the power to thus regulate the net yield of mines was used as a means to milk the stock market. A showing would be made sufficiently promising to key up prices and tempt investors, and then down would go the returns, and purchasers would be caught as in a trap. Everybody was at the mercy of the unscrupulous combine. So powerful was it and so complete its hold upon the Comstock that people despaired of ever escaping from its relentless grasp. Yet, thanks to a few bold insurgents, this monster monopoly in a few years went to pieces like a house of cards.

The insurgents were men comparatively unknown at the outset, but their names became familiar enough before long. John W. Mackay and James G. Fair were the first to raise the standard of revolt. They had been on the Comstock since 1860, and knew the lode from one end to the other. After working for some years as a common miner, Mackay had become superintendent of the Caledonia and afterwards of the Bullion mine, while Fair was given the superintendency of the Ophir in 1866. By a code of courtesy always recognized on the Comstock, the superintendent of a mine was allowed access to any other mine he might desire to inspect.

Availing themselves of this privilege, Fair and Mackay kept close watch of the progress of mining affairs all along the lode, and particularly of the development of an ore body in the Hale and Norcross. So satisfied were they of its value that they determined to gain control of the mine. But they could raise only \$160,000 between them—Mackay \$120,000 and Fair \$40,000. To get more capital, as well as assistance in handling the market end of the project, they laid the plan before two old friends—James C. Flood and William S. O'Brien—who were keeping the Auction Lunch saloon in San Francisco. Flood and O'Brien thought favorably of the venture and put all the money they had—\$60,000—into it. Thus, with a combined capital of only \$220,000, but which was soon to swell to almost as many millions, these first obscure insurgents went up against the giant Union Mill and Mining Company.

Their first attempt to secure control of Hale and Norcross, in 1868, did not succeed, though they came so close to winning that the Bank Ring was forced to pay \$7,100 a share for the few outstanding shares that decided the contest. But they held to their purpose, and when in a few months

the stock fell to the neighborhood of \$40, they picked enough of it up to ensure their success at the next election. At a meeting of stockholders in 1869, after Mackay's party had elected its board of trustees, Sharon walked over to where he was sitting, congratulated him, and then said, patronizingly:

"Of course, Mackay, all you care about is the glory of winning the fight. You don't know anything about managing a big mine, and you have no facilities for working the ore. We are willing to take all the trouble off your hands and keep right on with the management."

Mackay thanked him, but said he would try to learn what he didn't know about running a mine, and that he thought the new management could get along without help. And it did. A pending assessment was rescinded, and the Hale and Norcross straightway began paying dividends, which were continued until the ore body was worked out.

That was the first thrust at the Union Mill and Mining Company. It was annoying and provoking, but the Bank Ring seemed to regard it as an impertinence rather than a menace, and went right along on its high-handed way, little dreaming that it should eventually receive a fatal stroke from the same quarter.

The next was a harder hit—treacherously dealt, it was claimed, by one of its own members. Crown Point had been one of the best yielding mines on the lead, but with the walling-up of nearly all that remained of the ore body to confine the great fire of 1869, its productiveness came to an end, and in the course of a year the stock fell to as low as \$2 a share, and was a drug on the market at that. In 1870 a slight prospect was struck on a lower level. It disclosed itself with an exasperating irregularity, presenting a promising appearance one week and almost vanishing the next. But John P. Jones, the superintendent, felt an unfaltering faith in it. He had no money himself, but he had what was just as good—a fast friend who was a moneyed man. Alvinza Hayward, whom he succeeded in inspiring with his own enthusiasm regarding the prospective development and inducing him to buy the stock on joint account. Hayward picked up nearly 5,000 shares at an average of about \$5, and as the stock began to soar he bought 1,000 more shares from Charley Low at from \$90 to \$180. This was in May, 1871. The company election was near at hand. There were but 12,000 shares in the mine, and it was known that Hayward already had nearly one-half of the stock.

Sharon, as the representative of the Union Mill and Mining Company, had 4,100 shares, and it was up to him to decide whether a fight should be made for enough more to control the election. Bitterness of feeling, engendered by Hayward's course, turned the scale. Thinking the chances were that the development would not prove so very great or rich after all, Sharon resolved to break Hayward's back by unloading the 4,100 shares of stock on him at a high figure; so he offered them to him for \$1,400,000—a little over \$340 a share—and to his surprise Hayward at once accepted and drew a check for the amount.

It wasn't merely that the ore body developed in Crown Point was so big and high grade as to send the stock to \$1,825 a share that proved to Sharon and his associates the folly of having sacrificed their stock and lost control of the mine without a contest. Instead of breaking Hayward's back, their false step had gone a long way toward breaking their own; for from that development sprang a formidable rival, the Nevada Mill and Mining Company, while the prestige of it temporarily sidetracked Sharon's political aspirations and sent John P. Jones to the United States Senate.

But the stroke which should forever destroy the power of the Union Mill and Mining Company and leave scarcely more than a memory of it on the Comstock was yet to come. With the exception of two or three tunnels that pierced the lode at barren points, the ground between the Ophir and the Gould and Curry had for many years lain unprospected. In 1867 the Virginia Consolidated Mining Company was organized by the Bank Ring and acquired that part of it known as the White and Murphy and the Dick Sides claims. The work of sinking a shaft and prospecting the different levels was carried on for several years without disclosing anything but a few scattered seams of ore. The stock, of which there were only 10,800 shares, dropped as low as \$2 in 1871. So discouraging was the outlook that the management became careless of its tenure, and Fair, Mackay, Flood and O'Brien quietly obtained control of the mine.

The members of the Union Mill and Mining Company did not regard it as much of a loss at the time, but when the big bonanza was struck soon afterwards they discovered too late that they had not only thrown away the richest prize ever found on the Comstock, but had lost the mastery of the lode and become a third-rate power, for thereafter it was only by the tolerance of the two great insurgent combinations that they were able to retain control of any mine.

CHAPTER XIX.

CONTROL OF THE COMSTOCK.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

The titanic struggle which was enacted on the Comstock for the control of the hundreds of millions which was the stake of the contest was the fiercest and bitterest ever enacted on the coast.

It was a battle to the death between the Bank of California and its branch interests and the Bonanza firm.

The uncovering of the rich ore bodies in Con Virginia and California resulted in frenzied saturnalia of stock gambling which created an interest throughout the civilized globe.

At one time the shares in those mines had actually been used to paper miners' cabins and were kicking about or stored in old trunks and it is said that some were sold at 15 cents a share.

After the discovery of the Bonanza, the existence of which was kept secret as long as possible, the stock began to soar and to check the rise a stock dividend of five shares for one was declared and these shares went to \$800 which means that the original shares were worth \$4,000 per share.

As the Bonanza firm held the control they found money pouring in beyond their wildest dreams and they started the Nevada Bank which was practically built on the ruins of the once financial Gibraltar of the Coast, the Bank of California.

Naturally there was a good deal of bad blood between the rival concerns. Sharon for a time held the entire Bonanza crowd in contempt and once said that Flood and O'Brien were nothing but bit whisky sellers,—alluding to the saloon they once owned on the city front in San Francisco—and that he would make John Mackay pack his blankets over the Giger Grade.

Flood retorted that he would some day sell bit whisky over the counter of the Bank of California, and Mackay said that he was able to pack his blankets over any grade and had often done so but that Sharon could

not pack a pair of blankets two hundred yards without stopping to rest.

Subsequently the Bonanza firm acquired a line of heavy liabilities against the Bank of California and engineered a stock deal that caught them napping and closed it down.

The public had always regarded the Bank of California as a speculative institution which frequently strayed beyond the bounds of safe banking and when the bank closed its doors the street said that it had "turned down its box," employing the phrase which sports use when a faro game reaches the limit of its cash reserves.

Nothing ever equalled in excitement that caused by the failure of the Bank of California.

When the word went out that the great banking institution had closed its doors a frenzied mob took possession of the space on California street bounded by Montgomery and Sansome and all the police reserves were called into requisition to hold the howling depositors in check.

The Bonanza firm took possession of the bank and O'Brien, who had threatened to sell whisky over the bank's counter was there to make good his boast. He planted a wicker demijohn on the counter and set out some glasses. John Mackay, who was a man of liberal horse sense, grabbed his partner by the collar and hurled him away from the counter into another room and sent the demijohn and bar glasses after him.

"The mob will come in here and hang us all if you start that foolishness," shouted Mackay, and O'Brien subsided.

That night the city was practically under martial law. Troops guarded the newspaper offices, especially the *Bulletin*, and extra editions of the morning papers were issued every half hour.

They were filled with the most sensational rumors of this or that prominent financier having killed some other financier by shooting him down on the streets.

The next thing to startle the city was the finding of Ralston's body washed ashore at North Beach. He had gone down to the beach to take his daily plunge in the sea and had on his bathing suit.

It was regarded as a suicide, but opinions differed and differ to this day. Ralston had been the leading financial genius of the coast and the collapse of the Bank of California, whose destinies he had guided so long, was regarded as more than his pride could bear.

He was one of the greatest men the coast had ever produced and his death was widely mourned.

Sharon stepped into the breach with his private fortune and rehabilitated the bank but it never again could compete with the Bank of Nevada that had the wealth of the Comstock behind it. With the failure of the Bank of California the Bonanza firm's conquest of the Comstock was complete.

It was at all times a grim battle with no quarter asked or given on either side. John Mackay was the chief of the Bonanza forces and his aggressive tactics and good generalship won the day. Mackay was a man who never boasted, never resorted to underhanded work and always fought in the open.

He was known as the "silent fighter" and was always a leonic figure in the history of the Comstock. Where it had been Sharon's policy to job the stockholders and rob the public through assessments and stock deals, John Mackay ran a mine as he would his own private business. He gloried in making mines under his management pay dividends and respected the rights of the smallest stockholder.

After he assumed control of the Bonanza mines he visited the lower levels every day rising at five in the morning to see that every man was at his post. He found the freight charges on the V. & T. R. R. Sharon's road, grossly out of proportion to the service rendered, and called upon the management for a reduction of freight charges. At first they declined to make any change when Mackay quietly stated that if the charges were not reduced by the first of the month he would build a railroad of his own.

The management of the railroad saw their way at once to make the reduction for they knew that when Mackay said a thing he meant every word of it.

*How about his failure in
the wheat corner of 1887?
See article in N.Y. Examiner of
Dec. 10, 18*

CHAPTER XX.

POLITICAL HISTORY.

BY SAM P. DAVIS.

The political history of the State began in 1864 when Abraham Lincoln with his far reaching brain conceived the idea of giving statehood to the Territory of Nevada as a war measure to enable the Republican party to have two more votes on the side of the Union in the United States Senate. Time demonstrated that his plan was a wise one. Congress passed the Enabling Act on the 21st of March, the Constitutional Convention met at Carson City on the 4th day of July and after a session lasting twenty-three days, framed a Constitution which was submitted to the people on the fourth Wednesday of September and adopted by a large majority.

On the 31st of October, 1864, a proclamation declared Nevada to be a part of the American Union.

Coming into being during the darkest days of the Civil War she has since been known as "The Battle Born."

The next Legislature elected James W. Nye and William A. Stewart as Senators to represent Nevada in the Upper House of Congress.

Their terms were to be respectively four years and two, and they drew straws to decide which should have the longer term. Stewart won and served four years.

Both men became candidates for re-election when their terms expired, and each were sent to the United States Senate for six years.

MONEY IN POLITICS.

In the fall of '72 John P. Jones, who had been beaten in his fight two years previous when running as the Sheriff of Maraposa County, Cal., came into the fight for the United States Senatorship. Since his

advent into Nevada he had succeeded in mining and reaped a fortune from the bonanza uncovered in Crown Point.

When he entered the race the Republican party was strongly intrenched in Nevada and it was not necessary to spend a dollar for his election.

When fairly in the campaign, however, he began scattering money with a lavish hand and inaugurated the system which for years ruled in Nevada whenever a man with political ambitions sought a seat in the Upper House of Congress.

He was worth at the time a million or two, and without the slightest necessity of doing it, is said to have put considerably over half a million into his campaign.

When asked his reason for this action he said jocularly that he was enjoying himself and also setting the pace for the next man who aspired for the Senatorial toga.

Two years later, 1875, William Sharon, then representing the Bank of California on the Comstock, announced himself as a candidate to succeed William H. Stewart. He said he would outdo Jones in the extent of his expenditures, and the lavish scattering of money throughout the State attracted the attention, first of the San Francisco newspapers and finally was discussed throughout the United States. It is claimed that he spent no less than \$800,000 in securing his seat in the United States Senate.

There is another story current which credits him with having so manipulated Ophir during the campaign that he recouped all his expenditures.

He gave out that a deal was to be made in the stock during the fall and winter and gave every legislative candidate the tip to get all the Ophir possible and above all things not to hold it after it reached \$300.

The "confidential tip" spread all over the State and Sharon unloaded in the neighborhood of \$200.

Before reaching the coveted \$300 mark it broke and went down with a run. Sharon unloaded and then "shorted" and when he filled his "shorts" it is said that he got back all the money he had spent in his campaign and several hundred thousand more.

In '79 John P. Jones succeeded himself but did not find it necessary to repeat the free handed expenditures which marked his first campaign for the Senatorship.

In '81 James G. Fair announced himself as a candidate, having been urged to run from the fact that the Democrats were anxious to have the ticket headed by a man of unlimited means.

Realizing that the Democratic party was in the minority he found it necessary to make a thorough monied fight. In the entire history of Nevada politics there had never been such a saturnalia of corruption as in this campaign. Votes were purchased openly on every side and the price, which in ordinary campaigns had generally ranged at about five or ten dollars, struck the \$80 mark for single votes.

His "sack bearers" were in every county and precinct on election day, and the State elected a Democratic legislature for the first time in years.

When the Legislature met, however, Fair was unexpectedly confronted with an opponent in the person of Adolph Sutro of Tunnel fame.

Sutro had always been a bitter enemy of Fair and he sent a representative in the State to announce his candidacy. He claimed afterwards that his representative was bought up by Fair and silenced.

How true this might have been is not known but it was nevertheless a fact that no whisper of Sutro's candidacy was ever heard in the sagebrush during the campaign.

It was not until after the Legislature had met that Sutro appeared and announced that he was a candidate for the office at the hands of the Democratic Legislature, most of whom had been elected by the liberal expenditure of Fair's money.

Sutro's appearance in the field with a quarter of a million cash to do business with made a great excitement in Carson City. He took rooms at the Ormsby House and made his first assault on the caucus. His only hope of success was the breaking of the caucus and this he succeeded in doing, but the Fair adherents padded the roll-call and after announcing a full caucus, carried things through with a high hand, and broke the force of Sutro's first victory.

Sutro won over to his cause a sufficient number of votes to elect, but they needed some special excuse to desert the Fair colors after being pledged in the campaign platforms and participating in the Legislative caucus. His managers conceived the idea of swearing out complaints against some of the men who had used money corruptly in Washoe County during the campaign. Arrests were to be made of members on the floor of the House in open session on the charge of purchasing votes

in the election, and these charges and arrests were to furnish the excuse for members to desert the Fair side and go to Sutro. Men who had received Fair's money with which to be elected planned to desert him as soon as the expose was made and cast their strength for Sutro. Fair had a man, however, who took an active part in the councils of the Sutroites and he knew just when the coup was to be sprung.

The night before, a team was driven furiously to Reno, and next day, when a Carson attorney went down to swear out the complaints on which to make the necessary arrests, he was unable to find a single official before which a complaint could be sworn. They had been spirited away. Without these complaints no arrests could be made and it was too late to get action in other counties. Sutro's fight fell to pieces like a house of cards and Fair was elected.

With the exception of Fair all the Senatorial representatives were Republicans and from the beginning Nevada only sent its wealthy men to the Senate of the United States. This earned for the State the name of the "Rotten Borough" and this name seems destined to cling to it.

Notwithstanding this reproach the State for years held the reputation also of having in the Upper House of Congress two men, Jones and Stewart, who equalled in ability the representatives of any State in the Union.

It was generally conceded that Jones was the abler of the two, and Stewart the better politician and the most indefatigable worker in the Senate. As a thinker and logician Jones had no peer in the Senate. He spoke but seldom, but when he took the floor he was listened to with the most marked attention and if the public had any previous notice the galleries were crowded. He could cram more meaning into a fifteen minutes' speech than any of his peers. His terse, epigrammatic sentences and his sledgehammer logic carried everything before it. Sometimes, after days of wrangling, a short talk from the "Man from Nevada" would dispose of the question and close the debate. In his Senatorial career of thirty years he made but one extended speech and it was his masterly dissertation on the silver question. It extended for several days, and the mass of information presented in that speech caused a world-wide discussion, a discussion which has not subsided even today. Later, at the celebrated Brussels Conference, where the money question was

under discussion by the leading financiers of the world, he delivered another speech on the same subject.

The various speeches delivered on that occasion resulted in a world-wide discussion and every speech made in favor of bimetallism brought forth a public response from some prominent monometalist, but no one ever attempted to answer the speech of Senator John P. Jones of Nevada, and it remains unanswered to this day.

Meanwhile the lower house of Congress contained some notable men from Nevada who made their marks in National politics.

The first Territorial representatives were John B. Cradlebaugh and Gorden N. Mott.

H. G. Worthington was the first elected Congressman from the State followed by Delos B. Ashley who served two terms.

Thomas Fitch followed Ashley and made such an impression by his oratory that he earned the title of "The Silver Tongued Orator."

He was followed by Chas. W. Kendall who served two terms, William Woodburn, Thomas Wren, Rollin Daggett and George Cassidy.

Both Wren and Woodburn were attorneys and Daggett and Cassidy, journalists.

Daggett edited the Territorial Enterprise, the leading Republican paper in the State, and Cassidy owned and conducted the *Sentinel* in Eureka when the town was in the heyday of its prestige.

Woodburn made one notable speech on the tariff in the forty-fourth Congress, which, while it occupied not over fifteen minutes in delivery, was so well regarded by the party leaders that over a million copies were printed and circulated in the Presidential campaign that followed and it was regarded as a party text-book. Woodburn retired to practice law, but the lure of politics was too strong for him and he was returned to the forty-ninth and fiftieth Congress where he served with marked distinction.

Daggett, after his first Congressional experience, became Minister to the Sandwich Islands and afterwards aspired to become a candidate to the United States Senate, but was beaten by Stewart.

James G. Fair also aspired to a second term, but Stewart, his Republican competitor, sent for Joseph T. Goodman, who had formerly owned and edited the *Enterprise*, and secured his services to make the main editorial fight against Fair. Goodman's first editorial was a challenge

to Fair to come into court and disprove certain charges which had been made against him in connection with prize-fighter John Kosser and the death of Fred Smith. This public arraignment of Fair was the first time he had been called to account for the commission of certain alleged criminal acts which had been common talk on the Comstock for years. The editorial conduct of the *Enterprise* was then in the hands of a Mr. Taggart, who had previously been engaged as a private Secretary for Whitelaw Reid, and had also been connected with the New York *Tribune*.

When the editorial written by Goodman was turned into the *Enterprise* office, Taggart refused to run it on the ground that it charged Fair with a series of felonies and would result in as many different libel suits. It was held over for Goodman to produce the proofs of his assertions which he was perfectly willing to father over his own signature.

The editorial was never printed. Fair got wind of its contents in some way and withdrew from the fight.

John Mackay had been often urged to enter the political arena for the high office of United States Senator but could not be lured into the game.

The last times Jones ran he and Mackay had been somewhat at outs over business matters and Mackay was quite inclined to throw his influence for Rollen Daggett, for whom he had a great personal regard.

A small thing, however, turned the scale against Daggett. It came to Mackay's ears that Daggett, when Minister to the Sandwich Islands, received visitors barefooted with his trousers rolled up to the knees.

When this argument was brought to bear on Mackay he voted Daggett a savage and withdrew his support.

While Jones and Stewart were fighting the battles of silver and making political history in the United States Senate, Horace F. Bartine was striking effective blows for the white metal in the Lower House.

He was a member of the fifty-first and fifty-second Congress, and while there, was regarded as authority on the Silver question. He was a logical and incisive speaker and wrote the minority report on the Windom bill, a report that became a text book for bimetallists. After finishing his two terms in Congress he continued to reside at Washington and edited the *National Watchman*, a publication devoted to bimetallism and national politics.

Bartine was followed by Francis G. Newlands who served his first

term as a member of the fifty-third Congress and served five successive terms, the longest service of any Nevada Congressman.

He was recognized as an able debater on any public question, but his principal work on behalf of the West was his Irrigation Act which established a system for the conservation of natural resources, mainly the waters which ordinarily run to waste. This Act has reclaimed vast areas of waste land and added millions of dollars to the resources and wealth of the West. In 1903 he was elected to the United States Senate and succeeded himself in 1909.

Clarence Van Duzer followed Newlands and served two terms. On the last he became involved in trouble over a wildcat mining deal and his sphere of usefulness was over in Nevada.

Since its admission into the Union, Nevada has been normally Republican and could be safely counted on to cast its electoral vote for a Republican President, until the formation of the Silver Party which first appeared in Nevada politics in the election of 1892 when it swept the State by majorities averaging in the neighborhood of 5,000. In that year the Republican vote was less than 3,000 and the Democratic vote fell below 1,000. The first suggestion relative to the formation of a Silver Party to protect Nevada's chief industry appeared in the Morning Appeal published at Carson City. On January 1, 1890, it made the announcement, editorially, that it was time for Nevada to raise the standard of revolt against the Republican party for its demonetizing of the chief product of Nevada's industry. It called for the formation of a party having the remonetization of silver, the chief plank of its platform.

This stand was treated derisively at the time, but within a year other newspapers took the matter up and finally in 1891 the Editorial Association of the State met at Reno and passed a resolution that it would have nothing to do with any political party that did not include in its platform a plank demanding the free and unlimited coinage of silver.

The declaration did not attract much attention at the time, but when the political pot began to simmer later on, its full force and effect became apparent. The calls for primaries and conventions sent out by the Republican State Central Committee did not appear in a single Nevada newspaper with the exception of the Reno Gazette. They were simply committed to the waste baskets of the newspaper offices and left without any newspapers to make the political announcements, the party seemed



Hon. H. O. Beatty
Justice

Hon. James F. Lewis
Chief Justice

Hon. C. M. Brosnan
Justice

FIRST JUSTICES SUPREME COURT OF NEVADA, 1864

almost as dead as if it had never existed. Later on a Republican convention was held at Reno but it split on the subject of free coinage and nearly half the convention rose and left the hall headed by Charles Wallace, otherwise known as "Black Wallace" from the fact that all his life he had been an ardent and altogether "black republican."

Another convention was held during the afternoon, and the Silver Party was launched. George Cassidy, an old line Democrat and formerly a Democratic Congressman, addressed the convention, and after an impassioned speech, which called for a great deal of physical effort on his part, he retired to the Arcade Hotel to rest and after reaching his room died in a few minutes from a stroke of apoplexy.

The first Silver Club formed in the State was started by Frederick Fairbanks, editor of the Times at Dayton in Lyon County.

In the campaign that launched the Silver Party into active politics, it carried the State with a clean sweep and in a majority of the counties carried every precinct for Silver.

The greatest enthusiasm prevailed and a banner was offered by the State Central Committee for the county rolling up the heaviest percentage of votes. It was won by Eureka county.

In 1890, J. E. Jones had been elected Surveyor General on the Republican ticket, and when the Silver party sprang into existence he took part in a public meeting at Carson City which declared for Silver. The meeting was a very small one and he was the one State officer who dared to take the platform and declare for the white metal. This meeting was received with derision and laughter by every one except the few who participated. But in 1892 the fact that Jones had been the only Republican office holder who had the nerve to declare himself resulted in his nomination for Governor on the Silver ticket and he was elected by a tremendous majority.

Many strange things happened in the campaign of 1892. Four tickets were in the field. Silver, Republican, Democrat and Prohibition.

Out of compliment to Judge Belknap of the Supreme Bench, who was the Democratic nominee, the Silver Party put up no candidate, which practically gave him a walk-over in the election.

Newlands was nominated by the Silver Party in their convention at Reno, and the Republicans in order to prevent his spending any money in the campaign, nominated him as their candidate for Congress on the

Republican ticket. He was at once notified by the Silver men that if he accepted the nomination from the Republicans the Silver convention would reconvene and place another candidate in the field.

When the Republican Notification Committee called at his house to inform him of the action of the Republican convention he was "not at home."

It was then decided to place Hon. William Woodburn's name before the convention, and a majority of the convention left the hall when the vote was taken that the Chairman might be in a position to announce that there being no quorum there could be no nomination.

The programme not having been made clear to the Chair, however, he announced that William Woodburn having received "a majority of all the votes cast" was declared the nominee of the convention.

Woodburn felt that he was in duty bound to make a fight or rest under the imputation of having been bought off by the Silver-men and made a vigorous and conscientious campaign, speaking all over the State and leading a forlorn hope. He was beaten by Newlands by nearly 5,000 majority.

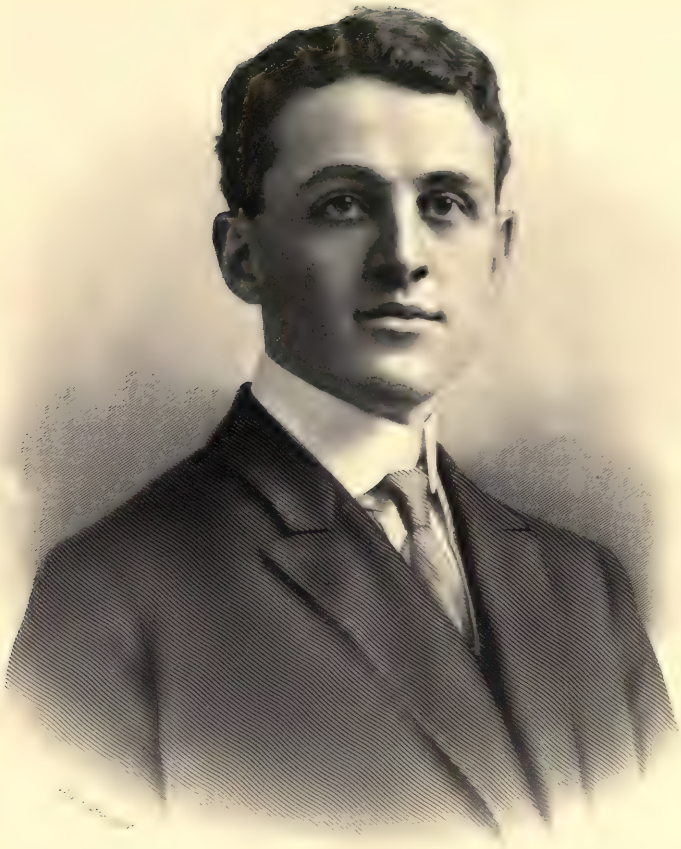
J. C. Hagerman, the Democratic nominee, received 345 votes, and the Prohibition candidate polled but 67.

In the campaign of 1894 the Silver men elected every nominee on the State ticket by overwhelming majorities and both houses of the Legislature was almost unanimous for the dominant party. The former leaders of the Republican party, Jones, Stewart and Newlands, had come into the Silver fold, and the movement in favor of the remonetization of silver grew into a national issue.

In 1896 the Democrats and Silver men fused on most of the nominations and carried the State by heavy majorities, not losing a man on the ticket.

In the election of 1898 friction developed between the Democrats and Silver men. Stewart was a candidate for re-election to the United States Senate and it was the aim of Black Wallace, his campaign manager, to fuse the Democratic and Silver parties. The convention of both parties was held in Reno.

The friction began over the division of the offices. Both factions counted on their own party having the predominance in numerical strength and consequently demanded the bulk of the offices.



Clement Baster

A Committee on Fusion was appointed by each convention, but after several hours of wrangling, in which each side stubbornly held its ground, the meeting adjourned without reaching any agreement and both parties placed a full ticket in the fight.

The campaign found four tickets in the field, Silver, Democrat, Republican, and as in the previous campaign, a People's party.

The only tickets between which there was any contest to speak of was the Republican and Silver Party. The Silver men elected their entire ticket with the exception of the Superintendent of Public Instruction and the Democratic ticket ran third in the race. The People's party polled less than 1,000 votes, which was a slight gain on their run in the previous campaign, and passed out of existence in Nevada.

During this campaign friction developed between Stewart and Newlands which was carried on after the campaign and came near disrupting the party.

Stewart made the charge early in the fight that Newlands was secretly knifing him and was planning with the Republicans to run as a candidate for the United States Senate.

As Newlands was a candidate for Congress and pledged to the party platform that endorsed the candidacy of Stewart, but little attention was paid to Stewart's charges at the time. Later on, however, Newlands openly announced himself as a candidate for the Senate in opposition to Stewart and the fight was on all over the State. It was without question the bitterest political battle that had been seen in the sagebrush for many a day, and no quarter was given or asked on either side.

Newlands gave as a reason for his candidacy that Stewart had made an alliance with the sugar trust.

When the Legislature met, the adherents of the respective candidates met, and gathered at the Capitol with knives whetted for the combat.

William Sharon, a nephew of Senator William Sharon who had previously represented Nevada in the United States Senate, was the manager of Newlands' fight, and Black Wallace and J. C. Hagerman were lined up with Stewart. Next appeared upon the scene the famous Jack Chinn, of Kentucky, one of the most skillful politicians of the Bluegrass State. He claimed to represent the National Democratic Central Committee sent out to investigate the alleged treachery of Newlands to the Democratic party.

The Newlands faction insisted that he represented the sugar trust who was assisting Stewart financially. The presence of a number of Pinkerton detectives in Carson added to the complications and mystery of the situation.

Wallace, who as a politician, was in a class by himself and never accepted orders from any one, resented the intrusion of Chinn in the fight, and for a while there was bad blood between the parties.

Wallace engineered a call for the State Silver Central Committee to meet at Carson to take up the question of Newlands' alleged treachery to the party platform and to Stewart. The Committee met in the Supreme Court room and formal charges were made against Newlands and Sharon, Sharon at that time being the Chairman of the Committee.

After considerable debate, a motion to adjourn the meeting for one week, was carried by a small majority, and after the adjournment Chinn called on Wallace at his rooms in the Ormsby House and asked him to explain why he had allowed the meeting to adjourn without decisive action.

Wallace informed him that it was none of his business, and a fight seemed on the tapis when Stewart intervened and mollifying the two men induced Wallace to explain that he had allowed the meeting to adjourn without action that the opposition could not raise the cry of "snap judgment."

Chinn leaned forward and, tapping Wallace's knee with his finger, asked him if he proposed to take definite action at the next meeting, and being assured that he would, replied:

"When my father used to buy coon dogs and the owners bragged about the coons the dogs could kill he always asked to see the coon skins. Now Wallace, I will consider you a good coon dog when I see the skins of Newlands and Sharon tacked up on the cabin wall of the State Central Committee."

Wallace laughed at this comparison and Chinn, shaking his clenched fist under Wallace's nose, continued:

"I'll give you until next Thursday to tack those hides up on the wall." A week later, by a decisive vote, Newlands and Sharon were read out of the party on the ground that their treachery was clearly proven. Sharon was deposed as Chairman of the Central Committee and a successor was elected.

This meeting was one of the most exciting and dramatic ever witnessed in State politics in the sagebrush. The adherents of both men were intense and bitter in their partisanship and at times the situation was so tense that a general fight with weapons seemed imminent.

The resolutions submitted to the meeting were passed by a roll call after a long and patient hearing of both sides of the case and the charge that Newlands had entered the fight for the Senatorship after being publicly pledged to a platform endorsing Stewart for the same office, was considered substantiated on the showing that Newlands and Sharon had conspired to elect the Republican Legislative ticket.

While this act of the Committee was considered a body blow to Newlands' Senatorial aspirations, his adherents still maintained the struggle for the toga. They had ample money to carry out their plans of electing Newlands over Stewart, provided they could deadlock the Legislature and prevent Stewart from winning on the first ballot.

J. C. Hagerman, who had been one of Stewart's managers, had advanced to many of the members money to pay their election expenses, and in turn exacted a written pledge to vote for Stewart and a receipt for the money advanced. He held these documents over the wavering members.

Stewart could absolutely count on two majority in the Senate, but his managers could only muster 15 votes in the House out of a membership of 30. Day after day the count showed the same result, 15 for Stewart, Scattering 15. The Stewart managers felt that after the men who were pledged to Stewart had kept their platform pledges by voting for him once, they might feel at liberty to wander away in almost any direction on the second ballot. The Senate voted and gave Stewart two majority.

When the time came for the House to vote every one appeared to be at sea, and when the roll was called but twenty-nine members answered to their names. Gillispie of Story was absent. He belonged to the "scattering" contingent and had never been counted as a Stewart man. The anti-Stewart people demanded a call of the House, but the motion was voted down 15 to 14. A motion to call the roll on the election of a United States Senator carried, and a tremor went down the line of the opponents of Stewart. The roll call proceeded and the result, 15 for Stewart and 14 scattering, gave Stewart the fight by the closest margin by which a Senator was ever elected in Nevada. Before the result was

announced a dozen men were on their feet protesting and raising points of order, but Lieutenant Governor James Judge brought down his gavel and announced that Stewart having received a majority in both Houses he was hereby declared elected to the office of United States Senator for the ensuing six years.

For a few minutes the Chamber was the scene of a regular pandemonium as members denounced each other vociferously, and in the midst of it Black Wallace, the arch manipulator of the job which elected Stewart, sat calmly watching the turmoil and keeping a still tongue and the demeanor of a Sphinx. The absence of Gillispie of Story happened in this way. A few minutes before the two Houses met in the Assembly chamber in joint session Gillispie was asked by some friends in front of the Bullion Bank, if he did not want to ride to the Capitol. He entered the hack in response to the invitation and was rapidly whirled away to Empire, three miles distant, and locked up in the house of State Senator Williams where he remained a prisoner for two days.

The invitation to ride in the hack came from Sam Jones, a brother of Senator Jones, and it is a matter of history, that Sam Jones, who was always regarded as one of the best story tellers on the coast, regaled him with some excellent anecdotes during the two days and in other ways rendered his stay a pleasant one. It was charged that Gillispie was willingly abducted and got \$1,800 for his absence from his seat.

During the entire fight Stewart was many times on the verge of defeat. When the caucus was called of the lower House to pledge the members to him there was one short until he was brought in by Assemblyman Folsom who took him out of a house and marched him several blocks to the Chamber at the muzzle of a six shooter.

Although the Silver men elected Stewart, he rejoined the Republican party almost as soon as he reached Washington and was execrated by his former political associates. He also voted for the tariff on sugar.

Two years later Newlands succeeded in his ambition to reach the United States Senate and was sent to Washington by his former political party.

The next Senatorial fight was between Gov. John Sparks and George Nixon who had formerly been a State Senator from Humboldt County. Nixon had at one time entered the field against John P. Jones and been

beaten. Entering the lists against Sparks he captured the Legislature by three majority on joint ballot.

Finding the Legislature so close some friends of the Governor raised a fund in Salt Lake to back Sparks. One evening a stranger reached Carson City and hunting up Sparks' friends announced that he had a quarter of a million behind him to elect Sparks. He was told that the Governor was not making any monied fight and that he would not consider such a proposition for an instant. The man was insistent, however, and finally got an audience with Sparks and made a proposition to elect him with unlimited money. The reply was characteristic of the man.

"If I had won this fight with a Democratic majority I would not expect Mr. Nixon to buy my supporters. I should regard him as a contemptible whelp if he did and he would have the right to regard me in the same light if I used money to corrupt his adherents. As long as I am Governor of this State and sworn to obey and uphold its laws I shall do so. If a single nickle is used to get me any votes in this Legislature I shall decline to accept the certificate of election. I guess we are now through with all the business you have to transact, sir. There is the door."

The person addressed made a hasty exit and slid through the door with the air of a man who wanted to escape being kicked through.

Nixon was elected and at the banquet that followed Gov. Sparks sat at his right hand, the guest of honor.

In the campaign in 1908 Francis G. Newlands was the Democratic candidate against P. L. Flannigan. He was elected with both houses Democratic.

The campaign of 1910 was memorable from the fact that a Legislature Democratic, on joint ballot, gave a unanimous vote for George Nixon, a Republican. The fight was between Key Pittman and George Nixon. They were the choice of their respective parties in the primaries and made the campaign under a new law which allowed United States Senators to be elected by a direct vote of the people. There having been some question raised about this law being constitutional, the principals signed what was known as "a gentleman's agreement" by which the candidate receiving the smaller number of votes in the general election should withdraw and not allow his name to go before the Legislature. Nixon won in the general election and Pittman withdrew his name. An attempt was made to keep him in the fight on the ground that there was

nothing binding in the agreement. He declined to be persuaded and asked all Democrats in the Legislature to cast their votes for Nixon.

In addition to the agreement signed by Senatorial candidates, each Legislative candidate was by law compelled to sign one of three statements, either that he would abide by the will of the majority, that he would not, or that he would merely regard it as advisory.

The new plan proved satisfactory and no candidate could be elected to the Legislature who did not agree to abide by the popular vote.

This plan has absolutely eliminated the use of money in the Legislature, which in times past was the rule and not the exception, and gave Nevada the title of "The Rotten Borough" all over the Union.

After the election of the Republican Senator the Legislature passed the following resolution by a unanimous vote, which was signed by the Governor and every member of the Legislature.

"SENATE JOINT RESOLUTION NO. 3.

"PASSED JANUARY 25, 1911.

"Resolved, By the Republican minority in this Joint Session of both houses of the Twenty-fifth session of the Nevada Legislature, in which a Democratic majority has voted to make unanimous the election of a Republican candidate to the Senate of the United States, that our thanks and congratulations be extended with a hearty good-will to the Democratic members for the honorable way in which they have accepted the result of the last election and bowed to the will of the people as expressed by the popular vote. Be it further

"Resolved, That we extend our sincere congratulations and good-will to the Hon. Key Pittman, of Nye County, for the unequivocal manner in which he has carried out his part of the 'gentlemen's agreement' made between himself and the Hon. George S. Nixon in the campaign of last fall, in withdrawing from the contest after the result of the election was announced, and that he has earned the lasting regard of his political opponents by the fair, able and honorable campaign made by him in his fight for the Senatorial toga, thereby making a record of which every true Nevadan may well be proud. Be it further

"Resolved, That the election of a Republican, who was chosen by the popular vote, as against a candidate for the same office, with a Democratic majority in control of the Legislature on joint ballot, emphasizes an epoch in American politics of which the Senate of the United States may well take heed, until the election of United States Senators by direct vote of the people, shall become the law of the land. Be it further

"Resolved, That a copy of these resolutions be forwarded to both houses of Congress at Washington."

While the Democratic State Convention was in session at Fallon in 1912, word was received from Washington of the sudden illness of Senator Nixon. He died on the following day and Gov. Oddie named

Nixon's partner, George Wingfield, as his successor. While congratulations were pouring in on Mr. Wingfield he astonished the State by declining the honor.

Nothing so unprecedented had ever happened in American politics, and by this act Wingfield stood out alone like some tall monument on the desert to be observed from every point of the compass.

It does not seem to the average mind that any one could refuse an honor second only to that of being President of the United States, an honor that men have spent years trying to obtain, beside in many instances, millions in money and a chance of landing in the penitentiary. Yet George Wingfield turned it down and his modest refusal of the office won him many friends. It seemed to have been a characteristic of his that everything worth having was worth fighting for. He had carved his way to position and opulence by hard fighting and he seems to have had little regard for anything, to use a common expression, "handed him on a platter."

In his letter of declination, however, he stated that he was not prepared "at the present time" to accept the office which, to the politicians of the State, reading between the lines, meant that he might at some future time make a regular fight for the place.

Judge Massay, formerly of the Supreme Bench, was then tendered the office and accepted.

Hon. Key Pittman of Tonopah, announced his candidacy soon after, and in the fall election was elected by a majority of 89 on a popular vote which was followed by a regular Legislative election in which he was sent to Washington with but two dissenting votes.

The innovation in the election of U. S. Senators is soon destined to become popular all over the Union. Nevada stands as one of the first states to adopt it, following in the lead of Oregon, in a heroic endeavor to atone for its shameless past.

Nevada politics have from time to time brought many powerful conflicting interests into the field of strife and provided issues for many a hot campaign. For some time there was a battle royal waged over the payment of a bullion tax on the net products of the mines.

The Bonanza firm held this tax to be unjust and inimical to mining development. The Legislature that enacted the law and the subsequent Legislature that retained it on the statute books, maintained that the

miners were the richest people in the state and ought to pay the heaviest tax.

During Governor Kinkead's administration in 1880, the Bonanza firm put a bill through the Legislature repealing the Bullion tax law.

Governor Kinkead promptly vetoed the bill, as Gov. Bradley had done before him, and that night a gathering of delighted citizens, headed by a band, went to his house to express their warm approval of his course. The newspapers of the state, irrespective of party, commended his course and he seemed to have the entire state at his feet. He was a candidate for re-election at the next Republican convention and only received two votes.

Governor Bradley was the first Democratic Governor to sit in the executive chair. He was placed on the ticket by the Democrats mainly because he possessed vast herds of cattle and was called "Old Broadhorns" in the campaign. In spite of the predictions of the opposition and the fun poked at him, he was elected by a handsome majority and made a sterling Governor, following his own ideas about what the state needed, and accepting dictation from no clique.

He was re-elected by an increased majority.

Jewett Adams, who had been Lieutenant-Governor under Bradley, succeeded him as Governor, beating Enoch Strother over twelve hundred votes. In the following state campaign he was beaten by C. C. Stevenson.

The next Governor was J. E. Jones, the first Silver Governor. His inaugural ball was "pulled off" at Carson City with great eclat. He died in office and Rhinold Sadler became acting Governor.

Sadler ran on the Silver ticket as Governor and was elected by 22 majority, beating McMillan, who contested the election. After a long drawn contest which cost several thousand dollars, Sadler was seated.

He was an eccentric man and spoke with a German accent. His peculiarities subjected him to considerable ridicule but it was generally admitted that he was one of the best business Governors the state ever had.

He enforced the revenue laws and compelled the tax dodgers high and low to respect the obligations they owed the state.

When there was an epidemic among the cattle of California he placed a quarantine on the California cattle and refused to allow any to be shipped through Nevada. Agents of the big beef interests called on him

and attempted to secure his signature to a document lifting the quarantine, but he was obdurate. They plied him with liquor, but the more he drank the more obstinate he became, and finally, when they offered him a bribe of \$100,000 for his signature, he ordered them out of his office with an avalanche of Dutch profanity.

He lost the nomination for the same office at the next convention, and ran for Congress on an independent ticket.

He was before the people of the state in five separate campaigns, being a candidate for State Controller in '86 on the Democratic ticket, Lieutenant-Governor in '90 on the same ticket; Lieutenant-Governor in '94 on the Silver ticket. This was his first success, beating Emmitt nearly 2,000 votes. He next was elected Governor on the Silver ticket and was defeated for Congress on the Stalwart-Silver ticket.

John Sparks succeeded him as governor, going into office with over 1,700 majority.

As the end of his term drew to a close Sparks announced that he would not again be a candidate. As a result James Sweeney, Attorney General, and Sam P. Davis, State Controller, both became candidates to succeed Sparks. Sweeney represented the Democratic, and Davis the Silver party.

The two parties fused at the Reno Convention and it became apparent that the majority of the delegates desired Sparks to succeed himself. He was at Sacramento at the time judging the cattle exhibits at the State Fair. His friends wired him of the situation and he declined on the ground that he had pledged his word to Sweeney and Davis not to be a candidate.

Davis promptly wired him that he would turn over all his delegates to Sparks if he would run, and within an hour Sweeney followed suit. Sparks arrived on the morning train and agreed to run if the convention was unanimous. Sweeney placed him in nomination on behalf of the Democrats and Davis seconded the nomination on behalf of the Silver party.

Sweeney accepted the nomination for Supreme Judge. Davis declined the nomination for State Controller.

Sparks swept the state and led the ticket with over 3,000 majority.

During the last year of his administration labor troubles broke out in Goldfield. The I. W. W. organization, finding the camp one of the

richest producers in the state, entered it to repeat the tactics which had made them notorious in Cripple Creek.

They compelled all classes of labor to affiliate with their order even down to the dance-hall girls.

Men and women who refused to enter into such affiliation were ordered out of town with threats and intimidation.

Some men were beaten almost to death and compelled to walk at night over a desert without food or water.

The ore was so rich in some of the mines that miners working for four dollars a day were able to secrete from fifty to a hundred dollars worth of ore about their persons. One man staggered out of the hoisting works and fell back unable to carry the weight of ore in his clothes, and when he was relieved of the burden the value of the gold was over eight hundred dollars. Since the beginning of operations on the Comstock the miners had a changing room where they laid aside their mining clothes and walking a short distance resumed their street attire. An attempt was made to introduce the changing room in Goldfield as the only means of protecting the mine owners from the looting of their properties by the "high graders," as they were called. This resulted in a strike, the miners who were guilty of taking ore being the loudest to protest that the proposed change was "a reflection on their honor" and the changing room degrading to their manhood.

For months there was almost a state of anarchy in Goldfield, and it culminated in the shooting down of a restaurant keeper in his own place of business, because he served meals to non-union men. This wanton killing resulted in the conviction of the principal and another as his accessory, and they were both sentenced to long terms in the penitentiary. The labor unions throughout the country made a strong effort to save the men indicted for the crime, but failed and the Socialists of the United States nominated Preston, the chief one accused, as a candidate for the Presidency. During these troubles Gov. Sparks was called upon to preserve order and sent a message to President Roosevelt. The fact that the local authorities were unable or unwilling to preserve order was notorious, but later the President, who had given his moral and executive support to Gov. Sparks, suddenly withdrew it and threw the blame on Sparks for asking for Federal troops when there was no necessity for such action.



Cole L. Harwood

There had been a very strong friendship existing between Gov. Sparks and President Roosevelt, and the blow from Washington was a severe one to Sparks. He felt, and justly so, that he had been sacrificed upon the altar of politics, as there was a presidential election coming on and the party leaders feared that the sending of Federal troops into Nevada at the time would be construed as an assault on labor.

Sparks was a man who had a high regard for his personal honor, and extremely sensitive and the unexpected repudiation by the President, for whom he entertained a strong personal regard, was a humiliation. His death followed before the end of his term, and Denver S. Dickerson, the Lieutenant-Governor, became Acting-Governor.

Dickerson's administration was marked with a great deal of executive ability and backbone. He made a fight against the low valuation of railroad property before the State Board of Assessors and effected a substantial raise. He was able and conscientious in the discharge of his executive duties and thoroughly honest in his convictions, but he lacked tact and made several highly undesirable appointments. He also antagonized the friends of his predecessor, Gov. Sparks. Being the logical candidate for the head of the ticket, he was nominated, but was unable to reconcile the different factions and was beaten by Tasker Oddie, who at the present writing is still the chief executive of the state.

In Van Duzer's second run for Congress he was opposed by James A. Yerington and won by 224 votes. The fight was so close that it was for a long time in doubt. When it was finally decided the loser met his father H. M. Yerington on the street and announced that he was defeated. "It's pretty rough on me, but I have been defeated." H. M. Yerington replied, "Rough on you! What are you talking about? I've lost both my County Commissioners in Ormsby."

George Bartlett succeeded Van Duzer and was elected two terms. He was elected on the Democratic ticket but in the contest between the Progressive Republicans and Speaker Cannon, Bartlett sided with the standpat Republicans. This caused a question to be raised as to the quality of his Democracy. In the election in the fall of 1912 he ran as a non-partizan candidate for Supreme Judge. In this campaign he urged that the judiciary be taken out of politics, but was defeated by Patrick McCarran. In the election of 1910 E. E. Roberts was elected to Congress

over Charles Sprague of Goldfield. His majority was 2,378. In 1912 his majority over Clay Tallman was less than 50.

Ever since Nevada was a state, politics has been the pastime of a large number of its inhabitants. Owing to the fact that its population has been the smallest of any state in the Union, it has been easier to handle the voting population than elsewhere, and the prizes to be won with small effort has caused the field to be an inviting one.

The U. S. Senatorship has been regarded as the capital prize in the lottery of politics, and the charge of non-residence has been frequently raised. California has played an important part in furnishing Senators, and the Palace Hotel for years was the headquarters for political conferences in which slates were made for the subsequent submission to the voters of Nevada. The second time Sharon ran he was challenged to name the place in Nevada which was his abiding place, and he failed to show it.

Senator Jones maintained a princely residence at Santa Monica during most of his term of office.

Stewart was imported from California to run a third time for the Senatorship, and Newlands came from California to Nevada for the express purpose of engaging in politics, first running for Congress and later for the Senatorship.

George Nixon may fairly be regarded as the first bona fide resident of the state to be elected Senator, who maintained no residence outside the state, and who lived and died and invested his capital where he made it. Fair was a resident of the state, but his capital was largely invested in San Francisco.

Of the big politicians who fought in the arena for the honors of the game, Stewart was regarded as the best all round campaigner of the lot. He was a man of tireless energy and resourceful brain and knew every trick and turn in the art of political warfare.

Once embarked in a fight it was to the finish and to win. His physical energy was that of a Roman gladiator, and when on the wing week after week with frequently not more than two hours sleep a night, he seemed as fresh as a lark at the end of the fight. His store of reserve vitality seemed practically inexhaustible and his staying qualities the wonder of all observers. With Stewart in a fight it was a case of "Night on the Numidian desert and all the lions up."

BOSSES.

A chapter on Nevada politics would be incomplete without some mention of the various political bosses who have directed the trend of political parties in the state at various times. Unquestionably the chief of them all was Charles Wallace, better known as "Black Wallace," a title he earned by being known as an absolutely "black Republican." He was peerless in his ability to handle men and measures, and his skill as a political organizer and lobbyist gave him a coastwise reputation. He first did politics in Eureka county, where for many years he held the office of Assessor. Later he became the recognized political agent of the Southern Pacific R. R. Co., and handled all their political business in the state.

He was smooth and diplomatic when the occasion called for such tactics, and a rough and ready fighter when cornered, and he was seldom cornered. His chief personal asset was unwavering fidelity to his word, which once passed, was as good as any United States Government bond anywhere in Nevada. He made it a practice never to lose a fight and he led some of the sorriest looking battles to ultimate victory. He knew every twist and turn of the political game, and some of the men who entered the lists against him retired in a short season to realize that they had yet the alphabet of politics to learn. Legislatures, Central Committees and State Conventions were mere pieces on his political chess board. His rule finally became so absolute that delegates to state conventions waited for him to say what he wanted, and when his word went down the line it came as the general order of a military commander to his troops.

He enjoyed the confidence of all classes, and while he sometimes allowed his personal prejudices to influence him in the selection of a ticket, he generally settled upon representative men for party honors, and his activities in the field of politics were usually in the direction of financial economy and good government in the administration of state affairs. He died of heart disease while riding in a stage coach a few miles from Grass Valley, Cal. Since his death no man has ever been found who has proven his equal as a political manipulator.

Among other politicians who gained distinction in the sagebrush years ago, may be mentioned Matt Cannavan, George Cassidy, Jewett Adams,

Louis Wardell, James Haines, A. C. Cleveland, C. C. Powning, Charles Stoddard, Adolph Shane and others.

Two instances may be quoted to show Cannavan's sagacity. It was his habit to run the Democratic primaries of Story his own way, and Senator Brumsey formulated a new primary law and passed the bill in the Legislature. It was framed to prevent Cannavan from practically appointing all three judges of election. It provided that the majority of a County Central Committee should appoint two of the judges and the minority to select one. The first meeting of the Story Central Committee after the new law was in operation found Cannavan in the chair. Brumsey called his attention to the new law and Cannavan read it all through with the air of a man who had seen it for the first time.

He said he was willing to abide by the law, as it seemed to be a very fair one. The first vote was something of a surprise to Brumsey. The Committee consisted of seven, and the vote stood four to three for the judges named by Cannavan. Brumsey had expected it would be six to one, he being the solitary one.

The three who had voted against Cannavan's judges then proceeded under the law to select a third. When the vote was taken another judge of Cannavan's choice was elected. On the first ballot two Cannavan men had gone into Brumsey's camp in order to become the majority of the minority. Brumsey left the room satisfied that old Matt was too much of a practical politician for him.

On another occasion Cannavan framed a bill to present to the Legislature, which, if passed, would compel the stock brokers of the Comstock to pay a quarterly license. The brokers raised a purse of \$5,000 and gave it to Peter Burke, a lobbyist to beat the bill.

When Burke reached Carson he was lured into a resort and soon put to bed badly intoxicated. Cannavan soon had his clothes in his possession and securing the \$5,000 in currency, took the numbers of every bill and marked them all with a little red cross on the knee of the Goddess of Liberty. He returned the wallet to Burke's clothes and next morning, meeting Burke on the street, told him that there was a plot to land him and several other people in the penitentiary by tracing marked money which he had to buy votes in the Legislature.

Burke scoffed the idea, but Cannavan offered to bet him that he could tell the number of every bill in his pocket. He demonstrated this to Burke

and then called his attention to the red cross that was there on every one to trace the currency. Burke, thoroughly frightened, went back to Virginia City, and hurling the bills at the brokers, denounced them for their supposed attempt to land him in the State's Prison. Before they could recover from the setback Cannavan had passed his bill and it became a law.

He was once a candidate for Governor on the Democratic ticket, but was beaten by Jewett Adams at the Eureka convention. Matt bought all the campaign in Eureka that night ratifying his opponent's victory.

Before coming to Nevada he ran against Pat Crowley in San Francisco for the office of Chief of Police. They were both fast friends and being about the most popular men in San Francisco at the time, their adherents took such an interest in the fight that the presidential campaign was practically lost sight of.

Both men were kept busy keeping their followers from practicing the various forms of chicanery then so prevalent in San Francisco.

Both were fair men and both tried their best to have a square election. This, however, was practically impossible. Crowley won, but he insisted on Cannavan taking the office on the ground that he (Crowley) was fraudulently counted in. Cannavan refused, insisting that Crowley's majority was honestly reached and that his own men had stuffed the ballot box, tampered with the returns and voted hundreds who had only been in town over night. The two men actually got into a wrangle, each trying to prove that his opponent was fairly elected.

Crowley finally took the office and was the most efficient as well as honest Chief of Police the city ever had.

Cannavan owned the New York mine and was the first man in the state to give a ball in the lower levels. He fitted up a ball room a thousand feet under ground, and it was a society event, the creme de la creme of the Comstock being invited. The heat, however, became so intolerable that the gentlemen shed their coats and vests and the ladies had to be taken out in the cooling chambers. The affair finally wound up in the hoisting works above ground and lasted until daylight.

A. C. Cleveland of White Pine County, began his political career in California. He was a political agent for the Southern Pacific R. R. for many years and was finally sent to the Legislature to represent Nevada County.

Somewhat to the astonishment of the R. R. Co., he was found supporting some very drastic anti-Railroad Bills. He was sent for by the railroad people, who demanded to know what he meant by his course, and bluntly stated that as their political agent, working on a salary, he was a railroad man, but representing the people of his county, elected by anti-railroad votes, he was in an entirely different position. This ended the conference and the railroad people knew Cleveland too well to waste any further time parleying with him. He stood by his constituents through the session and went home with the respect of both parties.

Coming to Nevada he became a leading factor in politics and was regarded as one of the shrewdest manipulators in the state. On one occasion, as a delegate to a Republican convention at Winnemucca, he placed a candidate into a fight which deadlocked the convention two days. In the interest of party harmony he was asked to withdraw his man, but he was obdurate and only consented finally to do so after securing thirty votes to use as he pleased and the promise in writing from the Story delegation that they would run his candidate for State Treasurer in the next campaign. He withdrew his man and used the thirty votes to nominate his choice for Supreme Judge. It was not until some time after the adjournment of the convention that the discovery was made that Cleveland's candidate had been dead nearly twenty years.

Charles Stoddard was always a familiar figure about a State Convention, and lobbying was also one of his accomplishments. He once took a contract to pass a bill in the Legislature for a San Francisco firm. It was an act to refund some worthless county bonds and the bill if passed would put about \$200,000 into the pockets of the bondholders.

Stoddard was to receive \$5,000 for his work, and was also allowed the same amount for "contingent expenses" which was supposed to cover whatever amounts of money members of the Legislature might ask of Stoddard for looking favorably on the measure.

It was passed, but when Stoddard went to headquarters to get the \$10,000 they handed him \$5,000 for his services, but said they would not advance the other \$5,000, as they did not care to be mixed up in anything that might look like corrupting the Legislature.

Stoddard pitched the \$5,000 back across the table, remarking that his word to members was his only stock in trade, and unless he kept it inviolate he would have to go out of business.

After leaving the conference he roused up old Gov. Bradley at midnight and stated his grievance. He said that if he could not deliver the money to the members if the bill became a law, it would ruin him, and the only way out of it was to veto the bill. He actually asked the Governor to veto it on the grounds that it was passed by gross bribery and corruption. The Governor remarked that "those Frisco chaps must be pretty ornery people," and promised to veto the bill. Next morning his sizzling veto message electrified the Legislature, and the San Francisco bond manipulators went home impressed with the idea that fair play was a jewel in Nevada politics.

One of the longest dead-locks in a political convention was at Carson City, when the Republicans were in session several days over the nomination of a Supreme Judge. Beatty, Sabin and Hawley were the opposing candidates. Charles Varian, a Reno attorney, and an exceptionally shrewd politician, was handling Beatty's fight.

He had a trusted man voting each time with the Hawley and Sabin factions, and on the second day of the dead-lock each faction caucussed. The Sabin and Hawley factions made a combination and agreed that if the third ballot after recess showed no change, the Sabin delegates were to go in a body to Hawley. On the second ballot Varian caused three of his men to vote for Sabin. Scenting victory, the Sabin men did not "deliver the goods" as agreed to the Hawley people on the next ballot. This failure to keep faith proved their undoing, for the Hawley faction revenged themselves by casting their entire strength for Beatty, thereby giving him the nomination.

For years one of the oddest figures in the political life of Nevada was Morris Pinshower of Virginia City. In 1868 he announced himself a candidate for Sheriff of Storey County. The contest for this office had always been regarded as the bloody angle of the fight in that county, and a nominee to have any chance at all had to be a member of the Miners' Union. Pinshower came out boldly as an independent candidate, announcing that he was the only true friend of the miners and was also solid with property owners.

Pinshower appears to have been the originator of strenuous campaigning in Nevada. He purchased a big raw-boned horse and it is claimed that the two neither ate nor slept during the two months that Pinshower devoted to his campaign. He suddenly became the most

ubiquitous person on the Ledge. He was charging up and down between Virginia City and Gold Hill buttonholing voters, distributing circulars and sizzling campaign literature and making a dozen speeches daily. He wrote signed articles for the newspapers and when the halls were all engaged he launched his oratory from the tops of dry goods boxes. No such persistent campaigning had ever been witnessed in Nevada, and his work attracted attention and drew crowds. On election day he hired men to watch the voting to see that he got fair play and had his representatives also in the polling places to watch the count. The fact that he received less than a dozen votes did not in the least dampen his ardor to participate in politics.

The question of bringing water into Virginia City was being agitated, and the delay in selecting a site was Pinshower's opportunity. He announced that he would form an independent water company, and called on the public to subscribe for stock.

He then disappeared for a season and, returning in about a month, announced that he had located sufficient water to supply every inhabitant of the Comstock with 1,000 gallons a day. This announcement caused quite a flurry until it was ascertained that his water locations were all for water supplies several hundreds of feet below the Comstock.

When this fact was demonstrated to him he packed his grip and rushing off again returned with the glad tidings that he had located Mono Lake. This body of water is located about 150 miles from the Comstock and so impregnated with alkali and other minerals that animals will die of thirst before they will attempt to drink it.

The fight between Adolph Sutro and William Sharon over the tunnel project had the floor about that time, and Pinshower threw his talents and energies into the breach and became a political coadjutor of Sutro.

He returned to his dry goods box oratory and night after night enlivened C street by hurling invectives at Sharon and fighting the proposed V. & T. Railroad. He carried the fight to San Francisco, and assaulted corporate iniquity in its very stronghold. Making no special impression in San Francisco, by reason of the general competition of crank politicians, he migrated to Washington and attempted seriously to regulate national affairs.

Congressman Daggett is authority for the statement that the poor fellow could be seen standing on the steps of the National capitol every

day for years stopping the members as they passed in, telling them what the country expected of them and exhorting them to do their duty by their constituents.

After many years of fruitless endeavor he gave up the task of regulating the affairs of the country, and starting a tailor shop, spent his declining years in mending and renovating clothes. After that all he asked of Congress was its patronage.

In the early days men made a regular business of handling or pretending to handle the votes of various nationalities.

Before the adoption of the Australian ballot in Nevada, each party had a separate ticket, and it was an easy matter to hand a man a ticket and see that he voted it.

A man in Eureka claimed to be able to handle the vote of a certain nationality and demanded pay of the political bosses for his work.

It was suspected that he merely pocketed the money and never delivered any votes, and accordingly he was, on the night before election, given a thousand dollars in counterfeit money and told to see that his countrymen were properly taken care of. He disappeared next day and inside of a week was arrested in San Francisco on the charge of passing counterfeit money. He had over \$900 of this Eureka money on his person when taken into custody and spent a term in the State's Prison as an aftermath of his political activities.

John Snow was a noted political character of the Comstock and for years no political convention was considered complete without him.

On one occasion, after the Democrats had completed a particularly strong ticket, it was proposed to ratify the work of the convention with a barbecue on a date which happened to fall on Friday.

Snow was on his feet at once.

"Mr. Chairman, I move to make it a fish barbecue, as the heft of the Democratic party eat no meat on Friday."

The shout of laughter that greeted Snow could be heard for blocks.

In the palmy days of the Comstock there was always more or less rough work connected with politics. A primary election was frequently an affair with all the elements of a riot. Roughts were hired "to preserve order," and other roughs and heelers engaged to keep the other side orderly. Money flowed like water on those occasions and what was

usually designated as the "graveyard vote" was called into requisition by both sides.

It was thought nothing amiss to resurrect the dead and vote them by the wholesale. So long as the memory of the departed was respected by not voting him, except in proper alignment with the party with which he affiliated in his lifetime, the ethics and traditions were considered as having in no way been violated. Hon. William Sharon was accorded the credit of having first invaded the cemetery for primary votes, but he had no patent on the method, and the practice was in full force and effect years after his death.

During one of Senator Jones' campaigns, a rough from San Francisco called on the Senator at his Gold Hill residence and signified his willingness to hire out as a fighter for \$50 a day. Jones stated that he was looking for just such a man and the price seemed reasonable. He then stated to the new comer that he had a man in the next room whom he kept in constant readiness to test applicants.

"If you fight him to a draw you go on at fifty a day, and if you lick him you take his place at a hundred a day. Step right in."

Ushering the newcomer into the next room, he introduced him to the "trier out" who at once began removing his superfluous clothes.

The San Francisco applicant looked the man over and, turning to Jones, queried: "Is this man a friend of yours, Senator?"

"Yes, one of long standing."

"In that case I decline to lick him. I will never have it said of me that I ever deliberately did violence to a friend of John P. Jones," and with these words he grabbed his hat and made for the road.

During Stuart's last campaign he had some difficulty with the local band in Carson and secured a band of excellent musicians from the Stewart Institute, a training school for Indians on the outskirts of Carson. They appeared at the meeting and the leader asked the master of ceremonies what music they wanted. He was told that anything that they were well accustomed to playing would be all right and they treated the audience to the lugubrious music of "The Dead March" from Saul. It threw the audience into convulsions of merriment and spoiled the evening for the speaker.

It is related of John P. Jones that when he was last elected Senator he gave a banquet at a local hotel in Carson City. The spread was on the





Eng. by L. G. Williams & Co. N.Y.

James D. Finch

usual scale of such affairs and in a few days a bill of \$2,500 was rendered. Jones considered the bill as somewhat exorbitant regarding \$600 as about the correct figure. When he paid it he remarked to the landlord that he thought it the best service for the money he had ever met with in all his senatorial experience. He also incidentally gave a quiet tip to buy Crown Point. The unsuspecting Boniface fell into the trap and inside of thirty days Jones had the \$2,500 back in his vest pocket.

Jones was one of the quickest thinkers in all the west. He never was cornered in anything where he did not have an answer ready.

In the early days of Placerville he was arranging to attend a ball and found that he had no "boiled shirt." It was but the matter of a few minutes to rummage among the effects of a neighbor's cabin to "lift" the necessary piece of wearing apparel.

Later in the evening the owner trailed Jones to a saloon and accused him of stealing the shirt. Jones denied the charge and the owner, whose name was Jim Ownes, offered to bet \$40 that his name was on the tag at the bottom of the shirt front. Jones immediately put up the money to cover the bet and opening his vest read off the owners name from the tag as follows: "J-O-W-E-N-S. That's the way I spell my name Sir," and pushing the forty dollars across the bar invited all hands to drink.

When he had plenty of money after the unearthing of the Crown Point bonanzas he had a weakness for investing in patents. Anything that was patented from a clothes wringer to a car coupler would find an investor in Jones.

One afternoon a queer looking specimen called to interest the Senator in a scheme to revolutionize the manufacture of butter. First ascertaining that Jones knew absolutely nothing of butter-making, he told him that the best results ever obtained was not over 4 per cent. of butter from each 100 pounds of milk. He claimed to have a patent that covered a process which extracted 95 per cent. "I will bring my machine here this evening and you have a hundred pounds of new milk ready and I will show you results."

Jones had the milk ready at the appointed hour and the stranger brought his new principle churn. The milk was poured in one end of the machine and after a few turns of the crank over 80 pounds of perfect butter tumbled out of the other. It was weighed and tipped the scale at 82 pounds.

The stranger looked disappointed and thoroughly crestfallen.

"I find my machine isn't working very well tonight. I suppose you won't want to do business after such a poor showing." And the man began gathering up his traps as he moved toward the door.

Jones grabbed him and wanted to see his patent papers. He had a patent for some improvement in butter making and Jones grabbed the opportunity to secure it. He drew a check for \$200.00 and closed the deal.

Next day he confided to his brother Sam that he had purchased an invention that would give him control of the butter markets of the world. Sam was skeptical. John P. got 100 pounds of milk and passed it through the machine. It passed through very easily into a receptacle all ready to receive it, but no butter materialized.

"You have been duped," said Sam. "Stop the check and have the rascal arrested."

"Oh let it go," was the reply. "It's only a small matter financially and I don't want the public to know what a d—— fool I have been. Then again mebbe the fellow needs the money worse than I do."

Jones was in the midst of a Senatorial campaign and the opposition would have extracted a great deal of amusement out of such a situation.

Tom Fitch was the greatest orator the State ever produced. He had a fine presence and magnificent delivery and could woo the English language as no one else could.

His invective cut to the bone, and his praise was like scattering showers of pearls. In one of Sharon's campaigns Fitch called at the bank and asked for the loan of \$10,000.

"Any security?" queried Sharon.

Fitch reached into the inside pocket of his coat and drew out a formidable piece of manuscript which he tossed over to Sharon.

It was a crushing arraignment of Sharon's course on the Comstock. Every sentence was the swing of a club.

"Guess the security is all right Tom," said Sharon, and calling the cashier he directed him to fix up a check for the amount payable to Fitch. After Fitch received the check he pulled out another manuscript and remarked that he needed another loan of the same amount. He pushed the manuscript over to Sharon. It was a studied eulogy of Sharon. It painted him as a deliverer of the country, the guiding spirit

of the State and the peer of Julius Ceasar. Sharon liked nothing better than flattery and none knew of his weakness better than Fitch. The second check was paid with an agreement that Fitch should deliver the eulogy on the following evening at the Opera House, which he did with great unction.

On one occasion when Fitch was a candidate for Congress before a convention which assembled at Carson he was beaten after a long fight for the nomination. After the vote was announced Fitch rose in his seat and remarked, "Mr. Chairman and gentlemen of the convention. I feel like a scriptural gentleman named Lazarus. I have been licked by dogs."

Fitch, during his varied political career, strove on many occasions to reach the United States Senate. He was an avowed candidate in Nevada, California, Utah and the Hawaiian Islands, and invariably fell a few votes short of the prize. The stars seemed never exactly propitious for his success and his interesting explanations of how he come to be beaten would make marketable literature.

In one of his campaigns he was bitterly assailed by the *Enterprise* at a time when Joseph T. Goodman was the owner and editor. Goodman did not write the article and when he saw it in the proof he expostulated with the staff who had formulated it as a sort of joint production.

Goodman said that if Fitch had any manhood in him such an article would mean a challenge. The staff admitted that, but said they would take care of any challenge that Fitch might send. In spite of Goodman's warnings the article appeared and the challenge came from Fitch before the writers had reached their breakfast. When the challenge reached the office the fire eating writers who had insisted on the publication were in no hurry to respond.

"Of course Joe you are really the responsible editor and owner of the paper you know," was the way they passed the matter up to Goodman.

"I deserve to be challenged for not having squelched that article," was Goodman's response, and he accepted it at once.

Seconds were chosen to arrange preliminaries and swords were chosen as the weapons. A French restaurant keeper named Chaval was a very expert swordsman and Goodman applied to him for instructions in the art of using the foils. He declined an offer of \$500 for a course of lessons unless he could also teach Fitch declaring that to instruct one

man and not the other would be equivalent to being accessory to murder.

The principals finally settled on revolvers at 20 paces, and in the midst of the preparations the friends of both men placed them under \$10,000 bonds to keep the peace.

This was regarded as a happy settlement of the difficulty, but the men who went on the bonds apparently did not know the characters of the men they were striving to protect and whose lives they were endeavoring to save.

Goodman paid his bondsmen \$10,000 in cash to indemnify them, and notified Fitch of his action. Fitch began to rustle for money and had some difficulty in raising it. Inside the week, however, he negotiated the amount and notified Goodman that his money was up and he was ready for the battle.

The affair was "pulled off" at Bower's Mansion at six in the morning, and every vehicle that could be pressed into service on the Comstock was there. Some of the spectators walked and when the men took their places bets began to be offered and taken as to who would come out alive, who would draw first blood, etc., etc.

Just before the seconds were ready to give the word Goodman stepped over to Fitch's second and asked him if his principal was a good shot.

"Would have to be inside of a barn to hit it," was the reply.

"Then I'll hit his left knee and let it go at that," was the response.

At the first fire Fitch dropped with a bullet just above his left knee. Goodman was unharmed and stepping over to his prostrate antagonist lifted him to his feet and asked leave to apologize for the article which he did not write. The men shook hands and left the field of honor together.

The wound was not serious and the two, now fully reconciled, spent the next six weeks at Lake Tahoe camping out and occupying the same tent.

Of such was the indomitable metal that men were made of in those days. The duel caused the next Legislature to incorporate a clause in the Constitution depriving citizens of the right to hold office who sent or accepted a challenge to a duel, and the same is incorporated in the oath each officer has to take today.

At the present writing Nevada is represented in the United States Senate by Francis G. Newlands and Key Pittman.

After the assembling of Congress in March, Newlands took issue with President Wilson over the tariff schedule. The fight was mainly over placing beef, wool and sugar on the free list. Newlands talked for a gradual reduction, and fought the proposition of free listing these products.

He was first publicly called to account by Sam Balford of Ely, who, in a letter to the Reno Journal, denounced his stand as a repudiation of Democratic principles and platforms.

The result was that for a time the Nevada delegation was bombarded with telegrams and letters on the question. Many leading State Democrats united in a telegram to the delegation calling upon them to support the President in the tariff fight. The Democratic papers took up the fight mainly for free sugar, beef and wool.

Public opinion ran high and there was a wide variance of sentiment on the subject. The Senator had spoken against free sugar on the floor of the Senate, making a defense of the beet sugar industry at Fallon as a reason for his action, and then fell in line with his party after the caucus fight was over.

After the adjournment of the Session the Seventeenth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States was ratified by Congress, which provided for the election of United States Senators by a popular vote.

The present State law provides that the election of United States Senators shall be by a vote in the Legislature and it is held by Constitutional lawyers that before the election of a United States Senator can take place in this State it will be necessary to call an extra session for the purpose of amending the general election law.

HISTORY OF THE PROGRESSIVE PARTY IN NEVADA.

BY GEORGE SPRINGMEYER.

Shortly after Col. Roosevelt, yielding to the letter of the seven Governors and the importunities of his friends, announced his candidacy for the 1912 Republican nomination for President, the Republican State Central Committee of Nevada was called to meet. The supposed purpose of the meeting was to arrange for the selection of delegates to the National Convention through the medium of a State Convention, in

accordance with long-established custom, but there developed a plan to immediately select and instruct the delegates without the formality of State Primaries or a State Convention. The friends of Col. Roosevelt—the embryo Progressives—objected so strenuously to the program that even the “old-liners” and federal office holders, who were much in evidence and who really directed the ostensible stand-pat leaders, became frightened, and it was decided not to perpetrate the iniquity.

Following the avowed policy of Mr. Roosevelt, a proposition for preferential presidential primaries to determine the choice of Nevada Republicans was submitted by George Springmeyer. Unhappily, many of the members in sympathy with the plan became confused by devious parliamentary tactics, and, after perhaps the most stormy session in the history of Nevada politics, during which very bitter accusations and recriminations were made, presidential primaries were denied the people.

The meeting had the effect of thoroughly frightening the old guard, despite the strangle hold it had held on the party for many years. Immediately a well-known railroad boss, whose fine hand had been shown at the Committee meeting, his petty henchmen and servitors, and, to the surprise of the uninitiated, practically all those holding federal positions, became active throughout the State. As it later developed, they purposed, by fair means or foul, to send a Nevada delegation pledged to Mr. Taft. The Roosevelt men, disorganized and without an announced leader, and asking only for the expression of the people at the primaries, made the mistake of resting on their oars. As the campaign developed, through an unfortunate misunderstanding, they were further handicapped by one who assumed to be manager and was utterly without the confidence of the people. The Roosevelt forces were short of funds, and, worse still, at least ninety per cent. of the money raised was not spent by the manager for campaign purposes. The result was that these forces were out-generated by the machine at every turn. And the machine went far; for once, the invisible government was visible in all its hideousness. Where it was obvious that the Roosevelt sentiment was overwhelming, as, for instance, in Esmeralda County, the County Committees, disregarding the plain mandates of the law for precinct primaries, appointed the delegates without giving the rank and file a chance to make the selections. Elsewhere, as in Reno and Carson, where they did not entirely control the County Committees, the machine men impressed into

service all classes of voters, regardless of political affiliations. The ruff-raff of politics were made use of in approved fashion. The railroad employees were allowed time off, and as the ballots were of different colors and many of the bosses watched at the polls, the men were really intimidated. The Taft supporters had automobiles and money; the opposition had none. Some of the federal office holders in Carson and Reno, and even postmasters in the smaller towns, were so perniciously active that at last the eyes of the people were opened, and the methods of the dominant forces were revealed in all their iniquity.

Under the circumstances it was scarcely worth while for the Roosevelt delegates to attend the Fallon Convention held for the selection of national delegates. But the Roosevelt sentiment was so strong and the people were so insistent in their demands that the delegates did attend, and they made things hum while they could. Their determined fight for an uninstructed delegation was in vain. Although the system was without precedent in the history of Nevada, and although instructions had been denied in the previous campaign, the Taft leaders quickly and ruthlessly put through a resolution instructing for Taft, "first, last and all the time." Never had the machinery worked more smoothly; never had the "steam-roller" been more perfectly oiled. The Roosevelt men were even denied the right of presenting their case, and the few who were allowed the right of speaking to the questions before the body were limited to two minutes.

The travesty of the Fallon Convention made a profound impression upon the progressive wing of the party in Nevada. At last they realized what forces had for years been the power in the party, and they began to doubt that party names and party traditions were sacred things. The political scandals throughout the country deepened their feelings. They came to the verge of party revolt, and when the iniquitous larceny of a presidential nomination was perpetrated and a reactionary candidate on a stand-still platform was thrust upon the people, the storm broke. Everywhere in the State the liberal minded cast aside the Republican Party as they would a pair of old shoes that had outlived their usefulness. When the Big Bull Moose himself sounded the battle cry, there was an instantaneous response by Nevadans. Having some iron in their mold, they considered not that it might mean political oblivion for them.

When the call for the Progressive National Convention was issued,

a petition was circulated in every county appointing delegates to attend its meeting. However, the manager of the primary campaign, who was not on the list, objected and called a State Convention for the same purpose. This convention was held in the Odd Fellows Hall in Reno on July 20, 1912, and was presided over by L. W. Haworth of Austin. The convention was attended by about a hundred delegates and proxies, representing every county but one, and was easily controlled by those opposed to the former manager, who was deposed, and heatedly renounced affiliation with the party. A permanent organization was effected, H. B. Lind of Goldfield being made State Chairman and F. N. Fletcher of Reno, Secretary of the State Central Committee. P. L. Flanigan of Reno, for twelve years Republican National Committeeman, was agreed upon for member of the National Committee. P. L. Flanigan and S. Summerfield of Reno, and George Springmeyer of Carson, the candidates named on the State petition, were elected delegates to the National Progressive Convention at Chicago on August 1, 1912, and Peter Anker of Lovelock, Dr. M. A. Robinson of Reno, and J. B. Kaufman of Yerington were chosen alternates. The convention adopted a clear and unequivocal platform of party principles, a platform free from time-worn platitudes and entirely new in kind.

After the meeting of the National Convention, the work of organizing the new party in the State went rapidly on. The difficult task of forming County Committees and placing candidates in the field was substantially successful, for they were placed upon the ballot in all but two or three counties. The State Central Committee, aided by interested party workers, selected a full State ticket, nominated by a petition having almost five thousand signers. Thereupon arose an unexpected difficulty. The Secretary of State, a Democrat, declared his intention to certify the nominees as Independents instead of as Progressive Party nominees, which they were designated to be on the petition. Decades before, the older parties, and a few years before, the Socialist Party, had, by petition, been given party designations, and hence it was evident that the threatened action of the Secretary of State was intended to discriminate against and to discredit the new party. Mr. Summerfield and Mr. Springmeyer therefore quickly sued out a writ of prohibition in the Supreme Court,



Jerome L. Van Derwerker.

which at once decided the point in favor of the Progressive Party. The following were the Progressive candidates: For Presidential Electors, J. G. McCarthy of Ormsby, Charles M. Way of Churchill, and E. V. Hatch of Esmeralda; for United States Senator, Sardis Summerfield of Washoe; for Representative in Congress, George Springmeyer of Ormsby; for Justice of the Supreme Court, W. R. Thomas of Clark; for Regents of the State University, H. A. Comins of White Pine, Peter Anker of Humboldt, and L. W. Haworth of Lander. The party was without funds, and practically without newspaper support. Only two of its candidates made a campaign. But everywhere the herd fought savagely, albeit as courteously as the exigencies of a strenuous political war permitted. Had one or two of the men high in public life in the State, who privately espoused Mr. Roosevelt's cause, courageously and publicly announced their positions, the party might have carried the State. It is such men, always with their ears to the ground in order to gauge the public pulse, regardless of political justice, that the new party proposes to eliminate; the public grows weary of delicate men. Aided by a rousing open-air meeting in Reno, addressed by Col. Roosevelt, the Progressives managed to poll 5,700 votes for the head of the ticket and to come second to the Democratic Party, thus distancing the Republican Party almost two to one and badly defeating the long-established Socialist Party.

Among well-known Nevadans, in addition to those already named, who are active in the Progressive Party, the following may be mentioned: Senators Mack of Douglas, Jones of Elko, Stickney of Lyon, Chapin of White Pine, and Gault of Washoe. Assemblymen Liddell of Lander and Wilson of Lyon. Professor Romanzo Adams of the University of Nevada. Professor Hunting of the Carson High School. Judge Averill of Tonopah. Alfred Chartz of Carson. William Easton of Austin. H. H. Springmeyer of Minden, and a large number of county officials. We are undaunted by tirades and serve notice that we propose to firmly establish the Progressive Party, regardless of sacrifice.

"We stand at Armageddon and we battle for the Lord."

THE SOCIALIST PARTY.

The Socialist Party of Nevada was first recognized by the National organization by the issuance of a charter to the Nevada organization

bearing date of July 13, 1908. At that time there were only seven locals in the State and a very small membership.

The growth has been steady and at the time of the election in 1912 there were over 1,100 dues-paying members reported to the State office.

The value of the propaganda work carried on by the State Secretaries, Harris, Miller and Taylor, was proven in the campaign of that year by the election of M. J. Scanlon to the Senate, I. F. Davis to the Assembly and various county and township officers to a total, including school officials, of 29. And an average vote of over 2,600.

CHAPTER XXI.

JOURNALISM.

BY WELLS DRURY.

The early history of Nevada journalism sparkles with brilliant names.

There were giants in those days who were intellectually the peers of the best in the profession anywhere in the United States. Their writings were quoted north, south, east and west. In editorial utterance they were outspoken, vigorous, free, sometimes fierce, almost savage, using that word in its classical significance. With a boundless prodigality they scattered gems of thought and shafts of wit through their columns, lending life and color to the current history of their sagebrush plains and mine-bearing crags and canyons.

To call the roll would be to summon memories of the best writers the Pacific Coast has produced.

Let those who have gone beyond the border be honored first. Their names are household words now in places beyond the confines of the State that first gave inspiration to their pens.

Mark Twain, Dan De Quill, Harry Mighels, Rollen M. Daggett, Denis McCarthy, Arthur McEwen and W. J. Forbs head the shining list.

Where in the world would you find their peers today? For in a case like this the barbarians do not count.

The history of journalism in Nevada begins with the *Territorial Enterprise*. It was started in Genoa in 1858 and "died with its boots on" in Virginia City, January, 1893.

The fact that such a notable paper as the *Enterprise* ceased its publication caused widespread comment throughout the country. The leading journals of the United States published sympathetic and stirring obituaries. Its loss was felt everywhere.

The *San Francisco Examiner* at once wired to different writers who had flourished with the Comstock in the old days and asked them to write

their impressions of the paper as they remembered it in the days of its robust manhood.

The impressions of these writers occupied a full page in the *Examiner* of Sunday, January 22, 1893.

Mark Twain, humorist, philosopher, prophet, sage, genuinely human in every fibre, a keen observer and faithful chronicler of much that was picturesque in our western life, that else had gone unrecorded. If ever a writer lived who truthfully can be said to have "added to the gaiety of nations," Mark Twain is the man. It is not necessary to refer to the monumental hoax which first brought him to the attention of an astounded, an exasperated public. Everybody knows the story of the faked-up "Masacre in the Giant Forest Surrounding Dutch Nick's, on the "Carson River," for the yarn has been translated into nearly all the languages of the world, and all have been assured time and again that as a matter of fact no forest existed within miles of the place, the barren landscape having scarcely enough scrubby sagebrush to serve as a refuge for a jackrabbit. Nor is it requisite to recount the origin of "The Jumping Frog of Calaveras," which subsequently was transformed into Greek, and for a time masqueraded as a reminiscence from the days of Homer. The simple truth is that Twain got his little trifle from Jim Gillis (a brother of Steve Gillis), formerly of Jackass Hill, Toulumne County, California, and gave it immortality among the seven best stories of the world. Mark had but scant faith in these productions, not considering them his best work, but if all his other writings were forgotten these would still keep him in mind. Furthermore, it is almost unpardonable to insert a note telling that Mark's real name was Samuel Langhorne Clemens. Nobody cares for that, any more than they do for the gratuitous information that Dan De Quille's name actually was William Wright. What difference does it make what they were christened? Mark Twain and Dan De Quille they were called when among the people they loved, and so they will remain.

Dan De Quille, dear, gentle soul; the happy possessor of a fine spirit that rejoiced in every noble thought, must have gone to the reward that awaits the pure in heart. Joseph T. Goodman, for whom both Mark and Dan worked, recently said to this writer:

"Isn't it so singular that Mark Twain should live and Dan De Quille fade out? If anyone had asked me in 1863 which was to be an immortal name, I should unhesitatingly have said Dan De Quille. They had about

equal talent and sense of humor, but the difference was the way in which they used their gifts. One shrank from the world; the other braved it, and it recognized his audacity. To show how shrinking old Dan was, when I first brought him out of the brush in 1861—as I brought Mark Twain just a year afterwards—he couldn't write in our one-room helter-skelter, press, composition and editorial quarters, so I had to hire a cabin for him just back of the office, which he had all to himself, and did his work there for some months. But he got bravely over that, and in the end could write undisturbed in any confusion."

Dan knew his own ability as well as anybody, and realized that he had allowed Mark to outstrip him, but he was never envious. He always rejoiced in his old companion's good fortune. Dan De Quille wrote so many good things that it would be wearisome even to give the list. Here is a touch of his humor in reciting one of the experiences of the "local" or city editor. It is entitled, "What Fun a 'Local' has—A Specimen of the 'Fun'":

How often it happens that some one—generally Mr. Jenkins—comes to the hungry, itemless "local" with "Oh, such a rich joke!" on his friend Slasher, a man with whom you (the local) have not the slightest acquaintance. Jenkins is very anxious—persistently so—to have you get off his great joke on Slasher. He assures you over and over that he and Slasher are the greatest friends alive, and that he wouldn't for the world say or do a thing to hurt Slasher's feelings—why, Slasher regularly dotes on him, and he does the same by Slasher.

The item will tickle Slasher when he sees it—he is such a jolly dog, this Slasher; so good-natured and fond of a joke. Jenkins is sorry you don't know Slasher; he is sure you would like him, and he will introduce you to Slasher the first opportunity.

Finally Jenkins tells you the immense joke on Slasher and laughs—oh, how he laughs. He knows Slasher, and can see him in his mind's eye, and all the circumstances attendant upon the joke are vividly impressed upon his mind. It is a rich thing as he sees it, but to you it has no point, and your make-believe laugh is a sorry effort.

You are at last coaxed into making a promise to publish the joke, as you are assured that the jolly dog, Slasher, has some inkling of the matter and will rather expect to see himself in print. You make a note of the outlines of the joke, and for the remainder of the day are quite miserable every time you see the same. You don't see how you are to make anything readable out of the flimsy skeleton furnished you. You find in reality the man Jenkins has thrown upon your shoulders nearly the whole responsibility of getting up the joke.

However, the man so much doted upon by Slasher has given you liberty to color the thing up; in fact, said to you several times: "Color it up! color it up! D——n it, you know how to do these things!" You write up the joke and do "color it up" with a vengeance. Finally, you make a passable thing of it.

Next morning you seat yourself in the sanctum and look over the paper. You come to the joke, and as you read it in the big, clear type, it seems to loom up, and looks a great deal bolder than it did in manuscript. You begin to think you may have added a trifle too much color, yet the thing is rather funny and you laugh—

laugh just a little, for at the moment there comes a rap at the door—a regular shower of thundering raps.

You are somewhat startled, but by an effort recover your equanimity, and in a cheerful tone say: "Come in."

The door opens and in comes a huge, broad-shouldered, black-whiskered, six-footer, striding in tremendous boots that have soles two inches thick and tops that reach above his knees. He wears a very slouchy slouched hat, and has awful arms and hands. The giant eyes you over.

"My name," he cries, in thunder tones, "is Slasher!"

He might have saved himself the trouble of speaking. You knew the moment you heard the knock at the door that Slasher was coming, and the moment the boots and whiskers marched towards you that Slasher had come—Slasher in all the awfulness and grandeur of his wrath.

"My name is Slasher, and I want to know what in the name of — this means? This, sir—this!" pointing with his big hairy forefinger to that "great joke."

You cough and try to make out you don't see just what he is pointing out.

"Did you write this?" still pointing at the great joke on him given you by his bosom friend Jenkins.

You finally say you did publish the thing—it is only a thing now—at the earnest solicitation of his most intimate and particular friend, Joshua P. Jenkins, Esq.

"Him! Jenkins? That d—d ass! That squirt! That sneaking impertinent, bladder-headed puppy! Jenkins? Why, the sneaking, low-lived pimple! I'll mash him the first time I meet him; I'll spread his nose all over his face. As for you, sir, you ought to have had better sense. By thunder, I ought to pull your nose! I've half a mind to pull it anyhow!" but, after eyeing you a moment, he gives a snort, turns on his heel, and departs.

Thus you make the acquaintance of that jolly dog Slasher, and all without the cold formality of the introduction promised you by his bosom friend, Jenkins.

Joined with his power for compelling laughter, Dan had ability to endow the most carelessly written paragraph with a touch of pathos that was irresistible.

Brave as a lion, unpretentious, modest to the point of bashfulness, he never reaped the full fruition of hopes that he secretly cherished. His intrepid soul was disclosed when after Farmer Peel had accomplished one of his killings, and the *Virginia City Enterprise* contained an accurate account of the affray, Dan braved the anger of the man-slayer. Hearing that Peel was threatening vengeance, Dan sought the gunfighter and found him in his favorite saloon. "I hear you are looking for me," said Dan. Peel saw at a glance that the tall, slender reporter was not afraid of him, and replied that he was nettled at the plain words of the account of the shooting, but that after reading over a second time he found that in the main it was true and so he had decided that there was no grounds for complaint. Whatever were his failings, and notwithstanding the general belief that bullies are cowards, Peel was really a brave man, and in Dan De Quille he recognized an equal in the only realm of which he had any conception. That episode established Dan's reputation for intre-

pidity, and won the respect not only of Farmer Peel, but of all his ilk. They knew that if Dan wrote the account of their affrays they would get even-handed justice, so far as he was able to portray it in clear cut Anglo-Saxon. At another time Dan took a knife from a "bad man" who objected to having his exploits mentioned in the public press. If Dan had killed the brute he would not have been arrested. It was not absolutely necessary for an editor to fight as well as write, but at least he must show a willingness to defend himself in a manly way and stand on his rights, no matter what the result, or else his usefulness in journalism would be impaired to the verge of nothingness. In other words, he might as well walk the grade, first as last, since his days were likely to be few and full of trouble.

Journalism in Nevada was uneven—that is, sometimes there were big stories of killings, with the succeeding inquests and trials, and then there might be a lull which to a reporter who was not resourceful would be fatal. Here was where Dan could shine. His invention was inexhaustible. Out of the merest trifles he produces columns of solid type. From filmy threads of unreality he evolved postulates and spun theories that startled scientists and set the Barnum's of the country by the ears. Who of the old-timers will forget his pseudo-erudite account of "The Traveling Stones of Pahrnagat Valley"? With feigned scientific minuteness he showed how these traveling stones were by some mysterious power drawn together and then scattered wide apart, only to be returned in moving, quivering masses to what appeared to be the magnetic center of the valley. Upon these pretended observations he predicated a new doctrine concerning electrical propulsion and repulsion. Dan called this kind of a production a "quaint," and when this "quaint" reached Germany it caused a furore among a select set of men who were dabbling in the study of electromagnetic currents. Their secretary wrote to Dan demanding further details. In vain he disclaimed the truth of his skit. His denial was treated as an unprofessional attempt to keep his brother scientists in ignorance of the truth concerning natural laws, the effects of which they were convinced had been first observed and recorded by "Herr Dan De Quille, the eminent physicist of Virginiastadt, Nevada."

The greatest circus-man of America sent an offer of \$10,000 if Dan could make these magnetized stones perform under a canvas tent in the way described in his article.

A leading engineering journal took up and indorsed as entirely feasible

Dan's proposition to have the next thing to perpetual motion in pumping machinery by causing a windmill to hoist loose sand during the hours when the wind blew, in addition to the usual load of water, and to arrange for having this sand operate turbine wheels and thus keep on pumping after the wind had died away. Dan's description of such an apparatus, which he said was invented by Colonel James W. E. Townsend, of Mono Lake, was so convincing that an engineer in Boston actually figured out the exact horsepower to be produced by the machinery in question.

Another clever "quaint" of Dan's was the account of the man who invented a helmet to wear when crossing the hot valleys of Nevada. It was fitted up with an ammonia tank inside and the evaporation of the ammonia furnished the cold air to neutralize the effects of the heat. The man started out and, not being heard of for several days, a relief expedition was sent after him. They found him sitting on a boulder in the desert all covered with icicles and frozen stiff in July. Dan explained that he had loaded up the apparatus with too much ammonia with the most unhappy results.

When the newspapers of the coast took Dan to task for his trifling, Dan only laughed and resolved never to do it again, but the next time that items were scarce he was tempted and fell from grace.

These diversions, of course, were only occasional and desultory. In his regular work Dan was a model of method and accuracy. This made his hoaxes all the more dangerous. His established reputation for dependability caused all his readers who were unacquainted with this playful proclivity to accept as absolute verity every word that he wrote.

The exciting times of the Big Bonanza and its season of riotous prosperity is described by Dan De Quille in his book of that name. The manuscript for this volume was produced while Dan was on a visit to Mark Twain in his eastern home. It is a pleasure of the present recorder to here set down the substance of a conversation with Dan wherein he expressed the warmest gratitude to Mark for his kindness and generosity during the time of tribulation which every author will recognize as the period when he was in the hands of the publishers and proof-readers. This ought to settle for all time the cruel whispers that there was estrangement between these old time companions. As a matter of fact, the strongest attachment existed between them and this was undisturbed to the day of Dan's death.

This is as good a place as any to tell a little story about Dan's last days. He was growing old, the *Enterprise* had suspended, and he had nothing to do. He offered to the editor of a San Francisco paper a sheaf of manuscript stories, and they were accepted at current rates, but Dan was not physically able to produce enough of these to support him, and he confided to the editor the fact that he longed for nothing so much as to get back to his folks in Iowa. But he was too proud to confess his poverty to anyone on whom he had a natural claim, preferring rather to depend on the assistance of persons to whom he could give quid pro quo to the full extent of his wasted strength.

These facts were conveyed to the late John W. Mackay, who at once telegraphed from New York for Dick Dey to go to Virginia City, find Dan De Quille, pay all his debts, fit him out with two suits of the best clothing the town would afford, buy him a railroad ticket to any place to which he desired to go, employ a companion to take care of him on the trip to his home, and establish a credit at the Bank of Nevada so that Dan would receive \$60 a week as long as he lived. That was the deed of a white man, and when John Mackay comes to the final account that deed will shine beside him like an angel.

Arthur McEwen.—Justice—plain, every-day, unalloyed justice—was the keynote of Arthur McEwen's life. He was so impatient of practices growing out of unjust impositions and unfair discriminations that his writings raised up a host of powerful enemies. He was honored by their hatred. He earned their dislike by denouncing their evil methods. Those who were most intimately associated with Arthur McEwen know that in all his dealings with public men and public affairs he submitted every proposition to the touchstone of truth. If misinformed or misled in any way he had the courage to acknowledge the error and make amends. It takes a strong, manly man to do that. No man will do it unless he is both frank and just. Aside from this estimate of his character, it may be truthfully pointed out that McEwen's ability received the widest and most positive recognition in the greater world of newspaper work, not only on the Pacific Coast, but throughout the country. In journals of national importance he more than held his own in contests with the strongest publicists. His impetuous onslaughts were tempered and weighted with the power of unanswerable logic. He buttressed his arguments with historical citations that could not be disputed. His infer-

ences were keen and searching, his conclusions irrefutable. In truth he wielded a broadsword and sent many a discomfited opponent reeling from the arena of debate. As a humorist his utterances were likely to take the form of satire, but he had a light touch of the pen and a wit that barbed his words with fire.

Harry Mighels.—The fine play of Harry Mighels's wit was the delight of old-time readers of the *Carson Appeal*. If McEwen's weapon was the "claymore," then it would be appropriate to assign the rapier to Mighels'. His "blade was both sword and shield," and woe betide the luckless wight who recklessly risked a taste of its shrewd metal. But he was not vindictive. After running a poor fellow through (speaking journalistically), he disdained to dance on the corpse, as some of his contemporaries would do, but allowed the rites of decent burial to the fragments of even his most implacable foe. There was another phase of his personality disclosed in his intermittent column of gossip, which he labeled "Notes and Queries," part of which material was reprinted in book form as "Sagebrush Leaves."

His editorials were winged words and he had a profound grasp of political affairs. His philosophical ruminations were original, spontaneous, brand new and with the unmistakable stamp of genius upon them and minted from the brain of a scholar and a gentleman.

One would look over his little one-horse country paper with wonder and surprise to find such a cultivated writer presiding over it. It was like "finding money in ashes," to use one of his own expressions.

His extraordinary work, however, made him known and quoted all over the Union and he probably commanded the highest salary ever paid a Pacific Coast writer.

In one of the big campaigns in California the party realized that they needed some extra editorial work done in San Francisco and wired Mighels to come down and edit a Republican newspaper and asked him to name his terms. He wired his figures, "\$500 a week," thinking that they would drop the matter but the reply came, "Come at once."

He spent a couple of months running a red-hot campaign paper such as San Francisco has never since enjoyed and some of the people he put on the pillory were rather glad when he returned to the quiet pursuits of running his little Carson newspaper. He was a quick and ready debater, and his political speeches always attracted large audiences.

He was an ardent Republican in politics and presided over the House as Speaker during the eighth session of the Legislature.

Rollin M. Daggett dearly loved a fight. The roar of battle was music to his ears. The smell of burning powder was incense to his nostrils. "The thunder of the captains and the shouting" delighted his intrepid soul. He was ever eager for the fray, and never lowered his lance in the presence of the enemy. Yet, in moments of peace, he was as gentle as a dove. So strangely were the qualities mixed in him that while his foes dreaded him for his incisive, vitriolic excoriations, his friends loved him for his warm heart and his charming manners. When unchallenged by adverse criticism, or if not roused by opposition to some cherished belief or pet theory, he was the embodiment of elegant courtesy. But when stirred he was dangerous to any who had the temerity to confront him. By one abler than the present writer, Daggett has been called the "Mirabeau of the press." A new character in literature permits the suggestion that he was more: He was the *Cyrano de Bergerac* of Nevada journalism.

Joined with Daggett's other qualities was the true poetic sense to which, on occasion, he gave utterance. His Memorial Day poem, beginning—

"With leaf and blossom Spring has come again,"

compares favorably with any blank verse that the half-century has provided, and in imagery and musical cadence is in no way inferior to that other splendid Memorial Day tribute by Judge Timothy H. Rearden, "The sea! the sea!" Both are filled with the spirit of the theme and deserve to be bound together, showing that in the sentiment of patriotism and brotherly feeling the western writers are the equals of their eastern contemporaries.

Denis E. McCarthy was without a peer as an all-round newspaper man. This standing he brought with him to Nevada. He was more editor than writer. His sense of news-value was unerring. His decisions were instantaneous, yet in sizing up the relative importance of current events, or different phases of the prevailing sensation, he was able to put his finger on the point of paramount interest, and he had the mechanical skill of a finished printer, which enabled him to play it up for all it was worth. With the deftness of a trained deskman he would strip a prolix dissertation of redundant verbiage, and with swift, strong strokes,

putting in a word here and there and cutting out whole paragraphs from a correspondent's long-winded letter, he would quickly produce an article of symmetry and condensed logical sequence, worthy of a place in the columns of Dana's *New York Sun*. Any thing that he ever read was stamped upon his brain for all time. His mind was like a photographer's plate and retained every impression. He was one of those rare men who seemed never to have found the time to be educated and yet knew everything. Brave as a lion, he was always ready to back up any assertion with his intrepid personality and his *Virginia Chronicle* was for years one of the leading newspapers of the coast.

W. J. Forbes.—Who shall speak the fitting words in memory of W. J. Forbes. His own worst enemy, that lamentable fact is invariably brought out by his biographers. Doubtless it serves a useful purpose, and the custom need not be departed from even here among these words of appreciation. But he was bright with the undeniable brightness of unquenchable genius. How else could he have borne himself so well and so long under the self-imposed burden of self-indulgence? Pioneers still laugh about his quips and fancies. Writing under the pen-name of "Semblens," he discoursed on every subject known to man, and his shafts so often hit the mark that he became popular with all classes of readers.

Forbes simply could not keep out of a printing office. Journalism was his natural element. Quick at repartee, trained in the use of a rich and variegated vocabulary that contained every known expression of disapprobation, his bitter words often left scars that were slow to heal. After flaying a man and hanging his hide on the fence he would say, "Thus far we have been mild," and would give his victim another basting. Some marks of hatred followed him beyond the bourne, and commenting on this exhibition of malice, a friendly hand penned these words: "The enemies of Forbes seem to take comfort from the report that he was suffering from softening of the brain. There was nothing in his latest work to indicate such a condition. Be that as it may, he was a noble soul, misguided in some respects, mayhap, but he was faulted mostly by persons whom fate had munificently forefended against any such fate as they ascribe to him."

Forbes declared that he would rather be the possessor of a handful of battered type and a rattletrap press, with a power to say his mind as he pleased, than to be the owner of any other business establishment,

no matter what the financial returns, and he proved it by deserting a prosperous business to return to an editorial position, from the emoluments of which he was only able to eke out a bare existence.

It was in White Pine County that he found his newspaper would not pay and remarked editorially that "of twenty men, nineteen patronized the saloon and one the newspaper, and he was going with the crowd."

He started his saloon and it was probably the only paying business he ever engaged in, but in the midst of his prosperity he sold out and, drifting back to journalism, soon sunk all the profits he had made in the liquor business.

His witty sallies became quoted all over the United States, and probably the most quoted of all and one that has been credited to many different sources, was his thrust at Governor Nye, who secured the appropriation of \$75,000 for the building of a dam and sawmill to manufacture lumber for the Piute Indians, all of which was expended with no tangible results. Forbes said that Governor Nye had "a dam by a mill site, but no mill by a d—— site."

Prior to his advent into Nevada he had been connected with the *Coloma Argus*, *Marysville Herald*, *Sierra Democrat* and *Downville*.

He was first connected with the *Humboldt Register* and then purchased the *Daily Union* at Virginia City and changed its name to *The Trespass*, on the ground that he felt that he was trespassing on a field already occupied.

In 1873 he started the *New Endowment* in Salt Lake and threw down the gauntlet to the Mormons. Later on he realized that there was no profit at that time in publishing a Gentile paper in a Mormon community and closed his valedictory with these words:

"We cease publication because we did not bring money enough with us."

Returning to Nevada he started *Measure for Measure* at Battle Mountain. It was a wonderful paper, but did not pay, and a friend found him on the morning of October 30, 1875, lying stiff and cold across his shabby bed. He had fought a fight against odds all his life, was one of the brightest geniuses the coast had ever seen, but he lacked the faculty of making and saving money and lived in communities where his mental brightness was more envied than appreciated.

Ten years before, with a prophetic pen, he wrote:

"Death cannot be a matter of much moment to an editor—no thirty days' notice required by law—it is the local incident of a moment, a few days as advertised on the fourth page, a few calls by subscribers not in arrears. A short, quick breath—*then the subscription paper for burial expenses.*"

Forbes's final resting place is Coloma, El Dorado County, California, where he lies buried alongside his wife.

Alf Doten was just placing the neck of the ginger-ale bottle across his thumb, as was his custom when called on to do his own pouring, when all at once his attention was attracted by a sign behind Charley Price's bar. The sign read: "At midnight all drinks in this saloon reduced to ten cents."

It was a terrible blow to the pride of Gold Hill, for up to that time the camp was able to boast the possession of one two-bit saloon.

"Thus passeth the glory of the world," exclaimed Doten, forgetting to imbibe the tempting fluid which mantled the goblet.

"It doesn't seem to me that I can endure this humiliation," said Alf, addressing a faithful companion who was always willing to stand by in such trying times.

The clock showed the time to be 11:55. In a few minutes the brag of Gold Hill that it was able to support at least one first-class drinking place would be wiped out.

"I want to have the honor of buying the last two-bit drink in the old town," said Alf. He was asking a favor, but in this instance his companion was obdurate. "Let's shake dice to see who shall have the privilege," was the best he would grant.

So they rattled the bones and Alf won, greatly to his delight.

The clock made that premonitory w-h-r-r-ing sound to indicate that the hour was about to be struck.

"Here's to the departure of Gold Hill's glory and pride," was the toast they proposed, and they drank in silence.

"Not much use trying to run a nonpareil paper in a long-primer town any longer," said Doten. "I was willing to stick it out as long as there was a living chance, but now that there is nothing but ten-cent shebangs, the old *News* might as well suspend."

And it did.

Alf Doten bore an honorable part in Nevada journalism. He was

honest, industrious, painstaking, and in matters of news, was generous to a fault. He had a high appreciation of ability and never allowed the other papers to pay more for good work than he did. While he sought to produce a neat and workmanlike sheet, and succeeded admirably, he always recognized the primacy of news in the making of a paper, and did what few proprietors would do these days—that is, cut out column after column of advertisements to make room for good live news. Doten was a Pioneer of Pioneers, and when confidential during some friendly evening of talk, would draw from an inner sanctum of the office an old tin cup, battered and worn, together with a tin plate and knife and fork that had seen much use. The knife and fork were of the primitive three-pronged kind, with wooden handles. But these handles were silver-mounted. Around the upper edge of the old tin cup there was also a band of sterling silver, and the venerable plate had been enriched in the same manner. Probably Rollin M. Daggett had Doten in mind when he wrote that touching poem entitled "My New Year's Guests." It is possible that Daggett had a counterpart of Doten's '49 relics, but if he had he never displayed them. He may have been as devoted to pioneer sentiments as was Doten, but he did not openly show it.

Joseph T. Goodman for years was a commanding figure in Nevada journalism. He did more to form the high spirit of the press in that region than any other man of the profession. As a writer he is clear, concise, convincing and forceful to the final degree. His temperament led him to the classical form, however, and controversies were never entered upon by him unless enforced by unavoidable conditions. Once in he bore himself so that the contender might well beware of another such contest. Goodman's letters, written from Europe during a tour of the old country, are examples of clear-cut English that deserve to rank with the masterpieces of the language. He has written poems, like so many of the old school of journalists, and in his case many of the productions are real contributions to the literature of the country. He lives quietly at his home in Alameda, California, and remembers with affection the days of old on the Comstock lode.

One can best voice the sentiment of tender affection with which all the old Comstock crowd regarded Virginia City by reproducing Joe Goodman's poem. It strikes the true chords as no other hand could evoke them from the lyre of memory:

THE HISTORY OF NEVADA

VIRGINIA CITY.

In youth when I did love, did love
 (To quote the sexton's homely ditty),
 I lived six thousand feet above
 Sea-level, in Virginia City;
 The site was bleak, the houses small,
 The narrow streets unpaved and slanting,
 But now it seems to me of all
 The spots on earth the most enchanting.

Let Art with all its cunning strive,
 Let Nature lavish all her splendor,
 One touch of sentiment will give
 A charm more beautiful and tender;
 And so that town, how'er uncouth
 To others who have chanced to go there,
 Enshrines the ashes of my youth,
 And there is Fairyland, or nowhere.

Who tend its marts, who tread its ways,
 Are mysteries beyond my guessing;
 To me the forms of other days
 Are still about its centers pressing:
 I know that loving lips are cold,
 And true hearts stilled—ah, more the pity!
 But in my fancy they yet hold
 Their empire in Virginia City.

Unhallowed flames have swept away
 The structures in which I delighted,
 The streets are grass-grown, and decay
 Has left the sunny slopes benighted—
 But not for me; to my dimmed sight
 The town is always like the olden,
 As to the captive Israelite
 Shone aye Jerusalem the Golden.

I would not wish to see it now,
 I choose to know it as I then did,
 With glorious light upon its brow
 And all its features bright and splendid;
 Nor would I like that it should see
 Me, gray and stooped, a mark for pity
 And learn that time had dealt with me
 As hard as with Virginia City.

Charles C. Goodwin, journalist, jurist, poet, author, sage.—all these are due to the man whose pen is dipped in sunshine and whose heart contains the quality which turns all experiences to good. That he has been imposed on by thousands of battered wrecks of humanity speaks no worse for him than that his generous nature sometimes yields to the temptation to help the undeserving poor. Perhaps he shares the opinion of Arthur

McEwen, who was wont to say that of all the people in the world the undeserving poor most need our assistance, as the deserving poor are sure to find somebody who knows them who will succor them in good time.

Charley Goodwin (that was always his name among his friends, and Charley Goodwin he will ever remain to them) has written some of the most eloquent passages that ever appeared in the Nevada press. His admiration for the pioneers of the country is sincere, for he mixed with these sterling founders of this Commonwealth and knew the worth of the men who carried through the gigantic tasks they were called on to master. It is appropriate that his "Ode to the Pioneers," which was set to music by the late Lieutenant-Governor Charles E. Laughton, and was sung at the banquet given in honor of the pioneers at Carson on the evening of March 1, 1887, should appear here.

Sing to the Pioneers tonight!
 Sing to the little band
 Who, when with youth each eye was bright
 And strong each good right hand,
 Commenced with songs their mighty toil
 While challenging their fates,
 To lay secure in virgin soil
 The cornerstones of States.

In every vale, on every hill,
 Are graves of Pioneers;
 They mark where rugged hearts grew still,
 And where, as swept the years,
 Worn out at length by toil and care
 By hardship too much tried,
 They gave the mighty struggle o'er,
 Folded their arms and died.
 There's but a little remnant left—
 Of thousands, but a few;
 And every year some hearts are cleft,
 Some disappear from view.
 The hands that from above are reached
 To beckon them away,
 Exceed the hands that are outstretched
 On earth to make them stay.

Then sing we to the dear "Old Boys,"
 Soft may their life-streams run;
 Soothed be their age with sacred joys,
 And when their work is done,
 May they with youth renewed awake
 Upon a flower-crowned shore,
 Where royal hearts shall never break,
 And peace reign evermore.

L'ENVOI.

Sing to the Old Boys—sing to them tonight,
They who on the rude frontier made their gallant fight,
They who in the wilds raised thrones to law and right,
Sing to the Old Boys—sing to them tonight.

I do not think my statement will be challenged when I say that Charley Goodwin has written more editorial matter in his lifetime than any editor in the United States. For more than half a century his has been a steady output of editorial matter. When in harness he seemed to have no idea of anything but work. He wanted no "days off," cared for no vacations, but kept up the same steady, unfaltering pace. He was a tireless machine. His friends wondered when the pace would falter, when the thoroughbred horse would swerve from his course, but at present writing, with Charley Goodwin past eighty, and his fine head silvered with years, he is still keeping up the same steady stride with his brain as clear as a bell and his splendid work showing no signs of deterioration. To me he seems the marvel of his age and time.

The following from Goodwin's pen illustrates the tender sentiment that flows through all his writings:

The Old Column.—At times, as I recall some old name and the characteristics of the man assume distinctive forms before me, it is a joy to make a hasty record of them.

But today they come in companies, come with the old elastic steps, the old joyous faces, until the air around me is filled with echoes of their voices, and the oldtime laughter, and the air is warmer because of their smiles. For the smiles were lighted from the fires of youth which fires have perfect combustion, leaving no dross upon the earth, making no taint upon the air.

Somehow they seemed to be borne up with a belief that while it was true that other generations of men have lived out their span and gone into the silence, it was going to be different with them; that they had found the long-looked-for Ponce de Leon spring, the waters of which were to restore the waste of nature, the attritions of old age, the assaults of disease; that each night was to bring them undisturbed rest, and that each succeeding morning would find them perfectly restored to hail the day as joyously as the lark and with no more apprehensions of evil.

At least they lived that way. There was no work that could abash them; no risk they were not ready to assume; no danger that appeared in their path that could daunt them or turn them aside, and when a call came upon their charities, the thought was, "Why should we not respond generously, for have we not unabated strength to create more?"

When some one, overborne, fell out of the ranks and grew still, that mattered not. The explanation was that he always had been delicate, or that he never had taken any care of himself, or if all the usual explanations failed, it was said that "he was out of luck," and then some primitive philosopher of the company would deliver an address and prove to a demonstration that luck was a force which could no more be fought back than measles or whooping-cough.

And some near friend would explain that the ancient belief that the Fates watched which thread of life to sever with their scissors was true, and what they did when a man became so much better than his fellows that their reckless ways gave him pain, was to mercifully bring peace to him, and so the death of such a man was not an event to weep over, but rather to chant a farewell joy strophe above to be to him a lullaby for the long sleep.

When from the outside world learned and accomplished gentlemen came among the band, and meaning to be genial and pleasing to guests talked down to them, it always seemed to me a pity that no voice from the subconscious intellects of those guests could not whisper to them to go slow; that they did not know their audiences; for who among the learned in books and those who have worn soft raiment all their days can comprehend what it is for thoughtful men to take their post-graduate courses in that great university, the faculty of which is made up of ocean waves that break at the mountains' feet; the winds that, coming up from the sea, make all the mighty pines on the mountain tops the harps on which to set their anthems to music; the desert with its cold and heat, and when it sleeps under its pall of silence—that dreadful silence which is so profound and all-encompassing, as though all nature had died—that the nerves of dumb animals break down under it, and they are stampeded. When to those hunger, and cold, and thirst, and hardships are added as assistants; when these earnest, generous natures feel the pangs as one hope after another dies in their souls, can the mere book scholar give such men any instruction to much interest them?

When a great calm for a long time spreads its winding sheet about a portion of the earth, when the sun beats down until the world and the air become fetid; then suddenly the elements arouse themselves and call up a cyclone or a hurricane to clear the air, which in its track leaves a trail covered with the wreck of forests and homes and sometimes dead men and animals. But the air is purified. Men who live close to nature take on some of its moods.

What wonder, then, if sometimes sections of this old band would suddenly arouse themselves and paint things crimson, give up to excesses and perpetrate episodes not to be approved of by any Sunday school society in the world?

It was a way they had to clear the atmosphere.

But let no one wonder if some of the native sons of California and Nevada are a little spoiled. It was the old band that did it.

And do not blame the old band. They felt one hope after another die in their souls, and bore it without complaint. They knew that their youth was about to fall off the trail, and if the knowledge brought any sorrow to them they hid it in their own hearts, but every morning as they rose from their rude couches they felt the little fingers that were not to be tugging at their garments, and what wonders that when they came upon children they spoiled them?

What deeds of valor they performed! What noiseless charities they bestowed! What self abnegation attended their lives! What splendid industrial triumphs they wrought when they were obliged to adjust ends to means, and from the impossible to wring victory!

There was no place in their ranks for braggarts or pretenders; they had to be shown, with a swift intuition they separated gold from dross and the seal of their approval was equivalent to a certified check.

They were not all angels, but in their hospitality they assumed every time that they were entertaining angels, and had a real angel come he, at least, would have known that he was getting the best that his host could provide.

For me that procession began its march threescore years ago.

I watched it changing year by year, watched it as one and another fell from the ranks, watched it until the radiant column shrunk to a straggling band, and for a long time now have only at long intervals heard a footfall.

But today, looking down the long aisles of memory, the mists are all cleared

away from above the trail, and that procession is again in view—the splendor of the beginning, the flags, the trumpets, the joyous songs; the springy, exultant steps, their path bathed in sunlight and ablaze with hope; the march through the hot noonday, no wearying, no rest; then the long afternoon march and the bivouac, under the stars—all the music grown still and the night wind sweeping up from the depths of the desert becoming a requiem.

But through the silence there come whispers of a land beyond the sundown; another land of golden mountains, clear streams, fair fields and sunlit fields, filled with the love songs of bright-plumaged birds! where the dawns, the sunsets and the light of the stars are all merged in the greater splendor of the eternal day!

Jim Townsend.—This unique specimen was by all odds the most original writer and versatile liar that this coast, or any other coast, ever produced. He began his journalistic career in Mono County with the *Mono Index* and wound it up in Carson City, where so many newspapers lie buried. He kept the coast laughing for years with quaint sayings that he set up as from the case they came into his mind. They never saw manuscript. He simply set the type when he felt like expressing an idea and worried himself almost to death because he could not set the type as fast as he could think.

To read his paper you would think it was published in a city of ten thousand inhabitants. He had a Mayor and City Council, whose proceedings he reported once a week, although they never existed, and enlivened his columns with killings, law suits, murder trials and railroad accidents and a thousand and one incidents of daily life in a humming growing town, every last one of which he coined out of his own active brain.

One of the most exciting things with which he kept churning up his readers was a shooting scrape and scandal and divorce proceedings arising from a scandal in which the Mayor's wife and a member of the city council figured. It dragged along through his columns for nearly six months. It was very interesting to read and implicitly believed—except by persons who knew that there was no mayor and no council at that time in the town where Jim's paper was published.

He was called "Lying Jim Townsend" to the day of his death and could he have had his way it would have been graven on his tombstone.

Sam Davis.—The writer of this chronicle is conscious that he must be most circumspect and modest in his language while treating the subject here indicated. In the first place he is the editor of this book, and would take the liberty of cutting out anything that was unduly complimentary. Then, again, if attempt were made to reproduce faithfully some of the

high lights of his early Comstock life the power of excision might also be exercised.

Not many of Davis' acquaintances know that he, like Tom Fitch, is a better speaker than writer, but such is the case. This was particularly emphasized at the time of the banquet in honor of the pioneers, of which mention has been made. Although the most eloquent men of the State were present and taking part in the event, his speech was by all acknowledged to be the hit of the evening.

On the occasion of the introduction of electric power on the Comstock, the committee in charge of the banquet took pains to send for one of the most eloquent speakers in San Francisco to do the word-painting. Davis was not down on the list of speakers, but was called on for a talk and when he had finished his poetic and eloquent tribute to "the universal agent" the audience realized that Sam had delivered the only speech worth reproducing in print, and which since has been republished as a masterpiece of word-painting in nearly every portion of the Union. The San Francisco orator was the first man to reach Sam with outstretched hand of congratulation.

Davis married the widow of Harry Mighels and for years conducted the *Appeal*. During his editorship the paper was copied all over the Union. It became a powerful factor in politics and was the first paper in the State to call for a silver party.

Davis was elected State Controller for two terms, but was beaten in the last election by a Republican. During his term of office he did something that will cause the insurance world to remember him for the next half century. He threw the New York Life Insurance Company out of Nevada because its president, John McCall, contributed a quarter of a million of stockholders' money to the Republican campaign fund. He wired a demand for McCall's resignation and a restoration of the money before the company could do business in Nevada.

The company treated it as a joke, but finally asked that Davis come to New York and give the company a certificate of solvency, as his order had impaired their credit in Europe. The Governor ordered Davis east and when he called at the office he was taken out to lunch for a starter before they got down to business. The palace where Davis lunched was full of splendor and luxury and he was handed a carte blanche to eat there with his friends while he stayed in New York.

He declined the proffered hospitality and stated that his mission in New York was not to inspect the cafes of the insurance companies but to look into the management of the business department. He stuck to his original proposition that McCall must resign, pay back the quarter of a million of stockholders' money donated to the McKinley campaign fund and adopt a resolution by the board of directors forever taking the big insurance company out of politics. Before the first of January every demand made by the Insurance Commission of Nevada was complied with.

Later on, when, after the San Francisco fire, a number of insurance companies were wavering on the line between meeting their just obligations or welching, Davis issued an ultimatum that any company welching in San Francisco could not do business in Nevada. It forced over thirty companies in line, and insurance men who are in a position to know, say that this order, made just in the nick of time, saved the property owners of San Francisco over seven millions of dollars.

Colonel Henry G. Shaw.—The coming of the late Henry G. Shaw to the Comstock was a notable acquisition to the ranks of Nevada journalism. He was filled with the ideals and the acquirements of metropolitan journalism, having served on the best eastern papers. In political discussions he marshaled his statistics effectively, and helped to win every fight in which he was engaged. A facile writer and a polished gentleman he inspired all with whom he came in contact with a desire for maintaining the best traditions of the profession. He was editor of the *Enterprise* for some time, and subsequently entered the government service in San Francisco.

C. C. Powning was a prominent figure in the newspaper world of the sagebrush country for many years. Beginning as a printer's apprentice he grew up in the business and by hard knocks and perseverance acquired a valuable property in the *Nevada State Journal* at Reno. His untimely death cut short a career that had much promise.

Robert L. Fulton was that rare combination so seldom seen in a printing office, namely, a writer of ability and a financier of still greater ability. Everything he touched sprouted gold, and, finding that running a newspaper was not necessary to his permanent success, he abandoned the profession, but still has a hankering for the aroma of printer's ink and roller composition.

Major John Dennis made a widely known paper out of the *Tuscarora*

Times Review. He was a trenchant, fearless writer and possessed of a vitriolic and witty pen that made him a terror to his contemporaries.

He was a natural politician and for several sessions represented Lander County in the upper house of the State Legislature. His speeches were of the fiery, sledgehammer order and he could hold his own in debate with any one he ever met in the Senate.

In his leisure moments he would concoct hoaxes that would go the rounds. One of the most conspicuous was his fictitious account of a "Luminous Shrub" that grew near Tuscarora. It was discussed all over the Union, and several eastern botanists came to Nevada to investigate it.

During the closing years of his stormy and eventful life he was the editor-in-chief of the *Reno Journal*.

Some rather good stories are told of Dennis. He once entered into a conspiracy with a friend of his to get a political bet out of a capitalist who had the reputation of being rather close. The capitalist was quite willing to bet a hundred on his presidential candidate, but Dennis and his friend figured that if they threw a little champagne into the transaction he might bet more. They spent in the neighborhood of fifty dollars in convivial intercourse with their man and he became sufficiently mellow to wager a straight thousand dollars. When the "Ides of November" came 'round the capitalist won the bet. Dennis said he didn't mind the thousand dollars particularly, but he thought the fifty they spent was money thrown away.

On another occasion he had a row with a man on the street. His opponent was locked up on a charge of disturbing the peace and using vulgar language, and Dennis, going to jail, put up his bail-money, forty dollars, for the satisfaction of getting him out where he could lick him. He secured his enemy's liberation and as an aftermath got soundly thrashed himself. Next morning in the justice court the victor failed to show up and his bail was declared forfeited.

Conrad Wiegand.—No review of early journalism in Nevada would be complete without mention of Conrad Wiegand, the most peculiar man who ever tramped the trails through the sagebrush. An assayer by profession, he was a deep student of the question of metals as a medium of exchange and wrote voluminously on the subject. But it was as editor of a paper that his eccentricities became apparent. He was beaten by a politician whom he criticised and so completely was his gentle spirit

under control that he found it possible to obey the injunction to forgive his enemies. Most any other editor would have had recourse to a six-shooter.

Fred H. Hart.—When Fred Hart wrote his book called "The Sazarac Lying Club," taking the name from a popular brand of brandy, he was in the prime of his fun-making. He wrote for papers in the eastern part of the State for many years and at one time was editor of the *Virginia City Enterprise*.

H. P. Cohen.—There was a pleasure in listening to the queer remarks of Henry P. Cohen, for many years bookkeeper for the *Enterprise*, who usually wrote the theatrical criticisms. He was talking about a prominent man who was declared by one of his companions to be anything but wise. "Judge Blank's mind is a howling wilderness," said his friend. "Worse than that," amended Cohen; "his mind is a regular Death Valley. If an idea ever got in there it would perish of loneliness."

Edward W. Townsend.—Edward W. Townsend, afterward the world-known author of "Chimney Fadden" and writer of the Major Max papers in the *New York Sun*, had his first newspaper detail on the *Gold Hill News*. It was an assignment to go down the road and meet a party of about twenty officers and prisoners who were driving from Carson, the officers having in custody the famous Chinese murderer, Ah Chouey, who, while on his way to the State Prison had bribed another Chinaman to take his place. Together with the Chinese were a couple of deputy sheriffs and a lawyer, who were supposed to have connived at the substitution, but the accusation was never established. Townsend interviewed all the parties, wrote a graphic account of the affair, and got it in in time for the evening issue of the *News*, beating all rivals. This gave him a good start, and he never stopped. At present he is a member of Congress from New Jersey.

Notables in Journalism.—L. R. Bradley (usually called "Old Broadhorns," and afterwards was Governor of the State), was the owner of several newspapers in the eastern part of Nevada, although he never ascended the tripod or personally attempted to run the literary part of an office. His functions appeared to be confined to providing money to meet the payroll.

Thomas Fitch was part owner and editor of several papers, but made

a greater success as a speaker. With a pen in his hand he appeared to be uninspired, but on the hustings he had no equal.

C. C. Stevenson, also elected Governor, was at different times owner of the *Virginia Chronicle* and the *Gold Hill News*.

A. C. Ellis started a Democratic paper in Carson that lasted three months. Ellis was a fine lawyer, but the types were not suitable for his method of composition.

John W. Mackay and James G. Fair were owners of the *Virginia Enterprise*, buying it from William Sharon, and afterwards selling it to D. O. Mills and H. M. Yerington of the Virginia Truckee Railroad.

John C. Fall and John H. Kinkead (the latter served a term as Governor) were connected by family ties in some way, and held shares in a newspaper at Winnemucca. They didn't get rich at the business, though both were prominent in the affairs of the State.

Senator William M. Stewart, the man of the most tremendous energy of any who ever lived on the Pacific Coast, owned interests in a number of newspapers in Nevada, which ownership generally held merely through the political campaigns in which he was a candidate.

Nevada had the distinction of numbering among its pioneer journalists John K. Lovejoy, who was a member of the well-known Lovejoy family of Illinois, the great abolitionists, one of whom, Owen Lovejoy, was killed at Alton, Illinois, because of his Free Soil sentiments.

On the roster of men whose newspaper work is remembered in Nevada, one calls to mind W. Frank Stewart, Philip Lynch, E. D. Kelly, Edward Colnon (who afterwards went to California and founded the *Stockton Mail*), John F. Alexander, Fred E. Canfield, C. A. V. Putnam, Adair Wilson, Robert Ferrall, C. A. Sumner, Fred Hart, Clement C. Rice (dubbed by Mark Twain "the Unreliable"), J. F. Halloran, Orlando E. Jones (who, when a clown in a circus, was known as Dan Conover), J. J. Hill, John Church, W. W. Barnes, John A. Mahaney, Robert E. Lowery, Pat Holland, Robert L. Tilden, John I. Ginn, Harry Norton, C. H. Stoddard, J. W. Plant, M. S. Bonfield, E. A. Littlefield, L. B. Littlefield, Andrew Cassamayou, Andrew Maute (afterwards superintendent of the United States Mint at Carson), R. R. and E. J. Parkinson, Myron and Eugene Angell, Frank A. Kenyon, Mark W. Musgrove, Israel Crawford, Henry H. Watts, John M. Campbell, Robert McBeth, D. M. Brannan, J. C. Ragsdale, C. L. Perkins, M. H. Hogan, C. C. Emerson, George Marshall,

F. P. Dallum, George Phelps, Richard Wheeler, E. A. Scott, Peter Meyers, Geo. M. Smith, H. C. Street, W. H. H. Fellows, C. C. Wright, T. I. Butler, J. C. Law, J. G. McClinton, Robert Glenn, J. C. Davis, L. C. Branson, W. W. Ross, Josiah C. Harlow, Geo. G. Lyon, W. B. Taylor, J. W. McKinnon, Frank Blake, Chas. S. Sprague, W. H. Pitchford, John Craise, J. J. Ayers, F. E. Fisk, M. D. Fairchild, A. Skillman, E. A. Skillman, H. B. Loomis, Edwin A. Sherman, R. W. Simpson, O. D. Fairchild, A. C. Pratt, Phillip Triplett, Harry Fontecilla, H. Z. Osborn, E. R. Cleveland, W. H. Virden, Samuel Donald, Alf Chartz, W. W. Austin, W. F. Boardman (known as "Salty," the Pony Express rider), A. T. Hawley, Edward Niles, W. C. Phillips, Richard Rule, A. J. McCarthy, John L. Considine, T. E. Picotte, Arthur Dunn, B. J. Burns, H. C. Bennett, L. C. McKinney, D. E. A. Williamson (a grandson of Uncle George Bromley of the San Francisco Bohemian Club), Boynton Carlisle, J. H. Cradlebaugh, George M. Smith, George C. Berry, T. I. Butler, Oscar Morgan, R. E. Draper (who fought a duel with Dr. W. H. Richardson and received some buckshot in his foot from a double-barreled gun), C. A. Brier, F. Elliott, L. C. McKinney, R. D. Bogart, H. Warren, J. C. Dow, J. E. James, T. L. Ham, E. Armond, A. P. Church, James Conley, J. H. Huling, Richard A. James, V. B. DeLashmutt, G. W. Perickson (who was killed in Washoe City), Joseph Ekley, H. DeGroot, D. R. Sessions, Samuel Donald, W. W. Hobert, L. P. Ward, C. S. Preble, C. S. Young, C. H. Sprouls, Allen G. Bragg, John M. Dormer, H. F. Baker, W. W. Booher, H. A. McCraney, Allen Kelly, the Booth brothers, J. A. and W. W., John L. Considine, S. A. Glessner, the Bingham brothers, Ernest and Edwin.

New Generation.—Among the newer generation may be mentioned Sam J. Dunham, who has reported everything in the way of news from San Diego to Alaska, and whose Klondike verses are too good to be forgotten. He touches the true note when he mentions that cold as was the climate in the frozen north it was not so cold as was the reception he received in Washington when they found he brought no gold.

Charles E. Michelson, who was born in Virginia City, and who comes of a family noted for brain-power, is managing editor for one of the big Hearst papers in New York. He has the much-to-be-desired ability to write an editorial with "a punch," as the boys on Newspaper Row phrase it.

Harry Bishop, Frederick W. Bishop and Charles P. Bishop, sons of

Dr. S. Bishop, of Reno and Eureka, all engaged in newspaper work after leaving Nevada. The first-named is manager of the *Oakland Enquirer*, the others having drifted to other vocations.

The late Philip Verrill Mighels, probably the most brilliant creative genius of the younger set, was a voluminous writer, contributing to almost every branch of literature. It was as a novelist that he won the greatest applause, his works "Out of a Silver Flute," "Bruvver Jim's Baby," and other works gaining acceptance on both sides of the "big pond."

Robert H. Davis, editor of all the Munsey magazines, served his apprenticeship in Carson and San Francisco, and has risen to his present commanding position in the world of letters by ability and hard work.

First Newspaper in Nevada.—The first newspaper printed in Nevada was the *Territorial Enterprise*, which was started at Genoa, Douglas County, November 18, 1858, by Alfred James and W. L. Jernegan. The *Enterprise* office was moved to Carson in November, 1859, and in November, 1860, Jonathan Williams and I. B. Wollard became its owners and took the plant to Virginia City.

First Daily Paper in Nevada.—The first daily newspaper established in Nevada was the *Silver Age*, owned and edited by John C. Lewis. The *Silver Age* was started the same month that the *Enterprise* moved from Carson to Virginia City, November, 1860. It suffered many trials and finally fell into the hands of L. R. Bradley, who subsequently was known as "Old Broadhorns," and making that title popular was elected Governor of the State.

Blue-Penciling Seldom Known.—The papers had little use for managing editors and copy-readers in those days. Every reporter wrote what he pleased and hung the copy on the "hook." The printer set it as written, and it went through that way. But the man who wrote an article was personally responsible for the statements and sentiments it contained. If a person who was criticised didn't like an item he could always find out who wrote it by asking at the editorial rooms, and the author was supposed to back it up or back down, as the case might be. In any event, nobody else was called on to fight his battles. That led to carefulness in composition, for when a man knows that if he makes a statement that he may be called on to defend his position with a six-shooter, he usually considers his ground with all the circumspection at his command. As explained in the life of Mark Twain, recently written by Mr. Paine in

Harper's Magazine, the first instruction given by Joseph T. Goodman to a reporter was never to write, "It is reported," or "We are informed," or anything like that, but to find out the facts and then give them as actual happenings. That was one good reason for the infrequency of retractions in the Nevada newspapers. It didn't pay to make mistakes in a country where every man was his own judge as to whether his dignity had been offended.

Cleverly Chosen Names.—Some of the names chosen for newspapers were striking and apt. In the realm of journalistic nomenclature W. J. Forbes was easily first, because he had many chances to show his skill, but John M. Dormer, who named only one paper, ran a good second. In Eureka the Forbes paper was called *The Cupel*, which name had a significance understood by everybody in the community. Eureka was a camp in which all the ores required smelting, and in order to make a test the assayer was compelled to make use of the cupel, a little receptacle of bone-ash in which the precious metals, mixed with the base metals, were placed and subjected to a high degree of heat. The cupel absorbed or eliminated the base metals, leaving on top a shining button of pure gold and silver, ready for weighing and showing accurately the value of the ore. It would be difficult to select a name more appropriate for a true newspaper—one that fills the requirements of the profession, which is in honor bound to show forth the precious metals of truth and justice and to cast away the baser admixtures of prejudice, bias and misrepresentation. When Forbes moved to Virginia City and invaded a field already occupied, he candidly recognized that he was not attempting to fill a long-felt want, and with grim humor styled his paper *The Trespass*. At Battle Mountain he had another little sheet which he called *The Measure for Measure*, referring to the Biblical principle, that as you measure, so shall it be measured to you again, and besides he recalled that Shakespeare had used the expression and that was sufficient authority for him.

John M. Dormer made a happy stroke in naming his Candelaria paper *The True Fissure*. This paper also was in a mining camp, and the name was intended to convey the thought that the Northern Belle, the Lucky B and the other mines of Candelaria and Pick Handle Gulch were in fact located on a true fissure-vein, which was the hope of every camp in Nevada which aspired to rival the Comstock lode.

The *Inland Empire* was the imposing name of an ambitious journal which was started in Hamilton, White Pine County, in 1869. *The New Endowment* was another odd title, and *The Old Pah-Ute* (first called *The Old Pah-Utah*) harked back to the aboriginal days of the country. The paper had an honorable and useful career.

A Spectral Newspaper.—The queerest of all the names chosen for newspapers in Nevada was possibly that of the *Waubuska Mangler*. The paper was supposed to have been published in Waubuska, in Lyon County, but as a matter of fact, it never had any existence outside the *Carson Appeal* office. There was never any paper published at Waubuska, but the *Appeal* manufactured one and located it there. For some years the *Appeal* pretended to reprint savage editorials credited to the *Mangler*, whose editor it frequently took to task as "a disgrace to journalism."

The controversies between the *Mangler* and its contemporaries were continued for years and with such a show of plausibility that many people to this day still regard the *Waubuska Mangler* as one of the liveliest sheets ever published in the State.

When the *Appeal* got tired of keeping the fictitious newspaper before the public it announced that the editor, on account of ill health, had closed up his office and gone east. It republished a valedictory containing these statements and supplemented it with a story that the publisher had really slid out between days to avoid a grand jury indictment.

Nothing more was heard of the *Mangler* after that and the real cause of its suspension is still a matter of speculation with many people.

The *Appeal* is the oldest continuous paper published in the State. The *Appeal* was started in November, 1864, by McElwain, Barrett and Robinson. Its politics was Republican. About a year later Barrett sold his interest to Henry R. Mighels. In December, 1870, C. L. Perkins and H. C. Street purchased the establishment and changed its name to the *Register*. In February, 1872, John Booth became proprietor. In September of the same year H. R. Mighels returned to Carson, purchased the *Register* and changed its name to the *New Daily Appeal*.

The paper at once became Republican. In January, 1874, the name was changed to the *Carson Daily Appeal*.

In 1876 it was changed again to the *Morning Appeal*. January 1, 1878, H. R. Mighels became sole proprietor. His editorials were regarded as the ablest of any writer on the coast and the paper was widely quoted.

Mr. Mighels died in Carson City, in the spring of 1879, leaving his widow to run the paper. In August, S. H. Fulton took charge as editor until relieved of the duties by S. P. Davis, who came from Virginia City to take charge of the paper in November.

He married Mrs. Mighels in the following July and conducted the paper until his election to the Controllershship of the State in 1898. The *Appeal* was then leased to H. R. Mighels, a son of its former proprietor, and soon changed into an evening paper. Afterwards Smith and Green took the lease and they were succeeded by Irwin Lewis, who ran it two years and subleased it to L. D. Roberts. After his election to Congress it was leased to James Green, who runs it at the present writing. The *Appeal* was the first paper in Nevada to advocate the formation of a silver party. It is now Democratic in politics.

The *Carson City News*, a four-page, six-column daily—Monday excepted—Republican in politics, was started on the 21st day of June, 1891, by Edwin F. Dupuis. Dupuis ran the paper for about a year, when it became the property of Miss Annie Martin, who was its owner and editor until the Silver Party gained control in the State of Nevada and the lady sold the paper, in 1895, to Dunn and Lemmon. The paper was run by these gentlemen until the great rush into the Tonopah section, when the Nevada Press Company was formed by them and the paper became part of the Press Company holding. Dunn and Lemmon retired from the active editorship of the paper and their place was taken by Walter McClure Gottwaldt. After several years the Press Company thought it best to lease the paper and it became, under lease, the property of George L. Sahford, a young newspaper-man and attorney, who for a number of years ran the paper and took it to a high standard. In 1908, the Nevada Press Company moved to Reno and the paper was leased to Geo. A. Montrose, a newspaper man who had been engaged in the business in California. Mr. Montrose took his sister, Miss Myrtle Montrose, in as a full partner, and the two edited the paper until the marriage of Miss Montrose to George M. Anderson, in June, 1912, when Mr. Anderson became a partner in the business, the firm name being Montrose & Anderson.

The paper is a newsy up-to-date sheet, covering the news of the section in a most thorough manner. The editorial column is a feature of the

paper where the pertinent questions of the day and section are handled in fearless manner.

Churchill County Eagle.—D. E. Williams, editor and publisher, was born in Cottonwood Falls, Kansas, December 28, 1860. With his parents and the family he crossed the plains by team in 1880, passing through Churchill County, but locating further up the Carson River in Carson Valley. Leaving the farm the following year he entered the office of the *Genoa Courier* to learn the trade of printer, later being employed on the *Carson Daily Index*, where he became foreman. On the 12th of September, 1884, he took charge of the *Genoa Courier* under a lease, purchasing the controlling interest the first of the following year, and later becoming sole owner. With the exception of a short intermission, he was publisher of this paper for the succeeding twelve years. Following this, he purchased an interest in the *San Jose Daily Herald*, in San Jose, Cal., with which he was connected for six years.

During the summer of 1900 he served as editor and manager of the *Daily Courier* at Winfield, Kansas, his old home town, while on a visit to that place. From there he went to Ohio, leasing the *Waynesfield Chronicle*, with which he was connected about four years. However, he always considered Nevada his home, and in 1906 returned to the Sagebrush State, for a time editing the *Elko Daily Free Press*, from which place he went to Fallon to engage in the newspaper business. The *Eagle* was established by A. P. Bettersworth and C. J. Leonesio on October 6, 1906—four years after the county seat was moved to Fallon—and on the following September was purchased by Mr. Williams, who has ever since been editor and publisher. On April 18, 1908, Mr. Williams was married to Miss Neva Gustin, of Dayton, Ohio, who has since been a co-worker with him in the publication of the paper. With the exception of one year, the *Eagle* has always been an official paper of Churchill County, and ever since the city of Fallon was organized has been an official paper of the city, ever striving to uplift and upbuild the promising community in which it is published.

The *Churchill County Standard* was the first paper published in Churchill County, being issued in 1903 by Leslie Smaill, who, a couple of years later, sold the plant to W. C. Black, who has since published the paper, with the exception of the year 1909, when it was sold to A. B. Bettersworth, who in turn disposed of it to Lee & Kinnear. Early in

1910 the *Standard* again became the property of W. C. Black. It was the first paper in Churchill County to introduce the linotype machine.

The *Ely Record* was established on March 4, 1905, as the *Mining Record*. The name was later changed to the *Ely Mining Record*, and in January, 1908, the word "mining" was dropped from the title on account of objections raised by the *Daily Mining Record*, of Denver, Colo. It was founded by J. D. Crossette.

In July, 1906, the paper was sold to the Ely Publishing Company, a corporation formed by a number of Ely business men, and Wm. B. Root was placed in charge.

In March, 1907, control of the *Record* was purchased by W. A. Leonard, formerly editor of *The Copper Era*, of Clifton, Arizona, and N. H. Chapin, formerly of Morenci, Arizona, who have since conducted the affairs of the paper. The *Record* has always made a specialty of mining news and its articles in regard to developments in the great copper mines in the Ely district have been widely copied throughout the country. The paper has conducted an active campaign for lower railroad rates for the Ely district and may fairly lay a claim to part of the credit for reductions in freight and passenger charges and improvements in the service which have been made from time to time.

The *Ely Mining Expositor* was established by Denver S. Dickerson in the fall of 1906 and during the copper boom in Ely. The first issue of the weekly appeared October 11, 1906. It was printed on an old Washington hand press and the first office was in Mr. Dickerson's residence, while awaiting the receipt of a Cottrell press, linotype and other equipment. When that had been installed publication of the daily began in May, 1907, and has continued regularly ever since.

Mr. Dickerson was the first editor and then secured the services of Col. James W. Connella, who remained with the paper until the Rayhide boom in 1908. For the period of more than a year the paper was leased to L. G. Schwalenberg and H. C. Reilly. George A. Flannigan was editor for a few months and was succeeded by John M. Haley. In the fall of 1912 control of the paper was sold to M. V. Cox of California, and has been continued, as in previous years, as a straight Democratic paper in State and National affairs.

The *Elko Free Press* was established January 1, 1883, by Chas. H. Sproule, and issued as a weekly paper. Mr. Sproule

brought the plant here from Battle Mountain, where he had been in charge of the *Battle Mountain Free Press*, which was discontinued during the preceding fall. The paper was under his charge for twenty-one years, and during that time not an issue was missed. Ill health compelled him to seek an extended vacation, and a corporation was formed by the business men of the town, who took over the weekly paper, and on September 10, 1904, it was made a daily, with George B. Russell in charge as editor and manager. The weekly edition was continued as part of the publication. On December 1, 1908, Mr. Russell, having been elected to the Legislature from Elko county, resigned, and E. J. Clark was put in charge and remained with the *Free Press* until November of 1910 when he was succeeded by the present editor, E. M. Steninger. It has been the recognized Republican organ of the county, and, in fact, of the eastern part of the state, and is progressive in its ideas. The company is incorporated under the laws of the state of Nevada for \$10,000.

The *Elko Independent*, started by E. D. Kelley and Judge George B. Berry, in October, 1868, was the pioneer paper of Elko County. Charles L. Perkins, elected State Printer in 1870, was subsequently connected with its ownership, also H. C. Street, W. B. Taylor and others. In the middle '70s it was run as a daily and it was being run as a live Nevada daily, with W. W. Booher editor and proprietor, until February, 1913, when W. J. McNeil became editor and publisher. It is a progressive Democratic paper and is winning fame as one of Nevada's wide-awake newspapers. W. A. Loughlin is associate editor and his well-known ability as a writer is adding new laurels to the *Independent*.

The *Humboldt Star* was established as a weekly on January 11, 1906, by R. E. L. Windle and G. M. Rose, both for many years connected with the *Silver State*, of this place, and the former having been also one of the owners of Goldfield's first paper, the *News*, during the first year of its existence. In June, 1906, the *Star* was made a semi-weekly and a year later a tri-weekly, A. L. Crackett, also one of the former employes of the *Silver State*, having in the meantime become associated with Messrs. Windle and Rose in the ownership of the paper. The *Star* has had a steady and prosperous growth and has one of the best equipped offices in the State. All of its present owners were employes on the *Silver State* during the time it was owned by the veteran journalist, the

late E. D. Kelley, and during the later ownership of the paper by the late Senator Nixon.

The *Goldfield News* was born on April 29, 1904, and the first number was received with such an ovation from the enthusiastic boomers that the publisher, James F. O'Brien, never forgave himself for his short-sightedness in printing only 1,500 copies of the initial number. But his equipment was taxed to do even that much, for each copy of the diminutive five-column folio had to be handled four times before it was ready for delivery to the reader. The printing was accomplished on a marvel of blacksmithing ingenuity which had devised a press from a lot of junk which had been grouped together by a masterly artisan and fashioned from a quantity of discarded material.

After the issuance of the *News*, the publisher spent the greater part of the ensuing twenty-four hours in buying back copies at two bits a copy and selling them over again for a dollar a copy to eager buyers who wished to advise their friends at home that Goldfield was a camp of substance and pride. From that day to the day when he disposed of his plant for a sum ranging away up into the five figures, Mr. O'Brien always made money.

In the meantime hard days had fallen to the lot of Tonopah and the men of the silver camp cast covetous eyes toward the south where they knew marvelous strikes of high-grade gold ore were being made almost daily on the surface. T. D. Vandervort, of the *Tonopah Miner*, concluded he could do better in the new camp and accordingly sold his interest and transferred himself and the makings of a printing office to Goldfield. He located in the town of Columbia, which was the legitimate site for the hub of the district, and there started the *Columbia Review*. The *Review* remained true to its allegiance and kept the name of Columbia floating proudly from the masthead for two years longer, when the owners yielded to the pressure of circumstances and moved into the heart of the then rapidly expanding Goldfield, after erecting a \$50,000 brick building for the accommodation of the plant, which had grown from a solitary jobber to an immense plant which had no peer in Nevada.

John C. Martin organized the Tribune Printing Company and began the publication of an up-to-date and progressive newspaper that was equal to the growing importance of the camp. Owing to the odium

attached to the *Sun*, it was decided to change the name of the new concern to the *Daily Tribune*, and thus it was put forth and continued to this day as the sole survivor of the score of newspaper ventures in southern Nevada. At one time the *Tribune* was supplying 3,500 readers in Goldfield and vicinity and half as many more through the mails. The demand from all over the country for authentic news of the mines could not be supplied by the slow process of a weekly and thousands paid their \$12 per annum for the sole purpose of watching developments of companies owning stocks in which they were interested. On the job department the men could not keep up with orders and enormous bonuses were paid by promoters whose chief, if not only desire, was to reach the eye of the public before rivals. Under such circumstances it is not incredible to know that fabulous prices were paid for printing. Even then the demand was so far in excess of the capacities of the newspaper plants in Goldfield that it was estimated that job work worth \$100,000 a month was sent out to Carson City and Reno firms. Carson City was one of the principal beneficiaries and the service from that point was so excellent that several promoters had all their work done in the shadow of the Nevada capitol and distributed from the Carson postoffice.

The phenomenal record achieved by the *Tribune* induced Horace Dunn, Harry Allen and Thomas F. Barnes to launch an afternoon paper known as the *Chronicle*, on a coöperative basis. Politics played an important part in the venture and during the ensuing campaign the *Chronicle* made large additions to its bank account. A consolidation with the *Columbia Review* was broached during the Newlands-Nixon campaign of 1908 and the merger was carried into effect. The *Review* had continued as a weekly newspaper, paying special attention to the mining field in competition with the *Goldfield News*, and had enjoyed as great prosperity as any of the other papers in the desert. Vandervort realized at last the fallacy of sticking to Columbia, which had dwindled to a few hundred people, and had invested some \$35,000 of his earnings in a model brick newspaper publishing plant which was heralded as the most complete institution of the kind in the west, outside of San Francisco. Before the building was completed the slump came, a shutdown was ordered by the Mine Owners' Association and the collapse caught the leading spirits of the camp illy prepared for the revulsion which could not be forestalled. The *Chronicle* and *Review* tied up to economize and the *News* continued

to be favored with sunny sailing, owing to the fortunes of its owners, Messrs. Loftus and Davis. The faith of the latter in the future of the district continued unabated and it was not until they contemplated a steadily diminishing subscription list among eastern supporters that they discovered the necessity of shortening sail. Accordingly a contract was entered into between Loftus & Davis and C. S. Sprague, whereby the latter agreed to take over the entire equipment and assume full responsibility for the paper. This left Sprague the virtual owner and moulder of policies, with a building costing \$100,000 on his hands to remind him of the waning glories of a mining camp. The Chronicle-Review Publishing Company encountered trials and tribulations arising from maturing obligations which the John S. Cook Bank insisted on collecting and one fine afternoon the sheriff stepped in and the *Chronicle* did not issue that evening. An attempt to appear the following afternoon eventuated in a hand-bill four by eight detailing the financial woes of the journalists who could not satisfy the bank of their ability to continue payments and that was the last of the hybrid twins. The staff scattered to the four corners of the universe and the field was left to the *Tribune* and *News*. The former was inveigled into acquiring the abandoned *Review* plant, building and all, including its debts and obligations, and then its troubles began. From boasting of freedom from indebtedness and an independence which none of the other newspapers could claim, the *Tribune* went down through inside machinations. Through duplicity and misrepresentation two of the stockholders approved the suggestion of enlargement and thus the deal went through. This sounded the death knell of the *Tribune* as an independent newspaper, for it was only a short time before it was numbered with the satellites of interests that found it necessary to have an organ to shape the course of public affairs. During these doings which overlapped one another with the rapidity of the kaleidoscope, Sprague thought he saw the handwriting on the wall which presaged his survival as the last of the Mohicans, for, with scarcely a thought, he plunged into the daily field, explaining in his editorial columns he was taking snap judgment on his patrons by entering the new field before the stars were shining in the right corner of the firmament, but he hoped to make good if his readers indulged him for a few days. The departure was a move in the wrong direction and after a tempestuous career he reluctantly retired, leasing the *News* building and its entire machinery to the *Tribune*. The

latter seized the opportunity to withdraw from the morning field and take up twilight journalism.

In the spring of 1912, when the first bleatings of politics were heard in the vernal valleys where statesmen browse their expiring terms away, Goldfield Democrats bolted from the irksome collar of the Republican *Tribune* and declared they had to have a party organ. They established the *Weekly Post*, captained by such talent as P. J. Carney, Louis K. Koontz, John Kunz and Dr. J. J. McCarthy. The cards had to be redistributed for another deal when less than a month after filling a long felt want the amateur editors found they were temperamentally unfit for the strenuous life of newspaper men and sold out to a couple of Southern gentlemen who had not much more experience in the life, and at last accounts the *Post* was in the field still, with periodical promise of developing into a daily publication.

The *Goldfield Sun* was established as a morning daily February 1, 1905, Lindley C. Branson having been editor and proprietor. It was issued first for two months at the office of the *Tonopah Sun*, in Tonopah, and the papers sent to Goldfield by automobile. These were the first autos in the desert country. A newspaper staff and an office were maintained at Goldfield. When, in the latter part of March, a linotype arrived, the third one in southern Nevada, the type was set at the office in Goldfield and the forms wheeled to Columbia, a mile away, every morning in the darkness, where the paper was printed from the press of the *Goldfield Review*. For the following summer the *Sun* was run at a loss, but the *Tonopah Sun*, owned by the same party, made the money to pay for its own and the *Goldfield Sun* plant. The latter cost \$13,000. In the fall of 1905, the *Goldfield Sun* was changed from a morning to an afternoon paper. Fred W. Payne became manager, and from that moment the paper was a great financial success. The average monthly profits were \$1,500. August 3, 1906, because of an article published in the *Tonopah Sun*, a boycott by the Industrial Workers of the World and the Goldfield Miners' Union, against the *Goldfield Sun*, began, the first intimation of it being when two carriers of the *Goldfield Sun* were beaten up by mobs which met them at different places on the streets. The fight was very hot and lasted seven weeks. No carriers nor paper sellers were allowed on the streets, until finally the union printers and pressmen, with large printed badges, braved the dangers. They were followed by mobs offering but

slight resistance until "Diamondfield Jack" Davis repulsed a mob of over fifty men with two guns, but single-handed. Through the request of George Wingfield all the mines and leases in the camp were shut down to force a settlement of this newspaper boycott and Wingfield and Davis, with guns, guarded the paper sellers on the streets, buying copies of the paper themselves and distributing them to the throng. September 20, Mr. Branson sold the *Goldfield Sun* to J. M. Burnell, who changed its name to the *Goldfield Tribune*.

The *Tonopah Sun* was established as a weekly newspaper May 11, 1904, by Lindley C. Branson, as editor and owner. At first it was printed one page at a time on a quarter-medium job press, the paper consisting of only four columns and six pages. In a short time it was enlarged to eight pages. From the first issue it was strong and outspoken editorially. It was Independent Republican in politics and later truthfully claimed the credit of being the original insurgent newspaper and its editor of being the original insurgent in Nevada. It carried on an incessant warfare against wildcat mining companies, putting many of them out of business. One of its first acts was to cause the retirement into private life of ex-Congressman C. D. Van Duzer, alleging that he was engaged at wildcatting. January 10, 1905, the *Sun* became a morning daily, having the previous day received the first linotype in southern Nevada. The machine was shipped in, unpacked and set up secretly and in eleven hours from the time the boxes were under the *Sun's* roof it was running. Coming in that manner, when neither Tonopah nor Goldfield suspected that they were to have a daily, it came as a sensation and was a bigger advertisement than any previous announcements that could have been given. In the fall of the same year it was changed to an evening paper. The object of the secrecy was to "beat competitors to it," which was accomplished. About the first of August, 1906, the *Sun* was boycotted by the Industrial Workers of the World of Tonopah and Goldfield and the Miners' unions of Tonopah and Goldfield. The boycott was caused by the publication of an article after the signing of a three-year contract by miners and mine operators at Tonopah in which the *Sun* charged that 107 of the miners still voted to not accept the contract when every demand of theirs had been granted, and especially on account of an attack therein on G. A. Roberts, as "walking delegate" for the I. W. W. The fight started with the beating up of two paper carriers at Goldfield in the employ of the *Goldfield Sun*,

which newspaper belonged also to Mr. Branson. For over seven weeks the battle waged fiercely. Both offices were guarded in fear of being dynamited and all the men were armed, mostly with guns furnished by the proprietor. The Tonopah Merchants' Association offered to furnish the funds if Mr. Branson would fight the organizations in court, which offer was accepted. An injunction suit and a damage suit for \$25,000 were started. Judge Peter Breen dismissed the damage and injunction suits against the miners' unions and the damage suit against the I. W. W., leaving only the injunction suit as against the I. W. W. The Supreme Court reversed this decision in toto, thus establishing it as practically statutory law that boycotts were illegal in Nevada. The effect was to break up the I. W. W. in Nevada and drive it from the State. During the career of the *Tonopah Sun* it was a great money maker. It accumulated a plant which, together with the building and lot, cost \$37,000. The profits of the office during the good times prior to the panic of 1907 averaged \$1,000 a month, and one month amounted to \$4,000. An extensive staff was employed, which included talented men in their lines, the star of the lot having been Arthur V. Buel, a cartoonist of great ability. He remained in the employ of the *Sun* from early in 1905 until the summer of 1908. For fearlessness both as an individual and his work through the paper he stood on the same footing as the proprietor, who became known far and wide as "the fighting editor of Nevada." It was Mr. Buel who in a cartoon originated the nickname, "I Won't Works" for the Industrial Workers of the World, which is applied to them everywhere. From the second closing and final failure of the Nye and Ormsby County Bank in February, 1909, the *Sun*, through hard times in the mining regions, became a financial burden to its owner until a year later he sold it at a sacrifice to W. H. Bohannon and W. H. Fording. They ran it a few weeks as a daily, then changing to a semi-weekly and finally to a weekly. In July of that year publication was suspended. In the Tonopah fire of July, 1912, *The Sun* building and plant were destroyed. Edward Clifford, Sr., as mortgagee, had become the owner. His interest was wholly covered by insurance.

The *Las Vegas Age* is the only one remaining alive of the several newspapers established in Las Vegas at or before the opening of the town-site in May, 1905. The paper was established by T. G. Nicklin. Being engaged in running a paper at Beatty, Nev., called the *Beatty Miner*, Mr.

Nicklin placed the management of the *Age* in the hands of C. C. Corkhill.

In June, 1908, C. P. Squires, the present owner and editor of *The Age* bought the paper and has since owned it. In January, 1910, the office was moved from its original location on Second Street to its present prominent location on Fremont Street.

The paper is now Republican in politics and devoted most largely to the upbuilding of the resources of Las Vegas and Clark County, especially in an agricultural way. It carries with it always the spirit of optimism and has been an important factor in the success of the community. Its growth as a business and in circulation is keeping pace with the growth of the community and the *Age* is today the principal paper of the county both in size, circulation and influence.

The *Manhattan Mail* was founded in January, 1906, by Haworth & Anderson. About a year later L. W. Haworth bought out the interest of his partner, Geo. S. Anderson. Haworth published the paper up till October 1, 1908, when F. F. Garside took it under lease and published it up till October 1, 1910. Later it was run by Roy R. Mighels for three months, and by Newman M. Mix, now deceased, six months. When Mix died the paper suspended and has remained closed ever since.

The *Manhattan Post* was founded October 15, 1910, by its present publisher, F. F. Garside. It has been published continuously and is the only paper in Manhattan now.

The *Nevada State Journal*, the daily morning paper of Reno, commenced publication November 30, 1870, as a weekly with J. G. Laws, W. H. H. Fellows and E. A. Littlefield proprietors under the firm name of J. G. Laws & Co. It was changed to a semi-weekly, February 5, 1873, and to a daily and weekly (except Mondays), April 1, 1874. It was made a seven-day daily in July, 1907.

Littlefield sold to his partner August 26, 1871; C. C. Powning bought Laws' half interest June 15, 1872, and the firm was Fellows & Powning until September 5, 1874, when Powning became sole proprietor. In 1890 Powning sold to E. D. Kelley and C. H. Stoddard. Stoddard sold to Judge William Webster, who, November 26, 1898, bought out General Kelley's interest and became sole owner. Judge Webster and W. W. Webster, his son, conducted the paper under the firm name of William Webster & Son. E. L. Bingham published the paper beginning July 1, 1901, as lessee. Bingham Bros. later acquired ownership and were asso-

ciated with F. L. White and C. S. Case. In June, 1907, they leased to the Journal Publishing Company, and in September, 1907, the lease was taken over by George D. Kilborn, who assumed ownership of the paper February 27, 1908, and continued its publication. It has since been incorporated as the Nevada State Journal Publishing Company, but without change in interest.

The *Journal* has always been pronounced in its national political character, avoiding factional quarrels and opposing bi-partisan alliances.

The *National Miner* was founded by Roy Harris on July 21, 1910. It was founded for the purpose of proclaiming the worth and merit of National, situated in northern Humboldt County, as a gold and silver section.

The paper later passed into the hands of Frank L. Reber, who since has conducted it along mining lines and matters of industrial concern and interest throughout Nevada. In politics it is independently Democratic.

The *Reno Evening Gazette* was founded in 1876, in the Old Alhambra, where the post office now stands. In a few months it moved to Commercial Row, in a small building at the east side of the lot where the Overland Hotel now is. Again moving it went into the upstairs of the present Salvation Army building on Sierra street. Again crossing the track it lit over the Palace dry goods store, going from there to the Jose building west of the Masonic Temple, and from there to the west side of Centre street above Second street, which held it until it built its own building on the same street near First.

Alexander & Hayden started the paper and ran it two years, when Alexander took up the study of law and Hayden moved to California to follow his trade as printer. In 1878 the owners were Robert L. Fulton and Will F. Edwards, the latter retiring in six months, and Fulton becoming the sole owner. In 1886 Preble and Young bought the paper, adding the *Nevada Stockman*, and in two years sold to Allen C. Bragg and A. O. Porter. The property was incorporated in 1892 and W. E. Sharon and A. H. Manning became part owners with Mr. Manning as president, Mr. Bragg remaining as editor and manager. Charles A. Norcross purchased Mr. Bragg's shares in 1902, and later sold to Oscar R. Morgan, who promoted the *Gazette* building, with changes all around.

In 1912 Frank L. Perrin succeeded Morgan as editor and general manager. The *Gazette* has been consistently Republican in politics all its

life. It is doing a valuable work in exploiting the agricultural and horticultural, as well as the mineral industry of Nevada.

Although a hand-written newspaper was published at Genoa in 1850 which was called the *Scorpion*, the first newspaper to be printed from type in Douglas County was in 1865 by A. T. Hawley and was called the *Douglas County Banner*. Its career was short. In February, 1875, A. C. Pratt secured a printing plant and established a weekly paper at Genoa, known as the *Carson Valley News*. Its existence was a brief four years. In 1880 the *Genoa Weekly Courier* came into existence and for the first four years did not carry the editor's name at the head of the editorial column. In 1884 J. H. Dungan became editor of the *Courier*. On August 29, 1884, he was succeeded by G. W. Oman. In less than one month D. E. Williams took up the guiding reins of the *Courier*. He was succeeded by George M. Smith in January, 1885. From this date until October, 1893, Smith & Williams conducted the *Courier* alternately, changing no less than four times.

In the meantime Gardnerville had become the hub of business and being in the more thickly settled part of the county, while Genoa rapidly declined, the citizens there decided they needed a newspaper. They raised a tidy sum by popular subscription and on July 12, 1898, Geo. I. Lamy published the first issue of the *Record*, a weekly paper. The following year, May 18, 1899, Smith moved the *Genoa Courier* to Gardnerville. On March 18, 1902, Dr. S. Southworth purchased the *Record* from Lamy and was its owner and editor until March, 1904, when both the printing office and dwelling was burned to the ground. Smith was ready to quit the hard struggle and at his solicitation Southworth purchased the *Courier* and consolidated the names—*Record-Courier*. In December of the same year he sold out to Ezell Bros. After one year and a half they turned over the plant to H. H. Springmeyer. Bert Selkirk, who had been employed in various capacities on both the papers for ten years prior to this time, was placed in charge by Mr. Springmeyer, who laid no claims to being acquainted with newspaper work. In January, 1908, Selkirk purchased the newspaper plant and real estate belonging thereto, and as this is written, 1912, is its editor.

In the early '80s a newspaper was published at Sheridan, in Douglas County, for a short time, and for a few months prior to the establishment of the *Record* at Gardnerville, Will Lee, of Carson, took a whirl at the

newspaper game at Gardnerville, but failed to keep the wolf from the office door. Thus is told the newspaper history in Douglas County.

The *Reese River Reveille* was founded in May, 1863. The founder was J. D. Fairchild. He made a good paper, getting dispatches from Washington and the east, daily by pony express until the telegraph lines were installed, after which the paper was a hummer. The biggest stories in these old volumes tell of the decisive battles of the Civil War, the circumstance at Appomattox and the tragedy in Ford's Theatre, which marked the end of Lincoln, the Liberator.

The *Reveille* has never missed an issue since May 16, 1863. But, in palmy and prosperous days in a one-time August, the whole works was swept three blocks down Main street as a result of a cloudburst up the canyon. Ever since that day, the *Reveille* office has been at the lower end of the town, where navigation will be safer, when the next freshet appears.

So, the present *Reveille* editor is here in Carpenter's shoes; in W. D. Jones' shoes (Billy Jones, of Reno); Andrew Maute's shoes (the Republican party); John Booth's shoes (the late Mr. Booth, a grand editor in his time and father of two more generations of editors, W. W. Booth and sons in Tonopah); in Fred Harte's shoes (Harte, who was a cousin of Bret Harte and who wrote the book of lies about the Sazerac Lying Club, one of the most flourishing institutions ever in Austin, leaving an influence still felt in the community, and an example fondly emulated by many now alive.

The *Silver State*, published at Winnemucca, is one of Nevada's oldest newspapers, having been established in 1869, by E. D. Kelly and J. J. Hill, as a Democratic weekly. During the middle '80s, when the silver movement was at its height, the paper was purchased by the late Senator George S. Nixon.

In 1902 the business was taken over by a stock company, by which it was conducted for several years, when it was again sold to six of the leading Republicans of the county. In April, 1912, the *Silver State* was purchased by E. R. Harroun, its present editor and publisher.

During its long career, the paper has been variously published as a daily, semi-weekly and tri-weekly, and in politics has been Democratic, Silver and Republican. At present it is published tri-weekly and is the only Republican newspaper in Humboldt County.

The *Student Record* was started by the University students on Novem-

ber 22, 1892. It was a diminutive affair of four pages, with two columns to a page and seven and a half inches long, and beginning with a subscription list of forty-five. The editors claim that they got the material together for the first issue in the basement of a church in the morning before the Sunday-school convened. The publication of the paper grew out of a row between the students and the faculty over the suspension of two students.

In 1892 the paper suspended for lack of financial assistance and was revived in 1899. It has grown a little each year since then, and in 1909 it became the actual property of the University students, and its name was changed to the *University of Nevada Sagebrush*.

It seemed to take a distinctive place as a college paper under the editorship of "Bub Hix" (August Holmes), who seems to have been a born journalist. He was a man of considerable versatility, being editor-in-chief of the paper, *Yell Leader*, and leading football player of the University.

"Pat Thirteen" (Lloyd Patrick) was also a leading writer on the paper for some time and acted as advertising manager.

It is now a ten-page paper with a circulation of 1,500, with an excellent advertising patronage and is regarded as one of the leading college journals of the country.

The *White Pine News* was ushered into existence as a weekly newspaper at Treasure City, when the discovery of sensationally rich silver ores in the White Pine district precipitated one of the most spectacular stampedes in the history of mining excitements. During the carnival of riot and speculation, the *News* was owned by W. H. Pitchford and Robert W. Simpson, who was a familiar figure in journalistic circles in White Pine County for twenty-five years. During the palmy days of Treasure City, the *News* flourished for a short time as a daily, and numbered on its editorial staff some of the leading satellites in Nevada journalism. George W. Cassidy, afterward Congressman from Nevada, obtained his first newspaper experience on the *News*. Judge C. C. Goodwin, who was identified with the *Tribune* and *Telegram* in Salt Lake City for almost thirty years, was employed on the *News* during this period. Myron Angel, a noted newspaper writer, was editor of the *News* when it was published at Treasure City.

The *News* was leased to W. J. Forbes in 1869. Within eight months Forbes moved the plant to Hamilton, which has been designated as the county seat. The prosperity of the White Pine district was short, sharp

and decisive. The exhaustion of the ore bodies marked the end of the era of silver mining. When the marvels of the famous district, melted into the vapors of memory, the *News*, which had been one of the leading papers in the State, was affected by the general stagnation.

A. Skillman and Fred Elliott purchased the paper in 1873. With a noticeable decline in population, the *News*, which had been issued three times a week, was transformed into a weekly. Elliott disposed of his interest to Skillman in 1875. The paper suspended publication three years later, Skillman moving to Eureka, where there were better opportunities for a journalistic venture.

The printing equipment belonging to the *News*, was bought by W. L. Davis and W. R. Forest, and the *News* owners resumed publication of the paper at Cherry Creek in 1880. During the lean and lank years in this county, there was a field for only one newspaper, and Davis, being cognizant of this fact, not only acquired complete ownership of the *White Pine News*, but stifled all competition by inducing Robert W. Simpson to sell the *Ward Reflex*. When the rich mines at Taylor began to attract the attention of the mining world, the paper was first published in the new camp in 1887. Three years later the *News* found an abiding place in Ely, which had been made the county seat in 1887, after the burning of the courthouse at Hamilton.

After directing the policy of the *White Pine News* for twenty-three years, W. L. Davis disposed of the paper to L. L. Elliott, and removed to Redwood City, Cal. "Little" Davis, as he was commonly known among the pioneer residents, amassed a small fortune during the time he was publishing the only paper in the county. Before his death, Davis visited the scenes of his early activities several times, and was always anxious to take his accustomed place at the cases.

Elliott had charge of the paper for four years, and then concluded a deal for the sale of his interest to E. H. Decker, a graduate of the University of Michigan, who was making his first splurge in newspaper work. Ill health caused Decker to abandon journalism as a life work in 1900. He afterward graduated from the Michigan Law School, and is now City Attorney at Battle Creek, Mich. At the time Decker assumed charge of the paper, a new era of prosperity was dawning on the county. A cylinder press and other necessary machinery were purchased by a syndicate of Ely business men, and the old Washington hand-press, which had

done duty in the *News* office for years, was discarded. The paper was increased from five to seven columns. Rev. George F. Plummer, J. M. Lynch, W. J. Stewart and John D. Crosette edited the *News* for four years.

Former Governor D. S. Dickerson and Charles A. Walker bought the *White Pine News* in 1904, the latter severing his connection with the enterprise a year later. At the inception of the boom in the Ely district the *News* was issued twice a week. Houlder Huggins, of New York, who formerly had charge of the commissary for the Government at Ellis Island, bought the paper from Dickerson for a cash consideration of \$5,000. The *White Pine News* enjoys the distinction of being the first daily newspaper in Ely, the first issue appearing in December, 1906. The White Pine News Publishing Company furnished its readers with a complete Associated Press service, and boasted of a working force that would do credit to a metropolitan daily.

East Ely has been the home of the paper since September, 1907. It was published under the direction of A. Valjean as editor until July 1, 1910, when the daily was suspended, at which time the *News* was leased to the Investment News Bureau, controlled by C. S. Crain and S. C. Patrick, for a period of two years, becoming a Sunday morning weekly.

Mr. Crain retired from the paper in the fall of 1911, the publication continuing under the management of Mr. Patrick, who is its present editor, and issues a creditable eight-page weekly.



Engraved by E. B. H. H. H. H.

Charles H. H. H. H.

CHAPTER XXII.

EDUCATIONAL.

THE UNIVERSITY OF NEVADA.

BY SAMUEL BRADFORD DOTEN.

To any one familiar with Nevada as a whole, the most impressive feature of its life is the vastness of a territory over which a scanty population is scattered in towns and settlements, mining camps that grow and are lost again, ranches tucked away in the hills miles from neighbors, railroad towns where the business of a great world touches the interests of an isolated and scattered people. Nevada is an empire of long mountain ridges with valleys between them. There are herds of cattle and sheep on the mountains, mining camps here and there among the hills, fertile valleys wherever there is water, ranches on every little stream that trickles down from the canyons to the sage-brush levels below.

It may be that just this isolation of the people in towns far apart or on ranches far from neighbors has led them to feel that their children must have and shall have educational advantages which will keep them still a part of the big world beyond. Still a young State, isolation and separation have not formed in Nevada self-sufficient local communities with their own local traditions and ways of living. As a class, the people are highly intelligent and energetic; they desire for their children an education which will fit them to compete with the children of other States where opportunities for training are many and are readily accessible. This is the explanation of Nevada's support for her State University, an institution of which on the whole her people should be more proud than of anything else among her possessions.

When our first State Legislature convened in 1865, a law was passed in compliance with the first Morrill Act to establish an agricultural and mechanical college in Washoe County; but in the excitement and stress of those pioneer times the idea was lost sight of, and it did not come again

into prominence until nearly ten years later when the University was founded at Elko in 1873. The site was donated by the Central Pacific Railroad; and the people of Elko County spent over \$18,000 in the erection of the first building; following this, in 1875, by the construction of a dormitory which cost \$7,000 more. From the beginning, down to the present time, the interest and support given by Elko County to the University have never been wanting.

For ten years the University at Elko served a useful purpose. The instruction was fitted to the needs of the students and of the times; the small amount of money at hand allowed the hiring of only a slender faculty; but the instruction was thorough, and some of those early instructors became later men of prominence in the affairs of the State. Mr. J. E. Gignoux, later a prominent figure in mining and business affairs, had charge of the mining and metallurgical work of the infant college for two years. For a time E. S. Farrington, now Judge of the Supreme Bench, was the head of the little institution.

In 1885 it became clear that so long as the young school remained in Elko County it could do no more than serve the people of that county as a high school with some few beginnings of work of collegiate character. So, in 1885, the Legislature authorized the removal of the University to Reno in Washoe County, where in 1886 the first building was constructed, and the work of instruction was begun under Messrs. Willis and McCammon.

In 1887 the Board of Regents, Governor C. C. Stevenson, John M. Dormer and W. C. Dovey, chose the Hon. Leroy D. Brown, of Ohio, as President of the University. President Brown was a man of the highest ideals, of restless energy and intense earnestness. He surrounded himself with a little group of instructors who were destined to play a large part in the future history of the young college.

There is probably no situation more trying to a man of high character and high ideals than to be obliged to bring the great ideal into contact with that smallness of possibility which marks the beginning of things. President Brown's own education was of the best. He knew what was needed, and realized the standard and the nature of true education and training; yet he found himself in a situation where neither the preparatory training of the students nor the equipment which Nevada could possibly provide would enable him to get any results even approximating his knowl-

edge of what could be and what should be. Yet he worked with restless and unfailing energy, building, planning under the burden of a vision which he could not realize, working with a zeal which led him in later years to look back upon his presidency of the embryo university as the happiest years of his life. In 1890 he resigned to take up educational work in an older community where he won immediate success.

Of the first little group of teachers who formed that early faculty four names very dear to the students stand out and will be long remembered. Hannah K. Clapp, one of those pioneer instructors, took charge of the first classes in History and the English language. Walter McNab Miller organized the first classes in the group of natural sciences; Miss Kate N. Tupper planned and organized the first Normal School; while Robert D. Jackson took up the work of Mining and Metallurgy and the first classes in Mathematics.

Now in view of the later development of the growing college, it is only fair to stop for a moment and see what this beginning meant to the men and women who made it. It was pioneer work, begun by a group of teachers who were for the most part young and enthusiastic, and of little previous experience in educational work. They came from larger and older colleges, came with an ideal of work well done in older States to a community whose people and whose conditions they did not at all understand. A true educator feels in his heart that the finest of buildings and the most modern and perfect equipment fall far short of what they should be; he feels that a palace would be ennobled if turned into a school. But under pioneer conditions, life begins in a cabin. Education, like the rest of life, is not of surroundings but of the spirit.

Education gives to each generation the hard-won facts and principles of the centuries—but more, it gives to each new generation the power to win for itself farther and other facts and principles. Its ideal is a shrine where burns the white flame of truth, where torches are lighted and carried out into the darkness. It is noteworthy that among the earliest graduates this spirit of earnest study was so far developed and encouraged that in spite of the poverty of the school and its exceedingly limited facilities, its first-born children have gone far and have won high places in their chosen fields of work.

In the year 1890 Stephen A. Jones took charge of the University as its second President. President Jones differed markedly from President

Brown. He, too, was a man of excellent training, holding the degree of Ph. D. from the University of Bonn in Germany. A rather broad experience in business affairs made President Jones careful and conservative in regard to increases in faculty and equipment in view of the general financial depression of the time and the poverty of the State at large.

The small number of classes then organized and the elementary character of much of the work made it possible for President Jones to keep in close touch with the various departments; in fact, it was his habit to visit every class once a week supervising the instruction. President Jones held office until June, 1894, a period of four years which, with the presidency of Leroy D. Brown, marked the true beginning of the University of Nevada. The buildings had now increased to four in number, the first University Building now called Morrill Hall, the Dormitory, later named Stewart Hall after Senator Wm. M. Stewart, the Experiment Station now used as the physics building, and the old mining building which is now used by the experiment station. The course of study had been divided into a school of liberal arts, a school of agriculture, the State Normal School, the School of Mines, and the Commercial and Preparatory School, divisions for the most part still in existence. A large number of special students had been enrolled.

Resignations had thinned the ranks of the earlier faculty; but a new one of some twenty members, had been recruited. It is but fair to characterize the administration of President Jones as a period of careful and wise business management, steady progress under close personal supervision.

The funds at command of the University had been markedly increased by the passage of the Hatch Act and the Morrill Act of 1890 which together gave the young University annually an income of \$40,000 of federal funds for the support of the agricultural and mechanical college and the experiment station. From the time of passage of these acts, President Jones urged the development of the school along those lines of agriculture and mechanic arts which correspond to the purposes of the federal funds.

With the resignation of President Jones in 1894 and the appointment of a new President, came the beginning of an era of great progress in the history of the University. The succeeding twenty years mark the growth of the young institution from a period of struggle and promise, a reality always far below the ideal of its founders, into a time of progress and ex-

pansion always outstripping what seemed to be possible. For twenty years the University worked constantly nearer a realization of the hopes and ideals which so discouraged and yet so inspired the founders and the early faculties.

The third President of the University, Dr. J. E. Stubbs, brought to his new field of work a combination of qualities with experience which gave him an unusual and marked success. Educated in Ohio Wesleyan University, later a member of their faculty; later for six years City Superintendent of the Schools of Ashland, O., then for two years president of Baldwin University at Berea, O., for two years a student in the University of Berlin, he came to the University of Nevada in the very prime of his life and in a fullness of preparation for what has proven to be his life work.

Any analysis of a man's character and personality will fall short of the truth in large measure; but to those who have worked longest with Dr. Stubbs, two things stand out strongly in an estimate of the qualities which are at the bottom of his success: these two are an exceptional knowledge of men and their motives for action, and with this an ideal of the meaning and worth of education undimmed with the passage of the years and growing only clearer in contact with meager possibilities of its realization.

These two things, a knowledge of men and their motives, and undimmed hope and vision of the service that education can render them lie back of twenty years' progress in the University of Nevada.

The first five years of Dr. Stubbs' presidency were in many ways a period of reconstruction and reorganization. In 1899 there were nearly thirty names on the list of the faculty; and eight substantial brick buildings had been erected on the Campus, notable among them being Manzanita Hall, the college home for young ladies; Lincoln Hall, the young men's dormitory, and a well-equipped mechanical building.

The importance of these changes in housing and equipment was very great; but changes equally important had taken place in the faculty and in the course of study. In mathematics, in language, in the sciences of physics and chemistry, the entrance requirements had been raised; and plans were being formed for putting the instruction on a basis truly collegiate. But this could be accomplished only as the high schools of the State were made uniform in character and in their courses of study, for no State University can well advance faster than the grade of instruction

which the high schools below it can offer. So it became part of the policy of the University to advance the standards set by the high schools of the State, and thus to secure students better fitted to take up the work of the college.

At the same time it grew increasingly important to maintain at the University preparatory classes for such students as had been unable to gain access to high schools before coming to Reno.

The five years ending with 1899 closed the period of reconstruction and founded the general form of schools and courses of study in the University. The succeeding five years saw little change in buildings or equipment; though the addition of the President's Cottage, the hospital and the chemistry building were important forward steps. But the changes in the internal organization and policy of the institution were more marked. Constant effort had been made through nearly ten years to raise the standard of work in the university and to advance the courses of study in the high schools; and now this effort began to show excellent results. Work of really collegiate character was now being done in the University, while in the high schools the effect had been very marked. Even in the grammar schools the standard of work done had advanced rapidly to meet the grade of preparation demanded by the high schools. Probably in no other way has the influence of the University been more marked than in this: the rapid change, reorganization and progress of the entire school system of the State of Nevada in the years between 1894 and 1904. And this advance received its impetus in two ways—from the graduates who went into the schools as teachers, and from the advancing standards of instruction in the University itself.

Three more years passed; which in many ways were years of bitter struggle; for always the ideal of what should be, remained undimmed. At times it was a force for discouragement, oftener one of inspiration. It is well worth noting that during all this period just as little money as might be was spent on the appearance of buildings and grounds, just as much as possible on the character of the instruction and on the equipment of the departments. Once when Dr. Stubbs was reproached in a half-joking way about the raggedness of the lawns on which two score Pah-Ute Indians were grubbing dandelions, he turned to the speaker and said, "The University must develop from the inside first; I have al-

ways tried to make the instruction and the equipment of the very best; and there hasn't been money enough for that, let alone anything else!"

Few will ever know just how much courage it took in those early, formative years of struggle to be true to the ideal; and yet never to become discouraged with the realities of the situation. At every session of the Nevada Legislature it became Dr. Stubbs's mission to explain to legislators often indifferent, sometimes openly hostile, the plans and purposes of the University and to ask for increasing sums for its support. At times it appeared as though all the newspapers of the State were arrayed against the University, heaping up a mass of complaint and uninformed criticism wholly unfair; but again, editors of clearer insight and fairer view came to the front in the press with editorials that rang with true insight into the real meaning of the struggling young college.

In every session of the Legislature friends were found or were won, friends who caught the fire of the spirit which was in Dr. Stubbs's ideal of what the University could be and should be. To anybody who is familiar with Nevada as a whole, with the immensity of the territory and the isolation of the towns and the ranches, with the character of the industries which have been developed, the attitude of the State toward the University has on the whole been marvelously generous. When the taxable valuations of the State are considered it is clear that no other State in the Union has dealt more liberally with its University than has Nevada.

Yet, at the very best, it was quite impossible for any State with so small taxable valuations and so scattered a population to provide buildings and equipment which would meet modern standards and ever-growing needs in technical education. This was especially true in regard to the School of Mines. Already, some fifteen years after the first of the boys from the Nevada School of Mines had gone out to seek positions they had won for themselves high places and abundant recognition. Some were in Mexico, others in Australia, others in Africa. Throughout western America, Nevada men were found here and there hard at work in mine and mill, respected and successful. But from the very first they worked under a handicap. Graduates of the older eastern colleges, men from the best technical schools of Europe, men of the finest training were competing for place and success with men from our little school of mines with its limited finances and equipment.

And this was at a time when the engineering world was moving for-

ward very rapidly. New mechanical appliances and new forces were displacing the old in the whole field of modern mining. Chemistry and physics were making rapid strides; the instruction necessary for the mining engineer was rapidly becoming more involved and technical. Nevada had done her best to meet the new conditions. Our high schools had multiplied; and they had taken from the University the burden of teaching many subjects that should be presented in secondary schools. Still the struggle was hard; Nevada's mining school had come into keenest competition with the mining schools of older and richer States where the sheer force of wealth made it possible to give a higher grade of instruction.

Then, just at this critical time, the son of a pioneer did for the sons of other pioneers just the thing which was needed at just the time when it was needed most. In the year 1907 Clarence H. Mackay and his mother, Mrs. Mary Louise Mackay, gave to the University the Mackay School of Mines; and it is this gift with the other gifts from Mr. Mackay and his mother which have been the beginning of a new era in the University of Nevada. It is in this later period, from 1908 to 1913 that the University has seemed to come nearest the ideal of its founders and to offer to the students an equipment and surroundings better fitting its great mission of training and developing human lives for high service.

The Mackay Mining Building is a many-sided gift. Signifying many things it symbolizes many others. First of all, it is an exceedingly well-planned and suitable construction. The materials are permanent, solid walls of brick on a foundation of cemented stone, windows, doors, seats and tables of oak, floors of maple; the kind of construction which costs effort, time and skill in the highest degree. In the planning of the Mackay Mining Building the central idea was simply—use.

But just as a human life that is useful in the highest degree becomes a beautiful life; just so a building whose central idea is use, service, in the highest degree takes on a beauty of its own, or at least a fitness quite akin to beauty. The Mackay School of Mines is a beautiful building. It is a structure exceedingly plain and simple; but symbolizing in every line honesty, dignity, and permanence. In its type of architecture and construction, in its combination of service with character, it is a worthy monument to John W. Mackay in whose memory it was erected.

At times, it seems as though the man in whose memory the building was given were present in a tangible form as well as in spirit. The finest

sculptures of Greece, the best-loved paintings of the Middle Ages were records in stone or fresco of things which the artist believed to be very noble. Conceived in that same spirit, Gutzon Borglum's statue of John W. Mackay is a statement in bronze of the nobility which the artist felt and recognized in the character of the pioneer of the old Comstock.

The Mackay School of Mines and the statue are things of worth; and they are set as things of worth should be placed—in beautiful surroundings. They stand facing the sun; at the north side of the Mackay Quadrangle, a great green lawn bordered with trees and broad walks where the old grey sage-brush had grown for centuries before. These gifts, the school with all that such a school stands for, and the statue with all that such a statue means, set as they are in beautiful surroundings, marked the termination of the pioneer period in the University and the opening of a period in which the work of the school may be done without the handicap of scanty equipment and dire poverty.

But Mr. Mackay and his mother felt that unless they were sure that the varying prosperity of the State of Nevada would not affect the University and its School of Mines, they could not feel sure that the building and equipment, however generously provided, would reach always their highest usefulness. They, therefore, set aside annually some \$6,000 for the support of the school until such time as it should be thoroughly organized. Later, Mr. Mackay and his mother concluded to take that farther step which would make the instruction as excellent and as permanent as the building and its surroundings; and so they endowed the Mackay School of Mines by setting aside stock enough in the Mackay Companies to pay for the best of instruction in mining and metallurgy for all the years to come.

Still, after all, the things which went straight to the hearts of the student body and made Clarence Mackay and his mother wearers of the big "N" forever were not the statue, not the quadrangle, nor even yet the school of mines, but a gift which touches every student in the very vital matter of healthy recreation and sport—the Mackay Athletic Field and Training Quarters. To see the student-body, boys and girls alike, with half the pop-

THE MACKAY STATUE.—The Hon. Sam P. Davis, then Controller of the State of Nevada, was largely instrumental in securing the Borglum statue of John W. Mackay. Mr. Davis conceived the idea of placing such a statue in the grounds of the State Capitol at Carson City, Nevada. He visited Mr. Clarence Mackay in New York City and secured the promise of the statue. Later, when Mr. Mackay became deeply interested in the University of Nevada it was deemed more suitable to place this noble bronze figure in front of the Mackay School of Mines, where it now stands.

ulation of the city massed on the great stone amphitheater to the west of the field, sheltered from the afternoon sun and the wind by the graceful colonnade above them, colors flying, horns blowing, flags waving—cheering the home team on to victory or to a brave fight against heavy odds is to catch an inspiring glimpse of what play can mean in a college. And then, to go over across the field to the training quarters and to note the fine two-story brick building with its tasteful architecture and supreme fitness for its purpose, is to gain a new respect for the care and the training of the body.

Today the Mackay Athletic Field is one of the show places of Nevada and in all western America there is not such another amphitheatre for athletic contests. These gifts, school, quadrangle, the noble statue, the field with its training quarters, mark 1907 and 1909 as years when noble history was made for the University.

In all its larger outlines we have followed the story of the University of Nevada up to the year 1909, a period of some thirty-five years from its beginnings in Elko down to the time when the generosity and largeness of view of Clarence Mackay and his mother had made possible the day of larger plans and progress.

Still, this large outline of the University's history is much like an artist's first crayon sketch of a picture whose detail of flesh and blood must be worked out in color. Yet we can do no more than to leave it as a sketch unfinished; for the vitality and color can be supplied in detail only by the students themselves as they come and go as the years pass by.

As the years passed, one group of regents succeeded another, each group striving to carry forward the work to the best standard that circumstances would allow. It was a task paid only by the gratitude of the people of the State, or by a consciousness of work well done. W. E. F. Deal, H. S. Starrett, W. W. Booher, J. N. Evans, Oscar Smith, J. E. Bray, Charles Lewers, Charles Henderson, Frank Williams, and a score of others worked with unselfish earnestness in the building of the University, giving to the work days that could scarcely be spared from their own busy lives, building always on work well done before.

One group of instructors followed another likewise; so that now when the older alumni come back to the campus they see hardly one familiar face. This is one of the great handicaps of the younger and smaller colleges, the difficulty of keeping good men and women in the ranks of the

faculty. Some find better places elsewhere, others feel the necessity of getting into more remunerative fields of work; some grow worn with labor and fall asleep forever; but to the boys and girls who know them they are treasured names, to be remembered always.

Among all those names none was ever dearer than that of Miss Hannah K. Clapp, so long the librarian of the University; for she was strong, kind and wise; and to the very end of her working years she was a power for good and for progress in the upbuilding of the young and struggling college. And, too, as long as one of the old students of the years between 1891 and 1912 shall live, Richard Brown will not be forgotten. "Dick," at the head of the boys of Lincoln Hall, and in charge of the whole school in the dining hall was the biggest-hearted and best man who ever lived—in the judgment of every student of those days on the campus. And then there was Walter McNab Miller who founded the work in biological science later carried forward so ably by Peter Frandsen and others. Professor Miller was closely associated with Fred. H. Hillman, whose work in certain fields of applied botany was of a character so high that it met enthusiastic acceptance all over America. In scientific spirit, in the broad application of his studies, in devotion to the essential spirit of experiment station work in agriculture Professor Hillman was ten years in advance of his time.

Nor will Mrs. Mary W. Emery's unselfish and earnest work for the upbuilding of the State Normal School be soon forgotten. In the work of the teachers whom she trained, her influence extended over the whole of Nevada. And then there was Henry Thurtell, dean of the university, who built up the department of mathematics; N. E. Wilson, loved by all the students, who made chemistry a vital subject in every department of the University and yet all the while kept in closest touch with the student life; with Dr. J. E. Church, who built up the department of Latin setting standards of scholarship that were felt throughout the University and the schools of the State.

The mining boys of the old time will never forget Professor R. D. Jackson, who made the present school of mines possible by making the first school of mines a force felt to the present day in the work of its graduates all over the world, nor Dr. J. Warne Phillips, who built up courses in physics which made up for many deficiencies in the other departments.

And it would be unfair to fail to mention Robert Lewers, the honored

vice-president of the University, who built up a commercial school which has laid a sure foundation for many a successful business career, or Miss Laura deLaguna and Miss Kate Bardenwerper, who founded the departments of French and Domestic Science.

All these are honored names; for they belong to the most difficult and trying period of the history of the University, the time when with very little to build upon, the courses of instruction still followed were being founded; and the work of the young school was being brought up slowly toward the standard set by the older and wealthier colleges.

It seems unfair, it is manifestly unfair to omit the name of any one, regent, professor or instructor who has taken any part in the building of the University through its forty years of steady progress; but the scope of the present article makes it utterly out of the question to do more than mention just a few of the earlier names of men and women who struggled with the hardest problems of the formative period of the University. To the faculty, gone or now at work or yet to come, honor must always be due. Many a man of the best preparation has spent the best years of his life here out in the West, out of touch with all that glowing enthusiasm that comes from daily contact with the best men of the larger colleges, isolated and alone in his chosen field of thought, working to give the boys and girls of Nevada the facts and principles and something of the spirit and point of view that make up his science, dying perhaps as Professor Thomas W. Cowgill, the founder of the department of English, and Professor Charles P. Brown, died through overwork in the service of the University.

The last few years of the University's history up to 1913 have seen fewer changes. There has been steadier growth perhaps, without any great change in the personnel of the faculty; and it is but fair to hope that it may become a tradition with our own University as with the larger and older institutions—to hold good men and women in the faculty, to keep them until they become a part of the State of Nevada in thought and spirit, understanding the State and its people, and thus understanding the problems of its schools and its homes.

The final period of this sketch begins with the election of the present Board of Regents (1913), Messrs. H. E. Reid, A. A. Codd, J. W. O'Brien, Charles B. Henderson and Walter E. Pratt. They form a group of business and professional men who have taken the deepest personal interest in the work of the University. Their administration is full of the vigor of

the times ; they have familiarized themselves completely with the details of the organization and work. They have made changes of an importance so great as to constitute a new and modern period.

Under their administration, the preparatory department, which in earlier years did so much for pupils remote from high schools, was done away with completely. Yet this has resulted immediately in a marked increase in the attendance in the University itself.

They further strengthened the work in engineering by securing from the Legislature of 1911 the generous gift of an electrical building in which, with improved facilities and appliances, this highly technical subject may be presented in a way that fits its supreme importance to every side of modern civilization.

Then, too, in these later years, the school of agriculture has made a marked and sudden development which has brought it up from the position of the most backward and neglected course in the University to the one whose enrollment of students is longest. This is largely because the school has been brought into close touch with the real agriculture of the State at large, an agriculture which must always center around the stock-raising industry. The crops raised in Nevada are many ; they will become more specialized as the State grows older and more roads and railroads are built ; but always there will be vastly more range land than farm land ; and always the stock-raising industry must be our primary form of agriculture. Sheep and cattle in Nevada must always be most important products of ranch and range.

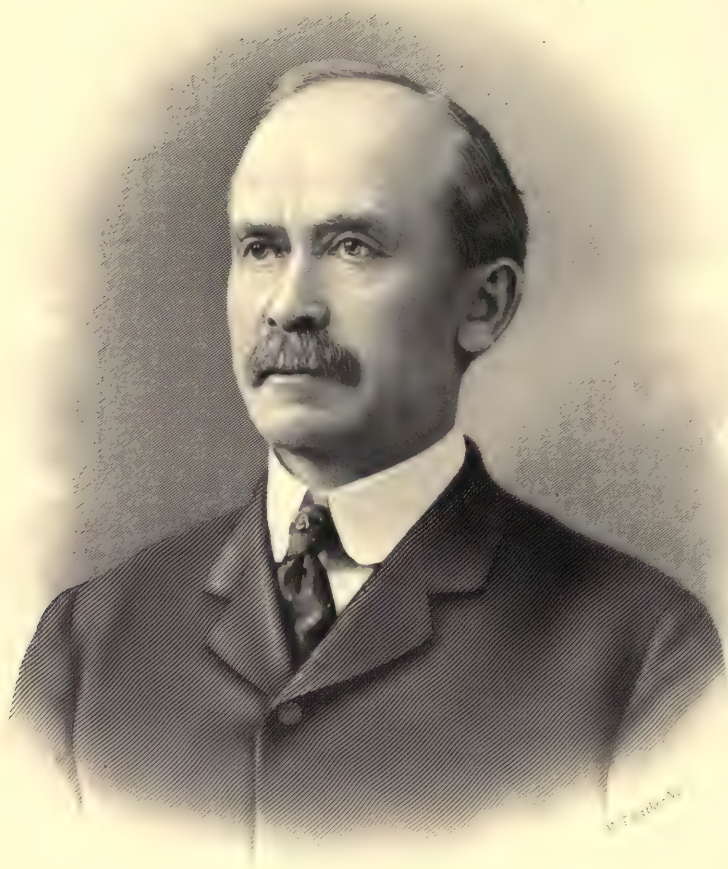
So through the building of a strong department of animal husbandry in the University, corresponding somewhat to the primary instruction of the stock-raising industry in the State at large, the school of agriculture has come into a vital relation with the agriculture of the State as a whole. The founder of the department, Professor Gordon H. True, has built up a herd of prize-winners which in the years between 1910 and 1913 made an enviable record in stock shows of the Pacific Slope. Likewise, the development of a department of horticulture under Doctor P. B. Kennedy has added greatly to the success of the school of agriculture.

Much could be said of the work of the Experiment Station. Like the college it was handicapped in the beginning and kept back by the poverty of the institution with which it was affiliated. At first it seemed imperative that the investigators at work in the station would also be teachers

in the college. In fact, it would have been vastly more difficult to pass through the pioneer period in the University had it not been for the federal funds with which the station should be maintained. Much of the time and thought of the men was thus diverted into the classroom. Yet much true experimental work and investigation was accomplished and published, some of it taking rank with the best work of its kind published in America. In later years the Office of Experiment Stations at Washington, D. C., has felt that a growing exactness in experimental work and an increasing depth and precision in investigation demand that the men of the experiment station shall give to research and investigation the fullest measure of time and thought. Only in this way, through a genuine study of fundamental problems can agriculture, or the teaching of agricultural escape from the blind treadmill round of tradition.

So in this most recent period of history of the University the regents have come to regard the money sent out by the Federal Government to the Nevada Experiment Station as a trust fund, of which the administrative officers of the school are trustees who in simple integrity will apply the fund in full to the purposes for which it is appropriated.

Now, aside from the changes already noted, the board of regents holding office at the present time (1913) have made one other change of marked and peculiar importance. They have instituted thorough-going changes in the financial system of the school. Year by year the finances of the University have become more complex as more and different funds had to be administered to definite ends. After the changes which brought in the modern period, it seems very fitting and wise to give to the University just such a system of accounting as would govern the expenditure of large sums in any well-organized business house. The changed financial system relieves the President of a burden which he should never have been called upon to bear, the burden of looking after the accounting and bookkeeping of the institution. In March, 1912, the regents appointed Mr. C. H. Gorman as the first comptroller, under whose supervision a most exact and modern system of bookkeeping was installed; the old accounts were checked, audited and balanced. Every department of the University was given its own separate appropriation, a thing immensely desirable and important since it leads straight toward efficiency and economy. All this is in line with the recommendation of the Carnegie Institution for the Advancement of Teaching, which regards most strict and careful account-



J. Asst. Sec.

ing as the first fundamental to the successful conduct of a school, just as much as it is the earliest fundamental in the conduct of any form of business.

A further change of marked importance in the financial system of the University was made early in 1913. At the request of the board of regents, the appropriation of State funds to the support of the University by the Nevada Legislature was made in the form of a percentage of the total tax levy of the State instead of a lump sum.

By the old plan, the stated sum, all the funds must be used by January 1st of the succeeding legislative year. This left the institution without funds for three months at the beginning of each such year. Borrowing became necessary, and the work of many of the departments was hampered. Under the new plan, suggested by Controller Gorman of the University, funds will be available throughout the year and the work can be carried steadily forward without hindrance.

Now as we glance over the years, especially the last twenty years of the history of the University, it becomes plain that the school has cost Nevada thousands of dollars every year; and it is equally plain that as the years go by this cost must continue; it is only natural, therefore, to ask just what the institution has been able to return to the State in repayment for all this expense. The effect of the founding and growth of the University has been very far-reaching.

In the first place, of course, it has provided education, training and fitness for life, to a very large number of young men and young women who are thus given careers that would have been impossible to them otherwise. From the very first the graduates have taken and have held high rank in competition with the graduates of older and richer institutions. This was due to two things, to the spirit of initiative and independence that is characteristic of the people of Nevada, and to the fact that they learned to feel that the work of the class-room is but the beginning of study. The most successful men who have graduated from the Nevada School of Mines have been just those men who have studied harder and have learned far more after graduation than before.

Then, too, the University, through its normal school, has provided hundreds of well-trained teachers for the schools of the State. Probably nothing has been of more importance than this: to send into the common schools of Nevada young men and women who, knowing the conditions

of the State at large, with the strongest sympathy and understanding for the people themselves, will take the children and train them into lives of greater usefulness.

But wholly aside from these things, disregarding entirely the training of the children and the training of the young men and women for special professions, the University has been a center of light and good influence for the whole State. In the years from 1906 to 1909 it became more and more apparent that unless the moral conditions of the State were improved the University would not grow into its full power and could not prosper as it should. This meant that the State would fail in its duty of preparing its children as they should be prepared and fitted for life, simply because of a lamentable laxity of social and moral conditions—an evil heritage from pioneer days.

The fight was a very bitter one; but under the leadership of the University, gambling was thrown out of the State in 1909, let us hope forever. For gambling is a thing beyond excuse. No living man can advance even a form of argument in its favor. The question is this: shall we lure men to vice and ruin them for an accursed profit; or shall we live clean lives and educate our children to live better lives. The University led the winning fight. Let us hope that it may win many another until its standard of living becomes an uplifting force throughout Nevada and wherever its graduates may go.

One of the principal objections to the old system by which the State supported its University was the fact that at each session of the Legislature the appropriation was made as a lump sum, which could be drawn upon up to January 1st of the succeeding legislative year. This left the school without funds for three months at the beginning of each legislative year.

NEVADA'S PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

BY JOHN EDWARDS BRAY.

At the very organization of Nevada as a Territory, in 1861, provision was made for a system of public schools supported by county taxation; and while still a territory, provision was further made for district taxation.

Enlarged provision was made in the State Constitution adopted in Sep-

tember, 1864. The land grants from the National Government for school purposes were a great aid in the matter and the income from these, in connection with State, county and district taxation, enabled the people to establish and maintain a good system of public schools and to prepare for the establishment of a University for which they made provision in the State Constitution. Soon these were supplemented by national financial support in the Morrill and Hatch acts.

Though, as a State, Nevada was born in the storm and stress of the Civil War, its people did not forget that general intelligence is essential to good government. The system, as adopted in 1865, provided for school districts throughout the State, for compulsory taxation in the various counties and district taxation whenever the latter was desired by the people; and to these sources of support were to be added the income on investments of the permanent school fund and the proceeds of a State tax not to exceed twenty cents on the hundred dollars of assessed valuation. The office of county superintendent was established. The traveling expenses of this officer were to be paid by the county in each instance. He was to look after the schools of his county, but no qualifications were prescribed and his salary was at the mercy of the County Commissioners.

From 1865 to 1885, good schools were built up in all the larger towns, able teachers being brought in from other States for these positions. But as there was no required course of study, each school was a law unto itself as to what it should do and how much, as to the order in which work should be done and how. The plan of uniform text-books, adopted in 1865, helped to some extent in keeping schools along the same general lines of work, though changes more or less radical occurred at each change of teachers or principal. As might be expected, the schools were good and bad "in spots."

The rural schools fared worse in the matter of aid from the State or county through supervision, as they were seldom reached by a school official who understood school work or requirements. The State Superintendent could not visit them, and the County Superintendent's salary was too small for him to undertake any systematic work; and then he might be only a politician, and what could he do for the school? Wherever there was a well-qualified, live teacher, in town or country, there was a good school. The trouble lay largely in the fact that there were no school officials to see that such teachers were provided for the rural schools;

and such teachers were by no means the rule in the town or city districts even. However, the people took much pride in their schools and liberally supported them.

- About the year 1887 the County Superintendent as an elective officer was dispensed with on the score of economy, and his duties were devolved on the District Attorney, who became *ex-officio* County Superintendent. This temporarily ended school supervision in Nevada, and an agitation was begun for State supervision by competent educators who should receive therefor fair salaries and who should devote their entire time to supervision.

The opening of the State University in Reno in 1885 largely aided in centering interest on educational matters throughout the State; and the presidents and the professors of the University, as the institution grew, took a large interest in the State high schools, attended the State and County Institutes held, and were present at many meetings of school principals and teachers, who were endeavoring to improve the schools and to secure unified courses of study and instruction under needed supervision.

The University influence for better schools was strong, and it grew with the years. The cordial coöperation of the President and professors with the leading teachers of the State acted as a unifying force for the high schools, and indirectly benefited the elementary schools. Foremost among the University men and women who aided in this work were Presidents Leroy D. Brown, S. A. Jones and J. E. Stubbs; Professors Rob't Lewers, Kate N. Tupper, Henry Thurtell, J. E. Church, T. W. Cowgill and Romanzo Adams.

Among the public school officials, principals and teachers who were prominent in agitation and organization for improved school conditions—some of them having stood stoutly for supervision by State authority and at State expense for some years prior to 1887—were: Principals D. R. Sessions, C. S. Young, W. C. Dovey, Orvis Ring, H. C. Cutting and John Edwards Bray, each of whom served later as State Superintendent of Public Instruction; H. H. Howe, J. N. Flint, A. H. Willis, D. A. Ewing, Mills Van Wagenen, H. F. Baker, W. W. Booher, R. C. Story, E. E. Caine, M. R. Averill, Gilbert C. Ross and C. R. McLane. Through the action of the educators named, and many others, in committee meetings, in County and State Institutes and in educational associations organized for school improvement and inspiration, public sentiment was some-

what aroused and partial unification of school work voluntarily secured in the larger schools.

A considerable number of well qualified Nevada teachers had gone into the schools as a result of University and normal school training and of the State Uniform Examination Act of 1893.

But more and more it was realized that legislation was needed, that a radical change in the system was necessary; that there must be larger powers vested in the State Board of Education and provision made for intelligent care and oversight of the schools through direct State supervision.

The Reorganization Act.—While the coöperation of the University with the teachers of the State, in the absence of definite school organization and supervision, has been an important factor in Nevada's educational growth, our large progress in public school education dates from the Reorganization Act of 1907. That epoch-making school legislation was the final outcome of over twenty years of discussion and agitation on the part of teachers and school officers who realized the need of a more efficient school system. In the two years immediately preceding the enactment of that legislation, Doctor Romanzo Adams ably led the movement that culminated in the unanimous adoption by the teachers of the plan of reorganization. This plan had the inspiring and influential approval of my distinguished predecessor, State Superintendent Orvis Ring, and it was presented to the Legislature of 1907 with the cordial support of all the educational forces of the State.

The system thus inaugurated did away with the varieties and inequalities of county supervision, substituting therefor unified supervision by the State. It makes directly for efficiency in the schools by bringing to every teacher and school board the advantage, strength and inspiration of State aid in their work, given by a trained supervising force. It makes directly for economy in school funds by preventing the waste of time and energy resulting from poor teaching under the disorganizing conditions theretofore existing in Nevada schools.

The poor teacher is early located and is helped to better work if she has it in her to do it. The inexperienced rural teacher is aided and encouraged by the assistance of a qualified and experienced superintendent. The rural schools and teachers are in large need of attention from a competent and authoritative source, as they are in the main distant from

centers of association and industry; and the larger share of attention is being given to them, to the end that the children therein may receive the greatest service possible from the money appropriated for their instruction.

By the Reorganization Act the various County Superintendents were done away with, with the consent and to the satisfaction of those *ex-officio* officials. The State Superintendent and five Deputy State Superintendents took the place of these with larger powers and duties. Any one could be County Superintendent if elected District Attorney, but a high standard of qualifications is required in the Deputy State Superintendents. Each, in addition to other qualifications that may be required by the State Board of Education, must have, prior to his appointment, five years' successful experience in teaching and a Nevada high school State teacher's certificate.

Through the State Board of Education, composed of the Governor of the State, the President of the State University and the Superintendent of Public Instruction, courses of study for the elementary and high schools are prepared and promulgated; and all the schools, unless specifically excepted by the State Board of Education, are required to use these courses, provision being made for high schools to diversify their courses to the advantage of the students by selecting from a list of accredited subjects.

Through the controlling power of the State board all the schools are kept properly articulated, the primary and grammar schools are placed on a definite basis, and preparation for entrance to high schools is improved and made substantially uniform. Through the same agency the various high schools are kept in touch with each other, and all are stimulated to coöperate for better preparation of students for the activities of real life, as well as for advanced work in college or University for those who may desire it.

Through the deputies the State Superintendent is enabled to reach into every school district in the State, suggesting improvement where necessary; informing, advising, commending. Radiating from the office of the State Board of Education through the State Superintendent, instructions and directions of similar import go out to school boards and teachers in every part of the State.

Safeguarding the proper distribution of school moneys by supervising





A. Cutting

the school census in the interests of fairness to all sections of the State, apportioning the school moneys, examining teachers and granting and renewing certificates—all done through the department of education—are additional features worthy of mention. These powers make for similar and equitable disposition, by trained educators, of questions and policies affecting directly every district in the State.

Increased public interest in the schools, directly resulting from State supervision, brought dissatisfaction with the school curriculum. Individual teachers had voiced this for many years, but there had been, under the old system, no way of readily bringing before the people as a whole the need of better things; but under the new system, public sentiment was at last being crystallized for good schools, and it began to dawn upon the people in Nevada, as in other States, that school work was too technical and narrow; that there should be something more than head-and-heart-training—though each of these is fundamental; *that the schools should be more responsive to the life needs of boys and girls under the new industrial conditions of the country.*

In response to popular interest and demand, voiced by many teachers and school officers, the Legislature of 1909 passed an act authorizing industrial education in schools, and a movement was at once begun in several districts to make manual training, domestic science and commercial courses features of regular school work.

In August, 1910, Reno put into the elementary grades manual training and domestic science, with modern equipment; Goldfield and Elko put in manual training. In August, 1911, Ely installed manual training; in September, 1912, Wells put in some phases of manual training and domestic arts; and in November, Winnemucca put in manual training. Strong commercial courses have been put in the high schools at Goldfield, Ely, Reno, Tonopah, Winnemucca and Eureka, while the county high schools at Panaca, Las Vegas and Fallon, and the district high school at Dayton, have arranged to install such courses in September, 1913.

The Lyon County High School at Yerington put in a course in practical agriculture in September last, which is going to be of great usefulness to the people of the rich and promising region in that portion of Lyon County; and the introduction of agricultural courses in other high schools is now under serious consideration. Very favorable places for

such work are Elko, Lovelock, Fallon, Gardnerville, Las Vegas and Panaca.

In the new high school building in Reno, quite complete courses in manual and domestic arts have been provided for on a much larger and more diversified scale than heretofore attempted in Nevada. Very large life-values are certain to be realized for the boys and girls who are privileged to attend this school, if they are permitted, as in my judgment they should be, to specialize on the things that will most concern them as homemakers and citizens when out of school.

It is hoped that Carson City may next year install courses in manual training and domestic arts, and a full commercial course. In the interest of the boys and girls of the State Orphans' Home, who in accordance with the law are now being educated in the schools of the city, the State has offered financial aid for equipping and maintaining such courses in the Carson schools.

These movements are but the beginning of a large reshaping of our school courses. Room will be made for the new work by partial substitution in some cases and by elimination of unimportant matter and details in the text-books, a work that is already under way in Nevada.

In the encouragement and support given this work, the Department of Education has had the active and able aid of many leading teachers of the State, some of whom have come to us from other States and Territories in the last few years, bringing with them a wealth of ideas and experiences that have been invaluable to Nevada's school progress.

The demand for changes in the course of study was soon supplemented by a demand for better trained teachers and better salaries. The former is being gradually met by better and wider facilities for education in our State and by a better class of teachers from other States, for Nevada has never yet been able to supply much more than three-fifths of its teachers. With a strong college education now maintained at our State University and county normal training schools provided for through State aid in the various counties, we ought to get quite a large number of Nevada's young men and women into the educational harness. An average increase of about 20 per cent. has been made in salaries in the five years from and including 1907, in central and western Nevada, though the salaries are still insufficient in many schools to secure and hold first-class experienced teachers.

There are in Nevada to-day comparatively few very poor schools, one perhaps where there were five, six years ago. State supervision, through expert inspection, has thrown the limelight of publicity on every school, and the improvement resulting has been marked. The desire for better schools has been implanted everywhere, and there will be no rest until very large improvements in matter and quality of school work are everywhere manifest.

Another evidence of growing interest in education under the new system is the large increase in high schools and high school attendance. There are now approximately 1,000 students doing high school work in the State, as compared with 600 six years ago—an increase of $66\frac{2}{3}$ per cent.

This enlarged attendance has been made possible by improved high school facilities furnished by counties and districts. With the further extension of opportunities for training in the industries and vocations of life now on Nevada, a continued increase will be noted, though all our high school work is now based on the four-year course.

All the larger high schools of the State are accredited to the University of Nevada, the University of California and Stanford University. This fact sufficiently tells the story of the present excellency of work and attainment in Nevada schools.

As an outgrowth of an improved sentiment for good schools, a taste for better school buildings has developed. Old buildings have been repaired, remodeled and painted, and new buildings of modern design, convenience and equipment have been erected.

More than \$650,000 has been invested in the last four years and is in process of investment, for new school buildings in Reno, Goldfield, Elko, Ely, East Ely, McGill, Panaca, Las Vegas, Yerington, Winnemucca, Tonopah, Lovelock, Wells and other towns. Reno alone in that time has bonded itself for \$350,000 for grounds, buildings and equipment. In this connection it would be well to remember that Reno has a population of less than 15,000. Tonopah one year ago bonded itself for \$50,000 for a modern new school building, and industrial courses will be installed there the coming school year. The remarkable school interest thus shown is typical of the aroused educational sentiment of Nevada.

And it should be noted here that most of these buildings have been equipped with shops and laboratories, are heated by furnaces, are well lighted and ventilated, and are thoroughly sanitary. In some of them

are spacious and well-furnished assembly halls, used for school meetings, school socials and entertainments, and thus they are in line for becoming what schools ought to be—*social and community centers for the people of the various districts.*

I believe we are rapidly approaching the time when the school buildings of Nevada, as are those of Wisconsin and several of the more progressive States, will be freely used by the people—under proper regulations, of course—for public meetings of all kinds; and why not? The people own them; they have hundreds of thousands of dollars invested in them in Nevada; and to use them as at present for a few hours a day, for a little over half the time yearly, entails a waste in investment that would not be tolerated in any other kind of public business.

Each city, town or community forms a school district, having for its control and management a board of school trustees, which by law is a body corporate. In the sparsely settled portions of the State—and these make up the most of the State at present—wherever there are five or more school census children in reasonable proximity to each other, a school is established by the County Commissioners on petition of the residents.

So far as the writer knows, no other State in the Union provides so liberally for such small groups of children. Our big neighbor, California, requires fifteen such children to establish a new district, and there must be an average daily attendance of more than five in order to have such district continued.

The district school board has general and special charge of all school property, hires the teacher, furnishes supplies, etc., paying all bills against the district by orders on the County Auditor, the Auditor drawing his warrant on the County Treasurer therefor. All school moneys of district boards and county boards are in the custody of the County Treasurer.

Many of the best citizens in town and country districts are giving freely of their time and energy for education in the capacity of School Trustees.

The public schools of Nevada—the county high schools excepted—are supported in the main by money supplied from the State and county school funds which are apportioned to the various school districts by the Superintendent of Public Instruction.

When the money thus supplied is insufficient, any district may, by action



A. A. Codd

of its trustees or by vote of its electors, impose a direct tax on the property of the district sufficient for its needs.

Nevada has over \$2,000,000 in its Irreducible State School Fund. This is invested in State and United States bonds, the interest on which is semi-annually distributed to the schools. An annual State school tax of 6 cents on the one hundred dollars is distributed in the same manner. The State school tax was increased by the Legislature of 1911 to 10 cents on the hundred dollars. Some of the counties assessed and paid this tax and others assessed and paid only the old rate of 6 cents. But at the special session of 1912 the Legislature repealed the 10-cent tax, as an economy measure. From interest on deferred payments on State school land contracts and from surplus State library funds, some money also goes yearly to the schools.

From the foregoing various sources the State Distributive School Fund is made up. It varies somewhat from year to year, but for four years has aggregated something over \$200,000 yearly. The county tax in the various counties, which must be at least 20 cents on the hundred dollars, brings to the schools approximately \$250,000 annually, and the districts raise for various school purposes, about \$150,000 more.

The money derived from all sources approximate \$600,000 annually, varying, of course, with valuations, rates and district needs, which is used to educate approximately 13,000 school children, most of whom are enrolled in the public schools of the State. It must be remembered that these children are scattered over a sparsely settled territory, nearly twice as large as the New England States; that they are grouped in districts of varying school population, many having but five children, others having from five to ten, from ten to fifteen, and so on to Reno, which has about two thousand.

There are eleven county high schools in the State, each supported wholly by a county high school tax. The counties maintain these liberally, and they are of great educational value to those who attend them and as stimuli for the rural schools.

We are now investing in Nevada about \$600,000 yearly for educational purposes. Our population numbers about 85,000, living in sixteen counties and scattered over 110,000 square miles of territory. The entire cost of State supervision by Deputy Superintendents is \$15,025 per annum, as shown by the appropriation made by the last Legislature. This is \$939.06

for each of the sixteen counties of the State, which includes salaries and traveling and office expenses of the Deputy Superintendents; it does not, of course, include the support of the State Superintendent's office, as that would have to be maintained under any form of supervision.

County supervision in many States costs from 50 to 100 per cent. more, and it has proven unsatisfactory. In New York they have to supplement it by State supervision with a large force of specialists, in order that the school work might have practical and unified direction. Iowa, California, Nebraska and other States have a separate system for every county, and the people are agitating for supplemental unifying supervision by the States.

Reno pays its City Superintendent \$3,000 a year, and a part of the salaries of six principals under him is for supervision work. Goldfield, with but a little over one-third the school population of Reno, pays its City Superintendent \$3,000 a year, and three principals under him are paid in part for supervision work. Tonopah pays its City Superintendent \$2,500 a year. And so with Ely and other towns. In Elko the principal of the district school gets \$2,000 a year for supervising the work of but nine teachers, his entire time practically being devoted to supervision. In all these cases the money expended for supervision is considered a necessary and wise expenditure, both from educational and business standpoints. It insures right methods of work and economy of time and effort on the part of its teaching force, and unifies the work of all. If this supervision work is necessary and important at the centers of education, how much more so in the small towns and isolated rural districts, which must depend entirely for right work on aid and direction from the outside.

The percentage of cost for county supervision in several States examined is from 3 per cent. to 5 per cent.; and in some of the cities it runs 8 per cent. or more. With us the cost for county and State is less than 3 per cent. Considering the extent of territory to be covered—much of which must be reached by automobile, stage or team—the cost of travel, the qualifications of the supervising force and the results to the schools, Nevada has been most fortunate in launching a successful reform movement in general supervision at a cost so comparatively light.

The business of training teachers for Nevada schools is making some progress. In addition to the provision for the large training of teachers in the College of Education at the University of Nevada, arrangements

have been made for some normal training to be given in the various counties.

The Legislature of 1909 made provisions for county normal training schools to be established and maintained in the various counties of our State, under certain conditions. The Board of County Commissioners and the County Boards of Education, in a given county, were to unite in a preliminary establishment of a normal training school for the county, the Commissioners guaranteeing the necessary funds for equipment, etc., not exceeding \$500 in any one year. The State Board of Education was then to complete the establishment of said school, employ the instructor and have charge of the school, the State to pay the instructor's salary, which was not to exceed \$1,800 a year.

These schools are necessary agencies in our State for preparing our own young people for the profession of teaching, as they reach many who could not and would not attend the Normal College at the State University in Reno. I regard their continued maintenance as essential to school progress in Nevada.

Nevada has provided well for the education of its children, and in its various districts it is planning to do even better. The people realize that money put into the schools is an investment, and they wish to know that it is wisely and efficiently used. They want the schools improved, want them kept in touch with industrial and community life, and their children may go out from them with trained heads, hearts and hands—with as much preparation as possible for life. To this end they want provision for training their children in the schools in things that pertain to the home, the farm, the shop, the factory and to business. Some of these things are already being done in Nevada schools, as shown in this article, to their decided betterment—a result richly experienced on their introduction in other States; and in each succeeding year it is hoped that school after school will introduce these practical features of education, the State aiding in the work.

Our State is marching forward in agricultural and mining with giant strides, and it has made an important beginning in manufacturing. Everywhere the spirit of progress is dominant. We know that an era of great State development is at hand, and that with it we should have right and large education for the children. We have to-day some of the best

schools in the west, and a movement for good schools throughout Nevada is everywhere strongly in evidence.

Through organization by the State and its direct guidance, aid and encouragement, the people have entered heartily and generously into the business of school betterment. Though much has been accomplished, the work of improvement is still in its infancy. The task of adjusting school instruction to the changing needs of the State and its various communities, of getting the school work rightly done and keeping it in line with the progress of the age without overloading or overworking the children, is a continuous one—a problem that is worthy of the finest efforts of our ablest and most patriotic men and women.

RENO'S PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

BY B. D. BILLINGHURST.

A visitor coming to Reno for the first time is invariably impressed with the city's unusual educational facilities. In addition to the State University, he finds here a finely equipped system of public schools. These schools had their beginnings in 1869, only five years after the admission of Nevada as a State, when the school district was first organized. During the past decade the population of the city has probably trebled, and the school authorities, in order to provide for the rapidly growing numbers of school children, were obliged to place many of them in rented rooms. Accordingly, \$100,000 in school building bonds were voted October, 1908, and in October, 1910, additional bonds to the amount of \$250,000. From these bond issues, totalling \$350,000, four new grade buildings and a new high school have been erected.

When names were under consideration for the new grade buildings, the Board of School Trustees requested the school children and patrons to select appropriate names by means of a public ballot. According to this ballot the first building was given the name of the beloved and venerable State Superintendent, Orvis Ring, whose life and labors had for forty years been interwoven with the schools of the State. The ballots gave to another building the name of Mary Doten, as a fitting testimonial to her splendid service in the Reno schools. The remaining names selected were

the McKinley Park School (from the name of the site donated by the city) and the Mt. Rose School.

With the completion of these new buildings, Reno now has five grade buildings and one high school building in addition to the use of the beautiful Babcock Memorial Kindergarten building, provided by the Reno Kindergarten Association. Reno's school buildings have been warmly commended in the publications of the Russell Sage Foundation, various educational magazines, and by some of the most prominent living educators with the result that these buildings are giving the city a nation-wide reputation for the material equipment of its schools which many think to be excelled by no other city of its size in America.

High School Building.—The high school is the Spanish Renaissance style of architecture, the exterior of the building being smooth finish white cement with decorations in tile. The structure cost approximately \$140,000 and provides accommodations for about 500 high school students.

The high school building, like the grade buildings, is constructed with special reference: (1) to the health, comfort and convenience of the pupils and teachers; and (2) to the demands of the industrial idea in modern education. Accordingly, in order to eliminate the stair-climbing necessary in two-story buildings, all the main class rooms (except the four physical science rooms in the tower) are on the first floor and the classes for industrial work are placed in well lighted basement rooms, all basement windows being above the ground. Besides the usual classrooms and conveniences found in modern high schools, this building contains a gymnasium 57 x 93 feet, which is of ample size for indoor basketball games. The gymnasium is used also as the auditorium of the building. A large stage 27 x 45 feet is built at the west end. The stage is provided with suitable dressing and toilet rooms with hot and cold water connections. When used for audience purposes this room easily seats 900 persons. The south half of the basement and stairway leading thereto is used entirely by the girls and contains their toilet rooms, athletic quarters, shower baths, rest room, bicycle room, cooking laboratory, sewing room, model dining room, kitchen and pantry and the domestic science classroom. The north half of the basement and stairs leading thereto is likewise given over to the boys and contains their toilet rooms, athletic quarters, shower baths, bicycle room, mechanical drawing room, woodworking room and metal working and forge rooms. On the first or main floor are located

the offices for the City Superintendent and principal, the principal's classroom, the library and Board of Education room, in addition to fourteen classrooms, three of which are designed especially for bookkeeping, type-writing, shorthand and other commercial purposes. The wardrobes are built off the ends of these classrooms, which prevents the disorder and theft common in the large wardrobes sometimes found in high school basements, neither do they display the unsightly appearance of the lockers often placed in the main halls and corridors. On this floor, also, is a study hall, 58 x 93 feet. The study hall has room for 450 desks of the usual type.

The four second-story rooms in the tower are built to accommodate the physical sciences, including chemistry, physics, biology and physical geography. These rooms are equipped in an approved manner. One of these rooms, the lecture room, is provided with sixty tablet arm chairs, each row of the same being elevated according to its distance from the demonstration table in conformity to the plan in modern high school buildings.

The mechanical fan system of heating and ventilating is provided and changes the air in each classroom eight times per hour. Oil is used for fuel. The temperature of each room is automatically controlled. The plumbing, electric wiring, drinking fountains and other sanitary devices are of the most modern and approved types.

Grade Buildings.—The four new grade buildings cost, on an average, about \$45,000 each (exclusive of grounds and equipment) and are of the one-story mission type. The Orvis Ring and McKinley Park buildings are each surmounted with a tower while two towers grace the Mt. Rose and the Mary S. Doten schools. The depth of each building is 160 feet and the width varies from 150 to 162 feet. The floor plans are practically identical, with the exception that the Mary S. Doten building has a smaller assembly room. A distinctive feature of each building is the central court, 60 feet in depth and from 48 to 59 feet in width, on the three sides of which the rooms are grouped. In the center of the court is a large fountain surrounded by cement walks, which inclose four grass plots. Arched cloisters extend across the rear of the court and part way on each side. The eight classrooms and the large assembly room are all placed on the ground floor. All of these rooms either open directly outdoors, or their exits are within five feet of outdoors; these exit doors cannot be locked from the inside, and the halls are so arranged that they cannot become



Hosea A. Aid

congested in case of fire. Industrial training is provided for in the construction of two large and well-lighted rooms, each 63 x 24 feet—the domestic science rooms for the girls and the manual training rooms for the boys. These rooms are placed in the basement because their use by each pupil is at intervals only, rather than constant, as is the case with the regular classrooms. The heating, ventilating, plumbing, wiring and other sanitary features are similar in plan to those in the high school. The Orvis Ring and McKinley Park buildings are provided with powerful vacuum sweepers.

The assembly halls in these buildings are equipped with stages and seat from 400 to 450 persons.

School Administration.—Since 1908, when the first bonds were voted for these new buildings, until after their completion and equipment, Dr. M. R. Walker, Theodore W. Clark, W. D. Jones, Alfred Nelson and C. H. Eaton have served continuously as the Board of School Trustees, and B. D. Billingshurst as the City Superintendent of Schools.

The fifty-seven teachers and supervisors include the following: A city superintendent, a music and art supervisor, two manual training teachers, two domestic science teachers, three kindergarten teachers, twelve high school teachers, including the principal and thirty-six grade teachers, including the five grade principals.

The grade course provided for eight years of study below the high school and includes manual training and domestic science in the sixth, seventh and eighth grades. The high school offers four years' work and affords instruction in the following subjects: English, 4 units; Latin, 4 units; French, 3 units; Spanish, 2 units; German, 2 units; commercial subjects, 4 units; industrial subjects, 4 units; ancient history, modern and medieval history, English history and American history and civics, each 1 unit; elementary algebra, algebra theory and plane geometry, each 1 unit; solid geometry, trigonometry, each $\frac{1}{2}$ unit; physiology, biology, chemistry and physics, each 1 unit; sixteen units being required for graduation. The high school is fully accredited at the University of California, Stanford University and the Nevada State University.

BISHOP WHITAKER'S SCHOOL FOR GIRLS.

It was very evident to those who were observant in the early '70s that one of the greatest needs of the State was a school for girls. The need

was for a school in which thy would receive not only a sound education in practical, every-day things, but a sound Christian education as well.

No one saw this need with clearer eyes than the Right Reverend O. W. Whitaker, D.D., then Bishop of Nevada. He knew the State as but few knew it, because his church work took him to every camp in the State in the course of the year. He therefore took upon his own shoulders the burden of founding such a school. He began active work early in 1876. He was fortunate in enlisting the interest of Miss Katherine Lorillard Wolfe, a wealthy woman of New York City, whose large philanthropies took this very form. She gave \$10,000 towards building a school providing the bishop could raise an equal amount. The good bishop went to work and raised the amount: \$4,000 from the people of Reno, \$2,500 from a friend of the school in Nevada, \$1,000 from Mrs. Grosvenor of New York City, and the rest in smaller sums, partly from people in the State and partly from friends of the bishop in the east. This sum was used in the erection of a building on the high land to the north of the town. The school, which was known as Bishop Whitaker's School for Girls, was opened on October 12, 1876. It opened with an encouraging number of pupils from all over the State, as people everywhere knew the bishop and gladly entrusted their girls to his care. There never was a tenderer and wiser father, and every girl from the youngest up knew that she could count on his wise and loving guidance, and that he would be her friend, whatever happened. The school made no effort to secure pupils from other States, although a few came. Its purpose was to minister to the needs of the girls of the State. Miss Kate A. Sill, a graduate of Vassar College and an educator of the highest order, was the first principal. She made an impression for all that was good, which remained with the school to the very end. Scores and scores of girls were members of the school from beginning to ending. Every girl who entered there left a better girl. The Christian spirit of the school made a lasting impression. Many of these girls are wives and mothers in the State. Many have carried their Christianity into their homes and the children are all the better for it. Others have gathered children together in rural districts where there were no churches and have instructed them in the fundamentals of Christian life and character. Although the school has been closed for years, as the coming of the University to Reno made it cease to be a necessity, the old students have kept themselves banded together in an

Alumni Association and so keep themselves in touch with the helpful spirit of the school. Much good has been done in the State by other instrumentalities, but none have done better or more lasting work than Bishop Whitaker's School for Girls. To this day, Bishop Whitaker's birthday, which falls on the 10th of May, is observed by the "girls." When the bishop reached the age of eighty years, on May 10, 1910, a cake with eighty candles burning brightly was one of the chief features of the celebration. He being dead yet speaketh in the good which has been done by his school.

CHAPTER XXIII.

RELIGIOUS.

BAPTIST CHURCH.

BY A. G. SAWIN.

Baptists came into Nevada sixty years ago. Of their efforts to propagate their faith or organize bodies for worship and work there is at hand no reliable data. The beginning of systematic work, of which there is record, was ten years later. These activities, continuing through church organizations, then an association of churches, finally culminated early in 1910 in the organization of the Nevada Sierra Baptist Convention, with headquarters at Reno. The territory comprises the State of Nevada, and that portion of eastern California included in the Counties of Modoc, Lassen, Plumas, Sierra and that portion of the Counties of Nevada, Placer and El Dorado lying east of the line drawn from the southwest corner of Sierra to the northwesterly corner of Alpine, and the Counties of Alpine, Mono and Inio. Early in 1861, Rev. Cyrus William Rees, came into Nevada and began systematic Christian work, making his home at Dayton, Nevada, opened Baptist work with preaching services there, and at Ft. Churchill, Carson City and Virginia City. Congregations were gathered at these points and, at last tentative organizations effected. So far as available records show, his were the first Baptist services held in these towns, and it is certain that this was the first extended work of any Baptist minister in Nevada. Mr. Rees's labors continued for a considerable time in Nevada, and the border counties of California where he planted Baptist work in several valleys of the Sierras. From this field Mr. Rees went to Oregon, later to the territory of Washington, and died at Roslyn, Washington.

Aurora.—In 1863, Rev. Y. B. Saxon was settled as missionary at Aurora in Esmeralda County, the Home Mission Society contributing to his support at the rate of \$1,100 per year. During this year a neat chapel was

built for his services. The earlier promise of Aurora for a permanent camp faded with the rising prospects of Virginia City's richness and the work at Aurora ceased.

Virginia City.—The drawing power of "the mines" was no respecter of persons. Among the racial types represented in the cosmopolitan population of Virginia City in 1863 was a group of negroes and some of those composing that group were Baptists. It is to the lasting credit of those negro Baptists that they did not leave their religion on the other side of the Rockies, but carrying it, they gave it expression in the jungle conditions of the Comstock by organizing a church. They secured a lot and built a chapel. A Rev. Mr. Satchell was their first minister. The charter roll of this body carried the names of nine members, one that of a white man. In 1864, Rev. W. H. Stevenson became pastor of this church. He came from Rhode Island and here he was ordained as pastor and continued work until 1867. About this time the excellent work of this body was interfered with by divisions respecting the pastor; that, together with the migratory character of its members put a period to its prosperity. Later the property was sold and the church was never reorganized. In 1864, the Rev. S. B. McLafferty became missionary pastor in Virginia City, under appointment of the Baptist Home Mission Society. Mr. McLafferty organized the Baptist work under the name of the Tabernacle Baptist Church. For a time its worship was in the Court House. In 1873, Rev. C. L. Fisher began work in Virginia City and became missionary pastor in 1874. His services were held in the Court House, later in Miners' Union Hall. Then in the Washington Guards' Hall, and at one period of three months, in the home of a "Sister Cochran." During this period Pastor Fisher effected the formal organization of the First Baptist Church of Virginia City, and it was recognized by a council, held December 14, 1873, of which the Rev. H. Richardson was moderator and the Rev. C. L. Fisher was clerk. The recognition sermon was preached by the well-known army chaplain and distinguished preacher and lecturer, the Rev. C. A. Bateman.

A lot was purchased on C Street for \$800 and a chapel erected at a cost of \$2,307. In 1876 Mr. Fisher was followed by the Rev. James Wells, who was succeeded by the Rev. George W. Ford. In January, 1880, the Rev. Hiram W. Reed became pastor and continued until Janu-

ary, 1884. The church was filled with rooms to lodge strangers like the present Y. M. C. A. buildings.

Reno.—In 1875 the Reno Baptist Church was organized and the Rev. C. L. Fisher settled as missionary pastor. The Home Mission Society contributing \$750 toward his support. Mr. Fisher continued through the following year. The organization took place in the Old Opera House on Virginia Street, owned by the McGintley family, and this was its place of worship until its first house was erected. The charter members were nine. Chaplain Bateman and Rev. James Wills were present at the organization. Lots were secured on Second Street between Sierra and West, opposite the old Journal office and a house erected at a cost of \$3,236. Rev. Mr. Fisher closed his work December 31, 1876. The Rev. Thomas Arnold was missionary pastor from January 1, 1877, to January 1, 1878. During an interim of pastors extending to June, 1881, for the latter portion of this period, Chaplain Bateman supplied the church. While Chaplain Bateman was supplying the church in 1879 its new house of worship was burned. Plans for the erection of a new building were at once entered upon, Chaplain Bateman rendering valuable assistance. In June, 1881, the Rev. Winfield Scott, D. D., became pastor, and under his leadership the new house was completed and dedicated. Among the subscriptions secured by this able and energetic leader was one of \$1,000 from the Rev. I. S. Kelloch, then a pastor in San Francisco. In June, 1882, the Rev. E. B. Hatch succeeded Dr. Scott and continued a fruitful ministry for three years. Rev. B. F. Battray followed Mr. Hatch, continuing until July, 1886. In September, 1886, Rev. Mr. Fisher again became pastor, and continued until September, 1889. On the sixth day of July, 1889, the second house was totally destroyed by fire; the origin of the fire was in a building two doors west. The Court House was tendered the houseless congregation, for its services, as was the Episcopal Church for the evening services and the kind offer of the county officials and the fraternal one of the Episcopal people were thankfully accepted. The old site was sold, and the present one on Second and Chestnut Sts. secured. The present house of worship was erected at a cost of about \$7,500, the dedication taking place on the 18th day of May, 1890. The Rev. John Barr became pastor in the latter half of that year, continued until January, 1892. In April the Rev. William B. Pope entered the pastorate and continued until January 1, 1895. The Rev. N. L. Freeman

became pastor in September, 1895, and continued until September, 1898. The Rev. B. F. Hudelson became pastor in February, 1898, and continued into 1902, when in broken health, he retired from active service and died early in 1903. The Rev. C. W. Driver succeeded to the pastorate and continued until early in 1905, after a very successful pastorate. November 1, 1905, the Rev. A. G. Sawin became pastor, continuing until October 1, 1909, the longest continuous pastorate in the history of the church. In April, 1910, the Rev. H. Brewster Adams entered upon his pastorate in Reno. Mr. Adams was called from the leadership of the Baptist Church at Mt. Morris, N. Y.

Ft. Wadsworth Mission.—Under appointment of the Home Mission Society the Rev. J. M. Halsey in May, 1882, settled as missionary at that place. Mr. Halsey was also to do mission work for the Indians on the reservation, now the Pyramid Lake Reservation, and conduct services for the people at Wadsworth. Mr. Halsey extended his work for Indians as far east as Humboldt. For six years this devoted missionary did a noble work on that field. His work was immediately continued by the Rev. John W. Henry, until May, 1889, when he was relieved for one year by the Rev. Lawell M. Pratzman. Mr. Henry assuming charge again in May, 1890, and continuing until November, 1892. In the fall of 1896 the Chapel Car Emmanuel, in charge of the Rev. B. B. Jacques and wife, held a meeting in Wadsworth, the result of which was the organization of a church and the building of a chapel. The meeting for organization was held in the car and occurred November 7, 1896. From February, 1900, the Rev. W. M. McCart was a district missionary in that part of Nevada, for one year with his work centered at Wadsworth. From March, 1902, until September, 1903, Mr. Lawrence was in charge of the field and substantial progress was made. Shortly after the removal of the Southern Pacific division station from Wadsworth to Sparks, took most of the people and buildings, with them the Baptist Church and chapel. This terminated the mission to the Indians, a mission which has borne fruits, and its closing was a distinct loss to the Indians and to Baptist work; but out of the work came a substantial and useful church. The "Chapel Car" work is part of the missionary activity of the American Baptist Publication Society; the car "Emmanuel" is No. 2 of a group of six cars; this chapel car work was begun more than twenty years ago, and has been prosecuted with signal success. The campaign of the car

"Emmanuel" during 1896 included two meetings at Verdi, resulting in the organization of a mission and the erection of a chapel, a meeting at Reno, also at Wadsworth, culminating in organization of the church and the building of a chapel; a meeting at Lovelock and at Winnemucca.

Sparks.—The history of this church is a continuation of the history of the Ft. Wadsworth Mission and of the Wadsworth Church on a new field. On September 17, 1903, Rev. W. C. Driver preached the first sermon in the new town, a flat car being his platform and a box his pulpit. November, 1903, Major G. W. Ingalls and his wife organized the first Sabbath School at Sparks in the old Robinson house. Major Ingalls, as superintendent, and Mrs. Ingalls as Bible class teacher, successfully conducted the same until April 1, 1904. The older Wadsworth Church was reorganized under the name of the Emmanuel Baptist Church of Sparks, Nevada. In June, 1904, the Rev. Frank H. Webster settled as missionary pastor and led in the erection of the house of worship and the building of the parsonage. Early in 1906, the property was seriously damaged by fire, but was promptly repaired and enlarged. He closed his work in the summer of 1907. Early in 1908, he was succeeded by the Rev. J. A. Sunderland, who closed his work in less than a year. After a few months he was followed by the Rev. S. G. Willson who closed his work in the fall of 1910, and December 1 was succeeded by the Rev. W. E. Tanner. Late in 1911, Mr. Tanner closed his pastorate, after which the church was ably supplied by Prof. R. C. Thompson of the State University.

Fallon.—At the suggestion of the Rev. C. A. Woody, D. D., Superintendent of Missions for the Pacific Coast Division, work was begun at Fallon in 1904, and in June of that year the veteran pioneer missionary, Rev. G. W. Black settled as missionary. Fallon was then a place of perhaps a dozen houses. A church was organized in January, 1905, and in June, 1906, a substantial and attractive house of worship, costing \$4,600, was dedicated. This pioneer missionary continued labor on the field until May, 1907. The Rev. J. B. Webber, D. D., succeeded Mr. Black. Dr. Webber died in June, 1908, after a very successful ministry. After some months, the Rev. E. L. Spaulding became pastor, but his stay was short, though he was very much beloved by the church and community. In the interim between the close of this young minister's work and the settlement of the Rev. T. J. Hudson, December 1, 1911, who

served as pastor eight months, the church was served by Pastor-at-large W. M. McCart for several months.

Tonopah.—Organized in 1906 by the Rev. W. C. Driver and cared for by him. The records of the Home Mission Society credit the Rev. J. B. Thomas with eight and a half months' work, from February 15, 1907. The Rev. G. N. Gardner became pastor in 1907, and at once undertook and carried to success a church building enterprise which gave the Baptists an excellent house of worship. Mr. Gardner was called to Utah and the Rev. H. W. Nice became pastor late in 1908, and closed in the early part of 1910. The Rev. Myron Cooley supplied for a few months; since that time the church has had no pastor.

Mason.—By the personal initiative of Mr. G. M. Frazer this church was organized in 1910. A beautiful and well appointed chapel was built. The average contribution of members of this church for its first year exceeded \$200 per member; all this was achieved before a pastor was called. The Rev. W. H. F. Jones was settled as pastor September 11, 1911.

Elko.—September 1, 1911, Rev. W. R. Howell, under appointment as pastor-at-large, settled at Elko, and was joined by Rev. and Mrs. Barkman and Rev. Floyd Barkman, their son. A meeting of five weeks resulted in the organization of a church and securing lots for a building.

Winnemucca.—The Barkmans, with chapel car "Good Will," entered upon a campaign near the close of 1911, which resulted in the organization of a church, a building site secured, and a house of worship erected. Mr. Floyd Barkman remained temporarily in charge. A like effort at Imlay by the Barkmans secured the organization of a mission at that point.

Wabuska.—Early in 1912 Rev. G. W. Black was joined in Wabuska by "the Barkmans" and their car, in a meeting which resulted in the organization of a church, lots secured and preparations begun for the building of a chapel. Mr. Black had temporary charge of the work. In the winter of 1905 and 1906, Rev. W. C. Driver organized a church at Susanville, and held meetings at Honey Lake. Rev. J. D. Webber, D. D., became pastor early in 1906, doing excellent work until 1907, when he took charge of a church at Fallon. Rev. J. W. Black gave several months' service at Susanville. Rev. Falls, September, 1911, became the pastor at Susanville. The Sierra Nevada Baptist Convention field included the

mission work in the counties of California east of the Sierra Nevada Mountains, and established churches at Alturas, Modoc County; Susanville, Lassen County, Loyalton, Sierra County; Bishop, Inyo County. The work at Alturas was started November, 1907, by Rev. G. W. Black, and during the winter of 1907 and 1908 meetings were held by Rev. C. P. Bailey and Rev. G. W. Black. Lots were secured and nearly \$1,000 subscriptions received for a church building. In the fall of 1908, Rev. W. C. Driver had charge of the work, and remained until June, 1909, doing very successful work and concluded his labors on the Nevada field. Rev. G. N. Gardner settled as pastor at Alturas, June, 1909, and during his pastorate has secured a fine church edifice and parsonage, completing the same in 1911. In 1863 the first Baptist Church at Loyalton was organized, and house of worship erected in 1864, but was destroyed by fire in 1866. The church membership was united with the Reno church. Twelve years later a chapel was built at Lewis Mills by Spurgeon Lewis, who, with other members, started a mission at Verdi, and built a neat chapel there. The church at the Mills was removed to Loyalton, and the members at Reno were transferred and united with the Loyalton church. Rev. Robert Whitaker acting as pastor. He was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Crandall, who died after a few weeks' service. In 1903 a new church building was erected, and Mr. H. B. Neville was ordained pastor, who was followed in 1905 by Rev. C. Houston Smith. Later, in 1907, Rev. R. B. Wolf became pastor. He resigned in the fall of 1908. Rev. A. G. Sawin became pastor October 1, 1909, and had a very successful ministry up to the present date, and the church has been self-supporting. Rev. W. C. Driver went to Bishop and built a new house of worship in 1907, and later a parsonage, and remained pastor until 1908. Rev. Andrew Clark has been a faithful, successful minister on this field for over fifty years. Rev. Mr. Iler succeeded Rev. Mr. Driver, and in 1910 was succeeded by Rev. Sidney Maddox, who is still the devoted pastor. On April 14, 1911, the Nevada Sierra Baptist Convention was organized in co-operation with the American Baptist Home Mission Society, affiliated with the Northern Baptist Convention of the United States, and elected the following officers: President, Mr. H. B. Neville, of Loyalton; vice-president, G. M. Frazer, of Mason. Miss Lillie R. Corwin, a graduate of the Chicago Baptist Training School, was sent to Nevada by the Woman's Baptist Home Mission Society the latter part of the year 1907.

During five years of unremitting toil she has given herself for the betterment of Nevada Indian work. Her work has extended from Loyalton on the west to Elko on the east, a distance of four hundred miles. She has had as assistants Miss Harrison (now Barber), Miss Farquah, Miss Ryan and Miss Elizabeth Glick. Miss Corwin is well known and greatly loved by the Indians and her work in Reno, Carson, Fallon and Lovelock has attracted attention of educators, philanthropists, and prominent government officials. For several years her headquarters has been at Reno, but was transferred to Fallon, and she now divides her time with Stewart Indian School at Carson, Nevada. As a result of an extended visit through the Eastern States she secured nearly \$2,000 and has built a residence and church building, locating the same by permission of the Interior Department on the Indian Reservation, near Fallon, Churchill County, Nevada, and by liberal contributions of funds from Nevada citizens has also arranged to build a residence and chapel near the Stewart Indian School, near Carson.

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.

BY REV. T. TUBMAN.

The first church built in Nevada for Catholics was erected by Father H. P. Gallagher at Genoa. This was in the summer of 1860. Tradition has very little to say of Father Gallagher. When the great discovery of the precious metals made Nevada famous in the early '60s a great rush was made to the new El Dorado. But it is said long before that many missionaries had worked among the settlers exercising their sacred functions without churches or rectories. Mass was celebrated, confessions heard, sermons preached, baptisms administered, spiritual condolences afforded the sick and dying in their dug-outs and rough habitations. When the great Comstock Lode was discovered Rt. Rev. Eugene O'Connell, Vicar Apostolic of Marysville, Cal., exercised jurisdiction over Nevada. This prelate was remarkable for great prudence. When, therefore, he was called upon to select a priest for the difficult and trying Nevada Mission, he at once found the man for the office in the person of Father Monogue. In June, 1862, he was appointed pastor of Virginia City. In 1869 he was made Vicar General, and in 1880 was made Bishop

Coadjutor to Bishop O'Connell, with the right of succession. He was consecrated in San Francisco on January 16, 1881, by Archbishop Alemany of that See. He succeeded Bishop O'Connell on March 17, 1884. Up to 1886 the Episcopal See was at Grass Valley, Cal., but on May 16, 1886, Pope Leo XIII changed the seat to Sacramento. Bishop Monogue set about building a quarter of a million dollar cathedral in the Italian Renaissance style, and a magnificent residence, which stands today as his crowning monument. He died on February 27, 1895.

Let the reader use his imagination in arriving at a true conception of the conditions existing in those early days, when Father Monogue entered upon his missionary career in Virginia City. Truthfully it can be said that all was chaos. No church, no presbytery, not a dollar available, and yet he had to meet the stern situation, and did meet it unflinchingly. There was no danger too great to discourage him, no difficulty too overwhelming not to be overcome, no obstacle that he did not conquer.

A man of unlimited resources with a heart as large and as full of the milk of human kindness as ever beat in human breast, he was an ideal pastor. Under his gentle administration, the church flourished in a marvelous manner. Gathering about him all that was good in the miners' camp, farm, and ranch, he soon was able to inaugurate an era of church construction. As if by magic, under his control the finest Gothic edifice on the Pacific slope was soon completed. Its furnishings were of the very best. Marble altars, beautiful statuary, magnificent pews and confessionals, a pipe organ of great excellence and all that the church demands for the splendor of Catholic worship, were provided and paid for. He erected a magnificent academy, orphan asylum and a hospital, and was successful in inducing the mother house of the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul to send their sisters to conduct these institutions of learning and charity. Besides engaging in these extensive operations of building, organizing and administering to the extensive parish of Virginia, he attended all Nevada. There was no spot, however distant, that he did not serve. From the waters of Reese River along the Humboldt and to the foot of the Sierra Nevada Mountains, calls came and were cheerfully responded to.

In the great fire that destroyed Virginia City in 1875, Father Monogue's beautiful church was burned to the ground. In an incredibly short space of time a second church was built and dedicated to Catholic worship and

that church stands today a glorious monument to the energy, zeal and perseverance of its builder.

A peculiar feature regarding the beautiful bell which calls the people to the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass and other devotions is that the silver it is composed of was mined in the Comstock Lode, and sent east and presented by Mr. Lynch, a generous benefactor of the church. The church today, after these many years, is intact in every way, being recently redecorated by the present pastor. The cost of erecting St. Mary's in the Mountains is estimated roughly at \$100,000, the material at the time was costly and was of the very best. On a marble slab inserted in the front doorway the story of the church and its builder is concisely told. "Built in '68. Burned down in '75. Rebuilt in '76. P. Monogue, pastor." After Rev. Father Monogue came Rev. S. Monteverde, as assistant priest, also J. M. Nubby, L. Haupts, M. Coleman, P. McGuire, F. Nugent and the next pastor succeeding Father Monogue was Rev. D. Sullivan with Vincent Reitmyer as assistant. Then came the late Rev. C. M. Lynch as pastor with Father T. Tubman as assistant, and afterward rector, who was followed by Rev. D. B. Murphy, the present pastor.

History records that the first church built in Reno was a small wooden structure, erected on Lake and Fourth streets, where the Hotel Nevada now stands. This pioneer church was neither expensive nor ornate, nevertheless its erection was a task of great difficulty. Let it be remembered that there were only a few Catholics, and these were poor and scattered. This church was burned to the ground in a night.

Then a lot farther out, near where the University now stands, was purchased and another frame church, larger and more expensive, was built. In this edifice the Catholics of Reno worshipped for many years. They had many priests at frequent intervals.

A Jesuit, Father Raffo, was pastor for a considerable time. Father Callan and Father Maloney also ministered in this church in succession.

When Father Maloney laid aside the rule of the district he was followed by Rev. Father Michael Kiely, who received the appointment from Bishop Monogue. That was over twenty years ago. Father Kiely held the office for seven years. His labors extended all over the country. The outside missions were many and widely separated. Nevertheless he gave special attention to the Reno parish. He paid off a large indebtedness on the church and added many improvements. He also instituted the pres-

ent Dominican Convent and school which were the object of his special care. His health failing, he asked for a lower territory in which to labor. The Bishop appointed him to the important parish of Ferndale.

To the vacant and now rapidly growing parish of Reno the Rt. Rev. Bishop Grace appointed Father Tubman, who had served the Virginia parish ever since his ordination, both as assistant and as pastor.

A few months after Father Tubman's appointment on the afternoon of November 13, 1905, fire was seen blazing from the belfry of the church. In a short time the flames enveloped the entire edifice and quickly reduced it to ashes.

Father Tubman set to work before the ashes were cold planning and devising for a greater edifice. The site of the ruined church was too far from the center of the city. Believing that the church should be able to serve the greatest number and for that reason should be placed as near as possible to the great mass of the people, he purchased the present magnificent location on Second Street, paying \$10,000 for the entire block.

The following June he had secured sufficient financial backing to accept plans and to start building operations.

The cornerstone was laid Sunday, July 28, 1907, by the Rt. Rev. Bishop Grace, amid a scene of ecclesiastical and civic grandeur seldom surpassed or even equaled in the West.

The Bishop, wearing full pontificals and accompanied by a large number of priests, rode from the old site to the new. Fully 10,000 witnessed the laying of the corner stone. Governor Sparks, the Mayor, City Council and the entire police force attended. Father Ramm, secretary to the Archbishop of San Francisco, preached the sermon. Father Horgan, Truckee; Father Horgan, Sparks; Father Melehan, Winnemucca; Father Gartland, Carson City; Father Murphy, Virginia City, and Father Tubman assisted the Bishop in blessing and laying the corner-stone.

The new church was called after the great angelic doctor, St. Thomas Aquinas.

On Sunday, June 21, 1908, the new church was ready for dedication. The Rt. Rev. Bishop Grace came from Sacramento to preside at the great function. He was just recovering his strength after a serious illness, but his heart was so thoroughly in the new church that he cheerfully came over the mountains and dedicated St. Thomas Aquinas to Divine worship.

Carson.—In territorial days and while we were under the guidance of

Governor Nye, Catholic services were held in the "Clapp School House," which is still standing. A good old German priest of the old school was the pastor. A small wooden church was soon erected by Fathers Beakey and Rubey, who did the actual labor under most adverse conditions. This church was built on the site of the present church, the land being donated by Ned Sweeney. In all its crudity it was hailed with delight as the first Catholic Church of the capital city. Fathers Rierra, Clark and Gleason were some of Carson's pioneer priests. The present Catholic Church was built under the direction of Father Grace, now Bishop of Sacramento, in 1870. It was named St. Theresa. Among those participating in the ceremonies was Bishop Monogue, Fathers Nulty and Coleman, of Virginia City. This church was erected by Peter Cavanaugh, Sr. To St. Theresa's Church has been added in modern times many improvements. The interior contains some pieces of beautiful imported statuary and stained memorial windows of great beauty adorn its walls.

Rev. D. Gartland was appointed pastor about fifteen years ago by Bishop Grace. Rev. P. Clyne, now deceased, was Father Gartland's predecessor. Fr. Luke Tormey was also pastor for a number of years.

Tonopah.—On down from the earliest settlement in Nevada the Catholic Church and its priests have followed in close wake of the pioneers; in point of fact, many of the priests braved the hardships of the pioneers in their zeal to plant the banner of the cross. Such was the case in Tonopah in 1901 when Rev. James Butler came overland from Austin and began looking around for a site to build a church and so active was he in securing both the lot and money to erect a \$5,000 edifice that people began to wonder if they had been asleep while this man of God had been working. The church is plainly and substantially built in the early Gothic style with the intention of a facade being erected in front with a bell tower. The interior decorations received the greatest care. The main and side altars are of polished butternut and harmonize with the woodwork of the church. The organ is a Vocallion resembling a pipe organ and pumped by electricity or hand. The Stations of the Cross were presented by Mr. Kerns, of St. Louis, on one of his visits to Tonopah. The pastoral residence was erected later, when the camp seemed to warrant it, a fine two-story frame with a broad veranda. During Father Butler's residence he had several missions, the first being

held by the Paulists of San Francisco under Rev. Fathers Wynan and Handly. January, 1911, Rev. Wm. J. Flynn relieved Fr. Butler, whose health began to fail, since which time Rev. Father Flynn has enlarged his congregation twofold. In May, 1912, the Jesuit Fathers held a most successful mission.

Gold Hill, in Storey County, is presided over by Rev. Fr. O'Donnell, who has been pastor of St. Patrick's Church for twenty-five years. The church is a substantial structure erected by the Franciscan Fathers of an earlier date. Father O'Donnell attends Silver City and Dayton.

Rev. Fr. Thos. Mollyneux is pastor of the church in Yerington. He visits occasionally Rawhide, Hawthorne, Wellington, Mason and Bodie.

In Ely there is a flourishing Catholic parish of which Father Sheehan is pastor.

Austin has a beautiful brick church that cost \$50,000 in the early days. Father Phelan was pastor for a number of years. Father Corcoran is at present the pastor. He also attends Battle Mountain, Carlin and all the smaller towns of that section.

Fr. McMinnamon is in charge of Eureka, where there is a substantial church and presbytery.

The several eastern counties of Nevada are under the jurisdiction of Rt. Rev. Lawrence Scanlon, of Salt Lake. The parishes and missions in Washoe, Humboldt, Storey, Esmeralda, Lyon, Ormsby and Douglas counties are subject ecclesiastically to Rt. Rev. Bishop Grace, of Sacramento, Cal.

Goldfield.—On the last Sunday in October, 1904, Rev. James B. Dermody celebrated the first public mass in Ladies' Aid Hall. The congregation on that Sunday, and for three months afterwards, being composed of men. For eight months mass was celebrated in this hall. During 1906 the Catholic population grew to such an enormous extent that the church could not accommodate the congregation. Father Dermody, seeing the necessity of a larger and better house of worship, appealed on Sunday to his people for subscriptions, and on that memorable day \$12,000 was promised by the members of the church, and \$7,000 of that amount was collected and used to start the new Sacred Heart Church on Hall and Franklin streets, which compares favorably with any church in the State, is an ornament to the City of Goldfield and a lasting monument to the religious zeal of Father Dermody and the citizens of this community.

Sparks.—Rev. Thos. W. Horgan, its pastor, was ordained in All Hallows College, Dublin, Ireland, June 24, 1901. He came to California, September, 1901, and spent two years in Woodland, Cal., and afterwards was appointed assistant priest in Reno, where he remained for one year. When the new town of Sparks was established, the bishop, recognizing the administrative abilities of the young priest, made him pastor of that growing center of population. He immediately started ways and means, looking to the erection of a fine and substantial church edifice. In 1904 it was dedicated under the title of the Immaculate Conception and cost over \$5,000. It has a congregation of 1,000 and a well organized Sunday-school with an efficient corps of lay teachers. Father Horgan then secured a lot and succeeded in building the finest parochial residence in the State, costing \$6,000. Besides Sparks, Father Horgan attends a number of outside missions at stated intervals. In Fallon he built a beautiful church where he celebrates mass and preaches with great success to a large congregation. It is said this church cost \$5,000. In the town of Verdi he has built a model church that cost \$3,000, which was dedicated in 1906, and has a membership of 250 and a Sunday-school of 30. At Wadsworth there is no church at present. The church there was burned and never rebuilt. It cost \$2,500. Father Horgan attends Wadsworth and Hazen once each month and occasionally celebrates mass at Lahontan dam, near Fallon.

Las Vegas.—Father Edward V. Reynolds came to Las Vegas in December, 1908, from Chandler, Okla., where he had a large mission for over fifteen years. In April, 1910, he erected the church, a frame building, at Las Vegas, which cost \$1,600, on Second Street. The membership is 125, and the Sunday-school 20. He also attends missions at Rhyolite, Caliente, Pioche and Milford, Utah, once each month.

Lovelock.—St. John's Church, of which Rev. Father Enright is pastor, was built in the spring of 1900 while Father Reynolds was pastor of Reno. It was completed in 1901. After Father Reynolds came Father Chas. Burnes. He was succeeded by Father Meehan, of Winnemucca, and on September of last year, Bishop Grace, of Sacramento, divided Humboldt County, appointing Father Enright the first resident pastor of this church. Besides the town, Father Enright conducts monthly services at Mazuma, Seven Troughs, McDermitt, National, Paradise, with Imlay and Humboldt occasionally, taking in the entire county with

the exception of Golconda, Winnemucca and Gerlach, which are attended by Father Meehan. Its original cost was about \$5,500, built by subscription, money being collected by Senator and Mrs. O'Kane and Mrs. O'Leary. The property, 130 x 50, was donated by Senator O'Kane and John G. Taylor. Father Enright is at present engaged in building a spacious church in the new town of Rochester, which promises to become one of the great mining centers of the State.

Winnemucca.—Mission established in Winnemucca, Nevada, October, 1883. Erection of church building commenced by Rev. A. O'Donnell same year, on lots purchased by him at corner of Fourth and Melarkey streets. Church finished and dedicated as St. Paul's. Mission style; cost about \$3,000. First resident priest, Rev. Charles E. Burns, appointed in 1901; died July 19, 1905. Succeeded by Rev. P. E. Meehan, present rector, appointed in December, 1905. At that time the mission included all of Humboldt County, Nevada, with a larger area than Switzerland. During summer of 1911 the mission was divided by Rt. Rev. Thomas Grace, and two parishes created—Winnemucca and Lovelock. The former embraces Winnemucca, Golconda and all towns along the line of the Western Pacific in Humboldt County, and in addition Gerlach, Washoe County. Lovelock parish includes the town of that name and all of Humboldt County not included in Winnemucca parish. Rev. P. E. Meehan is rector of Winnemucca parish. In the early days of the mission it was attended by the following priests at different times, from Reno, Nevada: Rev. Father Francis Reynolds, Father William Maloney, both deceased; Rev. M. Kiely, now of Ferndale, California. When this diocese was established twenty-six years ago, the work was all performed by a priest stationed at Reno. Since that time the church in Nevada has grown to such proportions that new parishes have been created as follows: Sparks, Goldfield, Winnemucca, Lovelock, and in that portion of Nevada included in the diocese of Salt Lake, Tonopah and Ely, in addition to the old parishes of Austin and Eureka.

CHRISTIAN SCIENCE CHURCH.

In Nevada there are now five Christian Science organizations: First Church of Christ, Scientist, of Reno, First Church of Christ, Scientist, of Goldfield, the Christian Science Society of Elko, the Christian Sci-

ence Society of Ely and the Christian Science Society of Carson City. In practically every town in the State, however, there is at least one Christian Scientist, and in some of these places steps are now being taken towards organization in accordance with the Manual of the Mother Church, the First Church of Christ, Scientist, in Boston, Massachusetts, of which every authorized organization is a branch.

First Church of Christ, Scientist, of Reno, was organized on August 5, 1907, after a few people interested in Christian Science had been holding services for about a year, first in private houses, and later in Harmony Hall, on Sierra Street. In the fall of 1907 the church moved to the Century Club, where services were held until the completion of the Odd Fellows' Building. Then the church again moved to the large hall in that building, where it still holds its services. On November 13, 1911, after considering for about six months the available lots in Reno, the church unanimously voted to buy the lot, one hundred feet square, at the corner of Granite and Court streets, for the price of \$6,500. The church has each year given a free public lecture on Christian Science and has maintained a free public reading-room open in the Odd Fellows' Building every afternoon. The congregation has grown steadily until now it practically fills the Odd Fellows' Hall at every service, both Sunday mornings and Wednesday evenings.

In Goldfield, those interested in Christian Science first began to meet together in the latter part of 1905. A little later the Ladies' Aid Hall was rented and services were held there for several months. When a regular Christian Science Society was organized on August 29, 1906, the services were conducted in a building on Fifth Avenue. Early in 1907, however, the present church building was erected at the corner of Euclid and Myers avenues. In March, 1909, the society became a church, taking the name of First Church of Christ, Scientist, of Goldfield. For the past three years the church has had a free public lecture on Christian Science each year and has maintained a free public reading-room. The reading-room down town, at 225 East Ramsey Street, was opened in March, 1912. Like all other Christian Science churches, the church in Goldfield has been unceasingly prosperous from the beginning.

The Elko students of Christian Science first met for the regular Sunday services, in the spring of 1903, at a private house. A little later they moved to the Dotta Building, on Idaho Street, where they still hold

their services. The group organized for regular work in December, 1905, and soon established a free reading-room and then the Sunday-school. Attendance at the services has gradually increased until at present both the Sunday morning and the Wednesday evening services are well attended. In all ways the work in Elko is prospering steadily. The society has already set aside a substantial sum for its future building.

In Ely the first Christian Science meeting was in a private home in June, 1907. On the following Easter Sunday the congregation had grown to such an extent that steps were taken to secure a public hall. In December, 1908, another move was made into a room more centrally located, fitted and furnished by the members, and in all ways more suitable for a Christian Science hall. In September, 1909, growth made it necessary to reorganize the society, revise the by-laws and provide for a Sunday-school, a Wednesday evening service and a reading-room. From that time the growth in every department of the Christian Science work in Ely has been steady and firm. The society had a free public lecture on Christian Science in November, 1911, and is steadily accumulating a building fund.

The Carson City Christian Scientists first began to meet together on Sundays and Wednesdays in January of 1911. No regular organization, however, was attempted until January 13, 1912. Then the Christian Science Society of Carson City was organized and arranged to meet in the Odd Fellows' Hall.

The Christian Scientists throughout the State maintain a committee on publication for the whole State. The offices of this committee are at present in the Odd Fellows' Building in Reno.

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH.

BY REV. W. D. TROUT.

The First Congregational Church of Reno was organized in 1871 in a little schoolhouse on the south side, by Rev. A. F. Hitchcock. The charter members were J. C. Hageman, Kitty Hageman, Mary F. Poor, J. C. Weston, Mary C. Crane, Lucy Scott and Mary Kinney. Services were held for two years. Then a church was built on Chestnut Street by the Congregationalists and Odd Fellows.

In 1877, Rev. Mr. Pope took charge. Owing to his genial qualities, the church was self-supporting that year. He was popular with all classes.

His successor was Rev. August Drahms, who afterwards became chaplain of the prison at San Quentin, and at present is pastor of a Congregational church in the Hawaiian Islands.

The next pastor was the Rev. Mr. Palmer, an industrious worker, and through his efforts the present parsonage site was purchased. Then followed strenuous times in which the very life of the church was due to Mrs. Poor, Mrs. Scott, Mrs. Finlayson, Mrs. Clow, Mrs. Fairchild, Mr. Painter, Mr. and Mrs. Grant and Mrs. Chism.

In 1887, Rev. Thomas McGill began a very successful work, in which the present church edifice was erected. His was the longest period of pastoral service.

Following some short pastorates, Rev. F. V. Jones was called. He was eminently successful and laid the foundation for greater things.

In 1904, Rev. Charles Leon Mears, of Washington, accepted the pastorate. Mr. Mears was instrumental in installing the pipe organ and building one of the best parsonages on the coast. He also organized the Pilgrim Brotherhood, a very effective agency of the church. It was in this body the Anti-Gambling Bill really originated and the Y. M. C. A. movement was started.

Among the church activities are the Ladies' Aid Society, the St. Margaret Society, the Missionary Society, a helpful Christian Endeavor and an effective Sunday-school of 303 members. The church membership is 262. The present pastor is Rev. W. D. Trout, who was called in 1910.

The church was erected in 1891 and the present valuation of the church property is \$27,000.

THE PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

BY REV. SAMUEL UNSWORTH.

NOTE—To be kept in mind while reading the following Historical Sketch.

Nevada, ecclesiastically, has had a checkered career, as far as the Episcopal Church is concerned. At first, it was swallowed up, an indistinguishable part of the Missionary Jurisdiction of the Northwest, which extended from the eastern boundaries of Oregon and California to the Missouri River and from Mexico to Canada. Then, in 1865, it was carved out, raggedly and indefinitely, from this Mighty Vast, as the Missionary District of Nevada and Parts Adjacent, while, later, in 1868, when Bishop Whitaker was elected, it was to Nevada and Arizona. Divorced from Arizona in 1874, it was (much?) married to Utah in 1886, and in 1898, by the Solomonian decree of the General Convention, actually carried out, alas, as King Solomon's was not; it was cut in two, losing all the identity that's in an own name, the eastern half taking that of "Salt Lake," and the western,

that of "Sacramento," each part being under a different bishop. Tonopah, in Nye Co., said "I am of Paul" (Bishop Spalding), and Goldfield, in Esmeralda, "And I, of Apollos," (Bishop Moreland). In 1907 we were allowed to reintegrate again and take our own lawful State name, much to the comfort of our State pride. The next year we were able to welcome our present chief shepherd, the Rt. Rev. Henry Douglas Robinson, D. D., who was, before his consecration, Warden of Racine College, Racine, Wis.

St. Paul's Church, Virginia City.—The Territory of Nevada was made a part of the Missionary Jurisdiction of the Northwest by the General Convention of 1859. The Rev. Joseph Talbot was consecrated to the Episcopate in Christ Church, Indianapolis, Wednesday, February 15, 1860, and given charge of this large district.

Among the great number who passed over the mountains from California, came the Rev. H. Smeathman, on secular business, in 1861.

At the request of several churchmen in Virginia City, he held divine service on several occasions, the congregation meeting in the United States District Court House. On the 1st of September, at a meeting convened after service, a parish was formed under the name of St. Paul's Church, and wardens and vestrymen were chosen. In the interesting, smoke-stained first record book of the parish, and in the calligraphy of Wm. Fell, secretary, the following records of that important meeting are written: "Moved and seconded, that David S. Turner and Fenno Downer be the Wardens of this Parish. Carried. It was then moved and seconded, that the following named Gents: compose the Vestry of said Parish, for the term, namely W. van Bokkelen, Dr. J. W. Noyes, L. W. Ferris, Wm. Fell, D. E. Hoff, H. O. Gaylord and R. Meacham, which was carried and the Gents: declared duly elected." Further on in the minutes of that first meeting, the following: "Virginia City, Carson County, Nevada Territory, Nebraska Mission,* Sunday, 1st September, 1861, 14th Sunday after Trinity.

"At a Meeting of Episcopalians held in the Territory of Nevada, and Virginia City, it was proposed to form a Congregation; we whose names are hereunto affixed, being desirous of establishing a Protestant Episcopal Church in this place, do hereby associate ourselves together for that purpose, and consent to be governed by the Constitution and Canons of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, and by the Constitutions and Canons of this Diocese.

"Signed: David S. Turner, Fenno Downer, H. V. Gaylord, Wm. A. Van Bokkelen, L. W. Ferris, George W. Kinney, J. W. Noyes, R.

*This is a mistake. The District of Nebraska and parts adjacent was not constituted until 1865.

Meacham, Wm. Fell, H. Becker, David E. Hoff, Wm. Welch, Smyth Clark."

This vestry applied to Bishop Talbot to send them a rector.

On the 5th of April, 1862, the vestry acknowledged the receipt of a communion service, Bible and altar-cloth as a present from the bishop, and information of the appointment by the American Church Missionary Society of the Rev. Franklin S. Rising, of Bergen Point, N. J., as "Missionary to Nevada Territory." The society provided for the expenses of his journey, sending him by the isthmus, and assumed his support, but his very first month's salary of \$150 was returned by the parish to the society. He arrived in Virginia City on the 18th of April, and on Easter Day, the 20th, held his first service in the Court House. The room was crowded and the Holy Communion was administered to fourteen. In August a frame church was begun on the site of the present church. On Christmas day it was temporarily occupied for the church service and a Sunday-school festival, and on the 22d of February, 1863, formally opened by the rector.

In 1863, Bishop Talbot made a visitation to his immense district, arriving in Virginia City in September. On the 11th of October he consecrated the church and on the 18th confirmed thirteen persons at the public service and one in private.

On account of failing health, Mr. Rising was compelled, in 1866, to resign his work and return to New York.

In April, 1867, the Rev. O. W. Whitaker, of Englewood, N. J., became rector. In the same year Bishop Talbot was translated to the Diocese of Indiana and Right Rev. Wm. Ingraham Kip, Bishop of California, placed in temporary charge. In the following October he made a visitation and confirmed thirty-six in St. Paul's.

The church building, after several enlargements, was destroyed, with the rectory and a \$3,000 pipe organ, in the general conflagration of October 26, 1875. The present building was then erected at a cost, fully furnished, of \$25,000.

In October, 1868, the Rev. O. W. Whitaker was elected Missionary Bishop of Nevada and Arizona, and consecrated on the 13th of October, 1869, in St. George's Church, New York.

All of the nineteen years that he was Bishop of Nevada, until his translation to Pennsylvania, the bishop remained also rector of St. Paul's,

Virginia City. Away so much on his visitations, it was very important that he have fine men to leave in charge of the work during his absence. He was fortunate in drawing to him a lot of noble men as his assistants, beginning with J. W. Lee, the first one, on to Henderson, Rush S. Eastman, later chosen rector of Gold Hill. Then Jenvey for four years, till, in 1878, he came to Reno as rector of Trinity. George N. Eastman, brother of Rush, succeeded Jenvey, and Crawford Eastman. The Rev. Dr. McClure came up from California for two or three months after Bishop Whitaker's removal to Pennsylvania, being relieved by Ridgely. Hyslop was Ridgely's assistant for three or four months, when he succeeded Ridgely, and Houghton became his assistant, to be followed by Stafford when Houghton was called to establish the mission at Elko. The need of these assistants to the rectors of St. Paul's came from the care of missions at Silver City, Dayton and, occasionally, other places. Hunting succeeded Jukes in 1894 and stayed four years. The new century saw the old historic parish called to face increasing trials of dwindling population and lessening pay-rolls, but she was still served by men who were brave through their faith. They heard of "Jim" Fair throwing handfuls of five dollar gold pieces to the boys; they read in their own parish record how Mr. Rising's salary had been returned to the Missionary Society; they read that a committee of the vestry had picked up on the street \$400 for Bishop Kip's expenses from the coast and back. They read of a friendly tilt between a former rector and his vestry, the former announcing at a vestry meeting that "from and after May 1st his salary would be \$200 per month, to which decrease exception was taken by those present." The vestry refused to accept the reduction of the rector's salary.

Now times were different, when Ramsey and Hazlett and Pitcaithly were the rectors, and they have not grown much more encouraging since. At present the only services given to the old historic parishes and missions of the Comstock are the occasional ones that the bishop and archdeacon (Hazlett) can give. The latter gives a monthly service.

St. Peter's, Carson, was the next parish to be founded. It was organized on the 16th day of November, 1863. S. D. King and A. W. Griswold were the first wardens. Others of the vestry were Governor James W. Nye and H. M. Yerington.

The Rev. W. M. Reilly, a missionary of the Domestic and Foreign

Board, was chosen the first pastor, serving until March, 1866. He is still living in San Francisco, rector emeritus of St. Paul's Church. Thirteen other priests have followed him in the rectorship. The names of the thirteen are Geo. B. Allen, S. P. Kelly, H. L. Foote, Geo. R. Davis, F. R. Sanford, J. Fred Holmes, J. W. Hyslop, J. B. Eddie, R. L. Macfarlane, B. J. Darneille, H. A. R. Ramsey, C. H. Powell and Lloyd B. Thomas. Under the able direction of the last named, the church is alive and vigorous, with a communicant list of 125, women's guilds and men's and boys' clubs, and a fine Sunday-school.

St. George's, Austin.—In 1863, Bishop Talbot stopped in Austin a few days and held a service. In 1866, Mr. D. M. Godwin began lay services on Sunday in the Court House. In March, 1868, the Rev. Marcus Lane began a year's ministry. In 1873 the parish was organized, the Rev. Christopher S. Stevenson, of New York, being the first rector. In September 1874, Rev. S. C. Blackiston, from Colorado, succeeded him and built the handsome brick church that is still standing. On Easter day, 1877, the rector announced that the offering would be for a building fund for a church. When the subscriptions were counted by the wardens, a pledge was found from Mr. Allen A. Curtis, superintendent of the Manhattan Mine, Austin, to give the church outright, if the others would furnish it. Church and furnishing cost \$15,500, all but \$500 given by the people of Austin. Such things, except in mining States, are the rarest of rare experiences in missionary fields.

In May, 1879, Mr. Blackiston went to Butte, Montana. Rev. S. P. Kelly succeeded Blackiston for a few months, to be followed by Rev. Rush S. Eastman.

Horace Hall Buck was rector from August 5, 1883, to September 1, 1886. From this date to June 1, 1896, St. George's seems to have had no rector and to have received only four visits, one each from Houghton, of Elko, and Crook and Ridgely, of Salt Lake, and Bellam, of Eureka-Wadsworth, *i. e.*, as I suppose, on his way from Eureka to Wadsworth. Then Rev. W. H. Stewart and Rev. R. Mercer each gave a year, and Rev. Arnoldus Miller three years. After this Darneille and Smith, from Elko, and Thomas and Henriques, from Battle Mountain, gave an occasional service.

St. Luke's, Hamilton.—On September 24, 1870, in the house of S. M. Van Wyck, St. Luke's was organized in Hamilton. Rev. S. P. Kelly,

from Rhode Island, became the rector of St. Luke's, building a neat frame church, and purchasing a house for a rectory during the two years of his incumbency. Rev. John Cornell followed, but remained only a year, the population of the town melting away as rapidly as it had collected. It is a good many years since Hamilton has been known, ecclesiastically.

Christ Church, Pioche, was founded in September, 1871, by the Rev. Henry L. Badger, who came from Warren, Ohio. Although there were only two communicants when he came, and until the end of the next year he had received but five from other parishes, including his wife, and two by confirmation, he received in Pioche the large amount of \$3,787.29 for church building, organ and other expenses other than his salary.

Mr. Badger was succeeded, in September, 1875, by Rev. R. H. Kline, who stayed until June, 1879. Thereafter the records show only occasional services and acts, at first Bishop Whitaker, and then Bishop Leonard made a visitation, or a priest of the church dropped in.

St. James', Eureka, was the result of a late service, held in a tent bearing the sign, "Antelope Restaurant," on September 28, 1870. The service had been announced for 7 o'clock, but the bishop was delayed through a breakdown of the stage, and the people dispersed, but were rallied again by messengers on his arrival. That winter Rev. S. P. Kelly officiated several times and secured a lot for the church, which was built the following summer, Bishop Whitaker spending several weeks in Eureka to hurry the work. In August the Rev. W. Henderson took charge, using a tent for the services, until the church was ready the next summer. September 1 of that year, 1872, Mr. Kelly became rector, and served three years and a half, yielding up his work to Rev. C. H. Marshall, of Evanston, Wyoming, on being elected State Superintendent of Public Instruction, and moving to Carson. Rev. C. B. Crawford, from Pennsylvania, succeeded Marshall in August, 1877, and remained until 1885, when Rev. H. H. Buck became rector. In Bishop Leonard's second annual report, dated August 31, 1889, he says: "The Rev. H. H. Buck, who was for several years a faithful missionary in the changing mining camps of Nevada, retired from Eureka a year ago because of the decline of the town and the failure of support." Not very long after Rev. T. L. Bellam went to Eureka for a time. From his departure to Wadsworth, in 1893, an occasional service from the bishop and the

rectors of Elko and Battle Mountain has been all that could be given to the town. In 1905, Bishop Spalding writes: "Eureka used to be a place of 20,000, but now there are not more than 800, though there is a fine stone church and a roomy rectory. . . . Mr. James Parly is lay reader and superintendent of the Sunday-school and keeps the flag flying." The Church Almanac credits 27 communicants to St. James' still and shows it to be, with St. Luke's, Clover Valley (12 c.), St. George's, Austin (29), and Wells, in charge of Henriques, rector of Battle Mountain.

Trinity Church, Reno, was organized in February, 1873, by the Rt. Rev. O. W. Whitaker.

Services were held in the Court House, and during the months of February, March and April, the bishop, Rev. George B. Allen, and Rev. A. L. Eastman officiated in turn.

On May 5, 1873, the Rev. Wm. Lucas, of Tiffin, Ohio, entered upon the rectorship of the parish.

In July the present church lot was purchased from Mr. C. H. Eastman for \$400, and the rectory begun.

On October 5, the day, it would seem, of the First Communion, there were thirteen communicants in the parish, six of whom were present at the communion. Of the entire thirteen, no one is now living in Reno.

September 6, 1874, witnessed the first confirmation service. It was in the Court House. Six persons were presented to Bishop Whitaker, not one of whom is living here now.

On May 24, 1875, the church building was begun, enclosed, floor laid and outside painted. "Money on hand will only allow this much now," is the significant comment following. Bishop Whitaker preached the sermon to a large congregation at the opening service on December 12 of the same year.

Although the church remained unfinished inside until 1879, during the rectorship of Rev. W. R. Jenvey, the chancel furniture and font, the latter the gift of the Rev. S. P. Kelly, arrived in April, 1876.

In 1878 the Rev. Mr. Lucas was granted a year's leave of absence on account of impaired health, the Rev. W. R. Jenvey serving the parish in his absence. The desired improvement in health not appearing, Mr. Lucas resigned May 5, 1879, and Mr. Jenvey was called to the rectorship, remaining until May, 1883.

Mr. Lucas, on the same day of the same month, May 5, on which he had been called to his first rectorship of the parish ten years before, was called to his second, and accepted, serving until 1892, when for a few months the Rev. Erasmus Van Deerlin took up the work, being quickly succeeded by the Rev. Charles L. Fitchette, who, in turn, resigned in less than a year.

On June 1, 1894, Samuel Unsworth became rector, and is here yet, a standing proof of the patience of one parish in Nevada. Trinity has 200 communicants, a Sunday-school of 125 pupils and ten teachers, and a fine women's guild.

St. Stephen's, Belmont, held its first service April 21, 1872, on which day the Rev. S. P. Kelly, then rector of St. Luke's, Hamilton, held morning and evening services, both services being in the Court House. October 26, the Rev. Samuel B. Moore took charge of the mission and was called to the rectorship of the parish on its organization, February 16, 1874. Bearing date of December 20 of the same year is this entry in the parish register: "The new church was occupied and the Court House vacated." Mrs. Julia Brewer, member of St. Stephen's, Sewickley, Pa., gave \$500 towards the "\$3,600 gold coin" which the church and furniture cost, and probably gave the church its name. September 17, 1876, the Rev. D. Flack succeeded Mr. Moore and remained two years, when Rev. S. P. Kelly appeared once more to fill the breach, from December 20, 1878, to June 1, 1879, when he removed to Austin.

St. Paul's, Elko.—In 1891, W. H. I. Houghton entered upon his duties as missionary. When he went to Elko there were only four communicants. During the little more than three years of his rectorship, they were increased just tenfold and a frame church was built. The Rev. John Dawson is the next rector of whom I find any record. The bishop speaks of him in 1896 as making himself felt in the country about Elko as well as in the town. The church was vacant a portion of 1898, and then the Rev. Arnoldus Miller, from western Colorado, took charge. In 1901, Rev. George F. Plummer became rector and later in the year Rev. B. J. Darneille, who had come from Delamar, took charge.

In 1905, Bishop Spalding, who had succeeded Bishop Leonard the year before, speaks of Elko as a regularly organized parish with a fine church, rectory and parish hall. This year the Rev. Percival S. Smithe came from Minnesota to be the rector and remained for four years. Besides

going to Clover Valley, Tuscarora and Wells, he established St. Andrew's Mission, Battle Mountain, and ran down to Austin.

Elko, after being vacant since Mr. Smithe's resignation, is now supplied by a newly ordained deacon named Ernest H. Price, and now has 75 communicants.

Tonopah.—Until I read a few days ago in Bishop Leonard's last "Salt Lake Annual," I had thought and said that I was the first clergyman to give Tonopah an Episcopal service. I was mistaken, I see. It was on Sunday, May 29, 1904, on my return from a missionary trip for Bishop Nichols through Mono and Inyo counties, that I held this service in the Masonic Hall, which was the upper story of the "Jim Butler Building." I had morning and evening prayer and the Holy Communion. I was down again in 1906 with the Grand Lodge of Masons, and made an address at the laying of the corner stone of the beautiful St. Mark's Church, which is built of white sand stone and is enriched inside by beautiful memorial gifts.

The Rev. Lloyd B. Thomas was rector from 1908 to 1910. The present rector is the Rev. George Gallup. The communicants of St. Mark's, last reported, number 66.

St. Bartholomew's Mission, Ely, was established in January, 1902. Rev. Arnoldus Miller was the first resident missionary and his first Sunday service was held January 18, 1902. During 1905, Rev. Geo. F. Plummer served for a time. In 1907 a church and rectory were built under the ministry of Rev. Geo. C. Hunting. Rev. J. W. Gunn succeeded him.

St. Andrew's, Battle Mountain.—The Rev. P. S. Smithe founded this mission. It was on St. Andrew's Day, in 1905. The next year the Rev. Lloyd B. Thomas became the missionary in charge and served two years, earning the promotion of his call to St. Mark's, Tonopah. Under his ministry a church was built and, in October of that year, consecrated. The present rector, Rev. Hoyt E. Henriques, succeeded Thomas, and has added a good rectory. Battle Mountain reports 27 communicants.

St. John's, Goldfield.—On Friday, May 27, the first Episcopalian service was held in the front office of Mr. H. B. Lind.

The Rev. Mr. Johnes used to go over from Tonopah, after he took St. Mark's, and give the Goldfielders a monthly service. Then a lot was bought and a very small chapel built on it, in which the Rev. Samuel Mills

used to live and preach before the handsome brown stone church was built. Rev. Mr. Mills, after a pastorate of three years, removed to Placerville, California, in 1909, then the Rev. Harry Gray, of Las Vegas, came up for a monthly service, and Archdeacon Hazlett helped out until Rev. B. J. Darneille came as rector, to be succeeded after a short pastorate by Rev. L. Foulkes. Twenty-one communicants are reported.

St. Paul's, Sparks, is practically *St. James'*, Wadsworth, moved a few miles west. It first appears in our church reports in 1905. About that time the railroad shops and almost all Wadsworth were removed to Sparks. With his church people came the Rev. T. L. Bellam, the oldest priest in age and by residence in the State. In 1893, Mr. Bellam came from Eureka to Wadsworth. Twenty-six communicants are reported.

St. Mary's, Winnemucca.—The church was built by Archdeacon Hazlett, but the work which resulted in its being built was begun by Mr. Bellam and cared for a year or two before Archdeacon Hazlett came to us, by Archdeacon Parker. Bishop Moreland used to visit the town and one year he confirmed a class of three. Mrs. George Nixon, in the struggling days of the mission, was an earnest and generous helper. It has 23 communicants.

A list of the missions he cares for are Blair, Dayton, Fallon, where he built another good church building, Hawthorn, Lovelock, Miller's, Mina, Silver City, and now once more, his old parish, Virginia City.

Good Shepherd, Verdi.—In the fall of 1902 I began visiting Verdi, and have tried ever since to give the good people of the little lumber town at least one service a month; most of the time it has been two. In that time I have baptized 68 persons, most of them adults. I have presented 35 for confirmation. At present there are only 26 communicants. A little chapel has been erected.

Christ Church, Las Vegas.—Harry Graham Gray, after his ordination to the priesthood, in 1908, took charge of Las Vegas, building the church there and a rectory, with money raised largely in the east by Bishop Robinson. After two or three years of valuable service, he went to Los Angeles, and was succeeded by the present rector, Rev. Paul B. James. Las Vegas has a communicant list of 35.

LUTHERAN CHURCH.

BY REV. F. E. MARTENS.

Lutheran people first moved into Nevada about 1877. They settled in Carson Valley, in the vicinity of Gardnerville. The first Lutheran minister to visit them was Rev. A. Geier. His stay was brief and his work insignificant. His successor was Rev. G. A. Hoernicke. Rev. Hoernicke resided in Placerville, California. He visited and worked in Gardnerville during the summer months from 1879 to 1883, inclusive, and did much to place the church work here on a firmer basis. But it is due to Rev. Julius Backer, Carson Valley's first resident pastor, that an organization of the Lutheran congregation was effected, in June, 1893, and that a church was built in 1895. It is the same church which is still used for worship, although greatly remodeled and improved in appearance. The congregation is officially known as the Evangelical Lutheran Trinity Congregation.

On the 15th of March, 1896, Rev. Becker preached his farewell sermon and at the same time installed in office his successor, Rev. H. Bohl. His stay was short. He was followed in office by Rev. J. F. W. Horstmann. Rev. Horstmann remained seven years. He was finally called to Iowa Park, Texas, where he still attends to his ministerial duties.

The present pastor of Carson Valley's Lutheran Congregation is Rev. F. H. Menzel. He was called by the congregation directly from the Concordia Theological Seminary, St. Louis, Mo. He was ordained and installed on the 21st of April, 1907.

At the present writing the church owns over half an acre of valuable real estate, on which the original church, enlarged and improved in appearance, still stands, together with a larger commodious parsonage. The congregational roster contains the names of 268 communicant members. The number of souls—that is, of such who are affiliated with the church, young and old—is 562. Its school, including two branch schools, is attended by 112 pupils. One of these branch schools is located in Genoa and the other just across the Nevada State line in Fredericksburg, California. The congregation consists of German and English speaking people, but in general the English language prevails, being the medium of instruction in Sunday-school, catechetical or confirmation classes and

choir rehearsals. The services are conducted in the German and English languages alternately. Although the former language will in no wise be neglected as long as there is a demand for it, it will be but a comparatively short time when the congregation will be entirely English.

The next place in Nevada in which Lutheran people settled in large numbers was in the city of Reno and vicinity. The first services here were conducted under the direction of Rev. J. H. Theiss, of Oakland, California, in 1896. From this time on Reno Lutheran people were visited and served by Rev. J. F. Horstmann, coming from Gardnerville; Rev. O. Groensberg, of San Francisco, California; Rev. F. G. Gundlach, of Chicago Park, California; Rev. M. Kussner, of Lodi, California, and the present pastor of Gardnerville, Nevada, Rev. F. H. Menzel. At the time of Rev. Groensberg's visit, fourteen children received Christian baptism at one service.

The first pastor to make his residence in Reno was Rev. H. Jonas, in 1906. The next pastor to be called for Reno was Rev. F. E. Martens, the present incumbent. He was called directly from the Concordia Theological Seminary, St. Louis, Mo., and was inducted into office by the Rev. J. H. Schroeder, of San Francisco, California, on Sunday, August 9, 1908.

A congregation was formally organized in the following spring and took the name "Evangelical Lutheran St. Luke's Congregation." At this writing it owns valuable property, 95 x 140, on Second Street. Its roster contains the names of 39 communicant members and the number of souls, young and old, regularly affiliated with the congregation, is 93. The congregation conducts a Saturday language school which is attended by five scholars and a Sunday-school with a membership of 35 pupils. Then there are in the neighborhood of 200 Lutheran souls in and about Reno, who, although not regularly affiliated with St. Luke's Congregation, look upon it as their church. While some German work is done by the congregation, yet by far the larger part is English only. Three-fourths of the services are held in English; one-fourth only in German. All other work, including Sunday-school and confirmation instruction, is carried on exclusively in the English language, as in the case of Gardnerville.

The above congregation in Carson Valley and Reno belong to the national Lutheran body, which is officially known as The Evangelical

Lutheran Synod of Missouri, Ohio, and other states, which is again affiliated with the Synodical Conference, to which all those Lutheran bodies belong which profess unconditionally all the confessions of the Lutheran Church.

THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

BY REV. JAMES H. N. WILLIAMS.

The Methodist Church is universally recognized as a pioneer church. No frontier has been too distant and no field too difficult for her heralds to reach and her servants to cultivate. Are there unshepherded people there? That is enough. Her itinerant preachers find them and minister to them. The Nevada field has been no exception. The Methodist minister was there at the beginning. He will remain all through, helping to make the history and shape the destiny of the State, halting not before the hardships; willing to sow, though others may reap, and always believing the harvest will come.

The First Preacher.—The honor of being the first preacher in Nevada belongs to Jesse L. Bennett, a Methodist local preacher, who in 1859 held religious services in the Carson Valley at Genoa and Eagle Ranch, where Carson City now stands. Mr. Bennett also preached the first sermon heard in Virginia City. It was delivered on C Street on a Sunday morning in 1860. A "hat" collection brought the astonished preacher several hundred dollars from a generous congregation, "flush" in their prosperity and ready to pay well for any novelty offered by preacher or troubador or otherwise.

Mr. Bennett never joined the conference in California or Nevada, but remained always in the local ranks.

Administered from California.—The California Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in San Francisco in 1853. In 1855, Carson Valley and Salt Lake City (Nevada was then a part of Utah Territory) were appointments "left to be supplied" by the presiding elder, whenever he could find men for the fields. But evidently no supplies were found, as the places were dropped from the list in 1856.

In 1857, th Rev. Ira P. Hale was assigned to the circuit; but I find no evidence that Mr. Hale reached the field. He doubtless supplied some charge in California. In 1861, however, he was preaching at Esmeralda

and Mono. Having gone into law, he remained a local preacher and true to the church, dying in her fellowship in Aurora in November, 1890.

No Nevada appointments were made in 1858; but in 1859 the Rev. A. L. S. Bateman was sent to Carson Valley. Eighteen hundred and sixty is, however, again left blank, only that Carson Valley and Walker River were "to be supplied." From 1861 the work becomes continuous. That year the Nevada Territory District was created with Rev. N. R. Peck, presiding elder, who visited his field. The following appointments were made: Carson City, W. S. Blakeley; Virginia City, S. B. Rooney (supply); Washoe Valley, Jesse L. Bennett (supply); American Valley, E. L. Dickinson (supply); Silver City, Genoa, Palmyra, Humboldt and Honey Lake, "to be supplied." In 1862, N. R. Peck remained in charge of the district. Additional names appear: Charles V. Anthony, Virginia City; F. H. McGrath, Carson City; A. P. White, Silver City and Dayton; O. N. Brooks, Humboldt; Thomas Cayton, Aurora; E. Paddison, Honey Lake. Carson Valley, Walker River and Sierra Valley are "to be supplied." W. S. Blakeley succeeds Jesse L. Bennett in Washoe Valley and the name of Mr. Bennett does not again appear in the records.

In 1863 the Nevada field is designated "Washoe District," Adam Bland, Presiding Elder. Fifteen appointments are set apart, but only seven men are available to fill them. Messrs. Anthony and McGrath continue and H. L. S. Bateman returns to Carson Valley and Warren Nims comes to Carson City. J. H. Maddux, G. B. Hinkle and R. Carberry are stationed respectively at Gold Hill and Dayton, Unionville and Starr City and Honey Lake Valley.

This was a significant year. Nevada was about to enter Statehood. Nevada Methodists desired the church to keep step with the State, so they asked the California Conference to memorialize the General Conference—the quadriennial law-making body of the church—to constitute Nevada a separate conference. Some believed this premature; but the memorial was carried, and by the General Conference of 1864 the Nevada Conference was authorized.

At the California Conference of that year, Adam Bland, Presiding Elder of Washoe District, reported that all the Nevada men had continued at their work through the year, excepting H. Dermot Slade, who died at Aurora, April, 1864, after ten months of faithful service. The Nevada necrology is not a long list, but Mr. Slade's name properly heads

it. The year had seen churches built, others completed and the general work extended. Recognizing the new conference, Bishop D. W. Clark divided it into two districts: Washoe District, I. N. Leihy, Presiding Elder; Humboldt District, A. N. Fisher, Presiding Elder. Including the presiding elders, the bishop assigned thirteen preachers to this scattered field from Indian Valley and Quincy on the west to Austin in central Nevada on the east. T. S. Dunn, D. C. Adams, W. J. White, A. F. Hitchcock, C. A. E. Hertel and J. D. Bullock are new names for this year. The conference thus created was to continue for twenty years, until at Genoa, on August 23, 1884, by a vote of 13 to 1, the "Nevada Conference" was changed to the "Nevada Mission," in which ecclesiastical and administrative form it remains to-day.

Pre-Conference Pioneers.—From 1859 to 1864, more than twenty men in all were attached to the field, only four of whom were to give any lengthened service—T. H. McGrath, Warren Nims, G. B. Hinkle and F. M. Willis.

The great majority of preachers who first came remained only a year or two. Yet they were worthy men; and some of them were to become prominently associated with Methodism in California and elsewhere.

Jesse L. Bennett, the father of Nevada Methodism, was not long identified with the mountain work. After rocking the Methodist cradle in Carson Valley in 1859, introducing the work in Virginia City in 1860 and supplying Washoe Valley in 1861, his name does not again appear in Nevada history.

Samuel B. Rooney was the first regularly appointed preacher to Virginia City. As a preacher he was of more than ordinary ability, and though his pastorate on the Comstock was brief, it was effective. Indefatigable in service, preaching in any available place, whether private house, lodging house or blacksmith shop, his work made a good and lasting impression. The little society he ministered unto was mostly sheltered in a lodging house on E Street until the first church was built in 1861 on Taylor and D streets. Mr. Rooney returned east to New Jersey.

A. L. S. Bateman was a truly western pioneer, coming to California in 1851 and to Nevada in 1859. He was greatly devoted to frontier work, asking for the hardest appointments—just the kind of a man to do picket duty for the church. During the conference year 1859-'60, he

undoubtedly preached in Carson City, Genoa and Virginia City. In 1864 he also returned to the east.

W. G. Blakeley was sent to Carson in 1861. He at once initiated plans for the building of a small church. Governor James W. Nye attended the meeting at which a subscription paper was prepared and several hundred dollars pledged. But that particular plan fell through. The next year Mr. Blakeley served Washoe Valley, his last Methodist ministerial service, he being discontinued by the California Conference, at his own request, in 1863. He was chosen chaplain of the Territorial Legislature.

Thomas H. McGrath was stationed in Carson in 1862. Mr. McGrath was the first Methodist preacher to come into the Territory to remain for any considerable length of time as pastor and presiding elder. He also served as chaplain of the Territorial Legislature and as a member of the State Legislature. On account of changes in his theology and irregularities in his life he was allowed to withdraw from the ministry in 1873.

N. R. Peck had the honor of being Nevada's pioneer presiding elder. He faithfully visited his field.

Adam Bland, from San Diego, in Southern California, known in that State's early days, and to the mines of Nevada, was the second presiding elder.

Charles V. Anthony reached Virginia City in October, 1862. Dr. Anthony was an able young preacher, devoted to the work of the ministry, a most estimable Christian gentleman who came to the highest positions his conference had to offer. He remained in Virginia City two years.

George B. Hinkle, in 1863, went to Unionville and Starr City. This worthy man remained a staunch friend of the Nevada work for thirty years, the longest continuous service of any man in its history, retiring in 1893.

Warren Nims entered Nevada in 1863, also to remain loyal to the close of his active ministerial life in 1888. At the first conference session, in 1865, Mr. Nims was elected secretary and was thereafter successively elected each year for twenty-two years.

F. M. Willis is another of the Nevada men of 1863, finding his first field of work on the Truckee Meadows. At Crystal Peak, near Verdi, at his home, he organized a Methodist class, conducted Sunday-school in a carpenter's shop and prayer meeting in the home of Mr. and Mrs. Orin

Van Aiken. Glendale, then known as Stone and Gates' Crossing, was also a preaching point. Mr. Willis was another of those sturdy stalwarts unswerved from duty by worldly opportunity, unflinchingly loyal to righteousness and constantly devoted to his assignments as a minister of the church. He severed his connection with Nevada in 1885.

The first Methodist Church building erected in Nevada was built in Virginia City by Rev. S. B. Rooney during the summer of 1861. It was an unpretentious wooden structure of heavy planks set up endwise, with the rear of the building resting on posts fully ten feet high, to make it level with its frontage. It had a seating capacity of 150 and cost about \$2,000. Its location was on the corner of D and Taylor streets.

Rev. C. V. Anthony became preacher in charge in October, 1862. He found a strong and well-organized official board composed of such men as Captain H. B. Blaisdell (afterwards Governor of the State), Sunday-school Superintendent; Dr. H. T. Pinkerton, John C. Faull, James Wagor, Levi Prince, Amaziah Smith, Timothy Jones, T. R. Diehl and others.

In the following summer work was commenced on a larger and more pretentious church edifice. It was to represent an outlay of \$40,000. On February 14, 1864, it was solemnly dedicated, the Rev. Dr. Martin C. Briggs preaching the sermon and conducting the dedicatory services. Amidst rejoicings and with great satisfaction this second Virginia City church was now in the hands of its people. An unfavorable turn in the tide of mining prosperity would have cost the church the loss of its building had it not been for the large liberality of some of its friends, notably Governor Blaisdell and John C. Faull, who came to the rescue. But this elegant edifice was not long preserved to the church and the city. One Saturday night the \$40,000 structure fell in a pile of ruins, and to this day the cause remains a mystery. Its fall, with a loud crash, was accompanied by a sound like that of exploding gas or powder. That it was blown up by human help is a belief not without reason.

Not utterly discouraged, the plucky flock rallied for the erection of another church on the remaining granite foundation, but this time not of brick, but of less pretentious frame, and costing about \$8,000. Then came the great conflagration that swept the city in October, 1875, and in its blackened and desolated pathway lay in a heap of charred ruins this, the third Virginia City Methodist Church building. At this time the Rev.

Charles McKelvey was the pastor and directed the building of a new church the following summer. This was a handsome frame building erected on the old site and at a cost of \$20,000, the Church Extension Society of Philadelphia coming materially to the help of the local society. This, the fourth building to be erected on the original lot by the Methodists, being built in the centennial year, was named "Centennial Church."

For 1912, Virginia City neither appears in the annual report of the Superintendent of the Mission, the appointments nor in the statistics. Indeed, four years ago the Centennial Church, with its parsonage, was moved to Sparks, marking another chapter in the mutations of time. If the parts could be pieced together, the story of Virginia City Methodism would be thrillingly interesting, with its lights and shades and varying vicissitudes.

Dayton has the distinction of having the second church building in chronological order. A neat frame structure was erected in 1863, Rev. J. H. Maddux, pastor. It cost \$3,000. Regular work was maintained for only about a decade when Dayton ceased to be an appointment. In 1876 a tramp set fire to the building and it was totally reduced to ashes. Irregular services were held for more than twenty years following the burning of the church. The writer of these notes preached there several times during the summer of 1888, and for a few years later it was a part of the Gold Hill charge.

Washoe City came next in order. In 1863, Rev. T. H. McGrath built a church and parsonage, costing \$4,500. In 1866 and 1869, the conference met in this church, each time presided over by Bishop Calvin Kingsley. Its life, however, was brief, as was that of the place itself. In 1876, the conference deeded the building to the district school trustees, with the provision that it should be open at any time for religious worship when not in use for school purposes. Thus it continued to serve the people for a number of years when, in 1888, it came again into the hands of the church, was taken down and moved to Lovelock, where it was re-erected to serve its original purpose for another nineteen years. In 1893, I assisted the Rev. Thomas H. Nicholas, pastor, in a series of evangelistic services and found attending the meetings several persons who had worshipped in it when it stood in Washoe City. In 1909 it was remodeled into a larger building and one better suited for modern church uses.

The fourth church was built in Gold Hill in 1865, by Rev. A. F.

Hitchcock, at an outlay of \$5,000. In 1876 it was sold to one of the companies of the City Fire Department and was moved one block south, where, as was said, it "continued to fight fire in another direction." A new and more centrally located lot was purchased and another building erected in which a succession of able ministers preached the gospel. Gold Hill has ceased to be a Methodist appointment.

Austin was another mining camp contributing "experience" in church building. The Rev. J. L. Trefren built in Austin the largest church building in the State, with the exception of the Roman Catholic building in Virginia City. It was built of brick and, with its elegant organ and adjoining brick parsonage, cost fully \$35,000. Funds were raised in the east on mining stock sold on the "installment plan." Alas! the "boom" bursted before final and full payments were made, and the fine building was sold to the county for a Court House. Later the Connexional Board of Church Extension redeemed the property. Austin is still on the list, but for 1912 was "left to be supplied."

Carson City, the cradle of Nevada Methodism, comes comparatively late in the work of church building. But though somewhat slower than some of her neighbors, she finally built the most durable church of which the denomination boasts in the State.

In 1861 plans were formulated for a church and a board of trustees was organized. On November 4, 1861, at the quarterly conference, N. R. Peck, Presiding Elder, and W. G. Blakeley preacher in charge, with Governor James W. Nye in attendance, a church building was decided on and a subscription paper was started, several hundred dollars being secured. For some reason the plan did not materialize. Rev. Warren Nims became pastor in 1863 and built a small parsonage at a cost of \$800. In 1864, Governor Blaisdell and R. L. Higgins were added to the board of trustees. The following year the church bought a block of land for \$1,000 and began preparations for a stone building.

The work of building the stone church was a slow process; but finally it was completed, having cost \$10,000. The conference session of 1867 was held in Carson, and on Sunday, September 8, Bishop Edward Thompson dedicated it.

In 1909, under the leadership of the present pastor, the Rev. W. H. D. Hornaday, extensive and expensive improvements were made, enlarging the old stone building and giving to the Capital City the finest Methodist

house of worship in the State. Bishop Edwin Holt Hughes held the annual meeting of the Nevada Mission in Carson, August 25-30, 1909, and dedicated the new church, which is valued at \$18,000. Only a comparatively small debt remains on the property. An interesting feature of the session of 1909 and of its dedicatory services was the presence of Mrs. Sarah L. Nims, widow of Rev. Warren Nims, the man who labored so hard and so successfully in the early '60s to build the church completed in 1867.

Nevada Conference Organized.—At the California Conference of 1864, held in San Francisco, September 21 to October 2, Bishop D. W. Clark, presiding, the Nevada Conference was organized and Virginia City was chosen as the meeting place for the first session to be held in 1865. Bishop Clark divided the new field into two districts—Washoe District, with I. N. Leihy, Presiding Elder; Humboldt District, A. N. Fisher, Presiding Elder. The Washoe District was composed of the following places and preachers: Virginia City, Thomas S. Dunn; Gold Hill and Silver City, D. C. Adams; Aurora and Bodie, W. J. White; Owen's River, "to be supplied"; Markleville and Silver Mountain, "to be supplied"; Genoa and Carson Valley, "to be supplied"; Carson City, Warren Nims; Washoe City and Steamboat Valley, T. H. McGrath; Truckee River, George B. Hinkle; Dayton, A. F. Hitchcock; Fort Churchill and Como, "to be supplied." The Humboldt District received an assignment of seven appointments, viz.: Humboldt City and Dun Glenn, "to be supplied"; Austin, C. A. E. Hertel; Canyon City, R. Carberry; Surprise Valley, "to be supplied"; Honey Lake Valley, "to be supplied"; Sierra Valley, J. D. Bullock; Indian Valley, A. L. S. Bateman.

Of the Presiding Elders, Mr. Leihy had been on the field before when Nevada was a part of his territory when he was Presiding Elder of the Humboldt District in the California Conference. Presiding Elder Fisher was ordained an elder and appointed by the bishop a presiding elder, which in effect is the office of a sub-bishop. The Nevada Conference, organized and manned with the above-named thirteen preachers, was to continue through two decades of history.

Conference Area.—When organized, the Nevada Conference embraced the whole of the State of Nevada, parts of Utah and New Mexico, together with all of the California counties east of the west summit of the Sierra Nevada Mountains, making a field which was "simply immense."

The present territory of the Nevada Mission, with Utah and New Mexico eliminated, is as large as the combined areas of Maine, Massachusetts, Maryland, New Hampshire, New Jersey, Vermont, Rhode Island, Utah, Wyoming and Idaho.

Conference Sessions and Men.—The first session of the Nevada Conference was held in Virginia City, commencing September 7, 1865, and lasting four days, presided over by Bishop Calvin Kingsley. Warren Nims was elected secretary. The more important statistics reported were: Church buildings, 4; parsonages, 5; full church members, 267; probationers, 26; local preachers, 11; Sunday-schools, 17; officers and teachers, 158; scholars, 803. The Missionary Society, with headquarters in New York, had appropriated \$4,400 to the field for ministerial support that year. The missionary collection from the field was \$22.

This first conference was proud to record the fact that the State of Nevada was the first to ratify the Constitutional Amendment forever abolishing slavery within the limits of the United States.

Presiding Elder A. N. Fisher reported his district as being 800 miles in extent. He had been around it three times during the year.

Bishop Kingsley stationed eleven preachers and left eight places "to be supplied." At the second session, commencing September 5, 1866, held at Washoe City, and again presided over by Bishop Calvin Kingsley, fifteen men received appointments. A. N. Fisher was continued in the Presiding Eldership, and T. H. McGrath was appointed the other Presiding Elder. During the year two new churches had been built.

The third conference session, held in Carson City, September 5-8, 1867, under the presidency of Bishop Edward Thompson, elected the first delegate to the general conference, A. N. Fisher receiving the honor. Carson's stone church was dedicated on the Sunday of this session. As this was the Methodist centennial year, a report on centenary matters was made, showing that the conference had raised the special sum of \$50,384, applying \$49,100 for increase of local church property and \$1,043 on local church debts, the remaining \$241 going for connexional purposes. The next annual session was also held at Carson City and presided over by Bishop Levi Scott, who had visited the Territory ten years before when it was a part of the California Conference. The outstanding feature of this session was the organization of a Board of Church Extension, with Governor H. G. Blaisdell as president.

Of the men connected with the period of the conference, this chronicle must be limited to a recognition of only a few among many who were worthy.

Colin Anderson came into Nevada in 1866 from California, where he had been well initiated into circuit work as a junior preacher in Sonoma and Napa counties. His first Nevada appointment was Aurora. He served in the pastorate and the Presiding Eldership. In 1873 he took a "location," but continued to preach as a "supply" both in Nevada and California.

Lorr M. Ewing came to the conference in Washoe City in 1869 and was sent by Bishop Kingsley to supply Elko and Carlin. Elko was then a tent and canvas town of about 1,200 people. His first call for a congregation was by a large sign conspicuously displayed, "Divine Services in the Canvas Theatre, Sunday, August 28, 1869. The preacher must pay \$10 for the place. A collection will be taken." The collection was just \$10. The next year he was admitted to conference on trial and sent to Humboldt Circuit, embracing Unionville, Winnemucca, Dunn Glen, Humboldt, Mill City, Paradise Valley, Palisade, Carlin and Elko. He died July 19, 1909.

Dr. John D. Hammond came from Wisconsin to Nevada in 1868 and became one of the most prominent Methodist ministers in Nevada and later in California. For thirteen consecutive years Dr. Hammond was in the Nevada Presiding Eldership. Three times he represented the conference in the general conference—1876, 1880, 1884.

Reno.—Methodism on the Truckee Meadows precedes the birth of the town, the scattered settlers being religiously served in 1863 and 1864 by Revs. F. M. Willis and G. B. Hinkle. During 1863 there was an "Indian scare" and some of the settlers moved to Washoe City and other places, but the preacher never missed an appointment and never met with any molestation.

Reno came with the coming of the Central Pacific Railroad in 1868. Methodism came also, organized a class, held preaching services, and in 1871, R. A. Ricker, pastor, a church building had been completed. From the time of the first house of worship to the present, Methodism has had but two church buildings in Reno, the original structure escaping the fire of 1879. The first house had been enlarged and improved from time

to time, notably when Charles McKelvey was pastor, from 1878 to 1880, and again in 1888, under the pastorate of Thomas P. Bradshaw.

The first years of growth were rather slow and pastors were changed every year from 1872 to 1878, the church being served by the following ministers: A. P. White, A. J. Wells (Mr. Wells built a parsonage), E. C. Arnold, G. W. Fitch, T. S. Uren, W. C. Gray. Mr. McKelvey was the first pastor to remain more than one year. George W. De La Matyr succeeded him in 1880 and also served for three years. In 1880 the church had only 64 members, tying in that respect with Carson, while Virginia City had 129. But in the decade of 1890 the Reno membership doubled. It has since kept the lead in all particulars. In 1885 the church became self-supporting. The present church building, erected on the original site, was built in 1900, when George H. Jones was pastor. The church building and lot are estimated to have a probable value of \$15,000, while the parsonage property is considered worth \$2,000. The church now reports 274 full members, with 330 Sunday-school scholars. During the ministry in Reno of Robert H. Bready (1889-1890) a gracious revival greatly encouraged and strengthened the church. Dr. Henry Aston was pastor in 1884 and 1885, and was succeeded for three years by Thomas P. Bradshaw. Mr. Bradshaw's health failed him towards the close of the second year, but he recuperated sufficiently to be reappointed, though only for partial work. In the summer of 1888 the writer of these notes occupied the pulpit for several weeks. R. H. Bready, two years; Fred V. Fisher, one year; John A. Bready, five years; F. C. Lee, G. H. Jones, J. A. Phelps, A. C. Welch, Leslie M. Beerwell, W. S. Kelly and Harry Sheldon have been the ministers since 1890. The present pastor is Mr. Sheldon.

This section closes the second, or conference period, of Methodism in Nevada. When the conference was organized in 1864 there were in its territory four churches, with a total membership of 230 and 41 probationers. Its four churches were estimated worth \$57,000, while its four modest parsonages were considered worth \$3,700. There were ten Sunday-schools, having 422 scholars, with 74 officers and teachers. Nine preachers received from their charges for the year ending September, 1864, \$7,511, Charles V. Anthony, of Virginia City, receiving the highest salary—\$2,000. Carson Valley and Silver Mountain paid its minister, A. L. S.

Bateman, the smallest sum, viz., \$250; nor did he receive any help from the Missionary Society.

In 1884, when the conference by vote of its members became a mission, it reported 21 churches, valued at \$66,400. (In 1864 the church at Virginia City was estimated worth \$45,000, while in 1884 the property there was only valued at \$15,000.) The four parsonages were increased to 20, and in probable value to \$13,500. The full members were 643, with 54 probationers. There were 24 Sunday-schools, with 1,665 scholars and 218 officers and teachers. For ministerial support, including that paid to the Episcopal and Presiding Elder funds, the sum of \$19,899 is recorded, which was divided among fifteen men, an average of \$690. But this was supplemented with an appropriation of \$3,000 from the Missionary Society, bringing the average up to \$926.

The Nevada Mission.—From 1884 onward, the ecclesiastical administration of the work is under that of a mission with a superintendent at its head. In the years from 1884 there have been four superintendents—George W. De La Matyr, Dr. Eugene W. Van Deventer, George C. King and Dr. S. A. Thompson.

George W. De La Matyr's term was from 1884 to July, 1889. During a part of the time of his superintendency he had associated with him as a Presiding Elder, his brother, John H. De La Matyr, to whom was assigned the northwestern part of the work. Superintendent De La Matyr received the mission with twenty-one appointments, having twelve men stationed and nine places "to be supplied." Of the twelve appointees under Mr. De La Matyr, four had been connected with the Nevada work for a good many years—G. B. Hinkle, Warren Nims, F. M. Willis and Lorr M. Ewing.

By the 1885 session, E. W. Van Deventer had returned from Southern California and was stationed at Carson City.

From 1887 to 1890 a number of young Englishmen came to Nevada. Thomas Leak was the first, coming in 1887 from England. Through him came others from his native Yorkshire. Mr. Leak did not stay long, going over to California. In 1888, James Whitaker was sent to Gold Hill, and later served Quincy, Truckee and Virginia City. From Virginia City he went to Denver, Colorado.

James H. N. Williams, on the second Sunday in June, 1888, began his itinerant ministry in his native country by preaching in the very church

in which, nineteen years before, he had been baptized. For several weeks he supplied the Virginia City pulpit, when at the mission meeting in Reno in the middle of August, Bishop Thomas Bowman sent him to the Cedarville Circuit in Modoc County, California. Mr. Williams served Cedarville, Lakeview and Winnemucca, and also supplied for brief periods, Virginia, Gold Hill and Dayton, Reno and Genoa. For the years 1891-1894, he was secretary of the mission, when he left the Nevada work for the California Conference, being at present in charge of the College Avenue Church, Berkeley, California.

In 1887, Edwin Francis Brown, of San Francisco, took supply work in the mission, and in 1891 was received on trial and gave ten years of very capable work to Nevada.

In 1889, Fred R. Winsor, and in 1890, Henry J. Winsor (brothers), joined the Nevada forces. Fred R. gave to Nevada a longer service than did his brother, Henry J., but the service of each was eminently satisfactory.

The Virginia City session of 1890 received on trial Fred R. Winsor, William Ackroyd, Joseph Johns and Samuel Albone, while Henry Pearce and Henry J. Winsor were received as supplies. These were an estimable group of men. Joseph Johns alone remains in the mission. S. W. Albone continued in Nevada until 1907.

Eugene W. Van Deventer, for seventeen consecutive years, with only one brief break of a few months, was superintendent. During his superintendency there was built nineteen new churches and fourteen new parsonages at an aggregate value of \$75,000. Three more churches were in process of building—estimated cost \$25,000, totaling \$100,000. All the churches and parsonages have been repaired and improved so that they are fairly new. The benevolences increased steadily and orderly from \$700 annually to \$2,650. The church membership has ever been uncertain as to numbers, ranging from 800 to 1,200.

Joseph Johns is the only man connected with the Nevada Mission to-day who was on the field when Dr. Van Deventer became superintendent, and his service has not been continuous. J. M. Wilson is the one man who from 1890 has continued consecutively in the mission.

In 1899, Nevada's ministerial forces were vitally and permanently strengthened by P. H. Willis, the present pastor at Sparks, and who also gives some week-day services to Battle Mountain and Carlin. It was

at Battle Mountain that Mr. Willis began his ministry, giving to the little town at the junction of the Central Pacific Railroad and the Nevada Central Railroad, that goes to Austin, with neighboring towns in the mountains, three years. He then gave seven years to Quincy, in Plumas County, California. He is a nephew of Rev. F. M. Willis, earlier referred to as preaching on the Truckee Meadows in 1863.

In 1906 the mission reported 994 members in 33 churches; 2,534 scholars in 44 Sunday-schools; the church benevolences receiving a support in all of \$2,320. In 1909, the end of Mr. King's term, there were 35 churches, with 1,406 members; 56 Sunday-schools caring for 3,686 scholars; to the benevolences were given \$3,083.

Comparing the appointments of 1906 with 1909, it is found that of the 24 men stationed in the former year, only three—P. H. Willis, L. M. Burwell and J. M. Wilson—were appointed in the latter year, so completely had the personnel changed. Seven of the 1909 men were reappointed in 1912 and two of these (Willis and Wilson) are of the old guard.

In 1905 the new names of Hazen, Calientes and Las Vegas appear in the superintendent's report and in the appointments, each having a minister, viz.: J. F. Price (Hazen), W. J. Gamble (Calientes), J. W. Bain (Las Vegas). Of these places Las Vegas remains a separate charge with a church having 34 members, 70 Sunday-school scholars, one church building worth \$7,000 and a parsonage worth \$1,500, with only \$250 remaining indebtedness. E. A. Palmer is the present pastor. Hazen is a part of the Fallon circuit and Calientes is connected with Las Vegas.

Nineteen hundred and eight brings new places on the Methodist map—Ely, Fallon, Manhattan, Rawhide, Fairview, Searchlight, Goldfield, Standish and Tonopah. Of these, Goldfield has special recognition in Superintendent King's report for 1907. N. J. Chrysler had been appointed in 1906. He was followed by A. S. Mulligan, who secured lots for a church building, gathered members and organized the church. Dr. Charles L. Halterman, of the St. Louis Conference, is next in charge. Goldfield now has 62 members, cares for 100 Sunday-school scholars, has a church building valued at \$5,000. W. F. Wenk is the pastor.

Fallon.—Under J. F. Price's pastorate a neat church was built. There is also a comfortable parsonage. Ira E. Price is the present minister.

In 1900 the mission had 24 charges and when the appointments were

made every charge was supplied with a minister. In 1912 the places are 32, while the men appointed are only 22.

The mission, in its minutes for 1912, shows Superintendent Dr. S. A. Thompson to have under his care 32 appointments, including stations and circuits, with 37 church buildings, having an estimated value of \$150,800. There are 28 parsonages, considered worth \$44,500. The church members number 1,426. There are 45 Sunday-schools having 3,092 scholars, with 334 officers and teachers. The current expenses of the churches amounted for the year to \$3,056, those of the Sunday-schools being \$1,979. For pastoral support the amount of \$21,240 was paid, while the house rent (parsonages) was placed at \$4,095.

On the Superintendent's claim, the Episcopal and the Retired Ministers' Fund, \$1,575 was paid, while on the benevolences the amount was \$2,320. For building and improving church property the churches paid that year \$13,811 and \$2,547 on indebtedness on church property. Here is a grand total of money raised for the year ending in August, 1912, of \$46,528, an average of \$1,454 for each of the 32 charges.

MORMON CHURCH.

In 1856 the first Mormons came to this section and settled in what is now Washoe Valley. About forty families comprised the settlement. They built a sawmill and started homes. Their independent mode of living did not please Brigham Young, who sent emissaries to call them back to Salt Lake. Many went, selling their belongings for very little. A few stayed and changed their religion, calling themselves Josephites, declaring against polygamy, and going back to the original church organized by Joseph Smith. The Gentiles had several conflicts with the Mormons and in those days when there was little attention paid to law, the enmity was at times quite bitter.

The Reorganized Church of Jesus Christ, Latter Day Saints, was first established in Nevada in 1867, by Alexander H. Smith, who came as a missionary of the Reorganized Church, under the presidency of Joseph Smith, son of Joseph Smith, founder of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. Previous to his death he ordained that his oldest son should preside after his demise. The church was disorganized after his death and his son reorganized it in harmony with the law of the land,

and with the Covenant given by Revelation in 1830. There are branches of the church in different parts of Nevada, but Carson City is the principal place of worship, with D. R. Jones as the pastor, and has been since 1867, when first organized. Mr. E. Penrod, partner of H. T. P. Comstock, of the Comstock mines, was among the first members. John Twaddle, George Smith, A. B. Johns, John Hawkings, T. R. Hawkings, W. Baxter, W. Ridlar and D. R. Jones, all pioneers, were the leaders in this branch of the church.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

BY MRS. GEO. L. SWARTZ.

The interdependence of pioneer settlers upon each other in a frontier country, the identical conditions of life in which they all exist, tend to obliterate demoninationalism as we find it in longer established communities. The Presbyterian Church in the early days seems to have been particularly adapted to the individual needs of the pioneers, as we find that the first Presbyterian Church established in Nevada embraced members from different evangelical denominations. The Presbyterian Church was established in the days before the reign of law and order, and Christian work meant hardship and sacrifices; when there were no churches and few Christians. The purpose of the early missionaries was not so much to build up a denomination, as the cause for which the denomination stood.

What was known at that time as the New School Branch of the Presbyterian Church was the pioneer in Nevada. The Home Mission Committee in the spring of 1861 sent Rev. W. W. Brier as exploring agent to the Territory of Nevada. He called a public meeting at the old stone schoolhouse in Carson City, May 19 of that year and organized the first Presbyterian Church in Nevada.

In the early day the work of building up the Presbyterian Church in Nevada was an expensive and not always successful undertaking. Some churches were organized that existed only a short time, others remained stationary or declining for years, and all growth was extremely slow. One of the Presbyterian missionaries in Nevada had a parish one-half the size of Pennsylvania, or as large as Massachusetts, Rhode Island and

Connecticut combined. The length of it from north to south was 225 miles. In a tour among the ranches, this missionary found people who had never seen a minister or heard a sermon. In another camp a family who had lived there twenty-one years and never before had a minister of any denomination been in their house. One Sunday found him in a hall owned by a saloonkeeper. A choir was improvised, three of whom were saloonkeepers. The owner of the saloon closed his place of business during the service. At another settlement he preached in a schoolhouse. The saloonkeeper took up the collection, and if any one failed to contribute he called on him to "shell out," as the preacher must live as well as they. In this one tour over his parish he traveled 1,300 miles. In 1870 there were five churches, in 1881 four, three of which were included in the first five. In 1913 there are sixteen Presbyterian churches in the State.

Presbyterianism in Nevada may be divided into two periods, the first period dating from the organizing of the pioneer church in Nevada, the Carson City church, on June 2, 1861, and ending with the organization of the church at Wells, on March 27, 1892. This first period covers about twenty-one years of active missionary work in which time seven churches sprang to birth. They are as follows: Carson City, June 2, 1861; Virginia City, September 21, 1862; Elko, May 26, 1870; Eureka, August, 1873; Starr Valley, June 1, 1890; Lamoille, October 26, 1890; Wells, March 27, 1892. Then the population began to come in, for the boom following the rich discoveries at Tonopah attracted settlers from far and near. The men under the Board of Sabbath-School Work seized the psychological moment and pushed into the new camps. That intrepid pioneer, the Rev. Francis H. Robinson, for ten years was an able organizer for worship and gathering children into Sunday-schools. As a result, during the second period several churches were organized: Reno, August 31, 1902; Tonopah, September 21, 1902; Goldfield, March 26, 1905; Las Vegas, April 19, 1905; Manhattan, June 10, 1906; Rhyolite, November 11, 1906; Columbia, November 11, 1906; Searchlight, January 12, 1908; East Ely and Magill, May 16, 1909.

Carson City.—This historic church was organized on June 2, 1861, by Rev. W. W. Brier. At a meeting held May 19, Judge Flenoken acted as chairman, and the following gentlemen were elected as trustees to procure a site and erect a church: G. A. Sears, J. Gasharie, S. Fraser, W. M. Stewart and H. B. Pomeroy. At this first meeting \$5,000 were raised by

subscription. On June 2, 1861, a letter was written to Mr. Brier requesting that he organize a church of Jesus Christ to be known as the First Presbyterian Church in Carson City, and to be placed by him under the care of the Presbytery of Sierra Nevada. Mr. Brier returned to California and explained to Rev. A. F. White the important needs of the field. Mr. White went to Carson City as temporary supply September 12. Another \$5,000 was subscribed and building operations begun during the spring and summer of 1863. Financial depression delayed the completion of the building and it was not dedicated until May, 1864. In 1881 the number of members was 79, and 120 pupils in the Sunday-school. The General Assembly report for 1912 gives 55 members, a decrease of 34, and 100 in the Sunday-school. Hugh H. McCreary is the pastor.

Virginia City.—The second church was organized at Virginia City in 1862. For several years their meetings were held in the District Court room and it was not until 1867 that a church was built. It is said that the funds for the erection of this building were obtained by the trustees through a successful mining operation. In 1881 there were 105 members and 200 Sunday-school pupils. In 1912, 19 members and 55 in the Sunday-school. W. A. Laughlin is pastor.

Gold Hill and Austin.—A church was organized at Gold Hill in 1863 and at Austin in 1864, but no churches were ever built at either place, and the organizations were only short lived.

Elko.—In the early autumn of 1869, Henry Otis Whitney, a Yale college man, came to Elko to establish a Presbyterian Church. He lived only a short time and in the spring of 1870, Rev. John Brown organized a church of nine members—Mrs. E. S. Yeates, Mrs. Cornelia Earll, Mrs. Mary Campbell, Mr. Charles Wright, Mr. F. P. Kittridge, Mrs. O. F. Rogers, Mr. Donald Campbell, Mr. Robert Carter and R. M. Fowler, M.D.

The Central Pacific Railroad Company gave four lots on which to build a church. A building costing \$2,500 was dedicated in October, 1870. Of this amount \$1,200 were contributed by persons outside of Elko County. The organ was the gift of Henry Ward Beecher.

This pioneer church had a hard struggle for existence, at one time, in 1875, having only four members. In 1879 the number reported was 25, and again in 1881 only 6. The Rev. Byers, who preached in 1876, testified that the people of Elko were generally kind, but as a class very wicked. He had no deacons and he had no material out of which to make them.

The Hon. H. H. Peyton, formerly a member of the Legislature, was buried June 3, 1876. On this day the famous lightning express was to make its initial trip from New York to San Francisco. The funeral was set for 2 o'clock, and the train was expected about 4 o'clock. The bell was tolled and the church was filling up. The pastor was just rising in the pulpit to begin the service when some one near the door called out, "The fast train is coming." To the astonishment of Mr. Byers there was a general stampede. Everybody left the church, pall-bearers, mourners, friends and sexton, the minister alone remaining. About the time the train left town he again tolled the bell when the people began slowly to return to the church. He then preached the funeral sermon. These were the days when the mines were not developed, when the water courses were not ditched, when the fields were not cultivated and the land not cleared. As the value of the rich farming lands became known and the waters of the streams were utilized for irrigation, the abundant natural resources brought new life to the country and a consequent increase of population to the town. The church received new inspiration and outgrew the humble building in which it had its birth. The Rev. John Wallace undertook the building of a new church. Much of the labor he did with his own hands, and April 13, 1893, the second building was dedicated.

In September, 1901, Rev. George H. Greenfield took up the pastorate of the church and has faithfully served to the present time. When Mr. Greenfield took charge of the church it was \$1,000 in debt. This debt was liquidated in the next two years. Also \$1,200 was raised to repair and remodel the church and \$1,800 to build a manse. The aim of this pastor has been to establish a church free from denominational lines, a church home for all believers in Christ. It has in its membership Baptists, Methodists, Congregationalists, Disciples of Christ, Episcopalians, Lutherans and Roman Catholics, as well as Presbyterians.

About two years ago it was observed that the building constructed in 1893 was inadequate to the needs of the church and community, and it was decided to erect a structure that would accommodate both a church and a Y. M. C. A. A building costing \$20,000 was projected and on November 17, 1912, the cornerstone was laid with imposing ceremonies by the Masons, and on Easter Sunday, 1913, this beautiful church was dedicated.

Besides containing an auditorium and Bible-school room, with separate rooms for each class, this building contains a library and museum, a lounging room, pool hall and reading room, shower and tub baths, dressing rooms with individual lockers, a dining room and kitchen. Connected with it by a stairway leading up from the dressing rooms is the old church, well equipped as a gymnasium. This entire plant, except that used for church purposes, has been leased to the Y. M. C. A. organization at a nominal rent of one dollar per year. The church membership is 220; the Sunday-school, 175. The following ministers have served this historic church: Rev. Henry Otis Whitney, Rev. John Brown, Rev. C. D. Roberts, Rev. E. M. Deems, Rev. J. H. Byers, Rev. Robert McCullough, Rev. A. J. Compton, Rev. J. D. Beard, Rev. E. C. Jacka, Rev. Anthony Simpson, Rev. C. J. A. Porter, Rev. John Wallace, Rev. F. S. Witter, Rev. M. S. Riddle, Rev. J. M. Donaldson, Rev. J. Anthony Mitchell and Rev. Geo. H. Greenfield.

Eureka.—In August, 1873, the Presbyterian Church was organized by six members, with Rev. W. C. McDougal as its pastor. A meeting-house was soon after erected and for some time the church continued to grow. At present there are eleven members with no pastor.

Pioche.—A Presbyterian Society was organized at Pioche in 1873, with a membership of twelve. The decline of business and the departure of the population for other camps soon made it impossible to maintain an organization and in 1879 it was taken from the roll of the Sacramento Presbytery.

Wells.—The church at Wells was organized March 27, 1892, and a building costing \$3,000 was erected, under the direction of Rev. J. M. Donaldson, pastor of the Elko church, and having in charge the work in the surrounding valleys. A manse costing \$2,500 was built while W. P. Friedrich was in charge. These buildings are free from debt. The work at Wells is now under the supervision of Rev. Thomas Hedges.

Lamoille.—James McCombs, long a missionary in India, left with regret a promising field of labor in that far-off land and turned his face homeward. In Nevada's mountain-bordered valleys he did not find the stoical Hindu listening with indifference to the story whose acceptance would free him from the bondage of the cruelest religion the world has even known, but he did find a handful of men and women of the valley who desired earnestly that God should not be shut out from their lives in the stress of

the world's work. So Missionary McCombs called the people to service in the schoolhouse and October 26, 1890, an organization of the Presbyterian Church was effected. On November 21 of the same year the South Fork branch of the Lamoille Presbyterian Church was organized with three members.

This young church met with many seasons of trial and discouragement. During the next thirteen years the resident pastor of Elko had charge of this field. It was his duty to visit Carlin, Wells, Clover and Starr Valleys, a work now employing three men. Small wonder that services at Lamoille were few and far between. Still, services were held at intervals and a number of children were baptized. During this time the following ministers preached to this congregation: John Wallace, F. S. Witter, M. Riddle, J. M. Donaldson, J. A. Mitchell and George H. Greenfield.

On September 18, 1904, a congregational meeting was called for the purpose of reorganizing the church. Out of the nine charter members which had comprised the church fifteen years before, only five were still in the field. Through the earnest effort and arduous labor of Mr. Greenfield, the church was reorganized and once more placed on a firm basis.

Fifteen years were to elapse from the time this church first dreamed of securing a suitable and comfortable meeting place, until in the reorganized church the question arose again. It was at first proposed to purchase and remodel the old building known as Harmony Hall; but investigation proved it not suited to the church needs. It seemed a task of stupendous proportions that this little band should erect a new and creditable building; but courage and enterprise, coupled with the untiring zeal of the pastor, Rev. George H. Greenfield, and the generous and substantial aid given by the people of Elko and of adjacent valleys, made possible the surmounting of all obstacles. The site for the new building was donated by Mr. C. E. Noble. The cornerstone was presented by Mr. G. P. Griffith, of Elko. The new church, costing \$3,000, was completed and dedicated in November, 1905.

To a chance visitor in the valley this beautiful church is a revelation. It is seated with opera chairs, has a fine organ, and the subdued light coming through its cathedral-glass windows gives a feeling of worship and of praise. Two magnificent memorial windows, the gift of Mr. and Mrs. Greenfield adorn this church. The present congregation averages fifty. Rev. Thomas Hedges is pastor.

Goldfield.—The church at Goldfield was organized March 26, 1905. Its first meetings were held in a tent. Under the able leadership of Rev. James Byers a building was erected which, with its furnishing cost \$10,000. It has ninety-six members, and 123 pupils in the Sunday-school. Rev. John Creighton is pastor.

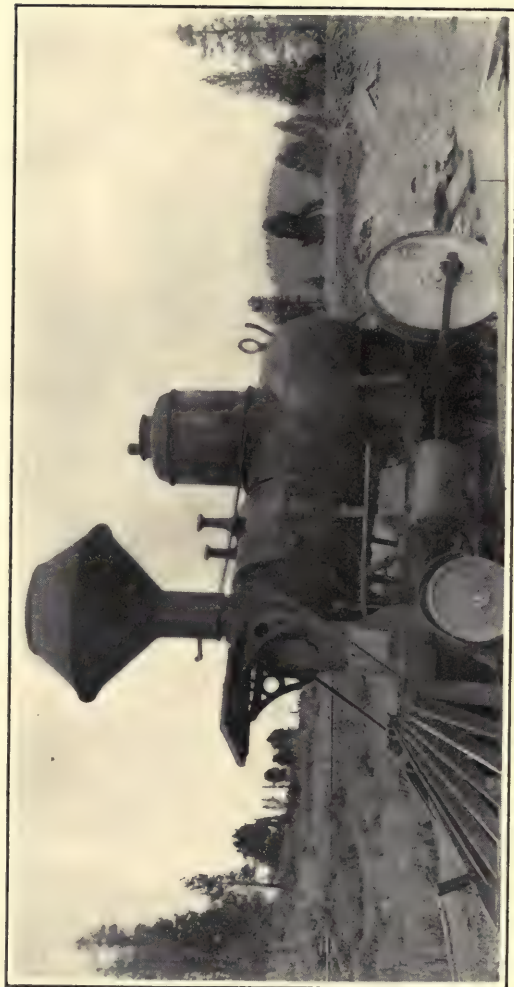
Reno.—The Presbyterians were first organized at Reno August 31, 1902. For some time the large debt incurred in building was a hindrance to its prosperity, but in 1906 this debt was wiped out, and its valuable property is entirely clear. The rapid growth of the residence part of the city around also improved the prospects of the church. The report of the General Assembly for 1912 gives thirty-one members, and seventy-two in the Sunday-school. Rev. James Byers is the pastor.

Tonapah.—Tonapah Presbyterian Church was established September 21, 1902. Hermann L. Burnham is pastor. The membership is fifty-seven and 120 in the Sunday-school.

Las Vegas.—The church at Las Vegas was organized April 9, 1905. The last report gave twenty-five members, and forty-six Sunday-school pupils. Jay M. Swander, minister in charge.

Starr Valley.—The Presbyterians have no building in Starr Valley, the services being held in the Good Templar's Hall. This church was instituted June 1, 1890, and at present has nineteen members. Rev. Thomas Hedges is pastor.

McGill.—There is a pretty church at McGill, built by Rev. S. C. Gillman. This is the youngest Presbyterian Church in Nevada, being organized May 16, 1909. The last report gives it nineteen members with no pastor.



OLD NO. 4—BUILT IN 1865
The First Locomotive to Cross the Sierras.

CHAPTER XXIV.

RAILROADS.

Transportation was always an important subject in Nevada. It was a most important subject in the early days of the State and in the days when Nevada was a territory. As early as 1851 there was a mail route across the State, service being once each month. The Pioneer Stage Line was organized in 1857 and this was the institution of a scheduled passenger and mail traffic. In 1860, Wells, Fargo and Company bought out other stage lines and then had control of the entire business from Sacramento to Salt Lake City. In 1861 a daily overland mail stage business was established. As early as 1860 an application was made for a railroad franchise from Carson City to Virginia City, the petitioner being Leonard L. Treadwell. Several projects were before the State's first legislature, which granted charters to four companies, namely, the Nevada Railroad Company, with the privilege of constructing a road from the western to the eastern boundary; to Leland Stanford, Charles Crocker, Collis P. Huntington, Lucius A. Booth, Mark Hopkins, Theodore D. Judah, James Bailey and Samuel Silliman; the Virginia City and Washoe Company; Virginia, Carson and Truckee Company; and the Esmeralda and Walker River Company. Only the first of these roads was built under these legislative grants.

So eager were the people of the West for cheap and rapid means of transportation to and from California gold fields and Nevada's silver fields, that in the first State constitution was introduced a clause permitting the legislature to give \$3,000,000 in bonds to the first company that should connect Nevada with navigable waters. This constitution was rejected, however, although the clause was not stricken out. It was at this period that the Central Pacific was building eastward from Sacramento and the engineers were making one of the greatest fights in history in an effort to conquer the Sierra Nevada Mountains.

The actual race in the construction of a railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean occurred in Nevada. The Pacific Railroad

Bill, which authorized the construction of the railroad, provided that the Union Pacific build westward and that the Central Pacific build eastward. With every mile constructed went many acres of Government land, so the further east the Central Pacific was built the more land it received. The further west the Union Pacific was built the more land was granted it.

All the time the Pacific Railroad Bill was pending before the legislators at Washington, and during a great part of the time that the actual construction work was being pushed from both ends toward the centre, the United States was in the throes of the great Civil war.

The credit for the passage of the Pacific Railroad Bill, which gave to Nevada its first railroad—and its only railroad for thirty years—is probably due more to the persistence of the late Theodore D. Judah than to any other man. Judah was an engineer of note before he went to California. He had had prominent engineering jobs on several eastern railroads and a part of the Erie Canal was constructed under his supervision. He was the first engineer of railway enterprises in California, and, after completing the Sacramento Valley road, a distance of thirty-two miles between Sacramento and Folsom, he undertook to interest the capitalists of Sacramento and San Francisco in a transcontinental railroad. His entire time from 1856 to 1859 was spent in Washington in an effort to put through a bill making grants for railroad purposes. The attention of Congress was too much taken up with sectional controversies that led up to the War of the Rebellion, however, at that time, and he returned to San Francisco in the latter part of 1859 and organized the Pacific Railroad Convention. This gathering comprised some of the most prominent and wealthy men of the western States and territories.

Judah explained the situation to this convention thoroughly. It was due to the fulness, clearness and satisfactory information furnished by him that the convention declared its preference among the several routes mentioned for that over which the Central Pacific Railroad was afterward built. Following the convention he spent the next two years in Washington, but returned unsuccessful and prevailed upon Collis P. Huntington, Leland Stanford, Mark Hopkins and Charles Crocker to

organize the Central Pacific Railroad of California. It was the first day of July, 1862, before he was successful at the National capital.

The traffic from the silver mines of Nevada was the principal object that induced the backers of the Central Pacific to devote their fortunes and energies to this enterprise. In a report to the railroad convention Judah gave it as his opinion, and as the opinion of other engineers associated with him, that by far the most important business to have been performed was the return freight of silver ore to Sacramento and San Francisco. Only the high grade ore was being worked. Judah felt that the railroad would make it possible for the handling of the middle grade ores. In one part of this report, he said:

"The business that such a road will perform will necessarily be large; the present business transacted by teams must be seen to be appreciated. It is not unusual to meet or pass three hundred loaded teams, en route for Washoe, in a day, loaded with an average of two and one-half tons." Thus, the silver mines of Nevada were one of the incentives for the routing of the Central Pacific straight across the middle of the State. The original route, as surveyed and recommended by Judah is the route of the Southern Pacific today. He had no hand in the actual construction work, having died from Panama fever in November, 1863, in New York. Still, he saw a part of the heavy construction work across the Sierra Nevada Mountains completed.

Nevada was the natural route of a transcontinental railroad. Besides being the natural route, it had just the sort of assets that were required for the development of the west. It needed the railroad for transportation purposes just as much as the railroad needed it for a short and easy route and for traffic. Nevada, when the first railroad surveys were made across the State, was absolutely barren except for two or three places at which were Indians or army posts. In his annual report to the stockholders of the Central Pacific for 1872, Leland Stanford, president, said:

"It is a suggestive fact, that between the Truckee and Salt Lake valleys, a distance of nearly six hundred miles, where now there is a business such as demands lateral lines of railroads for its accommodation, there lived at the time when your road was commenced but one white man."

The reports of all engineers was to the effect that Nevada was to fur-

nish an important part of the railroad's revenue. The topography of the country was such that the business was compelled to naturally flow, and find its outlet over, this road. It has turned out to be that way.

There was a considerable effort made in different localities to hinder the construction of the Central Pacific. It came from different sources. One of the annoying sources was from the owners of toll roads and from owners of stage and freight lines, who realized that their business, which had been highly profitable, would be hurt by the operation of a railroad, which would assure speed in delivery of freight and would cut down the high tariffs that were being charged by the owners of teams. Many different methods were used in this effort to discourage the builders and backers of the project. The men employed on the construction were even kidnapped. Across Nevada nearly all of the real construction work was performed by Chinese, imported for just that purpose. As soon as the Central Pacific reached the California-Nevada State line it started across Nevada in an effort to beat the Union Pacific into the Salt Lake Valley. In addition to the Government grant of land and bonds based on mileage, there was the traffic of the Mormon country and Salt Lake City at stake. Besides this, it was readily seen that the line having the greatest haul would be correspondingly benefited when it came to subdividing earnings on trans-continental business. The sage brush plains of Nevada were the scene of the actual contest.

In the early part of 1869, rails of both the Central Pacific and Union Pacific were being laid at the rate of from six to ten miles a day. When the two tracks came together, the Central Pacific had nearly sixty miles of grading done parallel to the Union Pacific track, while the Union Pacific had located their line to the California State line and most of the grading was done as far west as Humboldt, Nevada. The laying of the last rail and the driving of the last spike occurred on May 10, at Promontory Point, Utah, in sight of Great Salt Lake, 'mid the cheering of thousands of spectators, mostly members of the various construction camps of both roads. Celebrations of the linking of the east and west were had in a hundred of the principal cities of the country on that same evening. Eventually the Central Pacific purchased the Union Pacific line from Promontory to Ogden and the latter place has been the Central Pacific terminal ever since.

Following the construction of the Central Pacific, the Virginia and Truckee Railroad was built; then the Nevada Central, from Battle Mountain to Austin; the Eureka and Palisade; Eureka and Ruby Hill; Pioche and Bullionville; Carson and Colorado; Nevada and Oregon narrow gauge, and in later years many other small roads, all of which act as feeders to the Central Pacific. Nevada today is a network of railroads, practically all of them depending a great deal on the mining industry. Although the mining industry was the principal attraction to the railroads in the early days of the State and notwithstanding the fact that mines are the principal industry of the State today, agriculture has not been and is not overlooked by the transportation lines that run through the State. The reports of the land commissioners of the Central Pacific all contained paragraphs to the effect that land in Nevada was good if water could be supplied. This water development has been slow, but it is gradually being found in all parts of the State—although it is necessary to bore unusually deep wells in some parts—and the railroads in another decade will look upon Nevada as a big shipper of agricultural products as well as of minerals.

Now there is hardly a town in Nevada with a population of 300, save possibly a few of the newest mining camps, which is not reached by rail. When it is realized that this State covers an area of more than 100,000 square miles, this statement is all the more interesting.

Nor is the work of construction lagging. It is being forced ahead as rapidly as ever. Double tracking is in progress both eastward and westward across the State. In the California and Oregon regions that are tributary to Nevada heavy work is being done by the railroads and another line to tap the southern part of Idaho has recently been a matter of much comment. The building of these roads assures the owners of mines containing ores that cannot be worked on the ground, that they may ship to the smelters. It also makes easy the marketing of ranch and range products and assists in settling up regions that have been untenanted since the dawn of creation. Nevada depends almost entirely upon its railroads for its prosperity. Without them this State would soon become almost destitute of population.

VIRGINIA AND TRUCKEE RAILROAD COMPANY

was organized March 2, 1868, with a capital of \$3,000,000, Thomas

Sunderland being its first president, was succeeded by William Sharon, January 9, 1869. Under the active management of H. M. Yerington, general superintendent, ground was broken February 18, 1869, and the road between Carson City and Virginia City completed November 12, 1869. Construction of the line from Reno to Steamboat was next undertaken and completed November 7, 1871, and the connecting link, Steamboat to Carson City, August 24, 1872, the last spike being driven on that day at a point one mile west from Carson City, making the total distance, Reno to Virginia City, 52.20 miles; regular train service was inaugurated September 19 of same year. December 7, 1872, construction of the company's round house and machine shops at Carson City was commenced and the following week work was also progressing on its telegraph line. July 20, 1874, the capital stock of the company was increased to \$6,000,000, but was subsequently decreased to \$5,000,000, May 10, 1887. June 4, 1875, D. O. Mills was elected president of the corporation. The years from 1876 to 1878 were the most prosperous in the company's history, requiring some thirty regular trains daily to handle the traffic and at times as many as forty-eight and fifty trains were in service during the day, from 1879 business began to decrease. July 12, 1900, the principal office of the company was changed from Virginia City to Carson City.

June 24, 1904, the company disposed of all its property and franchises, in consideration of the delivery to it of the entire capital stock of the Virginia and Truckee Railway, incorporated under the laws of Nevada, for \$5,000,000. D. O. Mills was elected president of the corporation and H. M. Yerington, vice-president and general manager. September 10, 1905, ground was broken for an extension of the road to Carson Valley and was completed to Minden, a distance of 15.28 miles, June 16, 1906. March 18, 1910, Ogden Mills was elected president to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of D. O. Mills, and November 26, 1910, A. M. Ardery was appointed vice-president and general manager to succeed H. M. Yerington, deceased, and December 10, 1910, was elected to that position.

EUREKA NEVADA RAILWAY

1876.—The original bonded indebtedness of the Eureka and Palisade Railroad Company, created September 18, 1876, was \$1,000,000. 1900.—

On account of default in payment of interest on outstanding bonds and of indebtedness otherwise to the amount of \$409,500, the road went into the hands of a receiver. 1902.—The holders of the \$1,000,000 bond issue took over the property and reorganized, a corporation under the name of the Eureka and Palisade Railway Company, in which they took stock in lieu of the \$1,000,000 bond issue to the amount of \$300,000, being the total capital stock of said corporation. 1910.—Thereafter on the 24th day of October, 1910, in the Circuit Court of the United States, Ninth Circuit, in and for the District of Nevada, an order was issued directing a special master to effect a sale of all the property of said Eureka and Palisade Railroad Company to satisfy a judgment therein obtained against said railway, and thereafter Mr. George Whittell himself and others, the owners of more than one-half of the original \$1,000,000 bond issue, did purchase from the purchaser of the Eureka and Palisade Railway at said sale indicated on the 24th day of October, 1910, on the payment of \$86,345.38, and thereafter said George Whittell did assign all his right, title and interest in and to said property to the Eureka Nevada Railway Company.

As previously advised, the Eureka and Palisade road was washed out in the flood of April, 1910. The cost to the present owners (Eureka Nevada Railway Co.) of rehabilitating the line and putting it in shape for the resumption of operations was \$62,199.01. Reconstruction of the line was completed in May, 1912. Lease and actual operation of the reconstructed line was effected by the Nevada Transportation Company, under date of May 6, 1912.

The capital stock of the Eureka Nevada Railway is \$500,000.

During the year 1912, that is from May 6, 1912, to December 31, 1912, the gross income of the Eureka Nevada Railway, under operation by the Nevada Transportation Company, was \$43,909.30, exclusive of rentals for lease of road. The total operating expenses and taxes for the same period was \$31,163.38. The \$43,909.30 represents gross income operations.

NEVADA NORTHERN RAILWAY COMPANY.

Mr. M. L. Requa, at one time managing the Eureka and Palisade Railroad, had his attention called to the Ruth and Eureka mines here and he made several trips to examine the properties, which examinations

finally resulted in his assuming to finance the properties. That a railroad was an absolute necessity was a foregone conclusion, and he attempted to negotiate an agreement with the Southern Pacific Company, whereby they would build the line. That company, however, refused to expend the money necessary to reach mines so far distant (some 150 miles) from their own property. He then attempted to raise sufficient funds to build a narrow gauge, but before realizing the necessary funds, he put his engineers in the field and ran a preliminary survey to Ely, starting from what is now known as Cobre, on the Southern Pacific.

He was unsuccessful in securing money to build the narrow gauge and finally presented the whole matter to the Guggenheim Exploration Company, of New York City. They became somewhat interested and sent engineers on several occasions to examine the properties. The reports received indicated there were great possibilities in the mines, and the Exploration Company took over the construction of the railroad and the operation of the mines, and instead of the proposed narrow gauge, construction on a standard gauge line was started in the year 1905, and completed as far south as Currie, Nev., on July 1, 1906, and the first mixed train was run from Cobre to Currie on July 2, 1906. On July 17, 1906, the first mixed train was run from Cobre to Cherry Creek, and on September 29, 1906, the first passenger train from Cobre to Ely. Regular passenger trains were put on between Cobre and Ely October 1, 1906, and freight service between the points was put in commission on October 12, same year.

The road from Cobre practically divides Goshute Valley as far south as Currie (63 miles) and passing through a canyon south of Currie enters Steptoe Valley, confining itself to the centre of the valley until it reaches a point practically opposite Ely, where it makes a curve in westerly direction and enters the town of Ely, 140.4 miles distant from Cobre.

Prior to the completion of the main line between Cobre and Ely, construction was under way on branch lines McGill Junction to McGill, location of the Steptoe Valley Smelting and Mining Company's big smelter and concentrator, and from Hiline Junction to McGill, the latter being used exclusively for ore traffic. In addition there had been started from Ely City (now East Ely) a line, known as the "Branch Ore Line," between East Ely and the mines at Copper Flat, Star Pointer, Kimberly

and Veteran. This portion of the road was completed about April 1, 1908, and the first ten cars of ore from the Eureka Copper Flat mine moved to McGill concentrator April 15, 1908, and the first ten cars of ore from Veteran mine was shipped to the concentrator May 5, 1908.

This company is now handling daily from eight to ten thousand tons of porphyry ore between the mines and the concentrator and is running thirty-six scheduled suburban trains between the mines, Ely and McGill. This suburban service was put in effect between Ely and McGill on February 9, 1908, and between Ely and the Veteran mine (Kimberly, Copper Flat, Star Pointer, etc., being intermediate) July 15, 1908.

At the time Mr. Requa first became possessed of the mines in the Robinson District, there was a population of about 350 in what is now known as the Ely District. The first year (1907) the road was in operation it was estimated there were probably eight thousand people in the town of Ely. Today there are probably eight thousand people in the district, which covers the territory between McGill and Veteran—25 miles.

The general offices of the company are located at East Ely as is also the shops and terminal yards, the latter consisting of about 7.5 miles of track and occupying an area of seventy acres.

Main line mileage, 165; sidings and spurs, 22½ miles.

THE NEVADA-CALIFORNIA-OREGON RAILWAY.

The present Nevada-California-Oregon Railway was first known as the Western Nevada Railroad, a corporation formed by John T. Davis, S. M. Holmes, A. J. Rhodes, James McMeshan and George L. Woods, for the purpose of developing Rhodes' salt marsh, an extensive salt deposit about nine miles northeast from Belleville, Esmeralda County, Nevada, 125 miles southeast from Reno, Washoe County, Nevada, by constructing from thence a railroad northerly via Wadsworth, a station on the Central Pacific Railroad, to the Oregon Line west of Goose Lake.

June 1, 1880, the incorporators and organization of the Western Nevada Railroad was abandoned and in its stead, the Nevada and Oregon Railroad Company was incorporated, with Messrs. A. J. Hatch, G. L. Woods, John A. Paxton, James McMeshan, C. A. Bragg, John Sunder-

land and C. P. Soule, as directors. A. J. Hatch was president and William C. Starr, secretary. The object was to construct a railroad about three hundred miles long in divisions, with the section from Reno to Beckwith Pass designated as Reno Division.

The board in substance made and executed a contract with Moore, August 26, 1880, in which contract the company agreed to issue fifty-year eight per cent. mortgage bonds to the extent of only \$10,000 per mile.

On December 4, same year, the railroad company entered into a contract, in which it was stipulated that the Reno Division should be first constructed from Reno to Beckwith Pass. The abandonment of the southern terminus at salt marsh created internal antagonism, and while persisting importuning that followed, all those who had promised the original \$100,000, local aid, that was required as a condition precedent to making binding the \$100,000, which the eastern parties proposed contributing, increased largely the disaffection and ill feeling, followed by distrust, loss of confidence and enmity among the various interests, including directors and officers of the company with each other and with Moore.

Notwithstanding all the obstacles placed in Moore's way, he laid seventeen miles of track from Reno northerly, and provided certain rolling stock and materials, before he became insolvent and compelled, about November 16, 1881, to abandon his contracts and leave Nevada. The control of the company and road then fell on Batch, who was president under direction of the board, and in accordance with Moore's contract, operated the road the best he could and succeeded in extending it thirty-one miles.

April 17, 1884, the road, franchise. etc., were sold, Moran Brothers being the purchasers, and on August 4, the directors of the company consented and approved of the deed, which was finally executed November 21, 1884, and the property passed over to Moran Brothers, and name changed to Nevada-California-Oregon Railway.

The road has been extended from time to time until it now reaches Lakeview, Oregon.

THE NEVADA CENTRAL RAILROAD

Is a line ninety-three miles long, operating from Battle Mountain,

on the Southern Pacific, to Austin, its southern terminus, serving the mines at Austin and the rich agricultural and mining districts in Reese River Valley, Smoky Valley and the territory as far south as Berlin, Lone, Manhattan, Round Mountain and Milletts.

The road runs due south from Battle Mountain in almost a tangent through level desert country for forty-three miles, thence winding up through a picturesque canyon, and through fertile fields and well stocked ranges of many prosperous ranches to the foothills of the Toyabe Range. At this point in the valley the line turns abruptly and ascends the side hills to the town of Austin, an altitude of nearly 6,000 feet, and the geographical centre of the State of Nevada. Austin, itself, is a typically located mining town in a narrow canyon between two high mountains, being the old "Pony Canyon" in the trail of the Pony Express which operated mail service from the Missouri River to the Pacific Coast. This identical trail is now a part of the Coast-to-Coast automobile route adopted by all trans-continental tourists.

The Nevada Central Railway was completed February, 1880, in a blinding snow storm, the corporate city limits having been extended a couple of miles to enable the road to be completed into the town of Austin before the expiration of its charter. It was organized by some pioneers in Nevada mining to serve the mines at Austin and was built by General Ledlie, a prominent engineer of his day. It later became the property of the Union Pacific. In 1888 it was reorganized as the Nevada Central Railroad, and is now operated by some of the original incorporators. In 1910 the road suffered in common with all Nevada railroads from severe floods, being washed out from end to end, but was promptly rebuilt and was put in operation in exactly 100 days.

THE "SALT LAKE ROUTE."

One of the principal factors in the development of Southern Nevada has been the opening of that system of railways founded and built by Senator W. A. Clark, of Montana, of which the Salt Lake Route is the main line.

For years plans had been laid for the construction of an air line connecting Salt Lake City with Los Angeles, but none of these plans ever reached more than the "blue print" stage until Senator Clark saw the

great possibilities of a railroad which would open up that vast and almost unknown country lying southwest from the Wasatch Mountains to the sea. No one, save a thorough western man, versed in the possibilities of a new and undeveloped region, could be brought to a realization of what the building of such a line meant to the country traversed and many builders had balked at the undertaking before the man from Montana looked over the field and found its promise good.

It was in 1902 that the first practical work of construction was begun and three years time had elapsed before the first trains moved between Salt Lake City and Los Angeles. The main line of the system enters Nevada at Uvada and passes out of the State at Calada, with 214 miles of rails crossing Clark and Lincoln Counties.

The story of Senator Clark's railway system is also closely allied with that phenomenal mining development which has marked the last decade of Southern Nevada's history. Directly following the completion of the main line, work was commenced on a branch known as the Las Vegas and Tonopah Railroad, which, leaving the main line at Las Vegas, runs north to the great mining camps of Nye and Esmeralda Counties. This branch was opened to Rhyolite in 1906 and to Goldfield in 1907, with a total present mileage of 198 miles, thus bringing the intervening territory into short-line communication with all Rocky Mountain and Pacific Coast points. At the same time another branch thirty miles long was constructed from Caliente, in Lincoln County, to the almost forgotten camp of Pioche.

The latest addition to the Salt Lake Route in Nevada is a branch reaching out southward from Moapa and extending twenty-two miles down the entire length of the Moapa Valley.

THE BARNWELL AND SEARCHLIGHT RAILWAY.

As early as the summer of 1902 the matter of connecting Searchlight with the main line of the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fe Railway, either by a line northerly from Ibis (formerly Ibex) or from Barnwell east was agitated, and a reconnaissance was made by Mr. R. B. Burns, then chief engineer of the Santa Fe Company. The town of Searchlight at that time had a population of about 500 people.

There was at that time in operation a stage line, two stages being run

to connect with each of the tri-weekly trains arriving at Barnwell from Goffs, where connection was made with the main line of the Santa Fe Company. One stage left about 10:30 a. m. (on the arrival of the train) and the other about 1 p. m., handling chiefly freight. About four hours was required to make the trip. Practically all the freight was brought in via Barnwell, though a little hauling was done from Ibis, and a narrow gauge line which the Quartette Company had built to the Colorado River (seventeen miles distant) was utilized to some extent, though river navigation was practicable only at high water.

In 1905 a daily stage line was inaugurated between Nippeno, on the Salt Lake line, and Searchlight, and efforts were made by Colonel Hopkins and his associates to secure funds for the construction of a line of railway over the same route. The Barnwell and Searchlight Railway Company was organized April 16, 1906, under the laws of the State of California, for the purpose of building this road, with a capital stock of \$500,000, Mr. A. G. Wells (general manager of the Santa Fe Company at Los Angeles), being the first president. Doctor Hansen had invested some money for purchases of right of way, etc., in his projected Searchlight and Northern line, and as the proposed construction between Barnwell and Searchlight would make useless any outlet to the north, the Barnwell and Searchlight Company purchased from Doctor Hansen what right of way, station grounds, and miscellaneous property the Searchlight and Northern had acquired. Right of way for the remainder of the line to Barnwell, which did not lie upon Government land, was donated. The grading was completed November 1, 1906; track laying was accomplished by the forces of the Barnwell and Searchlight Company. Service between Barnwell and Mile 8 (from Barnwell) was inaugurated December 6, 1906. Severe cold weather and storms delayed track laying, but on January 30, 1907, train service was extended to Mile 11, and on April 1, 1907, into Searchlight, a distance of twenty-three miles from Barnwell. On April 7, 1907, the line was leased to the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fe Railway Company, and was operated by the latter company until December 28, 1911, when all property of the Barnwell and Searchlight Company was sold to the California, Arizona and Santa Fe Railway Company.

THE NEVADA COPPER BELT RAILROAD CO.

Some seven or eight years ago, a coterie of mining men, engaged in the mining of copper, having operated extensively heretofore in Utah and other parts of the West, had their attention called, at that time, to the copper deposits in the Yerington and Mason mining district. Then, little was known of the tremendous proportions of that section, except that the Ludwig, Bluestone and some other properties had been, in days gone by, some thirty or forty years ago, shippers of high grade copper ore. The calling of the attention of these men resulted in one of the best properties being taken over and rapid development started.

Among those most active was Capt. J. R. DeLamar, who now owns the Bluestone, and the Gunn, Thompson Company, of New York and Salt Lake City, who control what is known as the Mason Valley Mines Company, which embraces what is known as the Spragg Group, and A. J. Orem and Company and their associates, of Salt Lake City and Boston, who control and operate the Nevada Douglas Copper Co., whose holdings comprise the Douglas, Ludwig and Amalgamated groups, as well as the Nevada Copper Belt Railroad.

Active development work had been carried on in these properties and others of lesser importance, for four or five years prior to January 1, 1912, until large tonnages were developed and blocked out, demonstrating conclusively not only the need, but the absolute necessity of both transportation facilities connecting the copper camps with the outside world, and production facilities for reducing the ore to matte or blister copper, in the district without having to figure against a long haul to the then nearest smelting plant—both the Nevada Douglas Copper Company and the Mason Valley Mines Company having reached a point in their career, where in order that some adequate return for the large amount of money and energy expended might be obtained, it seemed necessary that each of these companies provide themselves with both transportation and production facilities. The need of each became common ground, resulting in an understanding that one should build a smelting plant, and the other a railroad, and each in turn would patronize the other. The agreement resulted in the beginning of construction of the Mason Valley Mines Company's new modern 1,000-ton smelting

plant, located at Thompson, Nevada, some three miles distant from Wabuska, a station on the Southern Pacific Company's line.

The Nevada Copper Belt Railroad Company, controlled by the Nevada Douglas Copper Company's interests, as indicated above, started construction of their railroad, traversing not only the entire mineralized area of this section, but a large agricultural territory as well, known as Mason and Smith Valleys, began building their forty-two miles of railroad in the fall of 1909, which was successfully completed and in full operation, September, 1911. The line is well equipped and standard gauge, fully prepared to handle 2,000 tons of ore or more and other products daily, has forty-five steel ore cars, of fifty-ton capacity, battleship type, which have been provided exclusively for ore hauling from the various mines to the smelting plant, at Thompson.

The first twenty-seven miles of the road are in Mason Valley, one of the largest and most fertile sections of the State of Nevada. The line then runs through what is known as Walker River Canyon into Smith Valley, near the California border. This valley is equal in area and agricultural developments to Mason Valley. Both valleys are watered by the Walker River, one of the best streams in the State.

Early in January, 1910, the Nevada Copper Belt began operation of trains between Wabuska and the towns of Yerington and Mason, a total distance of fourteen miles. In February, 1911, an additional fifteen miles, Mason to Hudson (the latter point is in Smith Valley), was opened for traffic.

The Nevada Copper Belt Railroad was constructed by the Mason and Douglas Construction Company, whose principal stockholders are the stockholders of the railroad. Two or three different lines were run, and the best, as viewed from several standpoints, selected. The possibilities of the line, as constructed, being very instrumental in helping to make of Mason and Smith Valleys a new inland empire, within the State of Nevada, determined the route through the valleys instead of the shortest line from the smelter to the mines.

The passenger equipment of the company consists of a sixty-nine passenger gasoline motor car, and a thirty-five passenger motor, together with a trailer. Service consists of three round trips daily between Mason

and Wabuska, and one round trip daily between Mason and Ludwig, its terminus in Smith Valley.

TONOPAH AND GOLDFIELD RAILROAD COMPANY.

In the latter part of the year 1903 the development of ore bodies in the camp of Tonopah had advanced to such a state that it was deemed advisable to construct a line of railroad from a point of connection with the Carson and Colorado Railroad near Rhodes, Esmeralda County, Nevada, to the town of Tonopah, Nye County, Nevada, for the transportation of the ore from the mines to the smelters. The Tonopah Railroad Company was thereupon incorporated under the laws of the State of Nevada and an agreement entered into between it and the Tonopah Mining Company of Nevada, under which agreement the Tonopah Mining Company undertook to construct and equip a narrow gauge railroad into Tonopah. The construction of this road was commenced in the early part of 1904 and was completed in July of the same year. In December, 1904, it was deemed advisable, in order to meet the requirements of the increased traffic, to standardize the gauge of the Tonopah Railroad to conform with the gauge of its connections, which was thereupon done.

In the latter part of 1904, owing to the development of large bodies of ore in the camp of Goldfield, a syndicate was formed for the purpose of constructing a line of railroad from Goldfield to a point of connection with the Tonopah Railroad. The construction of this road was commenced in May, 1905, and completed in September, 1905, the road being operated under the name of the Goldfield Railroad Company.

On November 1, 1905, the properties of the Tonopah Railroad Company and the Goldfield Railroad Company were taken over, under an agreement of association, amalgamation and consolidation, by the Tonopah and Goldfield Railroad Company, which company has since that time operated the line of railroad between Tonopah Junction and Goldfield.

TONAPAH AND TIDEWATER COMPANY.

The Tonopah and Tidewater Railroad Company was incorporated under the laws of the State of New Jersey in 1904, with F. M. Smith,

president; Dewitt Van Buskirk, vice-president, and C. B. Zabriskie, secretary and treasurer.

During the year 1905, Mr. John Ryan was appointed superintendent of construction, and Mr. C. M. Rasor, chief engineer, and under the management of these two men the road was constructed from Ludlow, California, to Gold Center, Nevada.

Grading was commenced at Ludlow on August 30, 1905, and the laying of steel commenced November 26, of the same year. The first locomotive arrived at Ludlow four days later.

February 20, 1906, the track was completed to Crucero, California, twenty-five and a half miles distant to where the T. & T. R. R. crosses the San Pedro, Los Angeles and Salt Lake Railroad and a crossing was effected.

Rails were laid across the Nevada State line in the latter part of 1907; thence to Gold Center, and a connection was made with the Bullfrog Goldfield Railroad Company on October 30, 1907.

December 6, 1907, operation was commenced, trains running through from Ludlow to Tonopah—a traffic arrangement having been entered into with the Bullfrog Goldfield Railroad and Tonopah and Tidewater Railroad.

In May, 1908, the T. & T. R. R. acquired the Bullfrog Goldfield Railroad, and on July 19 commenced operation through to Goldfield with their own motive power and equipment—the Tonopah and Tidewater organization of officials handling both the T. & T. and B. G. lines. The two roads are still operating under the same conditions.

SILVER PEAK RAILROAD COMPANY.

The Silver Peak Railroad Company was incorporated under the laws of the State of Nevada on June 20, 1906, by M. L. Effinger, R. J. Watson, C. J. Blumenthal, E. B. Cushman, Geo. A. Bartlett, Herbert W. Clarke, H. S. Crockett, J. H. Monteath, C. M. Hobbs and Lewis A. Parkhurst, and the following gentlemen were the first officers of the incorporation: E. B. Cushman, president; Geo. A. Bartlett, vice-president; M. L. Effinger, Secretary and treasurer. A. J. G. Logan was appointed chief engineer.

Construction work was started at once and trains were running by the

latter part of October, 1906, connecting the town of Blair with Blair Junction, on the Tonopah and Goldfield Railroad, a distance of seventeen and a half miles.

THE WESTERN PACIFIC RAILWAY.

A. W. Keddie, one of the few survivors of the generation building the first trans-continental line, as an old man, stood on the steps of the city hall at Quincy, Cal., and made the welcoming speech to the first passenger train to run through the famous Feather River canyon on the new Western Pacific.

His dream of a half century ago had come true, and the old engineer's voice broke as he told of the ignominious rejection of his plans by the builders of that first railroad constructed across the precipitous and forbidding Sierra Nevada.

But if Keddie, the engineer, found the physical pathway for the latest, and for many years to come probably the last of the trans-continental lines, it was E. T. Jeffery who found the financial resources which are the vital element of every great undertaking.

Mr. Jeffery was elected president of the Denver and Rio Grande Railroad Company on September 30, 1891. The system then comprised about 1,600 miles, with its western terminus at Grand Junction, Colo., about 250 miles from Denver.

In 1895 he commenced studying the extension of the system west, either by purchase of the Rio Grande Western Railway, extending from Grand Junction to Salt Lake City and Ogden, or by building an independent line to the points named, with the ultimate object, circumstances permitting, of extending to the Pacific Coast.

About ten years ago Mr. Jeffery negotiated for the purchase of the Rio Grande Western, having in the meantime had private reconnaissances made for a Pacific Coast extension. In 1903 he began taking necessary steps, confidentially, in California for securing control of Beckwourth Pass (5,000 feet above sea level) and Feather River canyon, between the pass and Oroville, Cal.

In 1905 Mr. Jeffery negotiated with bankers the sale of \$50,000,000 Western Pacific five per cent. first mortgage gold bonds, and under the

mortgage deposited the proceeds at interest with responsible depositaries in New York and other financial centres.

Soon thereafter he let to lowest responsible bidders the greater portion of construction work of the Western Pacific Railroad, and began securing ample terminals in San Francisco and Oakland, Cal.

The enterprise was delayed by the great San Francisco earthquake and fire; also by the financial panic of the latter part of 1907 and first half of 1908, although work was carried on continuously with diminished monthly expenditures.

In 1908 Mr. Jeffery perfected a general financial plan for the Denver and Rio Grande in the form of a first and refunding mortgage for \$150,000,000, of which about \$18,000,000 could be applied to completion of the Western Pacific by the purchase of second mortgage bonds of that company at seventy-five per cent. face value, under certain contracts entered into between the Denver and Rio Grande and Western Pacific companies in 1905. In the latter part of 1909 he sold 40,000 shares of the preferred stock of the Denver and Rio Grande Railroad Company for providing further funds for Western Pacific, without adding to the fixed charges on the Denver and Rio Grande—a remarkable financial achievement, considering all conditions.

The roughest and most picturesque of the canyons of the Feather River, the one known as the North Fork, was selected by the new Western Pacific as its gateway into the valleys of the central portion of the Golden State. The pass leading to it was one of the lowest of the Sierra Nevada. With a tunnel about 6,000 feet long, this pass was crossed at an elevation of a little over 5,000 feet. Then the engineers laying the lines ran them to the headwaters of the Feather River, famous from the days of the gold excitement in California history.

There followed one of the most exacting pieces of railroad engineering to be found anywhere. The engineers were under imperative orders that they must not lay out grades over one per cent. At no point through the one hundred and fifty miles of canyon before them must the track drop over fifty-two feet to the mile.

To accomplish their aim the engineers at times cut their lines in solid rock hundreds of feet above the river. Again, the tracks are only just

high enough to escape the torrential current of the river, when the river rises forty-five to fifty feet over night.

At many points on the line of the new Western Pacific Railroad there was not room enough in the canyon for both river and railroad, and solid walls of masonry had to be built to carry the tracks above the stream. At other points the sharp curves in the canyon have sent the tracks back and forth from one side to the other on steel bridges and high trestles.

In building the line, material and workmen frequently had to be let down the sides of the canyon by ropes hundreds of feet in length, to start construction on new sections. Wagon roads are everywhere impossible.

At last, after endless turnings and twists in fighting its way through one hundred and fifty miles of the canyon, the tracks come out into the broad valley at Oroville, over which, for countless ages, the Feather River has poured debris from its mountain fastnesses.

In startling contrast to this long stretch of canyon scenery is the great salt desert through which the new road runs after leaving Salt Lake City. This desert is sixty miles long and fifteen miles wide, composed of rock-salt ninety-seven per cent. pure.

Right through the centre of it the engineers of the road ran their lines, and for forty-six miles there is not a curve in the tracks. The ties are laid on a bed of solid salt, two or three feet above the level of the plain. The salt looks like a field of ice and snow, and it is difficult for the traveler to realize that his train is not passing through a wintry scene of the far North.

When the engineers laid out the line they followed the same course in crossing the southern end of Great Salt Lake. For years that mysterious body of water had been drying up. Its waters receded every season hundreds of feet, and it was predicted that before many years Great Salt Lake would have disappeared. And so with the utmost confidence the engineers laid their tracks over its old bed.

Then nature changed its mind in regard to drying up the great lake. It sent a flood of water into it from somewhere, and soon the waters came up around the newly built tracks.

Then one day there came a furious storm from the north and when

it was over there were many miles of the new tracks, not yet tested by other than construction trains, scattered and twisted amid the saline scenery. When this track was rebuilt the engineers saw that it was protected this time by countless trainloads of broken rock dumped on either side of the tracks.

The first passenger train was sent over the new transcontinental road, the Western Pacific, August 20, 1910. Passing through an undeveloped region most of the way from Salt Lake City to San Francisco.

The length of the Western Pacific from Salt Lake City to San Francisco is 927 miles, including four miles of ferry from Oakland to San Francisco. It crosses Nevada in its most populous section, passes into California and reaches San Francisco by way of Oroville, Marysville, Sacramento, Stockton and Oakland.

The Western Pacific extends through a section of the country that in many parts has received no addition to its transportation agencies since the first Pacific road was opened forty years ago. Its remarkable features are low grades, permanent construction and freedom from snow drifts.

THE RAILROAD COMMISSION.

The Railroad Commission of Nevada is one of the newer branches of the State government. It was created under the provisions of an Act of the Legislature, approved March 5, 1907, and contained in the special laws of that year, beginning at page 73.

The Commission consists of three members. They are appointed by the Railroad Board, consisting of the Governor, Lieutenant Governor and Attorney General. The three Commissioners first appointed were H. F. Bartine, for a term of two years; Henry Thurtell, for a term of three years, and J. F. Shaughnessy, for a term of four years. This arrangement was made in order that the term of one Commissioner might expire each year, when a successor could be appointed for the term of three years, the regular term contemplated by the law.

At the end of two years, Commissioner Bartine was reappointed to succeed himself. At the expiration of three years, Commissioner Thurtell was likewise reappointed, and at the close of his four-year term, Commissioner Shaughnessy was reappointed for the regular term of three years.

On January 15, 1911, Commissioner Thurtell resigned to accept a position with the Interstate Commerce Commission, and on the following day, Mr. W. H. Simmons, of Reno, Nevada, was appointed Commissioner for the unexpired term.

On the first Monday of January, 1912, Commissioner Bartine was reappointed for another three-year term, beginning on the first Monday in February, 1912.

On March 27, 1911, the Railroad Commission law was amended so as to provide for a Chief Commissioner, who is to be chairman and who is also to be an attorney well versed in railroad law; a First Associate Commissioner, who must be a practical railroad man, and a Second Associate Commissioner, who must be a business man having a general knowledge of fares and freights, tolls and charges as levied by common carriers coming within the meaning of the term "railroad" as defined by law. This made no change in the personnel of the Commission. Commissioner Bartine became Chief Commissioner and chairman; Commissioner Shaughnessy became First Associate Commissioner, and Commissioner Simmons became Second Associate Commissioner, but all having the same voice and vote.

From its first organization, Mr. Edgar H. Walker has been secretary of the Commission, and since January 20, 1912, Mr. W. K. Freudenberger has been engineer, both of these officials being appointed by the Commission.

The creation of the Railroad Commission was prompted both by the progressive legislative spirit of the age, and by the transportation conditions existing in this State. Nevada is one of the so-called intermountain States, which lie between the Rocky Mountains and the Sierra Nevadas.

The Commission has been of the greatest possible service to the State of Nevada, and its rulings on railroad cases have been quoted all over the Union. It has dealt with great fairness, and in none of the cases submitted for its consideration, has it been charged with bias either way.

HISTORY OF OLD NO. 4.

This old locomotive was built in Norfolk, Va., in 1865, and it was "set up" by the Risdon Iron Works, of San Francisco, after its arrival "around the Horn." It belonged to the old Central Pacific Railroad

Company and was named either "Governor Stanford" or "T. R. Judah," probably the latter, as the Stanford was retained in the service of the company at an earlier date than this No. 4, according to the records.

The engine was used in 1868 and the following year by Charles Crocker and other officials in Nevada and California, during the construction period of that line. Tom J. Griffin, the old engineer who presided at the throttle in those days, from whom most of this information is gleaned, thinks she was the first locomotive to cross the Summit. And that of itself is ample warrant for presenting her portrait here. She was one of three in use at that time, the "C. P. Huntington" and the "Governor Sanford" being the other two. All were used mainly for the transportation of the officials to different points in the construction work, and at times also for hauling the "pay cars." In the early 80's this engine was still in service from the old Haight Street ball grounds, at the end of the Haight Street car line, in San Francisco, to the Cliff House. After that she became the property of the Stockton and Tesla Coal Company. Previous to this, however, she was in the possession of a machine shop in Stockton. It was from this company that Captain Overton, in 1900, then manager of the Sierra Nevada Wood and Lumber Company, purchased the historic old engine for which he paid \$1,500. She proved entirely inadequate for that service, however, and after being equipped with "air" and "got ready for the road" she worked only eleven days.

Mr. Griffin says "the last crew to run her beside myself as engineer, was A. G. Ticknor as fireman, and Lance Thompson as brakeman. And when I say that it was with good graces that we run her to the old spur track or "boneyard," as the railway vernacular has it, I would be stating it mildly. She still remains where we left her, unless recently removed, and this picture was taken on the scene of her last resting place. She should be cared for, as she is now fast becoming historical. Such a comparison of motive power requirements of the long ago with those of today would show the wonderful progress in railroading during the past half century.

CHAPTER XXV.

MEDICAL HISTORY.

BY HENRY BERGSTEIN, M.D.

The early day practitioners of medicine and surgery partook somewhat of the nature of the country in which they resided and the character of manhood by which they were surrounded. Living in a rugged country and amidst hardy men in sparsely settled communities remote from neighboring settlements and confreres, they learned lessons of self-reliance absolutely unknown to the city practitioner.

Fancy, if you can, the city surgeon accustomed to the elegance of a well equipped hospital, with its corps of trained assistants and nurses, performing capital operations without a single trained assistant, with his patience lying upon the floor. Yet such was a common experience of the early surgeon in Nevada.

Having anaesthetised his patient, he handed the anaesthetic to any one at hand and proceeded with his operation. Cutting an artery, he seized it with tenaculum, or forceps, and while any bystander held the instrument (for the haemostatic forceps was an unknown quantity in those days) proceeded to ligate it, and thus step by step, watching the patient, the anaesthetic, and his unskilled assistant, he completed his operation, and withal he had a fair modicum of success, not altogether due to his skill, something being due to the hardy manhood he had for subjects. As for gunshot and knife wounds, no surgeon except those in the army during war times had their experience. Reaching Pioche in 1872, there lay in its graveyard one hundred and eight denizens, just three of whom died a natural death.

The crack of the revolver and knife-wounds were daily heard and seen and to the sorrow of many surviving friends their companions frequently died "with their boots on." The average bravo had a great horror of dying with his boots on and, when wounded, before priest or surgeon were called, his boots were pulled off.

Pioche is located in Lincoln County in a ravine on the side of a mountain in the Ely range, at an elevation of 5,942 feet. The principal mines being located above the town, close to its peak, the mills for the reduction of the ores were located at Bullionville, eleven miles distant. Owing to the absence of water at or near the mines, the latter being absolutely dry until a depth of 1,200 feet was reached, so much so that the ores containing a large amount of galena oxidized rapidly upon being exposed, and consequently led to many cases of lead-colic, both in the mines and at the mills. I am thus particular in describing these conditions because they lead up to the first medical legislation west of the Rocky Mountains.

There was no resident physician at Bullionville, and when such aid was needed it was summoned from Pioche, save for the fact that there was a druggist there with a small stock of drugs to whom the men frequently applied for assistance.

One of the most prominent symptoms of lead colic is an obstinate constipation, and in a number of cases which applied to him for relief, he ran the gamut of cathartics from salts to croton oil; all failing him, he gave liquid quicksilver, and succeeded only in giving them a passage to the grave.

The result was shown when, in the fall of 1874, I announced my candidacy for assemblyman in order to pass an act regulating the practice of medicine. It was the year when William Sharon was a candidate for the United States Senate. Feeling ran high and substantial arguments were used to secure the election of a Legislature favorable to him. My name appeared on the Democratic ticket. At Bullionville there were 128 registered voters, of whom five were Democrats, yet I received 125 votes in that precinct, and the result was the passage of an act entitled "An Act to prevent the practice of medicine or surgery by unqualified persons," by the Legislature of 1875, as follows:

CHAPTER IV.—An Act to prevent the practice of medicine and surgery by unqualified persons. (Approved January 28, 1875.)

The People of the State of Nevada, represented in Senate and Assembly, do enact as follows:

Section 1. No person shall practice medicine or surgery in this State who has not received a medical education and a diploma from some regularly chartered medical school; said school to have a bona fide existence at the time when said diploma was granted.

Section 2. Every physician or surgeon, when about to take up his residence in this State, or who now resides here, shall file his record with the County Recorder of the county in which he is about to practice his profession, or where

he now practices it, a copy of his diploma, at the same time exhibiting the original, or a certificate from the dean of the medical school of which he is a graduate, certifying to his graduation.

Section 3. Every physician or surgeon, when filing a copy of his diploma or certificate of graduation, as required by section two of this Act, shall be identified as the person named in the papers about to be filed, either by the affidavit of two citizens of the county, or by his affidavit taken before a Notary Public or Commissioner of Deeds for this State, which affidavit shall be filed in the office of the County Recorder.

Section 4. Any person practicing medicine or surgery in this State, without complying with sections one, two and three of this Act, shall be guilty of a misdemeanor, and upon conviction shall be punished by a fine of not less than fifty dollars (\$50) nor more than five hundred dollars (\$500), or by imprisonment in the county jail for a period of not less than thirty (30) days nor more than six (6) months, or by both fine and imprisonment, for each and every offense; and any person filing, or attempting to file, as his own, the diploma or certificate of graduation of another, or a forged affidavit of identification, shall be guilty of a felony, and upon conviction shall be subject to such fine and imprisonment as is made and provided by the statutes of this State for said offense.

Section 5. It shall be the duty of the police, sheriff, or constable, to arrest all persons practicing medicine or surgery in this State who have not complied with the provisions of this Act, and the officer making the arrest shall be entitled to one half of the fine collected.

Section 6. No portion of this Act shall apply to any person who, in an emergency, may prescribe or give advice in medicine or surgery in a township where no physician resides; or when no physician or surgeon resides within convenient distance; nor to those who have practiced medicine or surgery in this State for a period of ten years next preceding the passage of this Act, nor to persons prescribing in their own family.

Section 7. This Act shall go into force sixty (60) days after its final passage.

It must not be supposed that the bill passed was exactly as introduced. While it was pending in the Assembly the acting Governor L. R. Bradley, was confined to his bed with an attack of paralysis, sent for me and informed me that there were a number of old practitioners in the State who had studied their profession at a time when medical colleges were not accessible. They were competent physicians and had endeared themselves to the people by years of practice among them, and he would veto any measure which would deprive them of the right to practice. A number of members feared that it would prevent them from treating members of their families, or where there were no physicians, or within convenient distance, that it would not permit them to assist some sufferer. To meet these conditions Section 6 of the act was added. Other members wanted assurance that someone would see to its enforcement, and promising them that if the bill passed I would locate in Virginia City, organize a State Medical Society which would see to its enforcement, met with success.

The first meeting of medical men in Nevada took place in Pioche in 1872. There were present Drs. Alva C. Bishop, Henry Bergstein, David L. Deal, William Foltz, W. H. Rogers, Leavitt J. Williams and Philson. They discussed many topics of interest and adopted the following fee bill, which to their credit be it said they never deviated from during the succeeding years of my residence there:

Fee Bill.—Day visits, \$5.00; night visits, \$10.00; detention, day, per hour, \$10.00; detention, night, per hour, \$10.00; obstetrical cases (rare), natural labor, \$100.00; instrumental delivery, \$250.00; surgical operations, \$100.00 upward.

The fees here enumerated shall be considered the minimum, the maximum being in keeping with the purse of the patient, and the conscience of the physician.

In April, 1875, a subscription was made up by the practitioners of Virginia City, and Col. Robert H. Taylor was employed to enforce the law. There was at that time residing in Virginia City a quack advertising firm known as Dr. Spinney & Co., and Spinney was made the subject of arrest to test the law. There had just located in that city a new law firm composed of C. E. DeLong, ex-United States Minister to Japan, and Judge Belknap, ex-Justice of our Supreme Court, and Spinney employed them to defend him. He was tried in the justice court. The jury failed to agree, and so firm was the conviction of his attorneys that the law was unconstitutional that they took the case to the Supreme Court on a writ of habeas corpus, upon the ground that in Section 6 of the act rights and privileges were given to citizens of Nevada which were denied to citizens of other States, which was contrary to the Constitution of the United States. We sent Colonel Taylor to argue the matter before the Supreme Court, consisting of Hon. Thos. P. Hawley, Chief Justice; Hon. W. P. Earl and Wm. H. Beatty, Associates, and they decided that the contention of the attorneys for the defendant were not well taken; that the Legislature in its wisdom decided that physicians who had practiced for ten years prior to the enactment, being familiar with the climatic conditions and diseases, were more familiar with these conditions than those who had not had their experience; and besides, if it were held that Section 6 was unconstitutional, that did not invalidate the balance of the law. Therefore Spinney & Co. departed for the more congenial clime of San Francisco.

It was this case and others of a similar character migrating into that State which led to the enactment of the California law in 1877.

In April, 1875, the Nevada State Medical Society was organized in Virginia City by the election of Dr. John W. Van Zant as its president and Dr. Benj. Robinson as its secretary, together with a board of censors and other officers. It had a very successful meeting, papers of interest were read and discussed, and its entire proceedings, together with the papers read, were printed in pamphlet form. A beautiful lithographed certificate of membership was ordered printed on heavy parchment paper. As a heading it had the great seal of the State, and upon the other side pictures of Esculapius and Hygeia, together with the motto, "*Palmam qui meruit ferat*" ("Let him who has won it bear the palm"). In cutting the stone "Palmam" was converted by the artisan into "Palman." There was also a grammatical error in the text, and as no proof sheet had been submitted to the secretary, the printed certificates reached him, error and all, so it was decided not to issue them. Two copies, however, were subsequently issued, one to Benj. Robinson and the other to the writer, the last copy having the "n" in "Palman" so deftly converted into an "m" by Prof. A. B. Daugherty, of the University of Nevada, as to defy recognition.

The first meeting of the society was its most successful, many interesting papers were read, among them one on "Brain Tumors," and another on "Fibroid Tumors," both being accompanied by pathological exhibits. There were present from Virginia City Drs. W. W. Bronson, Henry Bergstein, F. W. Conn, F. M. Conn, Engles, Gillingham, Benj. Robinson, McLain and John W. Van Zant; Gold Hill, Drs. Hall and John Manson; Carson City, Drs. Davidson and Waters; Genoa, Drs. Black and Smith; Reno, Drs. A. Dawson and H. H. Hogan; Mason Valley, Dr. Leavitt; Eureka, Dr. Bazon, and many others whose names I cannot recall. However, owing to the sparsely settled condition of our State, it was difficult to bring about a successful meeting, and it hybernated, and was awakened a number of times between 1875 and 1894. In April of that year I visited San Francisco where I met Dr. Plummer who asked me, "What is your Nevada State Medical Society doing?" I answered, "It sleeps the sleep that knows no waking." "Well," he said, "you know the American Medical Association meets here in June. I am one of the local committee of arrangements. We are on the extreme western slope of the continent

and we would like to have as many of the States represented as possible. I wish when you go home you would call the society together and send delegates." Accordingly, on my return to Reno I inserted a call through the press for a meeting at my office. We met, reorganized the society, and they did me the honor of electing me president and a delegate to the National Association, with Dr. James Guinan associate. The State society continued to hold successful annual meetings from that time until 1902. At the annual meeting following the discovery of the X-ray, at the meeting held in the University of Nevada building, the first radiographs were demonstrated before the assemblage by W. G. Caffray, the first picture being that of a deformed hand of a prominent local attorney, the pictures bringing it out beautifully, and the second was made of a purse containing a coin and a key, the result being perfect. Great credit was due to the fact that the apparatus was constructed by the operator.

In April, 1904, it was again called into life, reorganized and elected Dr. A. H. Huffaker president and J. L. Robinson secretary. It has continued in successful operation ever since. The last annual meeting was held in the rooms of the Washoe County Medical Society in the Reno Commercial Club rooms. It was largely attended, not only by physicians of Nevada, but by visitors from neighboring States, the latter being among those contributing valuable papers, as will be noted from the programme of the occasion, the sessions being held on the 8th, 9th and 10th of October, 1912:

Tuesday, 10:30 a. m.—Meeting called to order by the president, B. F. Cunningham. Invocation, Rev. Brewster. Address of welcome, by Mayor R. C. Turritin. Address of welcome, by Gov. Tasker L. Oddie. Response by H. Bergstein. President's address. Reports of committees. Report of State Secretary, M. A. Robinson. Reports of delegates to the American Medical Association.

Tuesday, 1:30 p. m.—"The Successful Treatment of Typhoid," W. A. Habday, Goldfield. Discussion opened by G. F. Pope, Battle Mountain. "A Few Problems in Infant Feeding," A. Huffaker, San Francisco. Discussion opened by Victor Hitch, Reno. "Over Medication," C. A. Hascall, Fallon. Discussion opened by J. E. Pickard, Reno. "Jammed Pelvis," J. B. Hardy, Reno. Discussion opened by R. W. Geron, Reno. "Criminal Abortion from a Moral and Business Standpoint," Henry Bergstein, Reno. Discussion opened by W. L. Samuels, Reno.

Wednesday, 10:30 a. m.—"The Principles Governing the Operative Treatment of Infantile Paralysis," James T. Watkins, San Francisco. Discussion opened by W. H. Hood, Reno. "Artificial Pneumothorax," Max Rothschild, San Francisco. Discussion opened by Raymond St. Clair, Reno. "Unusual Urinary Calculi," R. L. Rigdon, San Francisco. Discussion opened by George McKenzie, Reno. Subject to be announced, W. S. Holmquest Ely. Discussion to be opened by H. Osthoff, Reno. "What the Physician Owes to the Tuberculous Patient," Robert A. Peers, Colfax California. Discussion to be opened by W. S. Holmquest, Ely.

Wednesday, 1:30 p. m.—Address, Hon. Cole L. Harwood, Reno. "Deafness in Adults Due to Neglected Nose and Throat Diseases," Edward L. Williamson, Reno. Discussion opened by Karl Pischel, San Francisco. "Concerning the Operative Treatment of Claw Foot," with demonstration of an original screw traction appliance, special permission, James T. Watkins, San Francisco. Discussion opened by B. F. Cunningham, Reno. "Use and Abuse of Bone Plating," J. R. Masterson, Tonopah. X-ray work exhibition, M. R. Walker, Reno. Discussion opened by S. K. Morrison, Reno. "Tick Fever," G. F. Pope, Battle Mountain. Discussion opened by Henry Bergstein, Reno.

Thursday a. m.—Subject to be announced, W. Ophuls, San Francisco (who also delivered a public address that evening at the Methodist Church on "The Advance of Scientific Medicine." Discussion opened by O. P. Johnstone, Reno. "Tonsils," J. La Rue Robinson, Reno. Discussion opened by Ed. L. Williamson, Reno. Subject to be announced, O. P. Johnstone, Reno. Discussion opened by W. Ophuls, San Francisco. "Possible Cause, Effect and Treatment of Gingivitis," C. E. Rhodes, D.D.S., Reno. Discussion opened by Bruce Saulter, D.D.S., Reno. "Reports of Surgical Cases," George McKenzie, Reno. Subject to be announced, J. A. Lea, Reno. Discussion opened by C. E. Mooser, Reno.

Thursday p. m.—"Newer Glancoma Operations," Kasper Pischel, San Francisco. Discussion opened by H. A. Brown, Reno. "Uterine Fibroma," Raymond St. Clair, Reno. Discussion opened by P. J. Mangan, Winnemucca. "Diagnosis of Gall-Bladder Disease," Wm. F. Cheney, San Francisco. Discussion opened by C. W. West, Elko. "Plague," G. B. Hamilton, Reno. Discussion opened by R. K. Hartzell, Reno. "Diphtheria," Victor E. Hitch, Reno. Discussion opened by A. E. Hershizer, Reno.

Wednesday night the annual banquet was held at the Riverside Hotel and on Thursday night a smoker given by the Washoe County Medical Society occurred at the Commercial Club.

At the present time the following county organizations are affiliated with the State organization: Esmeralda County Medical Society, E. J. Howland president and acting secretary; Humboldt County Medical Society, P. J. Mangan, president and C. E. Swezy, secretary; Nye County Medical Society, J. R. Masterson, president, and P. D. McLeod, secretary; Washoe County Medical Society, W. H. Hood, president, and E. L. Williamson, secretary. The present officers of the State Medical Society are: M. R. Walker, president, Reno; A. L. Lewis, first vice-president, Reno; P. J. Mangus, second vice-president, Winnemucca; M. A. Robinson, secretary-treasurer, Reno.

The Medical Law of 1875 continued in force until 1899, when the following enactment was passed:

An Act providing for the creation of a State Board of Medical Examiners, and to regulate the practice of medicine and surgery in the State of Nevada.

(Approved March 15, 1899.)

The People of the State of Nevada, represented in Senate and Assembly, do enact as follows:

Section 1. A State Board of Medical Examiners, to consist of five practicing physicians, is hereby created, whose duty it shall be to carry out the purposes and

enforce the provisions of this act. The members of said board shall be appointed by the Governor; they shall each be a reputable practicing physician, duly licensed as such by some legally chartered medical college of the United States, and who shall have been actually engaged in the practice of medicine and surgery in the State of Nevada at least five years immediately prior to their respective appointments. Three of whom shall be appointed from the school of medicine known as the "regular" physicians, and one of whom shall be of the school known as the "Homeopathic," and one of whom shall be of the school known as the "Eclectic," whenever the resident physicians of the State shall afford sufficient members of these respective schools. They shall be appointed by the Governor for the terms, respectively, one for five years, one for four years, one for three years, one for two years and one for one year, from the date of their appointments. In case of a vacancy occurring in said board through death, resignation or permanent removal from the State, such vacancy shall be filled by the Governor by the appointment of a person duly qualified under this act to fill the unexpired term of the person in whose stead the appointment is made. Each appointment, after the expiration of the terms for which appointments shall first be made, shall be for five years next ensuing the period for which the said first appointments are made.

Sec. 2. Said board shall choose one of its members president and one thereof secretary, who shall hold their offices for one year from the date of their selection. The first members appointed on said board shall meet and organize at the State Capitol in Carson City, Nevada, on the first day of May, 1899, and thereafter they shall meet twice in each year, on the first Monday of May and November, at such places as shall be most convenient to the said board and the applicants for authority to practice in this State. And due notice shall be given by publication in a newspaper of all such meetings.

Sec. 3. Said board shall procure a seal and shall receive through their president or secretary applications for examinations or certificates. The president and secretary shall have authority to administer oaths and the board to take testimony in all matters relating to its duties; it shall issue certificates to all who furnish satisfactory proof of having received diplomas or licenses from reputable and legally chartered medical institutions of the United States which are in good standing, or from the State Examining Board of any State of the United States, providing the holder of said State certificate has been practicing in this State for at least five years. It shall prepare two forms of certificates, one for persons who present to it satisfactory diplomas or licenses, and the other for candidates who may be examined by the board, and whenever a certificate is issued by said board, it shall notify the respective County Clerks of the several counties within this State of the issuance of such certificate or certificates; and it shall be the duty of said clerks to keep and file said notices and also keep a list of the persons to whom issued.

Sec. 4. Said board shall also issue a certificate to any person who shall have been regularly engaged in the practice of medicine and surgery within this State for five years immediately preceding the passage of this act, and who, after an examination by said board, shall be found to be qualified to practice medicine and surgery. It shall also issue a certificate to any person who has had issued to him a diploma or license from any reputable school or college of medicine and surgery which is located without the United States, upon the applicant being found competent after having passed a satisfactory examination by the said board. When the board is not in session its secretary may issue a temporary certificate whenever an applicant shall have deposited the usual fee and filed his diploma or license with him, and such temporary certificate shall entitle the holder to practice until the next regular meeting of said board. And all examinations of applicants to practice shall be thorough and searching, and shall be in the following branches: Anatomy, physiology, chemistry, materia medica, therapeutics, principles and prac-

tice of medicine, principles and practice of surgery, gynecology, obstetrics, ophthalmology, pathology and all subjects relating to the practice of medicine and surgery. The board may judge whether the college and institution which issued any diploma or license presented to it is reputable and legally chartered and worthy of recognition, subject to the action of the courts in cases of abuse of its discretion in this respect.

Sec. 5. With each application for authority to practice medicine and surgery there shall be deposited with the board, its president or secretary, the sum of twenty-five dollars (\$25), lawful money of the United States, and all money collected by said board shall be used by it to defray its legitimate expenses.

Sec. 6. It shall be unlawful for any person to present to said board any forged or fraudulent diploma or license, or one which was not issued to the person presenting the same, and any person who shall so present such a diploma or license, shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor, and upon conviction thereof shall be punished by a fine of not less than five hundred dollars or by imprisonment in the county jail for a period of not less than fifty nor more than one hundred and eighty days, or by both such fine and imprisonment for each and every such offense.

Sec. 7. Any person to whom a diploma or license has been issued may present the same in person, by letter or by proxy, to the board, accompanied by proof to the satisfaction of the board that such diploma or license was issued to the person presenting the same, and if the board shall be satisfied with such proof, and also satisfied as to the character and standard of the college or institution within the United States which issued said diploma or license, said board shall thereupon issue its certificate to the applicant.

Sec. 8. Every person to whom a certificate from the Board of Examiners shall have issued, shall, before he enters upon the practice of medicine or surgery in this State, have such certificate recorded in the office of the County Recorder of the county in which he resides.

Sec. 9. The board may refuse a certificate to any individual guilty of unprofessional or dishonorable conduct, and may revoke any certificate for a like cause. In all cases of refusal or revocation the party aggrieved may appeal to the courts for adjudication of the controversy.

Sec. 10. Any person shall be regarded as practicing medicine, within the meaning of this act, who shall profess publicly to be a physician or surgeon, or who shall prescribe for the sick or profess to cure the sick by the administration of drugs or other means, or shall append to his name the letters "M.D.," but nothing in this act shall be construed to prohibit any gratuitous services in cases of emergency or to commissioned surgeons in the United States Army or Navy.

Sec. 11. All moneys received by this board shall be paid out on its order for its actual necessary expenses and the expenses of its members incurred in attending its meetings, and in case the money received by said board shall be insufficient to meet its actual expenses and the actual traveling expenses of its members in attending its meetings, then the board shall certify to the State Controller, under its seal and over the signatures of its president and secretary, the amount actually necessary to meet the remainder of the traveling expenses of its members for attending such meetings, and upon the receipt of such certificate the Controller shall draw his warrant upon the State Treasurer for the same, which shall be payable out of any funds in the State Treasury not otherwise appropriated.

Sec. 12. A majority of said board shall constitute a quorum to transact all business. All certificates issued by said board shall bear its seal and the signatures of the president and secretary and shall authorize the person to whom it is issued for that purpose to practice medicine or surgery in any and all counties in this State upon complying with the requirements of this act.

Sec. 13. Any person practicing medicine or surgery in this State without first

complying with the provisions of this act shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor, and upon conviction thereof shall be punished by a fine of not less than one hundred (\$100) dollars, or by imprisonment in the county jail for not less than fifty days nor more than one hundred and eighty days for each and every such offense, or by both such fine and imprisonment. Any person may institute proceedings at law provided for in this act, and it shall be the duty of the Board of Medical Examiners, or any member thereof, whenever satisfied that any of the provisions of this act have been violated, to institute or cause to be instituted the proper proceedings for a punishment thereof.

Sec. 14. No member of the Board of Medical Examiners of this State shall receive any compensation for any service or services rendered under the provisions of this act.

Sec. 15. All acts and parts of acts in conflict with the provisions of this act are hereby repealed.

Sec. 16. This act shall take effect, so far as the certificates provided for are concerned, and be in force in that respect, on and after the first day of May, 1899, and in all other respects it shall take effect upon its approval.

This law was a decided improvement over its predecessor, and like it, had an extraneous clause. In this case it was the desire of a political boss to pay a political debt. The "cullud gemmen in the woodpile" will be found in that portion of Section 3 which provides that "licenses may be issued to those who hold licenses from the State Examining Boards of any State of the United States, providing the holder of said certificate has been practicing in this State for at least five years," and although the facts were well known, the enactment was so much better than the law of 1875 that no fight was made against it; in fact, so great was the power of the political boss that a fight would have been futile.

The enactment of 1905 does away with the requirement of a five years' residence in appointees on the Board of Medical Examiners; also changes the term of examiners from five to four years; empowers any member of the board to administer oaths in pursuance of duties; has a reciprocity clause providing for the issuance of a license to practice in this State to any licentiate of other States whose requirements for certificates are equal to ours, and who accepts our licentiates on the same terms; also requires identification by two freeholders of the county in which the applicant resides certifying that he is the person named in the diploma or certificate; gives right to appeal to the courts in case of rejection of an applicant; defines "unprofessional conduct" and does away with temporary license to practice until board meets.

The Act of 1907 amends Section 7 of the Act of 1905, doing away with the standing of college issuing the diploma and the affidavit setting forth the number of terms and their duration that the applicant was re-

quired to attend; simply requires that the diploma of license to practice shall have been issued by a legally recognized college.

"The first general health law of Nevada was passed by the Legislature during the session of 1893, and approved by Governor R. K. Colcord on March 6th of the same year. Although a sovereign State for nearly thirty years, the above was the first legislative enactment looking toward the protection of public health, and even this recognition of a need long denied was born of fear. Asiatic cholera was then raging in Europe, and our Atlantic seaboard was threatened by its invasion, so the better to protect our people from its ravages, the law was passed. The Act of 1893 has been several times amended, but the amendments were designed to meet some special condition, rather than general in their application. The law was narrow in scope, and the appropriation too small, \$1,000 per annum, to accomplish any particular good, so Nevada trailed along in the wake of her more ambitious and progressive sisters until 1911, when a new era dawned, and a new order of things was inaugurated.

During the session of 1911, the Legislature passed, with but one dissenting vote, a vital statistics law, similar in its provisions and character to that formulated by the United States Census Bureau. The Act was approved by Governor Tasker L. Oddie on March 27th, 1911. Up to this time no reliable registration of births or deaths had been kept. True, a law had been passed in 1887, and approved by Governor C. C. Stevenson on February 26th, following, which required physicians and midwives to report to the several County Recorders all births, and undertakers to report all interments to the same officers, but the penalty for failure to comply with the provisions of the Act was nominal, so the law was more honored in the breach than in its observance. The necessity for a human statistics law, and a vigorous enforcement of the same, is apparent. By reason of such lax legislation, and failure on the part of physicians, midwives and undertakers to report, and the recorders to keep proper histories, estates legally due to native born children of foreign parentage have escheated to the crowns of European kings, princes or potentates, where the possession of a legally executed birth certificate would have protected the heir from such spoliation. For like reasons estates have been diverted or withheld from those morally entitled to them, because their claims were not supplemented with a duly executed death certificate.

Native born children returning from abroad on emigrant ships, have been held for weeks on Ellis Island as indigent foreigners, and subject to deportation for the want of a birth certificate to prove their nativity. Our people are denied the marriage license in European countries if unarmed with the same. American students are refused matriculation in the Universities of France for a like reason. The necessity for vital statistics is felt in nearly every phase of human existence. Especially is this true in matters of demography, in that of estates, in establishing property rights of inheritance, insurance and pensions. They are important factors in a medico-legal sense, i.e. in their bearing upon the laws governing child labor, the age of consent, etc., etc.

At the semi-annual meeting on July 1st, 1912, the Board issued the following rules and regulations: "The better to aid the State Mining Inspector in protecting the lives and health of miners and mine employees, the following rules and regulations are hereby passed:

Whereas, The mining industries constitute a large part of the industries of the State, and give employment to a large portion of her population, and

Whereas, A number of diseases are peculiarly incident in origin or spread to mining conditions, and

Whereas, The health of the miners and mine employes is of importance to the State at large as well as to the individual, Therefore be it

Resolved, That the following rules and regulations be recommended by the State Board of Health for adoption in the various mines of the State to protect the lives and health of the miners and mine employes, and of others outside the mines to whom such diseases may be communicated.

DUST.—1. All machine drilling operation in metalliferous mines shall be conducted in such a way as to prevent dust. 2. Where work is carried on in dusty stopes or ore houses, the same shall be provided with adequate facilities which must be used for wetting down the ore and rock to prevent the escape of dust into the air during handling. 3. Blasting shall be so arranged that men working in other places shall be exposed as little as possible to dust and smoke arising from such blasting. 4. Where workmen are required to enter places in which dust and smoke exist, they must be provided with aspirators, and be required to wear them. All working places must be provided with adequate ventilation.

SANITATION.—1. Bath and change houses must be provided at mines where more than twenty (20) men work underground, and these must be kept in sanitary condition. 2. Warning cards, concerning indiscriminate spitting, and the danger arising therefrom, must be posted in all mines. 3. All persons infected with tuberculosis of the lungs must be excluded from underground workings. 4. On the surface and underground in all mines employing twenty (20) or more men, suitable accommodations in the way of sanitary conveniences must be provided, and must be kept disinfected and in sanitary condition at all times. 5. For construction camps, and where a large number of laborers are housed, under the control of a mine, the sanitary code in use by the U. S. Reclamation Service should be observed."

"County Clerks should be required to submit to the Secretary of the State Board on or before the 10th day of each month, a list of marriage licenses issued from their offices during the preceding month. In concluding I am pleased to say that the local registrars in most of the counties have exhibited praiseworthy zeal in the discharge of their duties, so creditably, in fact, that I feel safe in saying that during the eighteen months since the law went into effect, fully 95 per cent of births and deaths have been reported, whereas in the State of New York, after ten years work under the most approved system, and supported by a stupendous appropriation for its execution, 90 per cent. of births is as high a rate as they have ever been able to secure."

There was an amendment passed in 1911. It is of doubtful character, for all of its predecessors had been in the line of progress toward the protection of the public. The portion of this enactment providing for the licensing of the practitioner by the "drugless system" opens a fine field for quackery.

Through the kindness of Dr. S. L. Lee, secretary of the State Board of Health, we are enabled to give the following history of health laws passed by the State:

And while this headway was being made in medical legislation and the passing of laws of health, it must not be supposed that facilities for the proper treatment of the sick and injured were not keeping step with the law-making powers. Of course, under our constitution, every county

made provision for the care of the indigent sick, but in most instances they were makeshifts, which were hardly fitted for human habitations, much less for hospital purposes. The hospitals most important in the State is the Nevada Hospital for Mental Diseases, which was completed and received its occupants in July, 1882. Prior to that time our insane had been kept in California, first at Woodbridge, and subsequently at Stockton. It was in 1875 that the writer, chairman of the joint committee of the Legislature, visited Woodbridge, where our insane were then kept on contract with Langdon & Clarke, at a cost of one dollar each per day. I made a report condemning the farming system and suggested the advantages financially and otherwise of the State caring for its insane at home, and in 1899, when addressing the State Legislature on the needs of our insane, it afforded me great pleasure to call attention to the fact that in the sixteen and one-half years of the existence of our State Hospital, the State had saved twice its cost, to say nothing of the fact that the moneys expended for its maintenance had been spent among our own people and the comfort of relatives and friends being able to frequently visit their afflicted. The care of its inmates and results of treatment averages well with similar institutions. The last report (January 1, 1913) showed 238 inmates, 175 male and 63 females. It is under the care of a medical superintendent who is appointed by and under the control of the Board of Commissioners for the Care of the Indigent Insane, consisting of the Governor, State Controller and State Treasurer. The first hospital worthy of the name was St. Mary's, erected in Virginia City by the Sisters of Charity, about 1880. The ground was presented by the late Mrs. Theresa Fair to the sisters, who raised the money for the building of the hospital, which was well equipped at that time for its purpose. It was supported mostly by a monthly subscription of one dollar, paid by the miners, who for that sum were entitled to medical and surgical treatment and hospital care. It must not be supposed that they were the only patients received; other pay patients, to say nothing of many charitable cases, found relief, not only for their physical, but for their mental sufferings as well. Race or creed made no difference in the treatment received by patients. Dr. John Grant was the attending physician and the writer attending surgeon up to 1883, when he removed to Reno. If "evil associations corrupt good morals," the reverse is equally true, and I had a

number of proofs of that fact during my attendance at St. Mary's in the mountains.

The hospital continued in service until the late '90s, when times became too dull for its support, and when, some years later, the Storey County Hospital burned down, the county purchased the building and has since used it as a county hospital. Pay patients, however, are received.

There is a modern hospital at Ely and similar miners hospitals at Goldfield and Tonopah, but it is in Reno that thoroughly equipped hospitals, three in number, can be found. Here the most modern treatment, medical as well as surgical, is to be had. The Reno hospitals are prepared to furnish operating rooms where thorough "aseptic" conditions may be secured. They have trained nurses and have all arrangements complete to enable the surgeon to perform the most difficult operations, including the X-ray apparatus, a thoroughly competent bacteriologist who not only makes examinations, but prepares autogenous bacterins for the most modern and succesful treatment of infectious and contagious diseases, with competent physicians and surgeons to make use of both hospitals and serums. The hospitals are the County, St. George and St. Mary's. Hence Reno has become the Mecca of the afflicted to which are turning not only those of Nevada, but from our neighboring States—Utah, Oregon and nearby sections of California.

CHAPTER XXVI.

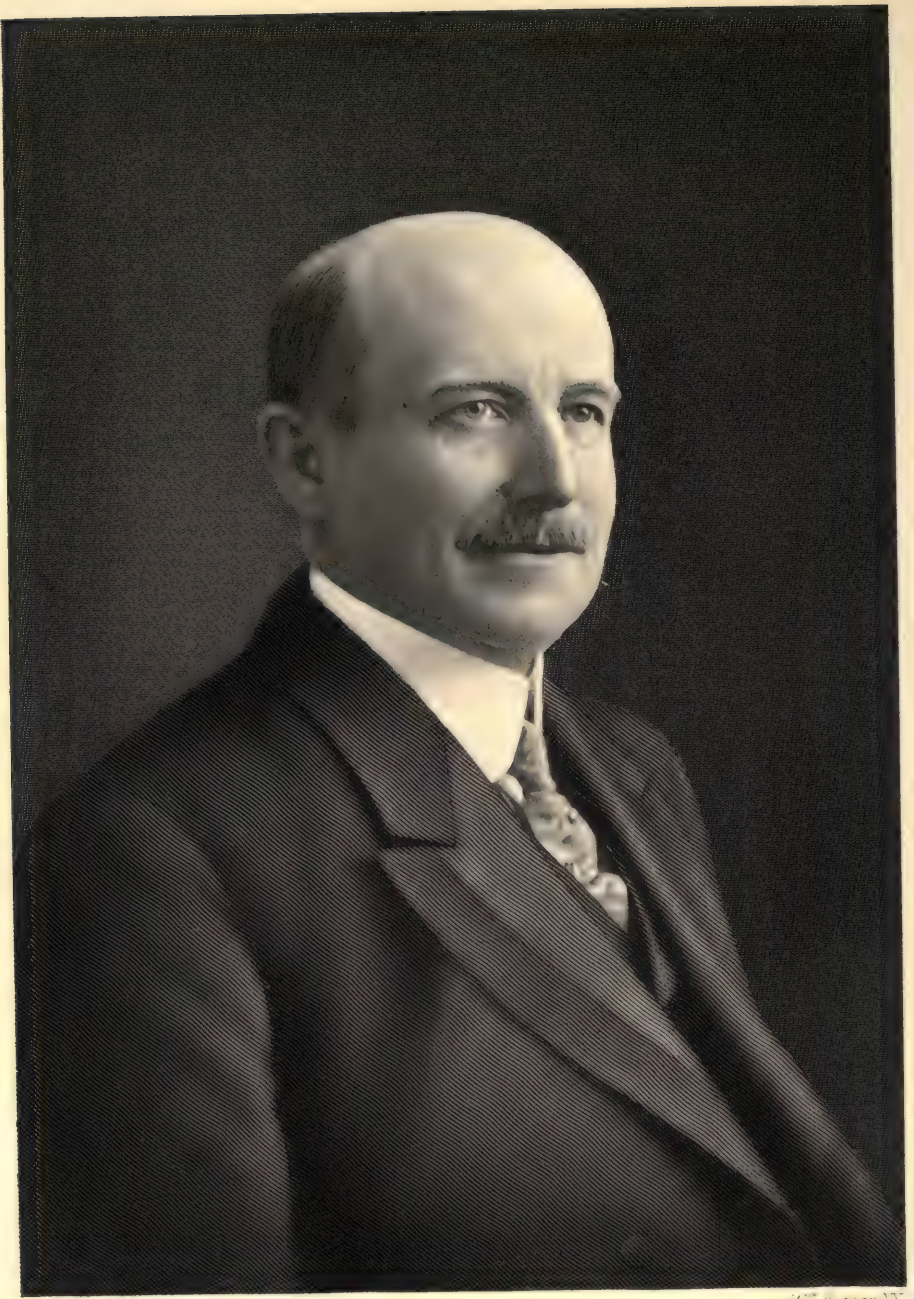
BANKING.

BY W. H. BLAUVELT.

Banking was inaugurated in Nevada at Virginia, by "Wells, Fargo & Co. Express and Banking Company" (was the form then used to head their advertisements) A. D. 1860. Captain Simmons, who had been the agent and manager of the Wells Fargo Co. Corporation at Sacramento City, California, during previous years, was transferred to Virginia in the year 1860 to add banking to their previously conducted express business at that geographical point of the earth. The bank at Virginia was not permitted to make loans of money, excepting to grant advances on bullion deposited for shipment to the United States Mint at San Francisco, or to the San Francisco Refinery; but they received deposits, sold exchange, and discounted drafts drawn by mining companies then in good standing, financially, with the banking world, and had opened accounts with the bullion producing mines.

In the year 1861, J. W. Stateler and N. O. Arrington—firm name Stateler & Arrington—established a bank at Virginia, and loaned money at ten per cent. a month upon all kinds of securities; and it was said of them that their business was more in form of pawnbroking than of banking; but the Gould & Curry Mining Company, then the largest and most active bank account in Nevada, did all of their banking business with Stateler & Arrington.

During the year 1862—John A. Paxton (formerly of the firm of Decker, Jewett & Paxton—bankers, at Marysville, California)—and W. B. Thornburg (Paxton & Thornburg) established a banking house at Virginia; the same year (1862) Howard & Sanchez founded a bank at Aurora (Esmeralda County, Nevada). Aurora was at that time a rapidly growing town, the leading mine "Real Del Monte," was regarded to be of stupendous value, and a half hundred other mines were believed to be of great value. More than a dozen expensive quartz mills had been built,



W. D. Barton '37

John A. Nixon

or were in process of construction. Large assays from ore were obtained; the promise was grand; the fulfillment—never. No large bodies of ore were found. Mining and milling men had deceived themselves, and were ruined. Property became valueless, and the bank was closed in 1865.

Early in the year of 1863, Arnold & Blauvelt established a bank at Virginia, and a month or two later in the same year, the bank of B. F. Hastings & Co. was opened for business.

B. F. Hastings was for more than a dozen years a successful banker at Sacramento City, California, and never lived at Virginia. A. K. Grim, who had one-fourth interest in the Virginia branch of the B. F. Hastings's bank, was the Virginia manager, and had for assistants J. W. L. Hunt (who came from the Hastings bank at Sacramento), and Charles J. Torbert. Everyone connected with the Sacramento and Virginia branch of the B. F. Hastings banks died years ago.

Late in the year 1863—or early in 1864—Paxton & Thornburgh established a branch of their bank at Austin (usually spoken of as "Reese River"), and after Paxton & Thornburg closed their bank at Virginia (say 1868) and the firm was dissolved—Paxton removed the Austin bank to Hamilton, White Pine County—where he conducted a banking business a year to two, and then removed to Eureka, Nevada, and there engaged in banking. After some years he disposed of his bank to a syndicate of citizens who continued the business in the name of The Bank of Eureka.

Early in 1862, H. G. Maynard opened a bank at Gold Hill, Nevada. He had previously been the agent of Wells Fargo & Co. express at Gold Hill. In the latter part of same year, J. W. Flood became a partner of H. G. Maynard. Maynard & Flood continued in business about two years, when J. W. Flood went to San Francisco, where he became a trusted employee in the banking house of Donohoe, Kelley & Co. After having occupied that position for a number of years, he was proven to be defaulter for a large amount of money, and was sentenced to imprisonment for six years. It was currently reported that the shock given to Joseph Donohoe through the defalcation of J. W. Flood, who had for many years been regarded by Donohoe to be a man of rare excellence, and a highly esteemed friend, caused the death of Donohoe,

who died a very short time after Flood had been sentenced to State prison. The business of Maynard & Flood at Gold Hill was continued by H. H. Flagg. Maynard had retired a rich man, with more than \$100,000 in bonds, and \$1,800 per month in rents from his Gold Hill property being collected by H. H. Flagg and remitted to him in Boston, Massachusetts, where he had bought a dwelling on Tremont street, in which with his family, he abode. About the year 1872 Maynard returned to Gold Hill, and reported that his Boston life had been financially disastrous.

A short time after the return of Maynard to Gold Hill the bank of H. H. Flagg failed. Trustees were appointed and they succeeded in paying the creditors about sixty cents on the dollar.

Maynard formed a copartnership with R. N. Graves—firm name Graves, Maynard & Co., and the bank was reopened. H. K. Mitchell was the silent partner. The business was not successful and ended in about two years after it was inaugurated. The building that had been a bank during all of the early years of Gold Hill's existence became a saloon named The Bank Exchange. Maynard became a very poor man; his last employment was watchman at an idle hoisting works between Washoe Valley and Steamboat Springs, where he became ill; was removed to the county hospital at Reno, where he died.

During 1862 Almarin B. Paul, D. L. Bliss and W. H. Baker formed a copartnership, firm name being Almarin B. Paul & Co., and established a banking house at Gold Hill that continued to exist until May 1, 1865. During 1862 E. Ruhling and H. V. S. McCullough, who had previously conducted the business of assaying, added banking, and "E. Ruhling & Co., bankers and assayers," was signed to their advertisements; about five years later they ceased to conduct banking business, but continued the assaying business for some years afterward, during which time they established a branch of their assaying business at Gold Hill that was conducted by H. V. S. McCullough.

About July, 1863, James H. Latham, who had been the agent of the Wells Fargo & Co. banking and express business at Sacramento, Cal. (he had succeeded Captain Simmons), came to Virginia as agent of Wells Fargo & Co. and P. D. Hedley, who had succeeded Captain Simmons as the Virginia agent of the house a year or two previously,

became the agent of the banking and expressing business of Wells Fargo & Co. at Gold Hill. Homer S. King, who had been a clerk in the Sacramento house of Wells Fargo & Co. for years, came to Virginia with James H. Latham to act the part of cashier of the banking department of Wells Fargo & Co.

During August, 1863, a bankers' association was formed at Virginia for the purpose of establishing uniform methods of conducting business. Every banker in Virginia and Gold Hill became a member of the association. Although all were members, each firm was entitled to only one vote. The first business transacted was to establish 5 per cent. per month as the rate of interest to be charged on all loans and discounts. James H. Latham, the agent of Wells Fargo & Co., stated to the members that he had a contract with the Mexican Mining Company to furnish required coin during each midmonth operations at the rate of 3 per cent. per month; all of these coin advances were repaid in full at the close of each month's business. It was unanimously voted that contract should be the only exception to the 5 per cent. per month rule that was then established. The rate of discount on bullion was based entirely upon the charges of Wells Fargo & Co. for transferring the metal to San Francisco, the charges of the San Francisco Refinery for parting the silver from the gold, the value of refined silver in San Francisco market, where it was in demand for shipment to East India for account of London bankers and the express charge for transferring coin from San Francisco to the Comstock Lode. The latter charge was \$1.12½ for each one hundred dollars. The bullion rate varied with the fineness of the bullion bars. There was a weight-charge plus a value charge. The "Pioneer Line of Stages" carried all express matter. There was no railway east of Folsom (22 miles east of Sacramento City). The three daily stages of the "Pioneer Line" were always filled with passengers. To obtain a seat in their coaches it was often necessary to engage (and pay for) passage three or four days in advance. Stage robbers were busy, and it was gold coin that they wanted, not silver bars, that they could hardly dispose of without being detected, as records of weight and fineness of each and every bar were numerous; hence it was always stages coming to Nevada (not going from Nevada) that were robbed. Express robbers had emissaries to inform them when the treasure-box

upon the stage was heavy. The express company endeavored to send the smallest amounts practicable daily; but the daily transfer of coin from San Francisco was of considerable amount. The largest sum remembered that was stolen at one time by the robbers was \$30,000. Suspects were arrested, but as robbers were always masked, conviction seemed impossible. No conviction of a stage-robber is now remembered. In consequence of robberies it is doubtful (notwithstanding the $1\frac{1}{8}$ per cent. charge, it is now four-tenths of 1 per cent.) whether there was any profit accrued to the express company through transmission of coin during the stage-coach era.

The profit of bankers consisted not in discounting the drafts that were drawn on San Francisco by all operating mining companies and others, but in receiving coin in exchange for drafts, bills of exchange and checks sold by all of the banks at par. The receipt of this coin reduced the amount upon which they had to pay the express company for bringing coin from San Francisco. Where went all of the hundreds of thousands of dollars brought to the banks each and every month is a question that has never been answered. It is known that coin was buried, as it often came to banks with dirt accompanying it, when owner was departing to "pastures new" and believed that a bank-check was a safer method of transportation than carrying the coin could be. He had to pay no premium; but the money carried away in pockets of owners and the money that was long buried would seem to be but a small proportion of the monthly sums that were expressed from San Francisco to Virginia during the sixties and seventies of the past century. About the beginning of the summer of 1864 Stateler & Arrington failed, although they were really solvent. Arrington had become a votary to intemperance (a year or two later his wife obtained a divorce from him in San Francisco on the grounds of habitual intemperance) and Stateler (who was a conceited and unscrupulous man) completely dominated Arrington. The San Francisco account of Stateler & Arrington was with the Bank of California, where they had the privilege of overdrawing their account near the first of each month in order to be prepared for furnishing large amounts of coin used by mining companies (particularly by the Gould & Curry Mining Company that had an army of employees and large sums to be monthly paid for mine supplies,



F. M. Lee

wood mining timbers, etc., and who obtained all of their coin from the bank of Stateler & Arrington) during the first ten days of each month. These overdrafts made upon the Bank of California had always been promptly paid through remitting drafts drawn upon the mining companies, that were all California corporations with principal place of business in San Francisco, by the superintendents. Nearly all of the Comstock mining companies, with head offices in San Francisco, kept their banking account with the Bank of California. What right-thinking men would name to be dishonesty, Stateler would call "shrewdness."

Wells Fargo, who had a large certificate of deposit account in their bank at Virginia, had always advanced the coin to Stateler & Arrington on their drafts drawn on the Bank of California less the express charge, $1\frac{1}{8}$ per cent., for transferring coin from San Francisco to Virginia. Coin was necessarily three days en route between the above-named points of transfer. Say, June, 1864, Stateler & Arrington, a day or two earlier than had been their aforesaid custom, had their drafts drawn on the Bank of California cashed for a sum somewhat larger than had been usual; a day, two or three, they again had a draft drawn on the Bank of California cashed by Wells Fargo & Co., say, \$20,000. The Bank of California paid the first draft, but refused to pay the second draft that went to protest. Stateler used the money that he had obtained from Wells Fargo & Co. to pay all depositors who had money in his bank; he sought them industriously to make payment. The only unpaid creditors were Bank of California, say, \$30,000, and Wells Fargo & Co., say, \$20,000. Nevada was a territory with United States courts a year or more behind in court cases, hence nothing could be gained by the creditors through the courts. William Sharon (who years afterward became United States Senator) was the representative of the Bank of California to gather what could be gained from the Stateler & Arrington wreck. Wells Fargo & Co. had to accept deeds for property, mortgages, promissory notes in hands of Stateler & Arrington in payment of their claim. William Sharon, who reached the scene a day after Wells Fargo & Co., had sifted the securities held by the Stateler & Arrington bank, had second choice, but chose wisely, and it is believed that in the end the Bank of California recovered nearly the entire

amount of their claims, but a long time was required to accomplish that end.

Wm. Sharon, during his stay of several weeks at Virginia in making settlements, and money realizations upon the gatherings from the closed bank, conceived that it would be profitable to the Bank of California to establish an agency at Virginia, Nevada, and succeeded in causing the officers of the bank to instruct him to immediately found a bank agency at Virginia. Arnold & Blauvelt, who through mortgages, were practical owners of the large bank building occupied by them, and best located as well as best adapted for business of banking of all buildings in the town, were interviewed by Wm. Sharon, who desired to take the building and the business, good will, and service of junior partner. Arnold & Blauvelt believed that the agency, when established, would render business of other banks to be unprofitable, hence the agency was established September, 1864, and continues to the present day, having been for more than a dozen years the only bank on the Comstock Lode, where during the years 1863 and 1864 were eight banks, viz., five in Virginia, and three at Gold Hill. Late in the year 1864, or early in the year 1865, J. W. Stateler, in company with a stranger named Meyer, firm name Stateler & Meyer, reopened a bank at the old stand of Stateler & Arrington. Stateler had the temerity to believe that depositors would flock to the new bank, because he had acted so honorably in paying depositors all of their money before it was known that the bank of Stateler & Arrington would fail. Stateler believed that Gould & Curry and other mining companies would reopen their accounts with his new bank. The bank was ignored, and after a few months was closed. Early in the year of 1865, the Bank of California determined to establish an agency at Gold Hill; and soon afterward arranged with Almarin B. Paul & Co. to lease the banking house they were occupying. On the first day of May, 1865, the agency of the Bank of California was opened at Gold Hill with W. H. Blauvelt as cashier in charge. During the following month of July the bank removed to a better building, better lighted, and better located. There it continued the business more than fourteen years. In the year 1879 in view of the fact that business on the Comstock Lode had materially decreased in volume, the officers of the bank concluded that the expense of maintaining two agencies in juxtaposition was no longer de-

sirable; hence during the summer of 1879, the business of Gold Hill was transferred to the agency of the Bank of California at Virginia. A corporation, consisting of eight shareholders, was formed to conduct banking in the building vacated by the agency of the Bank of California at Gold Hill. The title of the newly formed corporation was the Bank of Gold Hill. This bank continued in business more than seven years, and ceased during the month of December, 1886; since that date there has been no bank at Gold Hill, Nevada. During the year 1877 the Nevada Bank of San Francisco established an agency at Virginia, George A. King, agent. This bank continued in business nearly twenty years, when it ceased to be. While the Central Pacific Railroad was being built west from the summit of the Sierra Nevada, say 1867, 1868, 1869, many gangs of workmen were employed, and each gang had a "boss" to direct the work, keep the time of workmen, etc. To pay these several hundreds of men their monthly stipends in coin would have been impracticable; hence checks were drawn on the corporation payable in Sacramento City, and sent to "bosses of the gangs," who distributed them to the laborers, who signed the payrolls when they received their check. D. A. Bender became buyer of these checks (as laborers wanted coin), and it was said that his terms of discount were a dollar for each check. There being hundreds of laborers within his scope, his monthly profits were large; and during the year 1868 he in company with his brother, Charles T. Bender, established a bank at Reno that was then a very young and small town. The bank of D. A. Bender afterward was merged into the Washoe County Bank at Reno that continues to the present day. D. A. Bender was the largest stockholder therein. About the year 1893, Wells Fargo & Co. ceased to do a banking business at Virginia, Nevada. At Carson City, Nevada, Wells Fargo & Co., H. F. Rice, agent, were the only bankers during the first quarter century of the existence of the State of Nevada.

The banking business was never very profitable in the State of Nevada. No large fortunes were made. Seeming sound securities, taken for loans, melted away so rapidly, that losses upon bank loans were very numerous. Personal security was very often disastrous. A borrower might be a rich man the day that he borrowed the money, and become bankrupt within thirty days thereafter.

Of all who were engaged in banking, as principals, agents, cashiers, accountants, or clerks, during the "sixties" of the last century in Virginia or at Gold Hill, three only are living. Of the thousands who came to the Comstock during the year 1863 in stages, on horseback and afoot, nine-tenths either died or went away poorer than when they came.

During the summer of 1866 the agent of "The Banking & Express" business of Wells Fargo & Co. at Gold Hill, Nevada, acknowledged a deficit of \$60,000 in cash of the bank; he had lost the money through buying mining shares during a falling market, confidently believing that values would enormously increase in the near future. As depreciation continued, he bought more and more, in order to lessen average cost of the whole number of "feet" that he had bought chiefly in the Ophir mine, that "tumbled" from more than \$3,000 per foot to less than \$300 per foot, gradually, but continuously. The ore body had really been exhausted, but the fact was not generally known; and to knowing ones it was believed that it would reappear at a little greater depth. It did not reappear. Wells Fargo concluded to abandon banking at Gold Hill, and the office of the express was given to the agency of the Bank of California, at Gold Hill, and W. H. Blauvelt was appointed to be the agent of the express, and continued to act as agent more than twenty years. Agency of the Nevada Bank of San Francisco at Virginia ceased business April, 1895. Virginia, Nevada. "There is no such place as Virginia City in Nevada. Virginia City is in Montana," The foregoing quotation has often been repeated by the early founders of Virginia, Nevada, who were determined that *City* should not be attached. The organic act incorporating the government of Virginia, emphatically declares the name of the corporate to be Virginia. Notwithstanding all preventatives that were used, the United States Post Office Department have attached *City* to their post-marking stamps. Wells Fargo did the same thing, and the great mass of people are not aware that it is a misnomer. Per contra, Carson City was incorporated, yet the whole world eliminates *City*, and says Carson.

On October 3rd, 1907, the State Bank and Trust Company at Carson City closed its doors, also its chain of branch agencies in Tonopah, Blair, Goldfield and Manhattan.

The Nye and Ormsby followed suit with its Tonopah, Goldfield, Won-





Engr. by E. J. Williams & Bros. N.Y.

A. Frohlich

der and Manhattan agencies. All the banks in the State closed temporarily and to tide them along until they might be able to realize on their assets, Governor Sparks declared several legal holidays.

The State Bank and Trust Company attempted to induce its depositors to sign an agreement to allow it to open and by paying small monthly dividends gradually settle with its creditors. Over 95% of the depositors were willing, but the others taking legal advice refused, and the bank went into the hands of a receiver, where it still remains.

Many causes were named as contributing to the failure of the banks, but the main one was the loaning of money on mining stocks, always an uncertain asset. Beyond this might be counted the labor disturbances in Goldfield, which contributed to the general lamentable result. The failure of the Bank Commission to investigate and close the insolvent banks caused bitter public criticism and a legislative investigation of Commissioners Douglas and Ryan followed, which gave little tangible results except to show that the Commissioners had State money in the Nye and Ormsby and that Ryan was one of the bondsmen of the Treasurer of Ormsby, which county had over \$20,000 in the bank which it never recovered. The Nixon banks paid dollar for dollar. The State Bank and Trust Company is working out its salvation through its receiver. The Golden banks, since the death of Frank Golden, have been gradually settling with creditors through the heroic efforts of the widow, who insists that she will eventually meet every demand. Since her husband's death she has met claims aggregating over half a million.

All banking corporations in the State of Nevada are now operating under the law enacted by the Legislature and approved March 22, 1911, that created "The State Banking Board of Nevada," consisting of the Governor, who is chairman of the Board, and four additional members appointed by the Governor, also the State Bank Examiner, appointed by the Governor, who is secretary of the Board. The law regulating the formation of a bank corporation is explicit and stringent. Twenty-five thousand dollars, actual cash, is the smallest amount upon which a bank can be established, and at least three actual stockholders must constitute the board of directors of any bank. Every bank is required to make at least four reports each year, oftener if called upon, to the Bank Examiner. Each report must exhibit in detail, and under appropriate heads, the re-

sources and liabilities of such bank at the close of business on any past day specified by the Bank Examiner, and this report must be published in a newspaper in the county in which the bank is located. The State Banking Board has faithfully performed its duties and the conditions of each bank have been truthfully given to the public quarterly each year.

In addition to the agency of the Bank of California National Association, at Virginia, Nevada, the following banks are now engaged in business within the State:

		Capital.
Bank of Austin.....	Austin	\$60,000
Horton Banking Company.....	Battle Mountain.....	12,000
Lincoln County Bank.....	Caliente	10,000
Carson Valley Bank.....	Carson City.....	50,000
Henderson Banking Company.....	Elko	100,000
Churchill County Bank.....	Fallon	65,150
Douglas County Farmers' Bank.....	Gardnerville	25,000
John S. Cook & Company.....	Goldfield	250,000
First State Bank.....	Las Vegas.....	25,000
Lovelock Mercantile Banking Company.....	Lovelock	50,000
Mason Valley Bank—Incorporated.....	Mason	25,000
Quinn River Bank.....	McDermitt	19,000
Farmers' Bank of Carson Valley.....	Minden	25,000
Bank of Pioche.....	Pioche	25,000
Scheeline Banking and Trust Company.....	Reno	120,000
Washoe County Bank.....	Reno	500,000
Bank of Sparks.....	Sparks	25,000
Tonopah Banking Corporation.....	Tonopah	50,000
Bank of Wells.....	Wells	50,000
Lyon County Bank.....	Yerington	26,900
Bank of Nevada Savings and Trust Company.....	Reno	100,000

THE RENO CLEARING HOUSE ASSOCIATION was organized October 30, 1907, by the banks of Reno and Sparks, Nevada, for the purpose of effecting a more perfect and satisfactory settlement of the daily exchanges between them, and to secure uniformity of action in matters concerning them. The membership consists of the following institutions: Washoe County Bank, the Farmers & Merchants National Bank, the Nixon National Bank, Scheeline Banking & Trust Company, Bank of Sparks, Inc. (Sparks), Bank of Nevada Savings & Trust Company. The first officers were: F. M. Lee, president; R. Kirman, vice-president; Geo. H. Taylor, secretary; A. H. Howe, assistant secretary. During the financial difficulties of the year 1907, the association issued Clearing House Certificates, commonly known as "script," to the extent of \$123,800, which certificates were secured by bonds and collateral notes deposited by the members of the association, who in turn received a certain percentage of the amount of the bonds or secured notes which they deposited in certificates. These certificates were quite generally circulated in western Nevada and northern California and were considered the same as cash. Of the certificates issued there are still outstanding (February 1, 1913) \$210 of various denominations. Many of these are doubtless held as souvenirs and in all probability a good portion of them have been destroyed or lost. The yearly clearings of the City of Reno since

the organization of the association are as follows: 1908, \$16,359,694.52; 1909, \$13,149,474.11; 1910, \$14,132,454.83; 1911, \$14,160,859.18; 1912, \$14,776,663.62. The present officers of the association are: George W. Mapes, president; R. C. Turrittin, vice-president; A. J. Caton, secretary; J. W. Davey, assistant secretary; H. H. Kennedy, treasurer.

NEVADA BANKERS' ASSOCIATION, organized December 5, 1908, in order to promote the general welfare and usefulness of banks and banking institutions, and to secure uniformity of action, together with the practical benefits to be derived from personal acquaintance and from the discussion of subjects of importance to the banking and commercial interests of the State, and especially in order to secure the proper consideration of questions regarding the financial and commercial usages, customs and laws which affect the banking interests of the State of Nevada, and for protection against loss by crime. The first officers of the association were: F. M. Lee, president; John Henderson, vice-president; George H. Taylor, secretary; A. H. Howe, assistant secretary, and Fred Grob, treasurer. The membership at this time comprises every bank in the State of Nevada with the exception of four, and many of the leading banks in San Francisco, Sacramento and Salt Lake City, as associate members. Annual conventions are held each year at which a good portion of the members are represented by one or more delegates. At these conventions addresses are delivered concerning financial questions, and a general discussion is held covering matters of interest to the banking and commercial fraternity. To the Nevada Bankers' Association belongs the credit for drafting and having introduced to the Legislature of the State of Nevada the present Banking Law of this State. Any one familiar with this law knows of its completeness, and the great benefit it has worked in behalf of the legitimate bankers of the State, and the protection it has afforded depositors, none of which were enjoyed prior to its enactment. The present officers of the association are: George H. Taylor, president; A. E. Kimball, vice-president; J. W. Davy, secretary; W. R. Bracken, treasurer.

THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF WINNEMUCCA was organized September 27, 1886, by George S. Nixon, F. M. Lee and others with a capital stock of \$50,000. George S. Nixon being the first cashier and L. A. Blakeslee the first president. Mr. F. M. Lee became president April 18, 1895, and held such office until July, 1901, when he resigned to accept the position of cashier, which position he held until resigning to become the cashier of the Nixon National Bank in the year 1906. The late Senator Nixon was made president, succeeding Mr. Lee, and remained actively in the management of the bank's affairs up to the time of his death in June, 1912. In the year 1888 the capital was increased from \$50,000 to \$82,000, and at the meeting of the stockholders held January, 1913, the capital was again increased to \$100,000, giving the bank a capital and surplus of \$300,000. Mr. George Wingfield was elected president to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Senator Nixon, and is its active president at this time. The other officers and directors are: F. M. Lee, vice-president; J. Sheehan, cashier; C. L. Tobin, assistant cashier; A. D. Dern, assistant cashier. In 1904 Mr. J. Sheehan resigned as County Recorder of Humboldt County to accept a position with this bank. In January, 1905, he was made assistant cashier, and in November, 1906, was elected as cashier to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Mr. F. M. Lee, which position he now holds. On September 19, 1900, the bank was held up and robbed by five robbers, headed by the notorious Butch Cassidy. The amount of the loss was quickly subscribed by the stockholders. It now has the distinction of being the oldest national bank in Nevada, and is justly proud of its position on the National Roll of Honor, being No. 131. The deposits on hand, as shown by the report to the Comptroller of the Currency under date of November 26, 1912, were \$1,611,561.19, while the total resources were very close to \$2,000,000.

FARMERS' BANK OF CARSON VALLEY, INC., was incorporated May 29, 1909, for \$25,000, and was fully paid, the subscribers to said stock being farmers

of Carson Valley. The institution opened its doors for business on the 20th day of October, 1909. The growing business demanded an increase of capital stock, and which said increase from \$25,000 to \$50,000 fully paid, was made on the 4th day of January, 1913, with a great many of the original stockholders doubling their original holdings, new shareholders, also farmers, coming into the business. Mr. F. Heise has been the president of the institution since its original incorporation, with H. G. Marsh as cashier.

THE BANK OF JOHN S. COOK & CO. was first established in 1905 by John S. Cook, as a private bank, and with a capital of \$50,000, and in November, 1906, the capital was increased to \$250,000, divided into 2,500 shares of the par value of \$100, and incorporated, the original incorporators being John S. Cook, George S. Nixon and George Wingfield, the original incorporators becoming the three directors of the corporation. In 1908 George Wingfield purchased the interest of George S. Nixon, Mr. Nixon retiring from the directorate, and W. E. Johnson being elected in his place; and in 1909 George Wingfield acquired also the interest of John S. Cook, Malvin E. Hill being elected a director in the place of Mr. Cook, which directorate remains the same up to date, viz.: George Wingfield, W. E. Johnson and M. E. Hill, who also constitute the officers of president, vice-president and cashier in their order as above stated, with the addition of J. O. Walthers as assistant cashier.

THE NIXON NATIONAL BANK was organized Oct 20, 1906, by Geo. S. Nixon, Geo. Wingfield, Geo. F. Turrittin, H. C. Brougher, P. L. Flanigan, A. G. Fletcher, Warren W. Williams, Henry Anderson, W. Brougher, John S. Cook, F. M. Lee, Peter Stampe Jensen and H. G. Humphrey, of which the first eleven named share-holders were elected the first Board of Directors. The first officers were Geo. S. Nixon, President; Geo. F. Turrittin, Vice-President, and F. M. Lee, Cashier. The Bank opened for business on Nov. 12, 1906, with a paid-up capital of \$500,000 and a Surplus Fund of \$50,000. The accounts opened the first day resulted in a total deposit of \$48,000, which increased to over \$1,000,000 by May 20, 1907, at which time the Capital Stock of the Bank was increased from \$500,000 to \$1,000,000, for the purpose of effecting a consolidation with the Bank of Nevada, which had been in business in Reno since April 21, 1887, and which at the time of the consolidation had deposits of about \$1,742,000, and loans of \$931,000—thus making the combined deposits of both Banks over \$2,700,000, and loans of about \$2,800,000. At the time of the consolidation, Mr. R. C. Turrittin, who was Cashier of the Bank of Nevada, and Mr. H. H. Kennedy, who was Asst. Cashier of that Bank, were made Asst. Cashiers of The Nixon National Bank, and Mr. J. D. Cameron, who was Auditor of the Bank of Nevada, was appointed an Auditor of The Nixon National Bank. The other officers and directors of The Nixon National Bank continued the same until Aug. 29, 1909, when the death of Gen. Geo. F. Turrittin occurred, and Mr. F. M. Lee was elected Vice-President and Mr. R. C. Turrittin, Cashier. Mr. Geo. Wingfield was elected President of the Bank in July, 1912, following the death of Senator Nixon, which occurred on June 5, 1912. The Nixon National Bank became a member of the Reno Clearing House Association when it was organized Oct. 30, 1907, and a member of the Nevada State Bankers' Association when it was organized Dec. 5, 1908. On June 20, 1907, the stock-holders of The Nixon National Bank organized the Bank of Nevada Savings & Trust Company as an affiliated Bank, with a paid-up Capital of \$100,000, which now has Savings Deposits amounting to about \$1,387,000 and assets of loans and investments amounting to about \$1,500,000. These Banks have enjoyed a large and profitable business, and have responded to the business requirements of the community and State, as is shown by their present figures of total loans of about \$3,100,000 and deposits of \$3,170,000. The officers of both Banks are: Geo. Wingfield, President; F. M. Lee, Vice-President; H. G. Humphrey, Vice-President; R. C. Turrittin,

Cashier; H. H. Kennedy, Asst. Cashier; M. D. Fairchild, Asst. Cashier; J. D. Cameron, Auditor. The Directors are: Geo. Wingfield, H. G. Humphrey, R. C. Turrittin, B. E. Nixon, Henry Anderson, S. H. Wheeler, A. G. Fletcher, F. M. Lee.

THE CARSON VALLEY BANK was organized on Feb. 10, 1908, by Richard Kirman, Walter J. Harris, Chas. J. Rulison, W. F. Dressler, L. Dolly, Xiever Spooner, and Chas. R. Lewis, and opened for business on Feb. 13, 1908. The first Board of Directors consisted of Richard Kirman, W. J. Harris, and Chas. J. Rulison, and the officers were Richard Kirman, President; W. J. Harris, Vice-President, and C. G. LeMasters, Cashier, and opened for business on Feb. 13, 1908, with a paid-up capital of \$25,000. The capital of the Bank was increased from \$25,000 to \$50,000 on Dec. 29, 1909, and the increased capital was subscribed by Geo. S. Nixon and F. M. Lee, at which time Mr. Nixon became President; W. J. Harris, Vice-President; F. M. Lee, Vice-President; C. G. LeMasters continued as Cashier, and Wm. G. McMillan was elected Asst. Cashier. The new Board of Directors consisted of Messrs. Nixon, Lee, Kirman, Harris and Rulison. In April, 1910, Mr. J. E. Monahan became Asst. Cashier, caused by the resignation of Mr. McMillan. Mr. Monahan up to this time had been associated with The Farmers' & Merchants' National Bank of Reno, Nevada. Upon the resignation of Mr. LeMasters in July, 1911, Mr. M. D. Fairchild, of The Nixon National Bank of Reno, was elected Cashier. Upon the death of Senator Nixon on June 5th, 1912, Geo. Wingfield purchased an interest in the Bank and was elected President to fill the vacancy. B. E. Nixon was elected a Director to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Mr. Kirman. In June, 1913, Mr. Fairchild resigned as Cashier to take a position as one of the Assistant Cashiers of The Nixon National Bank of Reno, and Mr. H. C. Clapp, formerly of Goldfield, was appointed Cashier. The present officers and Directors are: Geo. Wingfield, President; F. M. Lee, Vice-President; H. C. Clapp, Cashier; J. E. Monahan, Asst. Cashier; and the Board of Directors consist of Geo. Wingfield, F. M. Lee, Chas. J. Rulison, B. E. Nixon, and M. D. Fairchild.

THE HENDERSON BANKING COMPANY was organized by Jefferson Henderson August 2, 1880, under the name of J. Henderson, Banker. In 1888, it was incorporated under the name of the Henderson Banking Company. The entire stock of the company has been, and is to this day, owned by the members of the Henderson family. The officers are: John Henderson, president; L. O. Henderson, vice-president; Hayden Henderson, cashier; Lambert Henderson, assistant cashier.

DOUGLAS COUNTY FARMERS BANK was organized originally in 1900, as a private bank, and when the present banking laws went into effect the bank became a State bank in 1909. Capital stock, \$25,000. A. Jensen, president; L. Jensen, vice-president; R. C. Jensen, cashier.

ELY NATIONAL BANK was organized in Ely, Nevada, January 2, 1909, with a capital and surplus of \$30,000, and assets of \$200,000. Does a general banking business. Officers are: A. B. Witcher, president; Albert Heusser, vice-president, and John Weber, cashier.

FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF ELY, NEVADA, was organized February, 1907. Presidents, H. P. Clark, W. V. Rice (deceased), W. N. McGill. Vice-president, H. A. Comins; cashiers, Eugene Giles, H. N. Byrne. Capital, \$50,000; surplus, \$10,000; undivided profits, \$4,000; deposits, \$400,000.

THE COPPER NATIONAL BANK, East Ely, is the successor of the Bank of Ely, which was founded in April, 1906, under the laws of the State of Nevada and was located at Ely, Nevada, until May, 1908, when it was moved to East Ely and there continued business until November 5, 1909, at which time it was converted into the National System with the name of Copper National Bank; at the present time the capital is \$50,000; surplus, \$10,000; undivided profits, \$3,000, with deposits averaging \$150,000. Officers: Arthur Smith, president; F. W. Holmes, vice-president; A. P. Shohter, cashier; H. Wise, assistant cashier.

THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF ELKO was organized with a capital of \$100,000 in May, 1905, and its charter issued by the Comptroller of the Currency under date of May 16, 1905. On that date it took over the business of the branch bank of the Eureka County Bank, which had been conducting a branch business at Elko during the year previous to the organization of the First National. The first officers of the bank were: O. J. Smith, president; B. L. Smith and E. S. Farrington, vice-presidents; R. H. Mallett, cashier, and J. C. Doughty, assistant cashier. The present officers of the bank are: A. E. Kimball, president; C. E. Noble and J. A. Sewell, vice-presidents; C. F. Williams, cashier, and E. E. Ennor, assistant cashier.

THE LINCOLN COUNTY BANK, of Caliente, was incorporated March 30, 1906. Authorized capital, \$100,000; subscribed capital, \$10,000. The officers are as follows: B. O. Dranga, president; E. T. Dranga, vice-president; O. C. Dranga, cashier; M. W. Ryan, assistant cashier.

LOVELOCK MERCANTILE BANKING COMPANY was organized March 5, 1908, with a paid up capital of \$50,000, with W. C. Pitt, president, and F. E. Baker, cashier, and the directors at that time as follows: W. C. Pitt, Mrs. W. T. Jenkins, W. H. Hood, Tom P. Ebert, F. E. Baker, C. J. Hood and C. J. Romwall. To date Mr. Pitt retains the same place, president of the institution; W. H. Hood, M.D., of Reno, vice-president; Tom P. Ebert, of Lovelock, cashier, and R. J. Pierson, assistant cashier. The directors at the present time are as follows: W. C. Pitt, W. H. Hood, Mrs. W. T. Jenkins, F. E. Baker and Tom P. Ebert.

THE FARMERS AND MERCHANTS NATIONAL BANK OF RENO. This institution was organized in 1902 as a State bank, and was converted to a national bank in 1903. Its present officers are: Richard Kirman, president; Linus Dolley, vice-president; W. J. Harris, vice-president and cashier; A. J. Caton, assistant cashier, and L. R. Mudd, assistant cashier.

LYON COUNTY BANK, Yerington. This institution was first organized as The Lyon County Bank in July, 1905, with a capital of \$50,000, and after a few months of business the necessity for an increased capitalization became apparent, with the result that the present corporation took over the old bank and reorganized with a capital of \$100,000 under the name of Lyon County Bank, with J. I. Wilson as the president. The present officers are: President, J. I. Wilson; vice-president, George H. Plummer; secretary and cashier, George W. Webster; assistant cashier, George F. Willis; directors, C. E. Mack, J. W. Simpson, W. C. Orem, E. R. Lam.

FIRST STATE BANK, Las Vegas. Organized March, 1905. Capital paid in at that time, \$12,500. Officers at that time: M. H. Walker, president; C. N. Brown, vice-president; John S. Park, cashier; J. Ross Clark, T. E. Gibbon and the above were directors. Today, capital stock paid in, \$25,000; surplus fund, \$7,500. Officers: J. Ross Clark, president; W. R. Bracken, vice-president; John S. Park, cashier; William S. Park, assistant cashier.

FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF LOVELOCK was opened for business in March, 1905, with a capital of \$25,000. In January, 1910, the capital was increased to \$60,000, and now has a surplus fund of \$25,000. The late A. Borland was president until his death, after which his stock was purchased by L. A. Friedman, who has since been president. R. G. Smith was the first cashier and was succeeded by F. I. Gunnell about a year after the bank was organized. In July, 1911, J. T. Goodin was elected cashier.

MASON VALLEY BANK, INC. Date of incorporation, November 16, 1911. Date of license from State Banking Board November 27, 1911. Date of opening for business December 4, 1911. Deposits at close of business, December 4, 1911, \$6,465.12. Deposits at close of business, December 31, 1912, \$153,915.50. Capital stock, \$25,000. Surplus, \$5,000. Undivided profits, \$398.90. Officers: W. W. Armstrong, president, Salt Lake City, Utah; George E. Gunn, vice-president, Salt Lake

City, Utah; H. J. Long, vice-president, Fallon, Nevada; H. W. Culbertson, cashier, Mason, Nevada; J. E. Beaupert, assistant cashier, Mason, Nevada.

McGILL NATIONAL BANK was organized as a national institution June 11, 1909; succeeded the Bank of Ely, McGill Branch. Capital, \$25,000. Surplus and undivided profits, \$12,500. Average deposits, \$225,000. Present officers: Arthur Smith, president; Frank W. Holmes, vice-president; H. J. Muller, cashier; Herman Wise, assistant cashier. Directors are Arthur Smith, Frank W. Holmes, C. B. Lakenan, Chas. S. Chandler and M. H. Patton.

BANK OF PIOCHE, INC., was incorporated under the laws of the State of Nevada, May 11, 1907, opened for business June 6, 1907, with a paid up capital of \$25,000, with the following officers and directors: J. F. Tolton, president and director; G. C. Whitmore, vice-president and director; M. C. Fitzpatrick, director and cashier; N. P. Ipson, E. A. Hodges, C. A. Thompson, M. L. Lee. Present officers are: N. P. Ipson, president and director; George B. Greenwood, vice-president and director; M. L. Lee, director and cashier; G. M. Whitmore, director; Chas. A. Thompson, director; John R. Cook, director; William H. Pitts, director.

NEVADA FIRST NATIONAL BANK, of Tonopah, was organized in February, 1907. John G. Kirchen, president; Key Pittman, vice-president; Edw. A. James, cashier; J. S. Mullins, assistant cashier.

TONAPAH BANKING CORPORATION. Organized June 1, 1905, under the laws of Nevada. George S. Nixon, president; W. T. Harris, vice-president; Eugene Howell, cashier; R. C. Moore, assistant cashier. October 1, 1912, H. C. Brougher, president; Eugene Howell, vice-president and cashier; C. H. Connett, assistant cashier.

THE WINNEMUCCA STATE BANK & TRUST COMPANY was organized September 30, 1912, and received their license from the State Bank Examiner on January 19, 1913. The bank opened its doors for business on March 3, 1913. The first board of directors was composed of the following gentlemen: Thomas Nelson, Edward Reinhart, F. P. Snapp, Simon Reinhart, E. P. Ellison, Moses Reinhart, J. R. Harvey. The officers were: Moses Reinhart, president; Thomas Nelson, vice-president; Edward Reinhart, vice-president; Simon Reinhart, vice-president; R. C. Patterson, cashier. The bank is built entirely of reinforced concrete, making it a fireproof building, at a cost of \$30,000.

WASHOE COUNTY BANK. It is now over forty-two years since the banking house of D. A. Bender & Co. was founded in Reno, on June 18, 1871. This business has grown under practically the same management, ever since. In 1880, the First National Bank of Reno, with a capital of \$50,000, was organized to take over the interests of its predecessors. In 1896, the Washoe County Bank, with a capital of \$200,000, was established to succeed this national bank, it having been found that the still existing law, prohibiting national banks from loaning money on real estate mortgages, very seriously curtailed the opportunities for adequately serving the requirements of this agricultural district. In 1902, the capital was increased to \$500,000 and the surplus to \$200,000, fully paid in. In 1912, the total resources of the bank amount to nearly \$2,500,000.

BANK OF WELLS. Capital stock, \$50,000. Started business January 27, 1912. Average deposits, \$75,000. Mel S. Badt, president; Herbert H. Badt, vice-president; E. E. Lutts, vice-president; H. H. James, cashier.

CHAPTER XXVII.

AGRICULTURE.

BY GORDON H. TRUE.

The history of agriculture in Nevada, so far as authentic records are concerned, begins with the decade 1850 to 1860. In the latter year there were 91 farms aggregating 56,118 acres, or about one-tenth of one per cent. of the total area of what was the following year organized as the Territory of Nevada. This acreage has increased more or less steadily during the fifty years that have passed, until at the present time there are 2,689 farms, having a total area of 2,714,756 acres. Of this total farm area, however, but 709,018 acres, or one per cent. of the total area of the State, are irrigated. The latter figure shows an increase of 204,850 acres, or 31.8 per cent. in the irrigated area of the State in the last decade. The average irrigated area per farm is but 295 acres, a little less than 4 per cent. of the farm area being improved. While the area of farm lands has increased but 23.1 per cent. during the last ten years, the total value of farm properties has increased 110.6 per cent., a fact which is much more significant of real agricultural development than the increased acreage alone.

Nevada is a State of wonderful agricultural possibilities. This does not mean that any large part of the total area of the State will be brought under cultivation, for it will not. The State is too large to be entirely devoted to agriculture. Also, we cannot get away from the fact that the irrigated area in any arid State must be limited by the amount of water available. As yet not more than half of the water of the streams is being used for irrigation, the artesian supplies have not yet been prospected, and the possibilities resulting from pumping are unknown. With the practice of due economy in the use of water already in our irrigating ditches, it is safe to say that the present irrigated area may be doubled. Thus it will be seen that when all of the water available for irrigation is being economically used, the irrigated areas of our State will have to be

multiplied by four. Not less than 50 per cent. of the irrigated lands of Nevada are used for the production of native grass, hay and pasture. The greater part of these native grass lands lie in the valley of the Humboldt River, where the most primitive methods of irrigation are in many instances still practiced. Here large ranches are the rule, the average ranch area in the four counties through which the Humboldt River runs being 2,341 acres. These large valleys are generally owned by men who control still larger bodies of adjoining range land, the hay and pasture from the valley lands being used to supplement the range. The Carson, Truckee, and Mason Valleys still have their native grass lands which will ultimately be drained and put to a better use. The breaking up of these larger ranches into small farms will mean much to the future of agriculture in the State.

Alfalfa.—Alfalfa is the leading farm crop of Nevada, and fortunate is the region if this statement is true. Taking into consideration the certainty of a crop, the large yields per acre, the feeding value per ton, and the condition in which the soil is left after the growing of this crop, alfalfa undoubtedly ranks first among all of the farm crops. No Nevada farmer need be content with a yield of less than five tons to the acre and seven tons is often made. Its great value in stock growing has not yet been realized, east or west, for there is in it a feeding value for growing animals which the chemist cannot measure, nor yet the feeder of market stock, for it makes more than meat. Where corn makes fat, alfalfa gives growth; where corn-feeding gradually impairs the vital functions, the feeding of alfalfa gives strength, vigor and constitution; where corn is best for market stock, alfalfa develops the breeding animal. When the Nevada farmer shall have coupled with a full knowledge the feeding value of this great crop the skill of our best stockmen in the breeding of pure-bred animals, then we may begin to talk about our agricultural development. The greatest of opportunities for development are ahead of the Nevada farmer.

Grain.—The cereal grains, wheat, oats and barley, are very successfully grown in Nevada, though the quantities produced are not sufficient to supply the demand of the State. While the average yield of wheat per acre in Nevada is double the average yield per acre of the United States, it is not more than one-half of the amount commonly secured by our best ranchers. Yields of from forty to fifty bushels of wheat, fifty to sixty

bushels of barley, and seventy to one-hundred bushels of oats per acre are not uncommon, and the Experiment Station records show yields of sixty-seven bushels of wheat, eighty-four bushels of barley, and one hundred and twenty-three bushels of oats per acre. The market prices of grain range high in Nevada. High market values coupled with high average yields per acre give Nevada the distinction of being outranked but by a single State (the District of Columbia) in the value per acre of crops grown. The average acre value of wheat in Nevada for the past ten years has been \$27.52 as against \$11.37 for the United States; barley and oats for the past ten years have yielded acre values of \$25.34 and \$26.77, as against \$10.53 and \$12.69 for the United States for the same period.

Many farmers grow grain because their supply of irrigating water is not sufficient for the growing of alfalfa upon the entire farm. When we know all there is to be known concerning the minimum amount of water required to grow a crop of grain, much more grain will be grown in the State. When our farmers come to understand that certain varieties of grain can be grown with one or two irrigations where six or eight are now considered necessary, much land now uncultivated will be used for grain farming.

Grasses.—Tame grasses are little grown except for pasture. On account of the danger from loss from bloat, alfalfa is not a safe pasture for cattle or sheep, and for this reason is little used. Native June grass is the most common pasture grass except on bottom lands where wild lowland grasses prevail. June grass is seldom sown for pasture, but comes into hay fields and pastures naturally where an abundance of water is used. Where alfalfa fields are pastured continuously the alfalfa is soon run out by the June grass.

Timothy is grown to a very limited extent, there being a good market for it in the towns among the livery stables and the owners of driving horses. It seldom sells in the larger towns for less than \$20 a ton, baled. Some farmers make a practice of sowing a little timothy or orchard grass with alfalfa, thus getting a mixed hay which brings a little better price on the market than alfalfa.

Forage crops other than alfalfa occupy a very unimportant place. There seems to be little reason for growing them except in the case of farmers who are putting in new land and need something that will produce a crop before their alfalfa fields are established. The foxtail millets, sown as late

as June, produce an abundance of forage early in September. Sorghum, while the season is not always long enough for it to mature, usually produces a good crop of forage that may be fed green or cured for hay. The field pea grows remarkably well, and oats and peas often yield better than five tons of hay to the acre.

Roots.—All root crops grow well. On certain lands adapted to their growth, potatoes make a good crop of most excellent quality. Potatoes and onions are the two farm products that Nevada produces in excess of her need. Mason Valley and the region about Dayton on the Carson River are especially noted for potato production, while in the Truckee Valley also considerable areas are grown. The average yield in 1900, according to the United States Census for that year, was 161 bushels per acre, an average yield second only to that reported by the State of Maine. The average yield for the past ten years, as reported in the Year Book of the Department of Agriculture, is 144 bushels per acre, the average price per bushel 75 cents, and the average value of the crop per acre, \$107. Under the best conditions of care and cultivation yields of 500 bushels are not uncommon, thus giving a value of \$360 per acre. Agents of produce dealers on the Coast buy the crop at the ranch. There are also good local and mining camp markets.

A specialty is made of onion-growing on the bottom lands in the vicinity of Reno. While the crop for 1900 is given in the census report as \$93 per acre, some of our onion growers secure yields as high as fifteen to twenty tons to the acre and market them at from \$30 to \$35 per ton, thus making possible a crop value of \$700 per acre. The land considered especially adapted to onion growing is limited.

Vegetable Gardening.—Italian gardeners in the vicinity of the larger towns in the irrigated valley produce practically all of the varieties of garden vegetables ordinarily grown in temperate climates, with a degree of success limited only by the occasional late spring or early fall frosts. These vegetables are all of unusually good quality. The varieties grown include radishes, lettuce, onions, peas, beans, cucumbers, summer and winter squashes, all of the roots, tomatoes, green corn, cauliflower, cabbage, etc.

Sugar Beets.—The sugar beet industry is one that is young and thriving. Its center lies at Fallon, where a factory for the extraction of sugar has been established. As yet the acreage planted to sugar beets

is not sufficiently extensive to meet the capacity of the factory, but that will be quickly remedied. Sugar beets do well in Nevada. There are several problems in the matter of culture that need definite solution such as quantity and time of irrigation, cultivation, seed per acre, distance in thinning, rotation, and others of minor importance. Where the farmers were short on water supply in 1912, and were thus forced to cultivate, excellent results were obtained in yield, not to speak of the clearing of weeds. It is generally thought that the best crops follow alfalfa sod plowed under. The rotation involves potatoes, alfalfa, and cereal crops. Farmers who grow Canada peas to put a finish on their hogs will have, if the peas are eaten on the field, land that should be in the best condition for sugar beet planting.

The subject of rotation in general is one that is of particular importance to Nevada. In addition to the regular advantages claimed for systematic rotation, all of which apply to Nevada conditions, there is here the need of some cropping that shall add humus to the soil. Some of the roots allow the irrigation water to leach away rapidly, thus raising the water table where underdrainage is lacking, and also resulting in the loss of plant food. Some scheme of rotation that shall increase the water holding capacity of the upper soil is needed. So far the tendency has been to repeat the same crops, often for three or four years, the only antidote being found in the occasional plowing under of alfalfa. Some quickly growing crop, preferably red clover, should be used to add humus to the soil through a process of green manuring. Alfalfa develops too slowly and is too valuable for hay to be used as a green manuring crop. The addition of barnyard manure helps, but something additional is needed.

The Muddy and Las Vegas Valleys.—The Muddy and Las Vegas Valleys in the extreme southern part of the State are characterized by a climate similar to that of southern California. This region was so long without railroad facilities for transportation that its agricultural development is only in the earliest stages. All of the staple farm crops are grown most successfully, but the highest returns will come from the production of fruit and vegetables. Peaches, pears, apricots, figs, pomegranates, melons and the raisin grape are among the fruits that do especially well, while such garden vegetables as lettuce, radishes, peas, onions, etc., planted in the fall, are marketed at a time when they are



Edwin Ferris

counted as luxuries and so command high prices. The growing of asparagus also promises to become a very profitable industry.

Dry Farming.—There are men who believe that Nevada has a great future as a dry-farming State. This opinion has been based upon what has been accomplished in other States where conditions are assumed to be no less favorable than our own, rather than upon actual results in the State. It seems safe to say, however, that the development of agriculture without irrigation will be confined to the regions of the State especially favored in the matter of rainfall or underground water supply. In such regions good grain crops can be grown without irrigation, providing the proper methods of culture are carefully practiced. From the fact that most of the rainfall comes during the winter months, the early maturing winter grains usually prove most successful since they generally ripen before the period of extreme drought. Winter wheat grown in the Washoe Valley without irrigation yielded fifteen bushels per acre, and winter barley was grown with about as good results. Alfalfa may be grown for seed without irrigation, and one good crop harvested each year. The State established an Experimental Dry Farm in Pleasant Valley, twenty miles south of Elko, in 1910, where experiments and demonstrations are being conducted under the management of a Board of Control, consisting of two Elko County men and a representative of the State University. Here Turkey Red wheat last year yielded over 23 bushels to the acre; Defiance Spring wheat, 21.5 bushels; Blue Stem Spring wheat, 25 bushels; Kubanka wheat 16 bushels; oats, 27 bushels; barley, 23 bushels; rye, 12 bushels; and potatoes, 115 to 154 bushels.

Dairying.—Dairying, which might well rank among the leading agricultural industries in Nevada, is one of the most profitable and thriving. The Upper Carson Valley, Smith Valley, Mason Valley, Lamoille, South Fork, Truckee Valley and the Lower Carson Valley have prosperous creameries. None of these creameries are as yet working to the limit of their capacities, nor are they able to supply the needs of the State, for butter. It is a notable fact that some rich agricultural valleys are not producing the dairy products necessary for their own consumption.

Livestock.—Nevada will always have a large range cattle and sheep industry on account of the large percentage of lands that can never be cultivated. The fattening of this stock upon alfalfa hay is an important industry. In 1899 the value of the livestock products of the State exceeded

that of gold and silver, and the fact may well stand as a prophecy of what is to be the permanent relation of agriculture to mining in the State.

A great opportunity seems to exist for the Nevada stockmen in the production of pure bred breeding stock. The Hereford herd of the late Governor John Sparks made not only its owner, but Nevada famous. At present the pure bred herds of the State do not furnish the bulls needed on its ranges. Nowhere on earth are conditions of feed and climate more favorable to the production of fine stock than in Nevada.

The Agricultural College.—It is perhaps fitting that under the head of agriculture the development of the course in agriculture in the State University be mentioned. Four years ago this course had but a single student. Today the enrollment exceeds that of the mining school. When we take into consideration that Nevada is primarily a mining State, and that the majority of people of the State have considered it so from the first, that every effort has been made to strengthen the work of the mining school and to advertise it, while the school of agriculture has received a minimum support and encouragement, the increase in the number of agricultural students over that of the mining school becomes a strikingly significant fact. It means that the State has reached that stage in its history where the people are beginning to realize that its future growth and permanent prosperity must rest upon the development of agriculture. It means that the brightest and best equipped young men from the high schools of the State can see in present day agriculture as it is taught in the agricultural college, opportunities for the development of their best abilities.

